This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY STANFORD
I1051 .W83 3 STOR
Medical jurisprudence, forensic medicine
24503332914

LANE

MEDICAL LIBRARY

LEVI COOPER LANE FUND

MEDICAL JURISPRUDENCE

FORENSIC MEDICINE AND TOXICOLOGY

LAW LIBRARY

R. A. WITTHAUS, A.M., M.D.

Professor of Chemistry, Physics, and Hygiene in the University of the City of New York, etc., etc.

AND

TRACY C. BECKER, A.B., LL.B.

Counsellor at Law,

Professor of Criminal Law and Medical Jurisprudence in the University of Buffalo

WITH THE COLLABORATION OF

AUGUST BECKER, ESQ.; CHAS. A. BOSTON, ESQ.; HON. GOODWIN BROWN; W. N. BULLARD, M.D.; G. C. CAMERON, M.D.; J. CLIFTON EDGAR, M.D.; G. J. EDWORDS, ESQ.; E. D. FISHER, M.D.; J. C. JOHNSON, M.D.; D. S. LAMB, M.D.; H. P. LOOMIS, M.D.; DAVID MURRAY, ESQ.; W. B. OUTTEN, M.D.; ROSWELL PARK, M.D.; W. T. PARKER, M.D.; J. PARMENTER, M.D.; HON. WM. A. POSTE; IRVING C. ROSSE, M.D.; E. V. STODDARD, M.D.; EDWARD S. WOOD, M. D.; GEORGE WOOLSEY, M.D.; J. H. WOODWARD, M.D.

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY
8188
SAN FRANCISCO

VOLUME THREE

NEW YORK
WILLIAM WOOD & COMPANY
1896

B

YALE LIBRARY

COPYRIGHT, 1896,
BY WILLIAM WOOD AND COMPANY.

PRESS OF
THE PUBLISHERS' PRINTING COMPANY
132-138 W. FOURTEENTH ST.
NEW YORK.

W83
v.3
1896

CONTENTS.

PAGE

FORENSIC MEDICINE (*continued*).

BIOLOGICAL (continued), ... 1

Vision and Audition in their Medico-Legal Relations. J. H. WOODWARD, ... 3

Medico-Legal Aspect of Insurance. D. MURRAY AND G. J. EDWORDS, ... 136

Insanity in its Relations to Medical Jurisprudence. E. D. FISHER, ... 171

Mental Unsoundness in its Legal Relations. T. C. BECKER, . 371

Care and Custody of Incompetent Persons. GOODWIN BROWN, 601

Table of Cases Cited in this Volume, ... 665

Index, ... 685

FORENSIC MEDICINE.

BIOLOGICAL.

(*Continued.*)

THE MEDICO-LEGAL RELATIONS

OF

VISION AND AUDITION,

AND OF

INJURIES TO THE EYE AND EAR.

BY

J. H. WOODWARD, B.S., M.D.,

Professor of Ophthalmology and Laryngology in the University of Vermont; Ophthalmologist to the Mary Fletcher Hospital, etc.

VISION AND AUDITION AND INJURIES TO THE EYE AND EAR.

CHAPTER I.

ON THE ACUTENESS OF VISION.

THE acuteness of vision of an eye-witness may have an important bearing upon the credibility of his testimony. It may have an important bearing on those cases of alleged direct or indirect injury to the visual apparatus, in which the simulating plaintiff is actuated by revengeful motives, or by a dishonest desire for pecuniary remuneration for his alleged hurt. It must be taken into consideration likewise in those cases of actual injury, direct or indirect, to the visual apparatus, in which justice would naturally side with the injured party, to the end that the degree of his incapacity may be correctly determined.

The visual apparatus comprises the eyeball together with its extrinsic muscles, the optic nerves, the chiasm, the optic tracts, and the centres of visual perception in the brain. Acuteness of vision depends upon the integrity of these structures. The eyeball is really a living camera. Upon its retina is projected an instantaneous and transient photograph of the objects seen. By virtue of the transmission of such impressions upon the retina to the centres of vision in the occipital lobes, by the optic nerves, the chiasm, the optic tracts, and the prolongations of the optic tracts, the retinal image of the object under observation is perceived. If the retinal images be true and if impressions of them be properly transmitted to a normal visual centre, the perceptions of the object will be correct, so far as concerns the visual apparatus. It often happens, however, that the retinal images are not clear and distinct; under certain conditions they do not represent the thing as it is. The reason for this must often be sought in the state of the refraction of the eye.

By refraction of the eye is signified "the influence of the

ocular media upon a cone or beam of light, whereby a normal or emmetropic eye produces a proper image of the object upon the retina."[1] The ocular media which cause such a deviation of a cone or a beam of light are the cornea, the aqueous humor, the crystalline lens, and the vitreous humor. They are spoken of as the "dioptric system" of the eye. These media together constitute a lens which, in the normal, emmetropic or ideal eye, cause parallel rays of light (*i.e.*, rays derived from infinitely distant objects) to unite at a focus in the retina.[2] "From near objects, the rays proceed in a diverging direction, and their point of union in the normal eye, consequently, lies behind the retina, and yet the organ is capable of perceiving near objects also accurately. It has, therefore, the further power of bringing divergent rays into union on the retina. Now this power of bringing at will rays of different direction into union on the retina is the power of accommodation of the eye. . . . The change consists in an alteration of the form of the lens; above all, its anterior surface becomes more convex and approaches the cornea."[3] This alteration in the form of the lens is brought about by contraction of the ciliary muscle by which the zone of Zinn, or the suspensory ligament of the lens, is relaxed, when, by virtue of its own elasticity, the lens becomes more refracting. The accommodation is all positive. If we paralyze the ciliary muscle with atropine, for example, we can then accurately measure the refraction of the eye; the dioptric system is then adjusted for its far point.

The emmetropic, or normal, eye is not often seen. Emmetropic eyes are eyes in which, when they are at rest, parallel rays of light, that is, rays of light proceeding from infinitely distant objects, are brought to a focus on the retina; and in which the power to adjust the eye for near objects remains sufficiently good to enable the eye to read type as small as Jaeger No. 1, at 22 centimetres distance, until the patient is forty or forty-five years old. Such an eye is endowed with normal refraction and accommodation. And, inasmuch as emmetropia is relatively uncommon, there are deviations from the normal refraction. The varieties of abnormal refraction, or ametropia, are hypermetropia, astigmatism, and myopia, and

[1] Gould's "Medical Dictionary."
[2] Donders: "Refraction and Accommodation," p. 8.
[3] *Ibid.*

various combinations of astigmatism with hypermetropia and myopia.

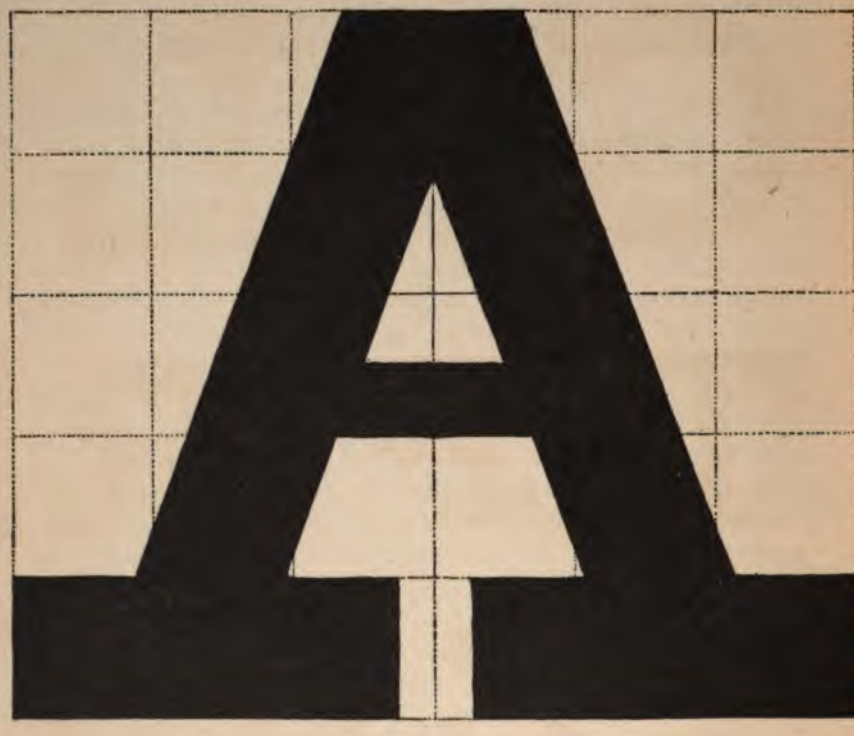
The greatest number of eyes are hypermetropic. The antero-posterior diameter of such eyes is shorter than that of emmetropic eyes. In technical terms, the "retina is situated between the dioptric system and the principal focus of the eye."[1] Very many eyes are astigmatic. By astigmatism we mean a "state of irregular refraction of an eye, usually congenital, in which the rays of light diverging from a single point cannot be brought to a focus at a point on the retina; an asymmetrical condition of the refraction of different meridians of the eye."[2] "Regular astigmatism is that error of refraction which is due to a difference in the focal distance of the two principal meridians, and depends mainly on the curvature of the cornea."[3] Simple hypermetropic astigmatism is that variety of astigmatism in which one of the meridians of the cornea is emmetropic and the other is hypermetropic in their effect upon the refraction of light. Simple myopic astigmatism is that variety of astigmatism in which one of the meridians of the cornea is emmetropic and the other myopic in their effect upon the refraction of light. Compound hypermetropic astigmatism is simple hypermetropic astigmatism plus hypermetropia. Compound myopic astigmatism is simple myopic astigmatism plus myopia. Mixed astigmatism is that variety of astigmatism in which one of the principal meridians of the cornea is hypermetropic and the other myopic in its effect upon the refraction of light. Astigmatism of these varieties is regular. It may be irregular. Irregular astigmatism may be normal or abnormal. "Normal irregular astigmatism is due to irregularity in the structure and density of the crystalline lens, so that an aberration of the rays occurs as they traverse the different sectors, in consequence of which there is an imperfect coincidence of the images of the different sectors. Its chief symptom is polyopia."[4] "Abnormal irregular astigmatism is due to some defect in the curvature of the cornea, or to some irregularity in the structure or position of the crystalline lens."[5] Astigmatism may be acquired, and then it is "dependent on flattening of the cornea from inflammatory

[1] Landolt: "Traité complet d'Ophthalmologie," iii., p. 126.
[2] Foster's "Encyclop. Med. Dic."
[3] *Ibid.*
[4] *Ibid.*
[5] *Ibid.*

SNELLEN'S TEST TYPES.

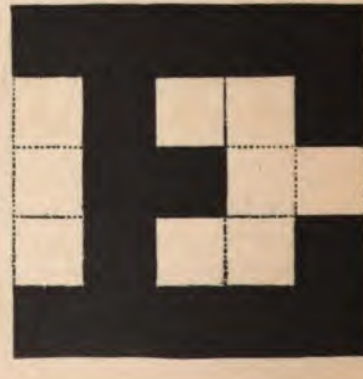
CC.

60 M.



C.

30 M.



LXX.
20 M.

L.
15 M.

XL.
12 M.

XXX.
9 M.

XX.
6 M.

changes or irregular apposition of the flaps after a cataract extraction, or in dislocation of the crystalline lens."[1] Any wound, or other solution of continuity, of the cornea may cause astigmatism. Myopia, or "short sight," is that state of the refraction of the eye, in which, in the great majority of instances, the antero-posterior diameter is longer than in emmetropia. This is axial myopia. The most comprehensive definition of myopia is that state of refraction in which the retina lies beyond the focus of the dioptric system.[2]

The acuteness of vision of any eye is measured by testing the reading power of each eye separately. Charts of test types are used, and that devised by Snellen, based upon the deduction that the minimum visual angle is one minute, has been generally adopted by ophthalmologists. The chart is hung upon the wall in a good light—not direct sunlight—at 20 feet, or 6 metres from the patient. A screen is then placed before one eye, and, with both eyes open, the patient is directed to begin at the top and read as many letters upon the chart as he can.

If he is able to distinguish only the first letter, A, of the test types with either eye, the acuteness of vision of each eye is $\frac{20}{CC}$, or $\frac{6}{60}$ $\left(V = \frac{20}{CC}, \text{ or } \frac{6}{60}\right)$. If he can read the following two letters, but none below that line, then $V = \frac{20}{C}$, or $\frac{6}{30}$. That is to say, the patient at 20 feet can read only those letters of the test types which he should be able to read at 200 feet and 100 feet respectively, if his vision were normal. The numerator of the fraction always denotes the distance between the patient and the test types, and the denominator denotes the lowest line of type that he is able to read with each eye separately. The same fraction may stand for the acuteness of vision of both eyes; but frequently the vision of one eye is more acute than that of the other.

When $V = \frac{20}{XX}$, or $\frac{6}{6}$, it is normal; that is, the patient must be able to read at 20 feet letters analogous to those in the $\frac{20}{XX}$ line of the chart used in the test. A person having nor-

[1] Foster's "Encyclop. Med. Dic." [2] Landolt, *l.c.*, p. 118.

mal vision may read also the letters in the lowest line and even still smaller type; but vision is not normal unless in a good light one can read at 20 feet the letters in the $\frac{20}{XX}$ line at least.

When vision is not normal, the cause for it may be found in some failure of transparency of the refracting media, or in some morbid state of the cornea, aqueous, iris, crystalline lens, vitreous, ciliary bodies, retina, choroid, or optic discs. The ophthalmoscope will inform an experienced person whether one, or more, of those structures is in a morbid state. Vision is below normal also when the retro-bulbar portion of the optic nerves, the chiasm, the optic tracts, and the cerebral centres from which the nerve fibres composing the optic tracts are derived, are diseased or injured. The ophthalmoscope may not reveal anything denoting the condition of those deeply seated structures until some weeks or months have passed; in certain cases no morbid changes in the ophthalmoscopic image are ever observed.

When the visual apparatus is in a healthy condition, acuteness of vision depends upon the refraction of the eye. Emmetropic eyes have normal vision. Hypermetropic eyes may have normal vision, and they may not. In order that an hypermetropic eye may have normal vision, a contraction of the ciliary muscle must take place to increase the sphericity of the crystalline lens enough to compensate for the shortness of the antero-posterior diameter of the eyeball, by advancing the focus of the dioptric system until it lies in the retina. So long as the ciliary muscle is able to accomplish this fact, the hypermetropic eye will have normal vision.

Low degrees of regular hypermetropic astigmatism may be overcome by an analogous process; but, in general, the acuteness of vision in astigmatic eyes is below normal. Irregular astigmatism always reduces the acuteness of vision to a marked degree. Myopic eyes never have normal acuteness of vision (20 feet test).

Recognition of things by sight depends not only upon the size of the object, but also, to a certain extent, upon the observer's familiarity with the general aspect of the object, and upon the brilliancy of the object. It is well known that persons whose vision is imperfect are able to recognize things lying

beyond their range of distinct vision by virtue of their familiarity with the general characteristics of those things. A woman is thus distinguished from a man by her dress. And a near-sighted person will recognize an acquaintance by his walk, by some peculiarity of dress, or by some other mark of individuality, notwithstanding that the person's features are absolutely indistinguishable to the observer at such a distance.

Brilliant objects, such as stars, flames, polished surfaces, etc., are visible at much greater distances than other objects having the same size and form.

To ascertain whether failure in acuteness of vision be due to an error of refraction or not, ophthalmologists employ four methods:

1. Ophthalmoscopic examination. The ophthalmoscope will reveal the existence of morbid changes in the structures of the eyeball which take part in the visual act. It may be used to objectively determine the refraction of the dioptric system. The accommodation (ciliary muscle) of the patient must be paralyzed, and the accommodation of the observer relaxed, to make this method of observation reliable; and, even under such conditions, the error will amount to 0.50 or 0.75 of a diopter.

2. The fundus-reflex test, or retinoscopy. This is an objective method of determining the state of the refraction. Unless the patient's accommodation be paralyzed, the results of this examination are not to be relied upon, in many cases. The error, when the accommodation is paralyzed, will be 0.25 of a diopter at least, and it may be 0.75 D.

3. Javal's ophthalmometer is used to measure astigmatism objectively. It gives an approximately accurate idea of the curvature of the cornea, from which is derived a probable diagnosis of the amount and of the axis of the astigmatism. It is, in general, the more useful the greater the astigmatic error. But the ophthalmometer does not inform us whether the astigmatism is hypermetropic, or myopic, or mixed. It reveals irregular corneal astigmatism with great certainty.

4. The refraction is measured also by the subjective method. The patient is required to read with each eye separately the chart of test types as far as he is able. Then convex (+) spherical lenses are placed before the eye under examination, begin-

ning with a weak lens. The strongest convex lens through which the eye can read clearly the $\frac{20}{XX}$ line of types is the measure of its manifest hypermetropia. An emmetropic eye will reject + glasses. When hypermetropia is all latent, the eye may reject glasses. By paralyzing the ciliary muscle with atropine, the total hypermetropia will be revealed and may then be measured. An emmetropic eye, while under the influence of atropine, should read clearly the $\frac{20}{XX}$ line of types. Should the patient fail to read the normal line of types with the convex spherical lenses, convex cylindrical lenses should be tried; and the strongest convex cylinder through which he can read the normal line of types is the measure of his manifest hypermetropic astigmatism. Should neither the convex spherical nor the convex cylindrical lenses alone give him the proper acuteness of vision, combinations of them may do so; and the strongest combination of such lenses is the measure of the manifest compound hypermetropic astigmatism. These various errors may be absolutely measured by the same method, while the patient's accommodation is paralyzed by atropine.

Should the patient reject convex lenses of all varieties and strengths, the eye may be tested with concave (−) lenses; and the weakest concave lens with which the normal line is clearly read is the measure of the myopia. Concave cylinders should be tried, and the weakest of them that gives normal vision is the measure of the myopic astigmatism. Combinations of concave spherical with concave cylindrical lenses may be required to raise vision to normal, and the weakest combination is the measure of the compound myopic astigmatism. In myopia and myopic astigmatism, the accommodation may be in a state of spasm. This will exaggerate the error of refraction. To obviate this source of error, atropine should be used until the ciliary muscle is paralyzed.

The diagnosis of astigmatism is not completed, however, until the eye can see the test dial correctly at twenty feet. The test dial is a chart made like a clock-face with three parallel black lines running from each hour toward the centre. A clear space is left about the centre to avoid confusing the patient. The width of each line is such as to subtend a visual angle of one minute.

It is by no means always possible to raise the acuteness of

vision to normal with glasses, even though the visual apparatus be perfectly healthy. Very many hypermetropic, myopic, and astigmatic eyes fall into this category. Nevertheless a combination of the four methods of examination will reveal the state of the refraction of any eye. If the error of refraction be considerable, and the acuteness of vision be not raised to normal, or if it be not materially improved by correcting lenses, it is highly probable that the dulness of sight is a consequence of the error of refraction and nothing else. The burden of proof that it is due to something else should always rest upon those who entertain that proposition.

Having measured the acuteness of vision for distant objects, the power of the eye to see objects close at hand must be tested.

Jaeger No. 1.

A Fox being caught in a trap, was glad to compound for his neck by leaving his tail behind him; but upon coming abroad into the world, he began to be so sensible of the disgrace such a defect would bring upon him, that he almost wished he had died rather than come away without it. However, resolving to make the best of a bad matter, he called a meeting of the rest of the Foxes, and proposed that all should follow his example. "You have no notion," said he, "of the ease and comfort with which I now move about: I could never have believed it if I had not tried it myself; but really when one comes to reason upon it, a tail is such an ugly, inconvenient, unnecessary appendage, that the only wonder is that, as Foxes, we could have put up with it so long. I propose, therefore, my worthy brethren, that you all profit by the experience that I am most willing to afford you, and that all Foxes from this day forward cut off their tails." Upon this one of the oldest stepped forward, and said, "I rather think,

Jaeger No. 2.

my friend, that you would not have advised us to part with our tails, if there were any chance of recovering your own." A Man who had been bitten by a Dog was going about asking who could cure him. One that met him said, "Sir, if you would be cured, take a bit of bread and dip it in the blood of the wound, and give it to the dog that bit you." The man smiled, and said, "If I were to follow your advice, I should be bitten by all the dogs in the city." He who proclaims himself ready to buy up his enemies will never want a supply of them. A certain man had the good fortune to possess a Goose that laid him a Golden Egg every day. But dissatisfied with so slow an income, and thinking to seize the whole treasure at once, he killed the Goose, and cutting her open, found her—just what any other goose

Snellen D = 0,5,

The Gallic tribes fell off, and sued for peace. Even the Batavians became weary of the hopeless contest, while fortune, after much capricious hovering, settled at last upon the Roman side. Had Civilis been successful, he would have been deified; but his misfortunes, at last, made him odious in spite of his heroism. But the Batavian was not a man to be crushed, nor had he lived so long in the Roman service to be outmatched in politics by the barbarous Germans. He was not to be sacrificed as a peace-offering to revengeful Rome. Watching from beyond the Rhine the progress of defection and the decay of national

Snellen D = 0,6.

enthusiasm, he determined to be beforehand with those who were now his enemies. He accepted the offer of negotiation from Cerialis. The Roman general was eager to grant a full pardon, and to re-enlist so brave a soldier in the service of the empire. A colloquy was agreed upon. The bridge across the Nabalia was broken asunder in the middle, and Cerialis and Civilis met upon the severed sides. The placid stream by which Roman enterprise had connected the waters of the Rhine with the lake of Flevo, flowed between the imperial

This power depends upon the state of the accommodation. A normal, emmetropic eye should be able to read fine print, Jaeger No. 1 or Snellen 1½, as near as 8 inches, or 22 centimeters, from the eye.

The error of refraction being corrected, nearly all hypermetropic and astigmatic eyes (irregular astigmatism excepted) will be able to do the same. Myopic eyes, in which the error is not excessive, will be able to read as well, either without or with correcting lenses. These statements will hold good until the patient has passed his fortieth year. All eyes then begin to experience the results of the change in accommodation power known as presbyopia, or "old sight." This is a normal physiological change, which makes it difficult, or impossible, for the patient to read fine type or to distinguish small objects at 8 inches, or 22 centimetres, from his eye. He holds his work farther from his eye, and places the lamp between his eye and the book or paper. But sometimes the ciliary muscle is strong enough and the lens is elastic enough to enable the patient to overcome the effects of this physiological alteration in his visual apparatus, even until he is forty-eight or fifty years old. His eye is presbyopic, nevertheless. Now and then such eyes suddenly lose their power to read newspaper type at any distance without the aid of convex lenses. In many cases, no very definite reason can be given for this *sudden* failure of the accommodation.

Presbyopia develops regularly in every eye. At forty-five years it amounts to S+1 D.; at fifty years it is S+2 D; at fifty-five years, S+3 D; at sixty years, S+4 D. In practice it is found that after sixty years the presbyopia does not increase with regularity.

The acuteness of vision for near work, therefore, undergoes a physiological modification. An emmetrope, for example, in order to see small print as well at fifty years of age as he did at forty, must use a spherical convex lens of 2 D. His presbyopia must be corrected. The same is true of those whose eyes are hypermetropic or astigmatic. The amount of the presbyopia must be added to the patient's distance glasses to give him the correcting glass for near work. Myopes may not experience any of the effects of presbyopia until later in life; because myopia compensates for equal amounts of presbyopia. A myope,

vision to normal with glasses, even though the visual apparatus be perfectly healthy. Very many hypermetropic, myopic, and astigmatic eyes fall into this category. Nevertheless a combination of the four methods of examination will reveal the state of the refraction of any eye. If the error of refraction be considerable, and the acuteness of vision be not raised to normal, or if it be not materially improved by correcting lenses, it is highly probable that the dulness of sight is a consequence of the error of refraction and nothing else. The burden of proof that it is due to something else should always rest upon those who entertain that proposition.

Having measured the acuteness of vision for distant objects, the power of the eye to see objects close at hand must be tested.

Jaeger No. 1.

A Fox being caught in a trap, was glad to compound for his neck by leaving his tail behind him; but upon coming abroad into the world, he began to be so sensible of the disgrace such a defect would bring upon him, that he almost wished he had died rather than come away without it. However, resolving to make the best of a bad matter, he called a meeting of the rest of the Foxes, and proposed that all should follow his example. "You have no notion," said he, "of the ease and comfort with which I may move about: I could never have believed it if I had not tried it myself; but really when one comes to reason upon it, a tail is such an ugly, inconvenient, unnecessary appendage, that the only wonder is that, as Foxes, we could have put up with it so long. I propose, therefore, my worthy brethren, that you all profit by the experience that I am most willing to afford you, and that all Foxes from this day forward cut off their tails." Upon this one of the oldest stepped forward, and said, "I rather think,

Jaeger No. 2.

my friend, that you would not have advised us to part with our tails, if there were any chance of recovering your own." A Man who had been bitten by a Dog was going about asking who could cure him. One that met him said, "Sir, if you would be cured, take a bit of bread and dip it in the blood of the wound, and give it to the dog that bit you." The man smiled, and said, "If I were to follow your advice, I should be bitten by all the dogs in the city." He who proclaims himself ready to buy up his enemies will never want a supply of them. A certain man had the good fortune to possess a Goose that laid him a Golden Egg every day. But dissatisfied with so slow an income, and thinking to seize the whole treasure at once, he killed the Goose, and cutting her open, found her—just what any other goose

Snellen D = 0,5,

The Gallic tribes fell off, and sued for peace. Even the Batavians became weary of the hopeless contest, while fortune, after much capricious hovering, settled at last upon the Roman side. Had Civilis been successful, he would have been deified; but his misfortunes, at last, made him odious in spite of his heroism. But the Batavian was not a man to be crushed, nor had he lived so long in the Roman service to be outmatched in politics by the barbarous Germans. He was not to be sacrificed as a peace-offering to revengeful Rome. Watching from beyond the Rhine the progress of defection and the decay of national

Snellen D = 0,6.

enthusiasm, he determined to be beforehand with those who were now his enemies. He accepted the offer of negotiation from Cerialis. The Roman general was eager to grant a full pardon, and to re-enlist so brave a soldier in the service of the empire. A colloquy was agreed upon. The bridge across the Nabalia was broken asunder in the middle, and Cerialis and Civilis met upon the severed sides. The placid stream by which Roman enterprise had connected the waters of the Rhine with the lake of Flevo, flowed between the imperial

vision to normal with glasses, even though the visual apparatus be perfectly healthy. Very many hypermetropic, myopic, and astigmatic eyes fall into this category. Nevertheless a combination of the four methods of examination will reveal the state of the refraction of any eye. If the error of refraction be considerable, and the acuteness of vision be not raised to normal, or if it be not materially improved by correcting lenses, it is highly probable that the dulness of sight is a consequence of the error of refraction and nothing else. The burden of proof that it is due to something else should always rest upon those who entertain that proposition.

Having measured the acuteness of vision for distant objects, the power of the eye to see objects close at hand must be tested.

Jaeger No. 1.

A Fox being caught in a trap, was glad to compound for his neck by leaving his tail behind him; but upon coming abroad into the world, he began to be so sensible of the disgrace such a defect would bring upon him, that he almost wished he had died rather than come away without it. However, resolving to make the best of a bad matter, he called a meeting of the rest of the Foxes, and proposed that all should follow his example. "You have no notion," said he, "of the ease and comfort with which I now move about: I could never have believed it if I had not tried it myself; but really when one comes to reason upon it, a tail is such an ugly, inconvenient, unnecessary appendage, that the only wonder is that, as Foxes, we could have put up with it so long. I propose, therefore, my worthy brethren, that you all profit by the experience that I am most willing to afford you, and that all Foxes from this day forward cut off their tails." Upon this one of the oldest stepped forward, and said, "I rather think,

Jaeger No. 2.

my friend, that you would not have advised us to part with our tails, if there were any chance of recovering your own." A Man who had been bitten by a Dog was going about asking who could cure him. One that met him said, "Sir, if you would be cured, take a bit of bread and dip it in the blood of the wound, and give it to the dog that bit you." The man smiled, and said, "If I were to follow your advice, I should be bitten by all the dogs in the city." He who proclaims himself ready to buy up his enemies will never want a supply of them. A certain man had the good fortune to possess a Goose that laid him a Golden Egg every day. But dissatisfied with so slow an income, and thinking to seize the whole treasure at once, he killed the Goose, and cutting her open found her—just what any other goose

Snellen D = 0,5,

The Gallic tribes fell off, and sued for peace. Even the Batavians became weary of the hopeless contest, while fortune, after much capricious hovering, settled at last upon the Roman side. Had Civilis been successful, he would have been deified; but his misfortunes, at last, made him odious in spite of his heroism. But the Batavian was not a man to be crushed, nor had he lived so long in the Roman service to be outmatched in politics by the barbarous Germans. He was not to be sacrificed as a peace-offering to revengeful Rome. Watching from beyond the Rhine the progress of defection and the decay of national

Snellen D = 0,6.

enthusiasm, he determined to be beforehand with those who were now his enemies. He accepted the offer of negotiation from Cerialis. The Roman general was eager to grant a full pardon, and to re-enlist so brave a soldier in the service of the empire. A colloquy was agreed upon. The bridge across the Nabalia was broken asunder in the middle, and Cerialis and Civilis met upon the severed sides. The placid stream by which Roman enterprise had connected the waters of the Rhine with the lake of Flevo, flowed between the imperial

This power depends upon the state of the accommodation. A normal, emmetropic eye should be able to read fine print, Jaeger No. 1 or Snellen 1½, as near as 8 inches, or 22 centimeters, from the eye.

The error of refraction being corrected, nearly all hypermetropic and astigmatic eyes (irregular astigmatism excepted) will be able to do the same. Myopic eyes, in which the error is not excessive, will be able to read as well, either without or with correcting lenses. These statements will hold good until the patient has passed his fortieth year. All eyes then begin to experience the results of the change in accommodation power known as presbyopia, or "old sight." This is a normal physiological change, which makes it difficult, or impossible, for the patient to read fine type or to distinguish small objects at 8 inches, or 22 centimetres, from his eye. He holds his work farther from his eye, and places the lamp between his eye and the book or paper. But sometimes the ciliary muscle is strong enough and the lens is elastic enough to enable the patient to overcome the effects of this physiological alteration in his visual apparatus, even until he is forty-eight or fifty years old. His eye is presbyopic, nevertheless. Now and then such eyes suddenly lose their power to read newspaper type at any distance without the aid of convex lenses. In many cases, no very definite reason can be given for this *sudden* failure of the accommodation.

Presbyopia develops regularly in every eye. At forty-five years it amounts to S+1 D.; at fifty years it is S+2 D; at fifty-five years, S+3 D; at sixty years, S+4 D. In practice it is found that after sixty years the presbyopia does not increase with regularity.

The acuteness of vision for near work, therefore, undergoes a physiological modification. An emmetrope, for example, in order to see small print as well at fifty years of age as he did at forty, must use a spherical convex lens of 2 D. His presbyopia must be corrected. The same is true of those whose eyes are hypermetropic or astigmatic. The amount of the presbyopia must be added to the patient's distance glasses to give him the correcting glass for near work. Myopes may not experience any of the effects of presbyopia until later in life; because myopia compensates for equal amounts of presbyopia. A myope,

fifty years of age, wearing a spherical − 2 D. would read Jaeger No. 1 easily at 22 cm. without glasses. But at fifty-five years the same person would require S+1 D. to enable him to see as well.[1]

The extrinsic muscles of the eyeball play an important rôle in the visual act. The acuteness of binocular vision is diminished whenever these muscles are not sufficiently balanced to adjust both eyes properly for the object under observation. If the image of the object do not fall upon corresponding portions of the fundus of the two eyes, the object will not be seen clearly (contours blurred), or it will be seen double (diplopia). This condition is often more distressing to the patient than failure of vision due to an error of refraction. It is probable that the normal power of the internal recti is sufficient to overcome the effect of from 30 to 40 prism degrees; that the normal power of the external recti is about 8 prism degrees; that that of the superior and inferior recti ranges from 1 to 4 prism degrees.

When the external recti are relatively weak and the internal recti are strong, there is a tendency of the visual lines to meet before they should—esophoria; when the interni are weak and the externi relatively stronger than they should be, there is a tendency to divergence of the visual lines—exophoria. When a superior or an inferior rectus muscle is relatively weaker than its antagonist, there is developed a tendency of one visual line to rise above the other—hyperphoria, which may be either right or left, according to the case. These conditions are grouped under the term heterophoria. When the deviations are more marked; that is, when there is an obvious turning of the eye, we have, for those cases in which the eye turns in, the term esotropia (internal strabismus); for those in which the eye turns out, exotropia; for those in which the eye turns up, hypertropia; or in which it turns down, hypotropia. These conditions are designated as cases of heterotropia.

To measure heterophoria, prisms are used, by means of which lateral or vertical diplopia is produced at will by the observer. Having developed the diplopia, the amount of deviation of the images from the normal position is measured by the number of

[1] For those who cannot read, charts of numbers, or charts of peculiar figures, are used for the 20 feet test; and for near-testing the patient may be required to designate small dots, or to thread needles, etc.

prism degrees required to restore the images to a proper relation, one to another. Heterotropia may be measured in prism degrees also in a similar manner when it is possible to develop diplopia. It is not always possible to develop diplopia in these cases. When the heterotropia is due to recent paralysis of one of the extrinsic ocular muscles, diplopia is always present, if the vision of each eye is fairly good. The patient may learn to suppress the false image. A red glass placed before one of the eyes will enable the observer to distinguish the image projected upon that eye, so that the deviation of the lines of vision may be measured.

The subjective symptoms commonly associated with errors of refraction and heterophoria are indistinct vision, blurring of vision, pain in the eyes, pain in the orbit behind the eyes; frontal and temporal headache, which may be more marked on one side than the other; general headache; "sick" headache; "sun" headache; "blind" headache; occipital headache; pain in the back of the neck; confusion of mind; blind spells; and vertigo. Stevens and other writers have claimed that chorea and epilepsy are caused by errors of refraction and by heterophoria. It must be recollected that, at the time of testing the patient's eyes, vision may be normal, and the patient honestly unconscious that his eyes are the cause of his symptoms. Frequently it may be impossible to state positively that the symptoms are due to eye-strain. Then, in order to make a positive proof of the matter, the ocular errors must be corrected, and, if they have caused the disturbances, the symptoms will disappear after a few weeks or a few months.

Hypermetropia, and astigmatism not due to lesions of the cornea, are congenital. They do not change materially during life. Latent hypermetropia and latent astigmatism may become manifest and so give rise to the idea that the error of refraction has increased.[1]

Myopia is seldom congenital, but generally develops in early childhood. The development of it is favored by school work, and other severe usage of the eyes at short range, by the diseases of childhood, and by anything that undermines the bodily vigor.

[1] In a few cases that have come under the writer's observation it has seemed highly probable, if not certain, that an astigmatic error has actually increased.

All cases are more or less progressive; but the progress of the trouble in the majority of cases ceases spontaneously, or may be made to cease. Cases of myopia must be divided into two categories: the malignant and the non-malignant. Non-malignant myopia of low degree may be a positive advantage to one whose business calls for continuous use of the eyes at short range. Malignant myopia, on the contrary, is a condition involving great danger of ultimate blindness. The eye is not healthy; the myopia becomes more and more marked until it is excessive; the range of vision becomes progressively smaller. Injuries affect such eyes much more seriously than others. Even slight contusions may accelerate the increase of the myopia, or dislocate the lens, or cause hemorrhage into the vitreous, or precipitate a detachment of the retina.

The muscle of accommodation of one, or of both eyes may suffer from paresis or paralysis. The eye will then be adjusted for its far point. Both eyes will not work in harmony and the patient may be greatly annoyed by his condition. On testing such an eye it will be found that the power to adjust the eye for objects at varying distances is gone. The causes of this condition are as follows: Diphtheria, typhoid fever, articular rheumatism, syphilis, diabetes, parasitic diseases, poisoning by raw sausages and tainted meat, lesions of the central nervous system involving the nuclei or trunk of the third nerve, and vascular disturbances in the same region, digestive troubles, fracture of the skull, locomotor ataxia, anything that weakens bodily vigor, *e.g.*, essential anæmia, and anæmia developed by acute diseases, lactation, alcoholism, venereal excesses, masturbation, uterine lesions, abundant hemorrhages, etc., herpes zoster ophthalmicus, traumatisms of the eye or orbital region, sympathetic ophthalmia, glaucoma, and neuralgia of the dental branches of the fifth nerve, atropine and other mydriatics.[1]

[1] Landolt: "Refraction and Accommodation," translated by Culver, 1886, p. 551 *et seq.*

CHAPTER II.

SIMULATED BLINDNESS.

A PERSON may claim that he is partially or totally blind in one or in both eyes in consequence of some injury. If ophthalmoscopic evidence of a lesion in the visual apparatus sufficient to materially weaken or totally abolish the function of the eye or the eyes be found, the patient's statement regarding his ability to see may be accepted. But when no ophthalmoscopic evidence of a lesion is manifest, doubt of the truth of the patient's statement should be enterained.

By *amblyopia* is signified partial blindness, where there are no lesions demonstrable with the ophthalmoscope; by *amaurosis* is signified total blindness where there are no lesions demonstrable with the ophthalmoscope. In this connection, then, we have to deal with simulated amblyopia of one, or of both eyes; and simulated amaurosis of one, or of both eyes.

Monocular amblyopia or amaurosis is most frequently simulated. The problem that confronts the examiner in such cases is to prove that the malingerer actually uses the eye which he claims is amblyopic or amaurotic. The objective evidence bearing upon the question is as follows: The pupil of a healthy eye contracts in response to the stimulus of light; also when the eye accommodates, and during the act of convergence of the visual lines. It does not necessarily follow, however, that the existence of these reactions is proof positive that the eye is not affected. The converse proposition, however, is often true. The pupil of myopes is generally large (semi-dilated). The pupil is dilated when the light is faint, during and after great muscular exertion, and in real amaurosis.[1] Some persons can dilate or contract their pupils at will. In old age, in hypermetropia, in near vision and in strong light, the pupil is contracted. Observation of the tendency to fixation of the eye in monocular and in binocular vision will afford useful evidence regarding the function of the organ. Place a screen before the eye in question and in-

[1] *Vide* p. 27.

struct the patient to look at an object, which is caused to move toward and recede from the eye; if, when the screen is removed, the affected eye fixes the object, it is probable that the eye is a useful one. The same is true when a prism of 8 or 10 degrees base out is placed before the eye. If, under such conditions, the eye turn so as to overcome the action of the prism, while the sound eye fixes a given object, it is probable that the eye is a useful one.

One may cover the sound eye and attempt to surprise the patient by thrusting a finger toward the eye said to be affected. Should the patient wink or cringe, the eye is not blind.

The examiner may seem to devote his whole attention to the sound eye, determining its acuteness of vision, its refraction, and its range of accommodation. The patient's attention is thus diverted from the alleged amaurotic eye. He is then to read fine print; both with and without glasses. Finally, without exciting his suspicion, a strong convex glass (6 D.) is set before the sound eye, while the type is held at the usual distance for reading, *i.e.*, beyond the focus of the convex lens. If the patient still reads the type, he reads with the eye said to be affected.

Among the tests for detecting simulated monocular amblyopia and amaurosis are those in which prisms are used to produce double vision. If a prism be placed before one eye and the patient see two images, for example of a candle, he must have used both eyes. The experiment may be modified to confuse a person acquainted with the test. Thus, exclude the eye in question from vision, and place a prism over the sound eye so that the edge shall bisect the pupil. This will cause monocular diplopia. Then, without attracting the patient's attention, remove the screen from the other eye, at the same time moving the prism so as to cover the pupil of the sound eye completely. Should the patient still see double, he is using both eyes.

In some respects the stereoscope is one of the most useful agents employed in detecting simulated blindness. Prisms are an essential part of the construction of this instrument. The following from Kugel[1] indicates the method of its use:

"Vieusse gives the following method: Two wafers of different color, whose distance from one another is a centimetre, are

[1] "Ueber die Diagnose von Simulation der Amaurose und Amblyopie," Wiener med. Wochenschrift, 1889.

brought under the stereoscope. With this small distance of one from the other, the one lying on the right hand of the person examined appears on the left side and the other on the right side. Suppose there were a red one on the right and on the left a blue wafer, so now the blue wafer will appear on the right side, the red wafer on the left side. If now, for example, we have to do with an individual who pretends left-sided amaurosis, the case can be of two sorts: either the person admits that he sees both the wafers; then the simulation is *eo ipso* proved; or, he admits that he sees only one wafer. In the last case he would naturally confess to seeing the blue wafer, since this is on that side which corresponds to the professedly strong eye, viz., the right side, and he betrays himself thereby, so to speak, through a double lie. He denies an existence of the red wafer which he yet must see with the professedly strong-sided eye, but on the other side he professes to see the blue wafer which he yet can only see with the professedly amaurotic eye.

"In order, according to this method, to determine even the degree of the sharpness of vision, I have with advantage employed two short words, as for example *herz-mein*. The pretender has either read *mein-herz*, or asserts that he sees only one of these words, that very one indeed which he could have seen only with the professedly bad eye."

Baudry[1] gives the following: "Our test is designed to determine the visual acuteness of the amblyopic eye or the one that is supposed to be so. We accomplish this with typographical characters disposed as will be stated. Let us suppose that upon each half of a card like those which are employed for stereoscopic tests one has commenced by tracing the same letters arranged identically in the same way and separated by perfectly equal intervals in the two tests, in such a manner that the latter shall be a faithful fac-simile one of the other without the least difference of stereoscopic parallels. Let us imagine, finally, that one suppresses upon each portion a certain number of letters or entire words taken by chance, or a combination of forms of letters, having care always that the suppressions made upon each of the lists shall not be reproduced upon the other. The place of the suppressed parts should be left blank. One may

[1] "Simulation de l'Amaurose et de l'Amblyopie, des principaux moyens de la devoiler," Bull. scient. du Department du Nord, Nos. 8, 9, 1882.

prepare in the same way ten cards of which the characters shall have progressively increasing dimensions calculated in a manner to represent ten numbers of the typographical decimal scale, so that they may be made to serve as a measure of the acuteness of vision in tenths. Several numbers may be grouped on the same card. These cards being placed in turn in the stereoscope, the simulator is invited to read the words or to pick out the letters which he sees, commencing with the last number—that corresponds to V=0.1. When he can read only the characters traced upon one of the halves of the card, the test will be ended, and the number of the last character which he shall have been able to read at one time upon the two halves of the card will measure the visual acuteness of the amblyopic eye. . . . It is convenient to have, moreover, a card both halves of which are perfectly identical and to make that the first test, in order that the person submitted to this mode of examination shall not suspect the trick which is used for the purpose of unmasking the fraud."

Another series of tests are based upon the principle of suppression of color by colored glasses. Kugel,[1] in his exhaustive article, writes as follows: "Snellen[2] gives the following very practical method. Red and green letters are viewed binocularly while the strong eye is furnished either with a red or with a green glass. As is well known, green letters are seen indistinctly through a red glass. This is also the case when red letters are seen through a green glass. If now, in our case, both green and red letters are seen plainly, the person examined is caught.

"Let us take the case of left-sided amaurosis; then by holding up a red glass before the right eye, only the red letters, in no case the green, are recognized. The reverse must be the case if a green glass be held before this eye. If both green and red letters are seen at the same time—a thing that can happen only by the help of the professedly amaurotic or amblyopic eye—the pretender is unmasked."

Bravais[3] gives the following test: "For cases where the prism test has failed or the observer does not possess the double prism of Monoyer and does not possess the scale of Snellen or the tables of Stilling, the author suggests the following: Writ-

[1] *Loc. cit.*

[2] Zehender's Klin. Monatsch. für Augenheilkunde, 1877.

[3] Bulletin et Memoires de la Soc. Française d'Ophthalmologie, 1883-84.

ing with a red pencil disappears when viewed through a red glass. Write a word in two colors, alternately red and blue letters, *e.g.*, the word *noir*. If the *o* and *r* are in red, the eye covered by a red glass will see only *ni*. If the patient read the word *noir* the eye covered by the dark glass is not blind. One may write two isolated words, one to be written in red, the other in blue. Or an entire phrase may be written in which certain words are in red, *e.g.*, *Je ne vois pas bien clair;* the words *ne*, *pas* and *clair* in red.

"One may have cards half blue and half red. It suffices to write with a black pencil upon the two colors. With the colored glasses the writing upon the blue ground is not read through the red glass and the writing upon the red ground is not read through the blue glass; as with the scales of Snellen, each eye sees only certain characters. With this card one can vary the tests; write words of different or of the same size, place them one above the other, or one to the right, the other to the left."

Michaud[1] gives the following: "It is known that marks with the red pencil traced upon a piece of white paper are not visible through a red glass. Therefore in the case of amaurosis or monocular amblyopia one places a red glass before the healthy eye. The patient ought not to see any of the characters. If the red characters are seen it will be by the alleged amaurotic eye. The patient, however, may be posted respecting the test and declare that he sees nothing. To eliminate as far as possible this chance of error we have recourse to the following artifice. It is sufficient to remove from letters of simple form one or two parts to change at once the aspect and value. For example, from the letter E it is easy to make I, F, or L. If then we trace upon paper an E of which the horizontal lines are red, and if we cause this letter to be seen with a red glass, the patient will not see an E but an I. Several letters thus modified in a word may compose a new word, and if one may admit that a badly seen E may be confounded with I or L, it is impossible to pretend that the word TETE could be taken for the word FILLE. In the same way the word MEOTANE, having no sense, could become VICINAL.

"Now, in reading the reader does not habitually look at each letter forming a word. It is the general appearance of the writ-

[1] Archiv. de Médecine et de Pharmacie Militaires, 1888.

ing which fixes in his mind the thought corresponding to the word. By suppressing such and such a word representing an idea a change may be made to another word representing another idea. Thus let us present to the simulator the word EPONGE made in red and black. After having put a red glass before the good eye, the alleged amaurotic eye which is uncovered will see the word EPONGE. The idea corresponding to this word is fixed in the mind of the patient, and it will be difficult for him to substitute for it the idea LION by the mental subtraction of that which is marked in red. The simulator, urged to read quickly in a loud voice without time for reflection, will surely read EPONGE. If the uncovered eye is really amaurotic, the red glass does its work of effacement for the healthy eye, all that traced in red disappears, and the patient reads the word LION as quickly as he reads EPONGE without the interposition of the red glass.

"To render more difficult for the simulator the mental subtraction of the red, one may employ other colors in tracing the parts of the letters so as to make them polychromatic. Yellow should be avoided, as it is difficult to see it at a certain distance, and the perception of it is annihilated by the red glass.

"Finally, if one wishes to disturb still more the simulator, one may, while placing the red glass before the good eye, place a glass strongly tinted in green before the suspected eye. If binocular vision is preserved, the word will be read in its entirety.

"It is not sufficient for the military surgeon to be able to affirm that an eye pretended amaurotic or strongly amblyopic is not so; it is necessary that he may be able to say whether the acuteness of vision of that eye is superior or inferior to $\frac{1}{4}$ for the right eye, and $\frac{1}{12}$ for the left eye. Nothing is easier than to give to the characters in color dimensions clearly defined and fit to serve for the determination of the acuteness of vision. We make use of a red glass, a green glass, and small tablets. Our red glass is rectangular in shape, 10×5 cm. We recommend a glass of an intense red and of demi-double quality as we find it at all glaziers'. Same dimensions and recommendations for the green glass. Our tablets have the dimensions of loto cards, which renders them easy to carry. The characters which we have adopted are those of the type of the scales of Snellen; they have among other advantages that of being easy

to trace with brush and water-color upon paper ruled in millimetres, *i e.*, architect's paper. Take the paper of which the ruling is brownish-red in preference to that of which the ruling is in blue. Avoid tracing in pencil the contour of the letters, above all in the parts which ought to be tinted red. Do not make use of carmine, but of vermilion or cinnabar.

"We confine ourselves to characters of 2, 4, and 5 mm. in size, which are visible to the normal eye at 6.66 m., 13.33 m., and 16.66 m.; and consequently at 1.66 m., 3.33 m., and 4.16 m. by an eye of which the vision is reduced to $\frac{1}{4}$, and at 0.55 m., 1.11 m., and 1.38 m. by an eye of which the vision is reduced to $\frac{1}{12}$.

"For the illiterate we substitute for letters, points, marks, crosses, which may become themselves points, and horizontal or vertical marks; figures of playing cards, etc.

"We advise placing the tablets well in front of the light to avoid the chances of error which might come from the reflections and dulness given to the characters by the colored glasses employed. As an example of the results to which we may come by the use of glasses and colored characters we consider it of some interest to give the following observation: It was concerning a young soldier of our regiment who for three weeks declared to his immediate superiors that he did not see with his right eye. This man, endowed with a subtle intelligence, had taken care to prepare the way by saying in his company that he had dissimulated his infirmity at the *conseil de revision*, and since his enlistment, in order not to be exempted or invalidated. He wished to avoid marriage, and, moreover, he desired to satisfy his military obligations. But he had not counted on target practice, and in fact, to his great regret, he could not dissemble any longer.

"This good apostle, to whom nothing was wanting, not even a contusion of the superciliary arch from the kick of a horse, was submitted to an examination. We proceeded to our examination with the aid of M. Maupetit, surgeon-major.

"Nothing was found with the ophthalmoscope—the fundus was normal.

"Our man could read well with the left eye, but with the right eye he did not distinguish the A from Z, whatever the size of the letters.

"We place a red glass before his left eye, leaving the other uncovered, and the reading of the black characters is quite easy. Nothing surprising thus far. But behold, when we substitute colored characters for black characters, the vision is declared abolished for both eyes! The presentation of colored letters had aroused the suspicion of our man, his strange reply aroused ours. The idea occurred to us to let him understand that this was not really extraordinary and that it could be dependent upon trouble with the sight of the right eye (the eye said to be amaurotic). We cover that eye with the palm of the hand, and the left eye recovers its function! The colored characters are read through the red glass! We substitute a green glass for the palm of the hand placed before the right eye, at the same time a red glass is placed before the left eye; and we present another table. This table is read in detail as if nothing had been traced upon it in red. The fraud was thenceforth manifest.

"A final test showed us to what degree of skill our simulator pretended. We place a red glass before the eye declared good, we leave uncovered the eye declared amaurotic, and we present some lines of writing of a yellow color. The man sees nothing and cannot read. Arguing then as before that the vision may be affected by the trouble in the right eye, we cover the right eye and the reading goes freely. That was an irreparable disaster for the pretended sincerity of the simulator in question; for with the right eye covered, and the left eye concealed behind a red glass, he ought to see absolutely nothing (we have said above that red glasses prevent the perception of clear yellow). How then could he read? He did not read, he recited from memory what he had had time to learn before we had closed the right eye. Moreover, all that had been read had been read under conditions which enabled us to declare that his vision was normal."

Many other tests for the detection of simulated blindness have been devised. The reader is referred for a description of them to the writings of Kugel,[1] Baudry,[2] Bravais,[3] and Nieden.[4]

[1] "Ueber die Diagnose von Simulation der Amaurose und Amblyopie," Wiener med. Wochen., 1889.

[2] "Simulation de l'Amaurose et de l'Amblyopie," Paris, 1889.

[3] "Simulation de l'Amaurose unilateral par les Verres colorées de Snellen," Bull. et Mem. de la Soc. Franç. d'Ophthal., 1883–84.

[4] "Ueber die Simulation von Augenleiden und die Mittel ihrer Entdeckung," Wiesbaden, 1893.

Congenital amaurosis and congenital amblyopia are not uncommon. And amaurosis and amblyopia *ex anopsia* are not uncommon. The anatomical structure and the physiological function of such eyes are normal so far as we can discern, excepting that the vision is very much reduced. Strabismus, convergent or divergent, is often associated with such an amaurosis or amblyopia. A difference in the refraction of the eyes is, however, much more regularly found. As a rule, the refraction is hypermetropic, or an astigmatism of high degree is found, or a combination of the two exists. The difference in the refraction of the two eyes is such that the patient will use the one that gives him least strain (smaller error of refraction). Inasmuch as the condition is one of long-standing —from birth or early childhood—the patient has never enjoyed perfect binocular vision. Experience has taught him to see everything with one eye. But a person who has enjoyed clear binocular vision is very much disturbed for some weeks or months after losing one of his eyes. Appreciation of perspective is practically suspended for some time, and obliteration of so large a section of the field of binocular vision causes at first an awkwardness and a hesitation in the patient's movements, that is not observed in those whose eye has been amaurotic or amblyopic from birth or early childhood.

Monocular amaurosis or amblyopia may be innocently claimed by children, or even by older patients. Association with one who has some marked ocular abnormality may suggest to a child the existence of some trouble with one of its own eyes. Or, the statement that one of its eyes is blind will sometimes lead a child to insist positively and persistently that it is so. There is no difficulty in proving the truth in these cases. On the part of the patient there is no desire to deceive, and when it is proven to him that he sees with the eye supposed to be blind, the trouble is at an end. Why older subjects should experience this sort of amblyopia and amaurosis, it would be difficult to explain. I have never observed it in a patient more than twenty years of age.

True amblyopia and amaurosis may be due to traumatism, lightning stroke, local or general hemorrhages, toxic substances in the blood, uræmia, diabetes, hysteria, migraine, reflex action, and lesions in the brain and spinal cord.

ing which fixes in his mind the thought corresponding to the word. By suppressing such and such a word representing an idea a change may be made to another word representing another idea. Thus let us present to the simulator the word EPONGE made in red and black. After having put a red glass before the good eye, the alleged amaurotic eye which is uncovered will see the word EPONGE. The idea corresponding to this word is fixed in the mind of the patient, and it will be difficult for him to substitute for it the idea LION by the mental subtraction of that which is marked in red. The simulator, urged to read quickly in a loud voice without time for reflection, will surely read EPONGE. If the uncovered eye is really amaurotic, the red glass does its work of effacement for the healthy eye, all that traced in red disappears, and the patient reads the word LION as quickly as he reads EPONGE without the interposition of the red glass.

"To render more difficult for the simulator the mental subtraction of the red, one may employ other colors in tracing the parts of the letters so as to make them polychromatic. Yellow should be avoided, as it is difficult to see it at a certain distance, and the perception of it is annihilated by the red glass.

"Finally, if one wishes to disturb still more the simulator, one may, while placing the red glass before the good eye, place a glass strongly tinted in green before the suspected eye. If binocular vision is preserved, the word will be read in its entirety.

"It is not sufficient for the military surgeon to be able to affirm that an eye pretended amaurotic or strongly amblyopic is not so; it is necessary that he may be able to say whether the acuteness of vision of that eye is superior or inferior to $\frac{1}{4}$ for the right eye, and $\frac{1}{12}$ for the left eye. Nothing is easier than to give to the characters in color dimensions clearly defined and fit to serve for the determination of the acuteness of vision. We make use of a red glass, a green glass, and small tablets. Our red glass is rectangular in shape, 10×5 cm. We recommend a glass of an intense red and of demi-double quality as we find it at all glaziers'. Same dimensions and recommendations for the green glass. Our tablets have the dimensions of loto cards, which renders them easy to carry. The characters which we have adopted are those of the type of the scales of Snellen; they have among other advantages that of being easy

tis differs from that of other varieties in that it is especially obstinate in yielding to treatment. After having brought about a considerable improvement in the eye's condition, at the next visit one may find that the disease has broken out afresh. More of the exciting cause had been introduced into the eye. In order to cure such cases and unmask the malingerer, absolute control over the patient is a necessity. When it is no longer possible for him to keep up the irritation, the inflammation may be caused to subside.

Solutions of atropine and ointment of belladonna are the preparations employed to cause mydriasis. The full effect of these preparations is maximum dilatation of the pupil and complete paralysis of the muscle of accommodation. From one to two weeks elapse after discontinuing the applications before the effects entirely disappear.

The differential diagnosis of mydriasis induced by a drug, from that due to trauma, glaucoma, or real amaurosis is established by virtue of the following: The pupil is more widely dilated; ruptures of the sphincter of the iris, which are present in cases of marked traumatic dilatation, are wanting; ophthalmoscopic evidence of glaucoma does not exist; the accommodation is paralyzed either partially or completely. Moreover, illumination of the sound eye causes consensual contraction of the pupil in an amaurotic eye; on the contrary, however, illumination of an amaurotic eye does not cause consensual contraction of the pupil of the sound eye; and illumination of an amblyopic eye causes slow and weak contraction of the pupil of its fellow. Slight inequality of the pupils without paralysis of the accommodation may be due to pathological changes in the brain or spinal cord, or to a difference in the refraction of the eyes.[1]

[1] Nieden: "Ueber die Simulation von Augenleiden," etc., 1893, p. 245.

CHAPTER III.

INJURIES OF THE ORBIT.

Contusions of the Margins of the Orbit.

Contusions of the margins of the orbit may excite periostitis, caries or necrosis of the bones at the site of the injury in scrofulous and badly nourished persons, especially children, whether extravasation have occurred or not. Such injuries are among the most frequent causes of those diseases in that class of patients.[1] The inflammation of the periosteum may terminate in resolution; but, as a rule, suppuration with the formation of an abscess takes place. Death of the bony structure may follow. The process may run an acute or a chronic course. It may be circumscribed, or it may extend to the adjacent orbital walls.

Especially when the inflammation runs a chronic course, the cicatricial tissue resulting therefrom will cause ectropium, or lagophthalmus, or it may restrict the movements of the eyeball. This may be the end of an acute attack as well. Periostitis, with or without caries or necrosis, may be complicated by a severe attack of orbital cellulitis resulting in the formation of an abscess in the orbital cellular tissue. The consequence of this may be inflammation and atrophy of the optic nerve, and consequent partial or complete blindness; or the patient may die from extension of the morbid process to the brain or its membranes.

When the inflammatory process involves the roof of the orbit, meningitis, or abscess in the frontal lobes of the brain, may set in and terminate life.

Contusions of the margins of the orbit may be productive of a lesion having clean-cut edges and resembling very closely an incised wound. Its usual site is near the superior margin of

[1] Berlin: "Graefe-Saemisch Handbuch d. ges. Augenheilkunde," vi., pp. 530, 581.

the orbit, but it has been observed over the inferior margin. The wound extends to the bone, the sharp edge of which severs the soft parts as they are driven upon it by the contusing force. For this reason, the superficial wound is less extensive than the subcutaneous wound. Beneath the integument, the soft parts are lacerated and separated to a greater or less extent from the subjacent bone. Such lesions are apt to suppurate.'

Fracture of the Margins of the Orbit.

Contusions may result in fracture of the margins of the orbit on which they impinge. The force of the blow is generally sufficient to produce a compound fracture, but the fracture may be a simple one. Owing to its more exposed situation, the superior margin is most frequently affected.

An excessive force may fracture or dislocate the malar bone. This will be evident from the deformity. Moreover, if anæsthesia involving the area supplied by the infra-orbital nerve be noted, it is probable that the inferior margin of the orbit has been fractured.

Uncomplicated fractures of the orbital margins, as a rule, lead to deformity only. Berlin cites a case of fracture of the infra-orbital margin from a stone bruise which terminated fatally by tetanus.[2] A compound fracture may inflame, suppurate, and endanger the patient's life as well as his eye.

When a compound fracture of the orbital margin is complicated by fissure of the roof of the orbit, the gravity of the injury is intensified. Meningitis, or abscess of the brain, may develop, and carry off the patient. Such fractures of the vault of the orbit are less dangerous than direct fractures in which the orbital margin is not involved.

Indirect Fracture of the Roof of the Orbit.

Injuries productive of fracture of the base of the skull frequently cause fracture of the roof of the orbit. The fracture in such cases is one in continuity. According to Berlin,[3] Prescott-Hewitt's statistics from St. George's Hospital give 23 cases of fracture of the roof of the orbit in 68 fractures of the base of

[1] For medico-legal case, see Berlin, *l.c.*, p. 582.

[2] *Loc. cit.*, vi., p. 584.

[3] *Loc. cit.*, p. 604.

the skull. Von Hölder[1] found in 124 cases of fracture of the base of the skull, that in 79 the roof of the orbit was also fractured. These lesions belong especially to the domain of general surgery. When, as sometimes happens, the victim of such a casualty survives, coincident and consecutive alterations in the function of his visual apparatus may become a subject for medico-legal investigation.

Immediately on recovering consciousness, the patient may complain of blindness of one or of both eyes. Failure of vision may be owing to lesion of both optic nerves or of the chiasm, by fragments of bone. Hemorrhage at the base of the brain may impair the function of the optic nerves, or of the optic tracts. Blood may be extravasated into the sheaths of the optic nerves and cause blindness. When the optic nerves, the chiasm, or the optic tracts are lacerated by spiculæ of bone, the resulting disturbance of function will be permanent. When hemorrhage interferes with the conductivity of those structures, the loss of function may be transient. The differential diagnosis between these sets of cases may be established only by the conditions observed after some weeks have passed. Restoration of sight would imply that the conducting apparatus had not been torn by fragments of bone.

Failure of vision may supervene not as an immediate consequence of the traumatism, but as a result of consecutive inflammation of the membranes of the brain, or of the brain tissue itself.

Indirect violence may fracture the roof of the orbit alone. Berlin[2] collected 27 cases of this description. In 1890, Koller reported 2 cases,[3] and, in 1893, Callan[4] reported 8 cases of the same nature. Similar cases have come under the writer's observation. The clinical picture of such accidents is a clear one. The patient receives a blow from a club, a stone, or the fist, in the orbital region, or he falls from a height (15 to 30 feet) or is thrown from a carriage or other rapidly moving vehicle (toboggan) and receives a contusion near the eye, or his head may be compressed under a wagon-wheel or a horse's hoof. One of Callan's patients fell down three steps of a stairway, struck the edge of an open door, and was wounded above his left eye.

[1] "Graefe-Saemisch Handbuch d. ges. Augenheilkunde," vi., p. 604.
[2] *Loc. cit.*
[3] N. Y. Med. Jour., April 12th, 1890.
[4] N. Y. Eye and Ear Infirmary Reports, vol. i., p. 1, 1893.

Symptoms of concussion of the brain are more or less marked. The patient may fall to the ground unconscious and remain in that state for many hours. Two or three days may pass before memory is restored. Or, the patient may not become unconscious, but complain of dizziness and faintness. Bleeding at the nose and vomiting of blood are common symptoms. On recovering consciousness, the patient may call attention to blindness on the injured side. Or, as happened in Callan's second case, the patient, whose consciousness is not suspended by the injury, may assert positively that blindness immediately followed the blow. The eyelids on the injured side will be discolored and œdematous. Subconjunctival extravasation and even exophthalmus may be present. Deviation of the eye inward, or more frequently outward, or even ophthalmoplegia may be found.

Ophthalmoscopic examination will give a negative result immediately after the injury. Nothing will be found in the eye to account for the blindness, excepting in cases where there has been a contusion, or other direct injury of the eyeball. Vieusse reported the occurrence of complete optic atrophy twenty-four hours after the injury, but Berlin [1] regarded it as an example of ischæmia of the optic nerve and retina. Callan [2] observed atrophy of the optic nerve one week after the injury. The appearance of the change may be delayed until the fifth week.[3]

In all of Callan's cases, atrophy of the optic nerve on the injured side was observed. Berlin refers to the fact that among 27 cases, in which visible traces of injury to the forehead and orbital margin of the right side were found, only one showed blindness of the opposite (left) eye.

Only one case of one-sided amaurosis in Berlin's statistics recovered, and two improved. In 10 cases, the vision of both eyes was affected; in some amblyopia, in others amaurosis. Five recovered, or improved. In 1 case, one eye remained blind, in 2 cases, both eyes remained blind, in the remaining cases the result was not known. Recovery was not noted in the other cases referred to.

The lesions in the class of injuries under consideration are believed to be fracture of the roof of the orbit involving the

[1] *Loc. cit.* [2] *Loc. cit.* [3] Berlin, *l.c.*

optic foramen, laceration of the optic nerve, and hemorrhage into its sheath. Direct proof that it is so, is, obviously, not obtainable; for the injury is seldom, if ever, fatal.

Direct Fracture of the Roof of the Orbit, Not Involving the Margin.

These fractures are compound. They are caused by direct violence, *e.g.*, thrusts of pointed instruments into the orbit (hay-fork, rapier, foil, sword, umbrella, walking-stick, knife, pointed sticks, etc.) or falls upon similar things (pencil-holders, etc.), or gunshot wounds,—even the missile from a blow-gun has fractured the roof of the orbit. Owing to the fragile nature of the bone in this region, a pointed weapon driven with moderate force into the orbit in an upward and backward direction will cause a fracture. The extreme gravity of the lesion depends upon three things: the violence inflicted upon the brain; the occurrence of intracranial hemorrhage; and the development of abscess of the brain or of meningitis.

Berlin[1] collected 52 examples of this lesion: 41, or 79 per cent, died; of these, 34 per cent died from the immediate effects of the injury; 11, or 21 per cent, recovered more or less completely—3 had hemiplegia, 1 suffered from headache, and 1 was weak-minded.

Callan reports one case of direct fracture of the roof of the orbit following the thrust of a foil between the nose and the eyeball. His patient recovered with atrophy of the optic nerve and divergent strabismus.

The upper eyelid, especially near the inner angle of the eye, is commonly punctured. Occasionally the weapon enters between the open eyelids and passes through the conjunctiva into the orbit. When this happens the existence of a wound may be overlooked. The eyeball is seldom injured. Having transfixed the integument of the eyelid and the conjunctiva, the weapon passes through the orbital cellular tissue, reaches the bone, fractures it, and may then lacerate the substance of the brain and even rupture one of the large blood-vessels. Fragments of bone may be driven into the brain, and a foreign body (*e.g.*, the ferule of an umbrella) may be lodged in the brain or

[1] *Loc. cit.*, p. 603.

in the fracture when the weapon is withdrawn, thus projecting into both the orbit and the cranial cavity. The course of the wound is not easy to follow through the soft parts. For, as the blow is delivered, the eyeball rolls upward and is pushed before the weapon. When the weapon is withdrawn the globe resumes its usual position, and thus the tract of the wound may be so distorted that a probe could not be made to follow it. Moreover, probing of such wounds must be done with caution lest further injury to the cerebral tissue be inflicted.

Hemorrhage from the wound and into the orbit, prolapse of orbital fat, and the appearance of cerebral tissue in the discharges, are indications respecting the depth to which the weapon may have penetrated. Among the cerebral symptoms, sudden loss of consciousness is noted in a large number of cases. The patient may die unconscious. After recovering consciousness, the patient's symptoms range from headache, vertigo, weakness of intellect, and prostration, to paralysis, unconsciousness, and coma, ending in death. The symptoms are those of intra-cranial hemorrhage, of injury to the brain substance, of cerebral abscess, or of meningitis.

Not all persons injured in this way suffer from cerebral symptoms immediately after the injury. A certain number do not have cerebral symptoms. According to Berlin,[1] the number of such cases is relatively large; he refers to 14. Both physician and patient may be disposed to consider the injury a trivial one, owing to the apparently insignificant wound and the general condition of the patient; while, later on, stupor, vertigo, convulsions, unconsciousness, sopor, and a febrile movement may develop and kill the patient, or he may die suddenly. The following cases illustrating various phases of this class of injuries are cited by Mackenzie.[2]

"CASE 14.—Ruysch relates the case of a man who was wounded in the left orbit with the end of a stick, not particularly sharp. The injury appeared of little importance, yet the patient died soon after receiving the wound. The magistrates appointed Ruysch to examine the body, in order to discover the cause of sudden death. Externally, he observed a slight degree of ecchymosis at the upper part of the eye, but on removing the calvaria, he found that the wound had penetrated to a considerable depth into the brain.

[1] *Loc. cit.*, p. 602. Mackenzie: "Diseases of Eye," Phil., 1855, p. 60.

[2] *Loc. cit.*, p. 53 *et seq.*

"CASE 15.—Peter Borel mentions a still more remarkable case of a man who was wounded with a sword in the left orbit. Thinking the wound had not penetrated deep, he merely covered it with plaster, after which he walked two leagues, and ate and drank heartily with his companions, exactly as if he had been well, being affected with no pain. Next morning he was found dead. The skull was opened, when the wound was found to have penetrated the cerebellum.

"CASE 16.—A man was brought into the London Hospital, April 12th, 1832, with a lacerated wound of the right upper eyelid. He stated that, while working on board ship discharging coals, a hook used for raising the coals caught him by the eye, so that he was elevated to the height of several feet. His companions, observing what had happened, suddenly let go the rope, so that the poor fellow fell heavily on the deck. He immediately withdrew the hook himself. On his admission to the hospital, he did not appear to be suffering from any serious injury. The eyeball was uninjured, and no fracture could be detected; his respiration was natural; his pulse 76, full, but not more than might have been expected in a robust man; pupils obedient to the light; no pain in the head. . . . He passed a quiet night. . . . The next morning he had very little pain in the head. . . . Symptoms of compression of the brain came on very suddenly in the evening. His breathing became stertorous; his pupils contracted and insensible to the stimulus of light; pulse 52, and laboring; he could not be roused by any noise. At this time a quantity of blood, mixed apparently with cerebral substance, to the amount of about two ounces, escaped from the wound. . . . He lingered in this state until two o'clock the next morning, when he died.

"The orbitary plate of the frontal bone was found to be completely smashed, and a considerable portion of the anterior lobe of the right hemisphere of the brain wanting, it having escaped through the wound.

"CASE 17.—A countryman, about 55 years of age, was asked by one who met him to step out of the way; but as he was carrying a heavy burden at the time he could not do so, and therefore refused. The other, provoked at this, struck the countryman violently over the shoulders with a whip, and when the whip broke thrust the sharp end of the broken shaft of the whip in the countryman's face. Not apprehending any dangerous effects from the blows which he had received, the countryman, with his burden on his back, trudged along after his cart, which was loaded with wood, for nearly a quarter of a mile, till he arrived at the wood-market, when he instantly dropped down dead.

"Schmid was appointed to inspect the body. On examining the head externally he found that the sharp end of the stick had penetrated at the inner canthus of the right eye. He endeavored to ascertain with the probe whether the wound had reached the brain; but he could not on account of the narrowness of the wound. Having opened the

cranium, the brain and its membranes at first view appeared sound; but, on raising the anterior part of the cerebrum, the nasal extremity of the falx was observed to be injured, and it was found that the wound had penetrated into the third ventricle, in which lay a considerable quantity of clotted blood.

"CASE 18.—A man, standing at the head of a horse which had fallen in the street, was suddenly struck in the face, upon the animal raising itself unexpectedly. The blow was so violent that he was thrown down by it, but not stunned. He was of the opinion that it was not the head of the horse, but some part of the harness, that had struck him. There was a bleeding wound between the left eye and the nose, about an inch long, dividing the lachrymal canal and the palpebral tendon. A probe was introduced to the depth of three-quarters of an inch into the wound, in the direction of the inner wall of the orbit, but without the bone being felt. The left eye was uninjured. The right eye, without any perceptible injury, had entirely lost the power of vision. Its pupil was dilated to the utmost; and, although its common sensibility, as well as its different motions, was perfect, a lighted candle held close before it caused no contraction of the pupil, nor any sensation of light. The patient answered questions promptly and clearly, and evinced no symptoms of injury extending to the brain, except that he complained of a little headache. The bones of the nose were examined, but no crepitus could be felt; neither was there any ecchymosis to indicate injury on the right side. Delirium, however, and stupor supervened on the following day. . . . In the evening convulsions came on; the left arm and leg were stiff and contracted, while the right extremities were in constant motion. The pupil of the right eye was now found to be contracted. . . . The left side and extremities subsequently became paralytic, while the right was tranquil. He died convulsed on the fifth day after the accident.

"On dissection, the brain and its membranes were found loaded with vessels, and there was a copious deposit of lymph between the arachnoid and the pia mater, over both hemispheres. A large accumulation of serum, with purulent matter diffused in it, was present in both lateral ventricles. The whole lower surface of the anterior lobes was adherent to the dura mater, by means of coagulable lymph. The optic nerves being exposed, the right was seen to be torn completely through or its ends joined only by delicate membrane close to the foramen opticum. The base of the brain, from the medulla oblongata to the chiasma, was thickly covered with a layer of lymph, which obscured the roots of the nerves. In the posterior part of the right anterior lobe, close to the injured part of the optic nerve, and approaching to the anterior cornu of the lateral ventricle, the brain was bruised, softened, and ecchymosed. The cause of the laceration of the brain and tearing across of the optic nerve was found to be a fracture of the cerebral plate of the ethmoid

bone, with part of the sphenoid forming the roof of the foramen opticum. The fractured fragment of bone was found loosely attached by dura mater to the forepart of the sella turcica, above the right cavernous sinus. On introducing a probe into the external wound, it could be made to pass, by a slight degree of management, into the crushed part of the ethmoid, and to appear within the skull. . . .

"CASE 21.—A soldier was brought to the hospital at Brest, at eleven o'clock in the evening, having been wounded with a pitchfork at the middle of the left upper eyelid. The wound was oblique, about three lines in length, and appeared to implicate only the skin and orbicularis palpebrarum; there was very little blood discharged; the eyelid was distended and the conjunctiva inflamed. The apparent simplicity of the wound, the goodness of the pulse, and the free exercise of all functions, led to a favorable prognosis; the patient asserted that he had experienced nothing particular at the moment of the injury, and had scarcely been stupefied by it. . . . The patient rested during the night; next day he was quite lively, walking about the wards, complaining only of slight pain in the wound, and even eating with appetite. The same day, at seven in the evening, he was seized with convulsions, which were supposed by his attendants to be epileptic. The day after, he was kept from food, and bled at the arm; the convulsions returned, and he was bled at the foot. Vomiting, uneasiness, agitation, and delirium came on; the pulse became smaller and contracted; cold sweats succeeded, and the patient died at two o'clock next morning.

"On dissection, the eyelids were found œdematous, and the wound had already closed. On cutting through the upper eyelid and orbicularis palpebrarum, a circumscribed collection of pus was found in the orbit between its roof and the levator palpebræ superioris. This collection of pus communicated with the cranium through the orbitary plate of the frontal bone, which had been penetrated by one of the prongs of the fork. After removing the eyeball, the inferior wall of the orbit was found fractured, and depressed almost completely into the maxillary sinus. This fracture is compared by M. Massot, the narrator of the case, to the depression which might be produced on the surface of an egg, by pressing it inward with the thumb. On removing the calvaria, the dura mater appeared in a morbid state at that place, the anterior fossæ of the base of the cranium were covered with pus, the anterior lobes of the cerebrum were in a state of suppuration, and the rest of the brain healthy. M. Massot thinks it probable that, when the fork was pushed through the orbit into the cranium, the eyeball being fixed and violently pressed between the fork and the floor of the orbit, the thin plate of the superior maxillary bone could not resist this pressure, but sank by continued action of the fork upon the eyeball.

"CASE 31.—A lieutenant in a Highland regiment, running on a dark night to escape a shower of rain, came in contact with an irritable

old man, who made a thrust at him with an umbrella, the point of which struck him immediately beneath the left eyebrow. The wound was attended with so little pain or shock to the system, that the gentleman walked a distance of at least half a mile, to Sir Philip Crampton's house; and having mentioned the occurrence as one to which, however, he attached no importance, begged Sir P. to look at the wound on the eyelid, which still continued to bleed slightly. Sir P. found a wound of about three-fourths of an inch in length in the upper eyelid, exactly in the seat of the fold formed in this part by the action of opening the eye, on looking up. When the eyeball was so turned, there was no appearance of wound; but when the eyelid was drawn downward, the wound gaped and showed the conjunctiva, which still completely covered the upper portion of the ball of the eye. Vision was quite unimpaired. The wound having been united by two points of suture, the patient took his leave and walked home. Sir P. called on him next morning, and found him at breakfast, making no complaint, but of some stiffness in the eyelid. Next morning at seven o'clock, Sir P. was called to him in a hurry, and found him in so strong convulsions that it was with difficulty two persons were able to keep him from working himself out of bed. The convulsions continued, with short intervals of coma, till eight or nine o'clock in the evening, when he expired.

"At the post-mortem examination it was found that the brass ferrule of the umbrella, nearly two inches long, had penetrated the orbital plate of the frontal bone, and was lodged in the substance of the left hemisphere of the brain; it was imbedded in a thin coagulum of blood, which extended into the left lateral ventricle; both ventricles contained a small quantity of bloody serosity.

"CASE 25.—A laborer thrust a long lath, with great violence, into the inner canthus of the left eye of another laborer. It broke off quite short, so that a piece nearly two inches and a half long, half an inch wide, and above a quarter of an inch thick, remained in his head, and was so deeply buried that it could scarcely be seen or laid hold of.

"He rode with the piece of lath in him above a mile, to Barnet, where Mr. Morse extracted it with difficulty, it sticking so hard that others had been baffled in attempting to remove it. The man continued dangerously ill for a long time; at last he recovered entirely, with the sight of the eye and the use of its muscles; but, even after he seemed well, upon leaning forward he felt great pain in his head.

"CASE 26.—Percy had under his care a fencing-master, who in an assault received so furious a thrust from a foil on the right eye, that the weapon penetrated nearly half a foot into the head, and broke short. The man fell down in a state of insensibility, and very soon the supervening swelling was so great as to conceal the foreign body. In order to lay hold of it, Percy opened and evacuated the contents of

the eyeball. His forceps not being strong enough, he sent to a clock-maker in the neighborhood, and borrowed from him a pair of screw pincers, with which he laid hold of the broken end of the foil, and thus succeeded in extracting it. The fencing-master died some weeks after, more from the consequence of intemperance than of the injury.

"CASE 33.—Mr. White relates the case of a person, to whom it happened that, as he sat in company, the small end of a tobacco-pipe was thrust through the middle of the lower eyelid. It passed between the globe of the eye and the inferior and external circumference of the orbit, and was forced through that portion of the os maxillare which constitutes the lower and internal part of the orbit. The pipe was broken in the wound, and the part broken off, which, from the examination of the remainder, appeared to be above three inches, was quite out of sight or feeling, nor could the patient give any account of what had become of it. The eye was dislocated upward, pressing the upper eyelid against the superior part of the orbit; the pupil pointed perpendicularly upward, the depressor oculi was upon the full stretch, and the patient could see none with that eye. Mr. White applied one thumb above and the other below the eye, and after a few attempts at reduction it suddenly slipped into its socket. The man instantly recovered perfect sight, and suffered no other inconvenience than that of a constant smell of tobacco-smoke in his nose, for a long time after, for, as he informed Mr. White, the pipe had just been used before the accident. About two years afterward he called upon Mr. White, to acquaint him that he had, that morning, in a fit of coughing, thrown out of his throat a piece of tobacco-pipe, measuring two inches, which was discharged with such violence as to be thrown seven yards from the place where he stood. In about six weeks he threw out another piece, measuring an inch, in the same manner, and never afterward felt the least inconvenience.

"CASE 34.—A boy of 14 years of age was struck by an arrow, while amusing himself in his playground. It stuck fast in the orbit; but the boy pulled it out, and threw it on the ground. A surgeon arrived, to whom the playfellows of the boy who was wounded showed the arrow, deprived of its iron point. With a probe the surgeon attempted to examine the wound; but, on the boy fainting, he desisted, so that the iron point was left in the orbit. The external wound healed, and the boy recovered; the eye remained clear and movable, but deprived of sight. This happened in the beginning of August, 1594, and nothing more was heard of the iron point till October, 1624; when, after an attack of fever and catarrh, with a great deal of sneezing it descended into the left nostril, whence, taking the way of the fauces, it came into the mouth and was discharged. During the whole thirty years and three months that it had remained in the head, it had not been productive of any pain.

"CASE 22.—The son of General E., a student at the Polytechnic School in Paris, received, in fencing, the end of the foil through the roof of the orbit, and became hemiplegic on the opposite side of the body. The eye was saved.

"CASE 23.—Thomas Hale, aged 35, was assisting in hay-making. A scaffolding had been erected at the side of the hayrick; and while his companion, a man named Joslyn, was in the act of throwing some hay upon it, the pitchfork missed the hay, and struck Hale in the right eyebrow. Instead of drawing the pitchfork out, Joslyn, under the impression that he had caught the hay, thrust it farther in, the one prong entering Hale's orbit, while the other glanced over the outside of his head.

"When the prong was withdrawn, which was accomplished with difficulty, Hale turned to leave the field, having the impression that his eye had been driven out of his head; but he had not proceeded more than five or six yards before he fell, his left side crippling under him. In other respects he recovered, but the palsy continued, the fingers of the left hand being contracted, and the left foot swinging about, although he became able, in the course of some months, to walk at the rate of a mile in thirty minutes. Dr. Roe, who published the case, had given a trial to strychnia internally, and to electro-magnetism, without any very striking improvement. Hale continued to taste, smell, and see as well as ever."

FRACTURE OF THE INNER WALL OF THE ORBIT.

These fractures may be either direct or indirect. When direct they are due to gunshot wounds, blows from umbrella handles, etc., falls upon iron hooks, etc., injury by the calks of horseshoes, etc. Indirect fractures may be due to falls, blow of fist, etc. Direct fractures are compound, and may be recognized, as a rule, without much difficulty. The diagnosis of indirect fracture is indicated by hemorrhage from the nose and emphysema of the orbit. Emphysema of the orbit is a crepitating swelling produced by the entrance of air into the areolar tissue through the fracture, when the patient blows his nose or sneezes. It may occur in fracture of the roof of the orbit, the air entering the areolar tissue by way of the frontal sinus. This is uncommon. It may occur also in fracture of the floor of the orbit; then the antrum is the avenue by which the air reaches the site of the lesion. Emphysema of the orbit is, however, generally due to fracture of the inner wall. These lesions may be complicated by fracture of the roof of the orbit. Ordinarily they

do not threaten the patient's life. Deformity may result from them.

Fracture of the Floor of the Orbit.

They may be gunshot fractures, or they may be due to heavy blows upon the face, or they may be caused by a force pushing the eyeball through the bone.

Fracture of the External Wall of the Orbit.

Considerable violence is necessary to cause these fractures. They are usually compound fractures and occur most commonly in gunshot wounds. Extensive fractures of this wall may open the cranial cavity, and endanger life. Fissures extending along the base of the skull may occur as a complication. Some deformity of the face remains.

Wounds of the Soft Parts of the Orbit, Not Including Injuries to the Eyeball.

Sword-thrusts, thrusts of pointed sticks, canes, umbrella handles, knife blades, etc., or missiles like fragments of iron, copper, or stone, bird-shot, bullets, etc., sometimes wound the soft parts in the orbital cavity without injuring the eyeball. The anatomical structures involved in these traumatisms are the cellular tissue, the blood-vessels, the ocular muscles, the nerves supplying those muscles, the branches of the fifth nerve supplying sensation to the cornea, and the optic nerve. In certain cases, fracture of one of the walls of the orbit exists as a complication: when the roof of the orbit is involved, the gravity of the injury is greatly magnified. A weapon or a missile perforates the eyelid, the conjunctiva, and the *septum orbitæ* before it wounds the soft parts of the orbit. The blow may fall, however, when the eye is open, and then the eyelids may escape injury. In general, the blow is delivered point-blank, or nearly so, and the weapon commonly enters the orbit to the nasal side of the eyeball.

Merkel found the depth of the orbit to be in men 43 mm., in women 40.5 mm. These figures are approximately correct for adults. Children's orbits are much shallower; according to Lushka, in one instance the measurement was 26 to 27 mm.

After one of these injuries, a foreign body may or may not remain lodged in the orbit. Certain effects are observed to follow traumatisms of the soft parts of the orbit irrespective of the lodgment of a foreign body therein. Thus, laceration of the blood-vessels is an accompaniment of every wound. The hemorrhage is intra-orbital; its volume depending upon the number and the size of the vessels injured (especially arteries). The bulk of the extravasation accumulates in the orbit and only a relatively small portion escapes by the wound, which is usually of restricted calibre. Accumulation of blood in the orbit displaces the eyeball forward (exophthalmus) toward the point of least resistance, and possibly in a vertical or a lateral direction, according to the position of the principal bleeding point. Exophthalmus may be so marked that the eyelids cannot close over the cornea. This state may excite inflammation and ulceration of the cornea and terminate in destruction of the eye.[1] Vision, in average cases, may not be affected or it may be very much impaired, presumably by virtue of pressure upon the optic nerve by the extravasation, or by virtue of the tension of the optic nerve due to the altered position of the eyeball, or perhaps by both conditions working together. In nearly all cases, no ophthalmoscopic explanation of the amblyopia or amaurosis will be found. Unless the acuteness of vision is very much reduced, the patient will complain of diplopia.

Resorption of the extravasated blood, return of the globe to its normal position, and restoration of function may, in general, be prognosticated. Still, recovery may not be complete. Amaurosis or amblyopia may become permanent, if the resorption take place slowly; or the eyeball may become phthisical by virtue of an excessive exophthalmus, as in Berlin's cases.

The ocular muscles may be injured. According to Berlin,[2] the ocular muscles, as regards frequency of the occurrence, are injured in the order in which they are named as follows: *rectus internus, rectus inferior, levator palpebræ superioris, rectus superior, rectus externus, obliquus superior, obliquus inferior.* The levator palpebræ superioris, as its name signifies, simply elevates the upper eyelid, and does not affect the movements of the eyeball. Division of its fibres gives rise to traumatic ptosis. Partial or complete division of one, or of any

[1] Berlin, *l.c.*, p. 576. [2] *Loc. cit.*

combination of the ocular muscles, will disturb the movements of the eyeball and alter the direction of the visual line of the affected eye. It is conceivable that bruising of the muscles, without division of their fibres, may produce the same conditions. While it may be expected that bruising will impair the usefulness of a muscle for a brief period only, both partial and complete division of its fibres will produce a permanent impairment of function, unless operative interference be successful in repairing the rent.

Such lesions cause diplopia with strabismus, or diplopia without apparent deviation of the line of sight, according to the extent of injury to the muscles. Diplopia will not be present when vision is very much affected, and may not be complained of when the strabismus is excessive, owing to great separation of the images. Strabismus in these patients possesses the characteristics of the paralytic varieties. The diplopia likewise is characteristic. Careful observation of the behavior of the double images will reveal which muscles are affected, even when the injury is a minor one. Malingerers may pretend that they see double in consequence of an accident to an eye, or to the head. Children sometimes, without intending to deceive, complain of the same symptom. Such frauds may be detected by observing the relations maintained toward each other by the double images, since it is not possible for a patient to avoid giving answers that do not radically conflict with one another, unless diplopia be really present. Convergence of both eyes and diplopia may be produced by voluntary effort, and maintained for a few moments at a time. It is also possible to wilfully cause convergence of one eye only. A person of my acquaintance was able to do this; he could also rotate one or the other eye upward at will. Such control of the ocular muscles is very exceptional.

Diplopia with slight rotation of the eyeball is more troublesome to patients than diplopia with marked strabismus; for, in the former, the double images are near together and both are constantly seen, while in the latter they may be widely separated and only one of them lie in the field of fixation. Double vision is sufficient to incapacitate one for all kinds of work. It may endanger life instantly, by exposing the patient to mishaps in the street, or in going up and down stairs, etc. Patients are

obliged to close the affected eye to get about, or they hold their heads in strained and peculiar positions to suppress the false image. The false image is suppressed at the expense of vision in one part of the field. Sense of perspective is wanting.

Careful suturing of the divided muscle will restore the balance of the ocular muscles, in the more simple cases. Unless operative interference succeed in this line, the diplopia will be permanent. But, after weeks or months, the patient will be able to suppress the false image, and learn to compensate for his sense of perspective, to some extent. When more than one muscle is involved in the injury, less benefit may be anticipated from operative interference.

Paralytic strabismus and diplopia are likewise the consequence of intraorbital lesion of the nerves supplying the ocular muscles. These lesions are rare and incurable.

Intra-orbital branches of the fifth nerve supplying the cornea with sensation have been wounded. Resulting anæsthesia of the cornea predisposes to ulceration of that structure and hence to destruction of the eyeball by inflammation.

A weapon or missile penetrating deeply into the orbit may wound the optic nerve. The central artery of the retina enters the optic nerve about 10 mm. behind the eyeball. Division of the nerve may be partial or complete, and may occur between the point of entrance of the central artery and the eyeball, or behind that point. Blindness, either partial or complete, is the immediate consequence. If the wound lie between the entrance of the artery and the globe, the ophthalmoscopic appearances, in the early stages, will be similar to those observed in cases of embolism of the central artery of the retina. Subsequently the nerve atrophies. Division of the central artery before it enters the sheath of the nerve will cause similar disturbances. When the lesion in the optic nerve lies behind the entrance of the artery, the ophthalmoscopic appearances are normal in the early days. After two or more weeks, atrophy of the nerve is observed. When the atrophy is partial, it is probable that the optic fibres were not severed completely.

Fragments of iron, copper, stone, etc., missiles from pistols, rifles or shot-guns, pieces of wood, twigs of trees, ferules from umbrella-handles or walking-sticks, knife-blades, needles, and other bodies may effect a lodgment in the orbital cavity. They

may be located in the soft parts, or they may become embedded in one of the bony walls and project into the orbit. Foreign bodies lodged in the orbit may be large enough to displace the eyeball and restrict its movements. The displacement may amount to dislocation of the eyeball. When resorption of the extravasated blood has taken place, the eyeball will still remain displaced, if a large body be lodged in the orbit, and, similarly, restriction of the movements of the globe will persist until the obstruction is removed. Vision may be destroyed while the globe is displaced, but it may return when the foreign body is removed and the eye restored to its normal position. When the injury is fresh the foreign body may be seen if the wound be large, or it may be felt with the probe if the body be not too small. Probing, under antiseptic precautions, is advised when there is reason to suppose that a foreign body has lodged in the orbit. It is the most fruitful means of diagnosis in these cases, but it does not always give accurate information.[1]

Wounds of the orbit heal promptly, as a rule. Orbital cellulitis and abscess are seldom observed unless the wounds have been infected. Even when foreign bodies are lodged in the orbit, unless they are of large size or carry the germs of infection, the wounds close in a short time. Small bodies like bird-shot and bullets of small calibre, and other aseptic or nearly aseptic substances, frequently become encapsulated, and may not give rise to any further disturbance.

The wound may close over the foreign substance, and subsequently open, leaving a discharging sinus. Or the wound may not heal, but continue to discharge. Both circumstances are indicative of the presence of extraneous matter in the tissues. In such cases, an attempt to find the foreign body should be made. In fresh cases, when the position of the body is located, it should be removed: a possible exception may be made when the foreign body is imbedded in the bony walls at the apex, or in the roof of the orbit. The propriety of removing foreign bodies imbedded in those portions of the walls of the orbit may be questioned. Surgical interference in such injuries may sacrifice the patient's life by causing intra-cranial hemorrhage, or inflammation of the brain. Expectant treatment may also expose the patient to fatal complications within the cranial

[1] See cases cited under direct fractures of roof of orbit, pp. 33–39.

cavity. Between these alternatives, the choice may very properly be given to operative interference conducted cautiously by the principles of the antiseptic method, as affording the patient the best chance for his life. If, however, the foreign body have become encapsulated and its presence be not causing any serious disturbance, no attempt at removal of it should be made, even though it be imbedded in the bones separating the orbital from the cranial cavity and project into the cerebral substance. Operations upon such cases have proved fatal at the hands of the best operators.[1]

The following case cited by Mackenzie shows the dangers encountered in operations on these cases:

"CASE 29.—A girl, 10 years of age, playing along with other children, near a cotton-spinning machine, fell upon one of the pointed iron spikes, five or six inches long, on which the bobbin is placed. This instrument penetrated to the depth of about two inches into the orbit, between the inner wall and globe of the eye, and then broke across, so that 2 or 3 lines' length of it projected above the level of the skin. Attempts were made to remove it; but so much difficulty was experienced that these attempts were not persisted in. Ten days afterward, the piece of iron was found protruded to the length of 9 or 10 lines; a month afterward, it was still more protruded; in fact, it now held apparently so slightly, that it was laid hold of with the fingers and extracted. Scarcely had this been done, when the child was seized with convulsions, and died in a quarter of an hour. The sight had not been affected during the residence of the foreign body in the orbit, nor had its presence there excited any very marked symptoms. The child had always been able to go about."

The following cases are cited by the same author, and are evidence that removal of foreign bodies wedged in the roof of the orbit and injuring the cerebral substance is followed by a favorable result, in some severe cases:[2]

"CASE 27.—Sabatier notices an instance of wound with a knife, through an upper eyelid, with injury of the neighboring edge of the frontal bone. It was not, he says, till after four hours' work, that the surgeon succeeded, by means of a hand-vice, in tearing away the portion of the knife-blade which remained in the orbit, on account of its projecting so little from the wound. The patient complained of severe

[1] Pagenstecher's case, *vide* "Traité complet d'Ophthalmologie," t. iv., p. 800.

[2] For other similar cases see article on direct fractures roof of orbit, pp. 33–39.

pain, as if one had been tearing out his eye. No ill consequence followed; the cure was speedy, and without any affection of sight.

"CASE 28.—A laborer, aged 51 years, while cutting wood in a forest, stumbled over the root of a tree, and with the whole weight of his body drove the end of a file, which he held in his hand, against his left eye. The file broke across, and a portion of it remained in the orbit. The patient was carried, in a state of insensibility, to a small town some miles off, where three surgeons tried by turns, but in vain, to extract the foreign body, which, with the probe and the forceps, they felt distinctly, through the wound, beneath the middle of the eyebrow. They enlarged the wound with the knife, and during three days made reiterated attempts at extraction; but the foreign body continued immovable. On the fourth day, the patient was brought to the surgical clinic at Prague. The eyelid was greatly swollen, and in the middle of it there was a triangular wound, with inverted edges. The eyeball was motionless, and was so pushed downward and outward that it almost lay on the cheek, carrying the lower eyelid before it. The cornea presented more than an ordinary degree of lustre. The patient was nearly comatose. Fritz endeavored, by means of strong pincers and polypus-forceps, to withdraw the foreign body, but these instruments bent under the pressure. At last, with a pair of small but very strong lithotomy-forceps, which he grasped with both his hands, he succeeded in extracting the piece of the file.

"It was triangular, measured an inch and a half in length, and was denticulated to its point, which was blunt. The patient answered questions very slowly, or not at all; his face was pale and sunk, his eyes were shut, and he lay motionless, except that he often raised his left hand to the left side of his head. Respiration slow; pulse oppressed and hard. The wound gaped widely; the eyelid, almost completely divided into lateral halves, was of a dark red color, and so much swollen as to allow only a small portion of the displaced eyeball to be seen.

"Notwithstanding the repeated use of venesection and of leeches and constant cold applications to the eyes, the cornea filled with pus, and giving way about the twelfth day, allowed the iris to protrude. The cornea was ultimately left in an opaque and atrophied state. The wound suppurated abundantly, and for some time a probe could be passed along it, in a direction backward and inward, beneath and through the orbitary portion of the frontal bone, to the depth of five inches, without causing pain. At length the wound closed, the upper eyelid remaining palsied. The patient's general health was perfectly restored.

"CASE 33.—Marchetti had under his care a beggar, who, asking charity rather importunately one summer's day from a Paduan nobleman, this testy personage struck the beggar with the handle of his fan,

in the inner angle of the eye, and with so much force that a portion of the fan, three inches long, broke through the orbit, and sank out of sight in the direction of the palate. When the man came to the hospital, Marchetti removed some small bits, which he found sticking in the angle of the eye, combated the inflammation, allowed the wound to close, and dismissed the patient as cured. In three months he returned with a large swelling in the palate. When Marcetti cut into it, his knife struck upon the handle of the fan, which he immediately extracted with a pair of forceps. The patient speedily recovered."

Traumatic Enophthalmus.

Traumatic enophthalmus is an uncommon condition in which the eyeball sinks into the orbit, in consequence of wounds or contusions of the region of the eye. Beer has collected fifteen cases that constitute the data of his dissertation, a translation of which may be found in Knapp-Schweigger's *Archives of Ophthalmology*.[1] The force required to produce enophthalmus is a heavy blow or a severe wound, such, for example, as would be inflicted by the horn of a cow.

In one case (Schapringer's) the enophthalmus disappeared after three days. It was permanent in the remaining cases. The affected eye was found to lie from 2 to 8 mm. deeper in the orbit than its fellow. Vision and mobility of the eye remained normal in some of the cases. No cicatrices existed in the region of the eye. In other cases wounds of the soft parts, even deeply penetrating wounds of the orbit, complicated by fracture of the orbital walls, were present. Vision was impaired in these cases.

One case became totally blind: "a soldier whose right eye was injured by a falling stick of wood. The sight at once began to fail and there was periodic pain above the eye. Seven months after the injury, the right lids were retracted as in *phthisis bulbi*, and the palpebral fissure was decreased in size. When the upper lid was elevated the ball rolled upward. Pupil and fundus normal. In the right eye, there was no vision; in the left, fingers were counted at 10 feet. A pulsating pain in the region of the eye, temples, and ears, particularly at night. After some months there was complete blindness, while the pain and retraction of the ball remained as before. The right globe

[1] Vol. xxii., 1, pp. 98–106.

lay six lines behind the superior margin of the orbit, the left four and one-half lines."

In most of the cases, the movements of the globe were restricted by paralysis of the muscles or by cicatricial tissue. Homonymous diplopia occurred in one case.

Pulsating Exophthalmus.

Protrusion of the eyeball with exaggerated pulsation in the orbit, depending upon an aneurismal condition of the blood-vessels (aneurism by anastomosis (?), arterio-venous aneurism (?), diffuse aneurism, aneurism of the ophthalmic artery, rupture of the carotid into the cavernous sinus), may be either traumatic or idiopathic. The recorded traumatic cases show that the following injuries may operate as the exciting cause: a penetrating wound of the orbit made by an umbrella-handle, by a fork-like ornament of a parasol, by a knitting-needle, by a fall upon a stick, and by bird-shot. A discharge of shot received in the left orbit has caused pulsating exophthalmus of the right eye. And a wound through the left lower eyelid by the handle of an umbrella has caused pulsating exophthalmus of the opposite (right) side. One patient was wounded at the inner side of the left upper eyelid by the bursting of a soda-water bottle, and a pulsating tumor developed at the site of injury. Among the indirect causes capable of producing this disease are cited falls upon the head, blows upon the temple, blows upon the back of the head, blows upon the nape of the neck, blows upon the forehead, and blows in the region of the eye. The blow must be a severe one, but unconsciousness does not necessarily follow. In one recorded case a knock-down blow with the fist in the temple was followed by pulsating exophthalmus. And a blow upon the nape of the neck from the fist of a very muscular man has caused bilateral pulsating exophthalmus.

The condition is confined to one side, in nearly all cases. In penetrating wounds of the orbit it may occur on the opposite side. Bilateral pulsating exophthalmus has been observed in a few cases.

Idiopathic cases begin commonly with a noise in the head; the exophthalmus develops later on. In traumatic cases, the symptoms are developed, as a general rule, within nine months

of the accident preceding the affection. "More than half the cases," cited by Rivington,[1] "exhibited all the symptoms within two months. Some of the cases were not seen till a much later period, but from the history it is clear that all the symptoms were well established a few weeks after the injury. In two cases only was there an interval of years." It is probable that in most of the traumatic cases there was a fracture of the base of the skull.

According to Rivington,[2] "the typical symptoms of the so-called 'intra-orbital aneurism' are exophthalmus, a chemosed pad of conjunctiva concealing the lower lid, pain, paralysis of orbital muscles and iris, with or without anæsthesia, pulsation of the eyeball, a pulsating tumor above the eye beneath the inner part of the orbital arch, distention of conjunctival vessels, obliteration of the hollow beneath the orbital arch, bruit and noises in the head. Pulsation of the eyeball, a pulsating tumor, and paralysis of ocular muscles may be absent without contra-indicating the diagnosis of aneurism; but I do not think that any case should be regarded as aneurismal in which a bruit cannot be heard, or be placed under the head of 'intra-orbital aneurism' unless, in the absence of pulsation, exophthalmus and congestion of conjunctiva accompany the bruit."

It is not possible to differentiate the traumatic from the idiopathic cases by studying the aneurismal conditions alone. The history of the case must, in certain instances, be positively formulated before such differentiation may be made. A traumatism which subsequently results in pulsating exophthalmus may leave no other evidence that it has been received. Even penetrating wounds of the orbit (*e.g.*, puncture made by a knitting-needle) may leave no discoverable cicatrix, yet such lesions may be succeeded by pulsating exophthalmus. Traumatic cases are more common than idiopathic; they are much more common in men than in women; while, on the contrary, idiopathic cases are much more common in women than in men.

Spontaneous recoveries are recorded, but such cases are uncommon. Traumatic cases may have a fatal termination through secondary hemorrhage. Not only the danger to life, but the deformity, the disturbance of vision, and the distress

[1] Medico-Chirurgical Transactions (London), vol. lviii., p. 211.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 213.

occasioned by the noises in the head must be considered, while estimating the effect of this affection upon the welfare of the patient. The deformity is unsightly. Vision of the affected eye may be totally destroyed by the injury, or, subsequently, by the exophthalmus, by pressure upon the optic nerves, by changes in the retinal vessels, or by ulceration of the cornea. The latter may or may not end in perforation and panophthalmitis. Sometimes diplopia exists in a troublesome degree.

Again, it is likewise important to take into consideration the dangers incident to the treatment of this affection, while estimating the importance of it. For, inasmuch as ligation of the common carotid is the treatment most productive of favorable results, it is the method of cure to be selected in preference to others, and in itself it involves a certain risk to the patient's life (8 deaths in 63 operations).[1] Even that operation has failed to cure in 17 out of 55 cases, collected by Sattler.[2]

[1] Sattler: "Graefe-Saemisch Handbuch," vol. vi., p. 933.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 927. For exhaustive discussion of this affection, consult Rivington, *op. cit.*, and Sattler, *op. cit.*

CHAPTER IV.

INJURIES AND WOUNDS OF THE EYELIDS.

CONTUSIONS.

CONTUSIONS of the eyelids are followed by subcutaneous extravasation of blood (ecchymosis, suggillation, "black eye"). The extravasation may be small, or it may be great enough to close the eye. After a severe contusion, the ecchymosis generally appears immediately; after milder injuries, it may not become visible for some hours.

Subcutaneous extravasations of blood in the eyelids are not always a consequence of direct violence. They may occur spontaneously in persons having a tendency to cerebral apoplexy. They have been observed, in rare cases, as a symptom of disease, *e.g.*, *purpura hæmorrhagica*. They have been caused by straining in whooping-cough. They occur in nearly all cases of fracture of the vault of the orbit, whether the fracture be the result of direct violence or not. Fissures in the vault of the orbit may not extend beyond the frontal bone, or they may be continuous with a fracture of the base of the skull. Palpebral ecchymosis may be due also to fracture of the bones composing the lateral walls, or the floor of the orbit.

When ecchymosis of the eyelids originates in fracture of the bones of the orbit, subconjunctival extravasation is observed as a precedent symptom. In cases of this nature, the extravasated blood infiltrates the deeper tissues of the orbit, spreads forward under the conjunctiva of the eyeball, and appears beneath the integument of the eyelids. Such palpebral extravasations may appear first near the inner canthus; and eighteen or twenty-four hours may pass after the injury before any discoloration of the eyelids becomes manifest.

Palpebral ecchymoses have been observed after contusions of the abdomen and of the thorax. They may be produced by

strangulation. Such extravasations have the same aspects as if they originated in fracture of the base of the skull.

Ammon described a "sympathetic suggillation," by which he meant an ecchymosis appearing in corresponding parts of the face about both eyes. Fracture of the skull involving the walls of both orbits may be the causal lesion in such cases. But the condition has been observed, without fracture, after enucleation of the eyeball.

Cases of amblyopia and amaurosis supposed to arise by reflex action from contusions of the supra-orbital or of the infra-orbital nerve have been reported.[1] The only cases of this description, which I have seen in recent literature, are those reported by Dunn.[2] He gives the history of two attacks of amblyopia occurring in the same patient, following a contusion of the right and subsequently a contusion of the left supra-orbital nerve. Both attacks were apparently cut short by section of the injured nerve.

Whenever it is alleged that impairment of vision is due to injury of one of these nerves, the case should be subjected to especially careful scrutiny; for it is not intrinsically probable that amblyopia or amaurosis ever depends upon these comparatively simple lesions. If, after a contusion or other injury of the supra-orbital or the infra-orbital nerve, the patient complain that vision in the eye of the injured side has become defective, one of the following explanations of the phenomena may obtain,—viz., that the optic nerve has been injured by fracture of the orbital bones, or that the defect in the eye antedates the injury, or that the disturbance in the eye is a coincidence, not a consequence, of the traumatism; or that the patient is malingering. In the more obscure cases, judgment should be reserved until sufficient time have elapsed for the ophthalmoscopic signs of pathological changes in the fundus to become manifest. The appearance of such signs may be delayed.

Wounds of the Eyelids.

The eyelids may be the site of all sorts of wounds—incised, punctured, lacerated, and contused wounds. They may be either

[1] Mackenzie: "Dis. of the Eye," Philadelphia, 1855, p. 150 *et seq.*

[2] New York Med. Journal, August 9th, 1890; May 30th, 1891.

superficial or deep. The whole eyelid may be torn off, or so extensively lacerated as to slough away, leaving the cornea exposed to the atmosphere. They may be confined to the structures of the eyelids, or they may involve neighboring structures. They may be either infected or non-infected.

The course of the wound is important. When it is parallel, or nearly parallel, with the free margin of the lid, the scar will be less conspicuous and the deformity much less marked than if the wound were oblique or vertical. Incised wounds parallel with the free margin of the lid may heal without noticeable scar or deformity. When they pass through the levator palpebræ superioris, however, the patient will not be able to open his eye; he will suffer from *traumatic ptosis*. Careful suture of the divided muscle will restore its usefulness, but it may be anticipated that evidence of the traumatism, in the line of deformity or in restricted action of the muscle, will remain after the most skilful handling. The most favorable time for operation in such cases is immediately after the injury. Green made a successful operation two years after the muscle was divided.

A wound near the inner canthus may divide the canaliculi. Cicatricial tissue may occlude the lumen of the tube, causing epiphora, or weeping of the eye. Epiphora is an annoying condition that disturbs the function of the eye by virtue of accumulation of tears in the conjunctival sac.

Wounds parallel with and near the margin of the lids, passing through the tarsus in the region of the Meibomian ducts, will result in formation of cysts of the Meibomian glands, through cicatricial occlusion of their ducts.

Wounds dividing the eyelids in an oblique or a vertical direction will cause deformity. Incised wounds of the lid margin and tarsal cartilage, even though they may have been promptly and accurately united by a suture, may heal with permanent deformity (traumatic coloboma). The eyelashes about the wound may be turned toward the eyeball by the cicatrix, so that they constantly irritate the cornea. When this takes place, the patient is very uncomfortable; his eye may be constantly inflamed, and its function may be impaired by loss of transparency of the superficial strata of the cornea.

Lacerated and contused wounds resulting in loss of tissue are productive of greater evils. Such wounds, even when su-

perficial, will leave a noticeable scar, and, when the loss of tissue extends over a sufficient area, the cicatrix will prevent complete closure of the eye (lagophthalmus). In order that the lagophthalmus may be permanent, considerable loss of tissue is necessary, owing to the elasticity of the integument of the eyelids. Lacerated wounds having a vertical or an oblique direction are, more frequently than others, productive of lagophthalmus and coloboma. Lacerations of the eyelids may destroy sufficient tissue to uncover the cornea permanently. Unless relieved by surgical treatment, the eye will remain open. Sooner or later the drying effect of the atmosphere and the dust in the air, lodging upon its surface, will set up a persistent inflammation of the cornea, which will destroy the eye. The most successful treatment cannot efface the deformity.

Lacerated and contused wounds of the eyelids may be succeeded by eversion of the lid margins (traumatic ectropium). This is more commonly due to wounds of the lower than to those of the upper lid. The deformity is unsightly. When the inner portion of the lower lid is everted, the eye will weep constantly. Punctured wounds of the eyelids, when they extend into the orbit, may result in eversion of the lid margin, by virtue of cicatricial contraction.

Incised wounds of the eyelids heal promptly. Lacerated and contused wounds, when infected, or when they occur in persons whose health is depraved, heal slowly and usually suppurate. Such wounds may be attacked by erysipelas. This may endanger the patient's life, and it may extend to the orbital cellular tissue, causing atrophy of the optic nerve, or ulceration of the cornea. Under such conditions, the latter would run a very destructive course. Punctured wounds made by an infected instrument may be followed by similar results.

Burns of the Eye.

The eyelids may be burned by fire, by explosions, and by corrosive agents. The burns may be superficial or deep. They may totally destroy the eyelids. Burns of the first degree heal without leaving any trace behind. Deeper burns are followed by scarring; such scars contract so as to give the eyelids a false position. Thus, the several conditions, ectropium, even to com-

plete eversion of the eyelids and exposure of the cornea, lagophthalmus, and anchyloblepharon, may be caused by contraction of such cicatrices in the eyelids. The deformity is sometimes very repulsive. Operative interference will relieve that feature to a considerable extent, but well-marked traces of the casualty will persist in the more severe cases, notwithstanding the most skilful management.

Burns of the eyelids are associated, in many cases, with a more serious corrosion of the conjunctiva and eyeball. But burns of the latter may not be complicated by burns of the eyelids. Quicklime and acids (vitriol) are the corrosive agents that most frequently enter the eye. Flames from gunpowder and other quickly inflammable substances may scorch or severely burn the eyeball. Corrosion of the conjunctiva causes ulceration. When the palpebral and the opposing bulbar conjunctiva are involved in the same ulcerative process, symblepharon, or adhesion of the eyelid to the eyeball, ensues. Such adhesion may prove to be a serious impediment to the performance of the functions of the eye. Symblepharon may attain such degree that the palpebral conjunctiva is adherent to the cornea. When this is the case vision is very much impaired or destroyed.

Burns of the cornea may be either superficial or deep. A superficial burn may destroy the epithelial layer only. Such an example came under the writer's observation. Both corneæ of a boy were burned to this degree while he was examining a burning paper that contained gunpowder. The flame destroyed the whole epithelial layer of both corneæ. Both eyes recovered perfectly without a trace of the injury. Explosions of blasts and accidents with fire-arms are not uncommonly followed by burns of the cornea and lodgment of grains of powder therein. In general, the cornea recovers its transparency, notwithstanding the retention of the powder-grains in its substance. Burns of the cornea may be sufficiently deep to open the anterior chamber at once, or the ulceration following them may perforate the cornea subsequently. Such injuries destroy vision in the injured eye and lead to sympathetic inflammation of the fellow-eye. An example of the latter came under the writer's observation. The right eye of a man was corroded by quicklime. The anterior chamber was opened. Some years later, the eye appeared as if an iridectomy outward had been performed. The

injured eye was blind, owing to unmistakable sympathetic inflammation.

The dangers of burns of the cornea are, then: 1, immediate destruction of the eye by extensive corrosion; 2, in less severe cases, perforating ulcer of the cornea, leading sometimes to sympathetic inflammation; 3, cicatrices of the cornea, following ulceration in severe keratitis; and 4, symblepharon.

Burns of the sclera may destroy the eye by perforating the organ, when sympathetic disease may supervene and destroy its fellow; or by exciting violent inflammation of the uveal tract. They injure the usefulness of the organ in other cases, by virtue of the symblepharon, which almost invariably succeeds them.

CHAPTER V.

INJURIES AND WOUNDS OF THE EYEBALL.

Dislocation of the Eyeball.

The eyeball may be dislocated by blunt objects thrust into the orbit. "Gouging" is a practice which consists in thrusting a thumb or a finger into the victim's orbit between the eyeball and the bony wall. This forces the globe from its bed sufficiently for the eyelids to slip behind it. Injuries of this character may rupture one or more of the ocular muscles. They cause severe contusion of the eyeball, in a certain number of cases. While the eye is dislocated its vision is suspended, but normal vision may return when the dislocation is reduced. A prognosis of the ultimate effects of the injury, however, cannot be made early; for, subsequently, destructive inflammation may supervene. Hemorrhage into the vitreous, dislocation of the lens, detachment of the retina, rupture of the choroid, and rupture of the sclera occur as complications, which terminate the usefulness of the organ.

Dislocation of the eyeball may be due to blows upon the eye. Noyes relates a case caused by falling down-stairs and striking the head against the banister.[1] Prominent eyes in shallow sockets are more easily dislocated than others.

Dislocation of the eyeball into the maxillary antrum has been described. A remarkable case of this nature was observed by Langenbeck. The patient was struck on the right side of his face by a locomotive. Eight days later the eyeball was found projecting into the antrum, through the floor of the orbit. When replaced, it was found to be uninjured and its acuteness of vision normal. Four months after, an ulcer appeared in the cornea and the eye became shrunken.[2]

[1] "Dis. of Eye," 1890, p. 447.

[2] Archives of Ophthalmology, N. Y., vol. xxii., 1, abstract.

Evulsion of the Eyeball.

The eyeball may be torn from its socket by accident. Mackenzie[1] cites the following case: While intoxicated a man fell against the ring of a key which was in the lock of the door. The ring divided the upper eyelid and, penetrating into the orbit, scooped the eyeball out so that it fell upon the floor. The man, being too drunk to realize the extent of his injury, went to bed and was found in the morning covered with blood. Under simple treatment he made a speedy recovery.

Mackenzie refers also to a case in which the eyeball was torn from its socket by a cart-wheel passing over the side of the patient's head.[2]

Contusions of the Eyeball.

The damage accruing from contusions of the eyeball will vary with the amount of force and the direction of the blow. The bony margins of the orbit are arranged in a way to protect the globe against blows directed from points not immediately in front of the eye. Large blunt objects, like the clenched hand, striking point-blank, would generally be arrested by the bony margins of the orbit and cause only trifling, if any, injury to the eyeball. If, however, the eyeball were prominent and the orbit shallow, or if the assailant's knuckles were large, and if they were armed with a metallic reinforcement, a point-blank blow might cause a severe contusion, resulting even in rupture of the eyeball and destruction of the eye. Contusions of the globe are more likely to ensue from the impact of small blunt objects. They may be received at the hands of an adversary, who viciously attempts to gouge the eye from its bed.

Rupture of the sclera, due to contusion, is, almost without exception, observed in the anterior portion of the eyeball, passing through the ciliary region. Bowman reported one case of rupture of the posterior portion of the sclera. Ruptures of the sclera may be either partial or complete. They are more or less concentric with the cornea, and are found, as a rule, above the cornea. The rent in the sclera lies near the cornea, on the

[1] *Loc. cit.*, p. 417, from "Annales d'Oculistique," t. xxvi., p. 99.

[2] *Loc. cit.*, p. 417, from Graefe and Walther's Journal, vol. i.

side opposite to that receiving the contusing force. A blow from in front will rupture the sclera above the cornea; for the patient will roll his eyes upward instinctively to protect them from injury, and the blow will strike below the cornea. Blows delivered upon the upper and outer portion of the globe will rupture the sclera on the opposite side of the cornea—that is, downward and inward. Blows upon the temporal side of the cornea will rupture the sclera on the nasal side; and blows received above the cornea will rupture the sclera below the cornea, and *vice versa*.[1]

Large complete rents in the sclera are associated with loss of vitreous, collapse of the eyeball, and immediate destruction of the organ. Smaller complete ruptures may be complicated by prolapse of the iris, ciliary body, choroid, and vitreous, and by extrusion of the crystalline lens. At the same time, the conjunctiva is often torn, so that there is direct communication between the contents of the eyeball and the external world. When this occurs, the wound will generally become infected by micro-organisms; irido-cyclitis will follow, and may lead to an attack of sympathetic inflammation in the fellow-eye. Or, purulent panophthalmitis may invade the injured organ and destroy it.

The scleral rupture in other cases may exist without lesion of the conjunctiva. So long as the conjunctiva is not torn, the danger of infection by micro-organisms and the subsequent disasters supposed to be due to them is very much diminished.

Loss of vitreous, and prolapse of the iris and of the choroid, are always serious complications. Even a moderate loss of vitreous is sometimes followed by detachment of the retina. This may not supervene until some weeks or months have elapsed; that is, until the cicatrices which form in the chamber of the vitreous have begun to contract. It is possible for the patient to recover from the immediate effects of the injury with useful vision in the eye; but this may be destroyed subsequently by detachment of the retina. Attempts made to reduce prolapsed portions of the iris, ciliary body, or choroid, will not commonly prove entirely successful. Some incarceration of the stump of the abscised prolapsed structures will persist in the scar. It must follow, in most cases of that nature, when the cicatrices contract, that irritation, or a low

[1] Alt: Wiener med. Wochenschrift, 1874, pp. 230, 231.

grade of inflammation, will keep the eye tender and menacing to its fellow. The comfort of the patient will be seriously disturbed, the usefulness of both eyes greatly impaired, and, subsequently, an attack of sympathetic inflammation may cause blindness of both eyes.

Judged from the standpoint of the rupture alone, contusions of the eyeball sufficiently severe to produce such a lesion are among the most serious injuries that befall the eye.

Moreover, such contusions may cause hemorrhage into the anterior and the posterior chambers, and into the chamber of the vitreous; they may cause partial or complete luxation of the lens, or even extrusion of the lens from the eyeball; they may be complicated by irido-dialysis, or by retroversion of the iris, by rupture of the choroid or the retina, or by detachment of those structures; and they may be complicated by fracture of the walls of the orbit. An eye subjected to such an injury is, therefore, often destroyed at once.

Contusions of the Cornea.

The cornea may be contused by a force applied to the closed eyelids, or by one striking the cornea directly. Unless the blow is delivered with great velocity, the eyelids will close before the eyeball is struck. In this manner, the organ is protected in many instances against accidents that would otherwise produce serious results. Evidence of contusion of the eyelids will be present when the injury has been received by them.

Contusions of the cornea may be the cause of inflammation of that structure, and the inflammation may be superficial, or it may involve the deeper layers. The cornea will lose much of its transparency and vision may be considerably below normal. But complete resolution of the morbid process may be anticipated in most cases, under appropriate treatment.

When the blow of a blunt object falls directly upon the corneal tissue, an abrasion of the epithelium, or even a deeper wound, may be the result. Such solutions of continuity may ulcerate. Then destruction of tissue may be sufficient to ruin the eye. Abrasions of the cornea may heal without leaving a trace of their existence. They may be converted into ulcerations, if infective material come in contact with them. The sources of

such infection are commonly a purulent discharge from the conjunctiva, a purulent discharge from the lachrymal sac, a dirty body causing the contusion, rubbing the eye with dirty fingers or a dirty handkerchief, or carelessness on the part of the attending physician. Ulceration may appear first as an abrasion, and, without the intervention of infection, necrosis of the cornea may supervene in consequence of the violence of the blow. The corneal tissue, in such a case, is killed by the traumatism, and the dead part is separated and thrown off from the living by the process of ulceration.

Contused wounds of the cornea amounting to more than an abrasion of the epithelium heal by cicatrization. The tissue composing the scar is opaque. If the loss of substance extend over more than a very limited area, the scar will be a noticeable deformity. Sometimes small ulcerated spots heal without the development of opaque scar tissue. The spot appears, when healed, as a small pit or facet in the surface of the cornea, and it is apparently covered with epithelium as transparent as that which extends over the adjacent normal tissue. Delicate scars are developed from superficial ulcerations. They may be almost or quite invisible to the unpractised observer.

Whether these traces of the pre-existing loss of substance be marked or insignificant, their chief importance, as regards the function of the eye, depends upon the position occupied by them. When they invade the region through which the visual line should pass, they always impair the acuteness of vision. A large opaque scar located over the pupil will produce blindness. A delicate nebula in the same position will destroy reading vision. In such cases, loss of normal transparency of the cornea will explain the effect upon sight. When a facet of the cornea lies over the pupil, the acuteness of vision is also seriously impaired. For the surface of the cornea is no longer regular, and, in the affected region, the rays of light passing into the eye are irregularly refracted (irregular astigmatism). Hence the retina does not receive a perfectly formed image of the object looked at. Distortion of the retinal image in some of these cases is so marked that the usefulness of the eye is destroyed.

Eventually external strabismus may supervene, in consequence of disuse of the affected eye.

Inflammation, abscess, and ulceration of the cornea result-

ing from contusions are more prone to follow such injuries in patients who are old or badly nourished.[1]

Rupture of the cornea alone has been observed. De Wecker[2] refers to two cases that occurred in his own practice. In one, the lesion was due to a violent blow of the fist; in the other, it was due to gouging, the assailant's thumb being thrust between the inner wall of the orbit and the eyeball.

Contusions sufficiently forcible to rupture the cornea would, in most cases, cause other severe injuries of the eye. The rent may extend into the sclera, and would then involve the ciliary region. The iris would be prolapsed. The lens might be dislocated or even extruded. Rupture of the choroid, detachment of the retina, or loss of vitreous may also complicate the case.

Simple rupture of the cornea, in the most favorable cases, would endanger the preservation of the eyeball; for it is a penetrating injury. Iritis of a severe type may be expected. Purulent panophthalmitis may ensue, and removal of the eye become a necessity.

But, even though the rupture be uncomplicated by injury of other structures, and the healing be prompt and uneventful, the function of the eye will be seriously impaired or perhaps totally destroyed. For, in the first place, the line of union may cross the pupil and mechanically interfere with the passage of light into the eye; and, in the second place, the union will result in irregularity of the cornea, and, therefore, irregular astigmatism and its consequences.

Ruptures of the cornea, or of the cornea and sclera together, may be followed by chronic iritis or chronic irido-cyclitis. The eye will remain tender and irritable after the wounds have healed, and, subsequently, the fellow-eye may be invaded by an attack of sympathetic inflammation.

Affections of the Iris, due to Contusions of the Eyeball.

Contusions of the eyeball often separate the iris to a certain extent from its peripheral attachments. That condition is known as irido-dialysis—the iris retracts toward the pupil at

[1] Alt: Wiener med. Wochenschrift, 1874, p. 231.

[2] "Traité complet d'Ophthalmologie," 1886, p. 216.

the site of the detachment, thus forming an aperture by the corneal margin, through which the fundus-reflex may be seen, when the eye is illuminated with the ophthalmoscopic mirror. The aperture may be large enough to permit an ophthalmoscopic examination of the fundus through it. The pupil will not maintain its normal roundness, and does not respond properly to the stimulus of light. In fresh cases, blood will be found in the anterior chamber, but it soon undergoes resorption. Hemorrhage into the vitreous and traumatic cataract occur as the more common complications, together with transient loss of transparency of the cornea.

Cases are observed in which the eye is inflamed and painful for a number of months, especially when the contusion has injured the deeper structures, causing profuse hemorrhage into the vitreous. As a rule, however, all irritation subsides after a few days or a few weeks. Transparency of the media may become normal, with normal vision in the eye. A partial opacity in the posterior capsule of the lens, with diminished vision, occurred in two cases under my observation. The vitreous in both cases contained a few particles of extravasated blood, which soon disappeared, leaving the media clear in every part excepting the small area of the posterior capsule. One of these patients was injured nearly four years ago, but no extension of the area of opacity was visible at a recent examination. The eye had not been troublesome after the primary irritation subsided, although the boy had attended school regularly.

Irido-dialysis may be sufficiently marked to excite comment from casual observers. Its situation and size may cause monocular diplopia. Another patient was annoyed by this symptom, until he learned to disregard the false image. He can still see through the false pupil, however, by directing his attention to it. The glare of light may dazzle such eyes; for, owing to the imperfect movements of the pupil and the fault in the periphery of the iris, the eye receives more light than an uninjured eye. Vision may, also, be imperfect on dark days, by virtue of an imperfect dilation of the pupil.

Rents in the substance of the iris may be due to contusions. De Wecker[1] cites a case from Lawson, in which the rent occurred above and near the pupil. The appearance was that of a large

[1] "Graefe-Saemisch Handbuch," 4, p. 536.

pupil divided transversely by a narrow band of iris-fibres. Vision was quite imperfect. If vision through either aperture alone had been normal, it would, nevertheless, have been confused when both were uncovered. The force of a blow sufficient to cause a rent in the substance of the iris may be expected to injure other structures (lens, choroid, retina), so as to permanently depreciate the acuteness of vision, if not to destroy useful sight.

Severe contusions cause absolute dilatation of the pupil. Blows upon the eye may, rarely, produce either complete or partial retroversion of the iris. Complete retroversion resembles both absolute dilatation of the pupil, and absence of the iris. Partial retroversion resembles coloboma of the iris. Congenital coloboma always occurs downward, or downward and inward, and is generally binocular.[1] When the iris is retroverted in any case, ophthalmoscopic examination of the ciliary processes is not possible. This fact does not obtain in dilatation of the pupil, or in aniridia, or in coloboma. Traumatic and post-operative colobomata of the iris are associated with scarring of the cornea.

These conditions are permanent, almost without exception. An instance, however, of healing in a case of irido-dialysis following a "combined extraction" of cataract has come under my observation. Berry refers to a case of recovery, recorded from the Dublin Eye Hospital.[2]

Affections of the Crystalline Lens, due to Contusions of the Eyeball.

Traumatic Cataract.—Cataract may be the principal result of a contusion of the eyeball. Changes in the transparency of the lens may not be observed until weeks or months have passed. When the opacity begins, it generally becomes complete and reduces the visual power to perception of light. Evidence of the existence of any other lesion may be wanting. It is supposed that the anterior capsule is ruptured in most of the cases, and that cloudiness of the lens is due to the action of the aqueous humor, which is admitted to the lens tissue through the rent in the capsule. But in other instances the existence

[1] Berry: "Dis. of Eye," p. 270. [2] *Loc. cit.*, p. 269.

of a rent in the capsule cannot be made out. When the capsule is ruptured, the incipient stage of traumatic cataract ought to become visible in a few hours, or a few days. When the capsule is not ruptured, the cataractous degeneration of the lens ought to be developed much more tardily. At all events, after contusions of the eyeball, cataract may develop, whether the injury does or does not appear to be serious, when the patient is first examined. Liégey[1] reported such a case. A man was struck in the face with a whip-stock. The right side of the face, when the first examination occurred, was smeared with blood, which still flowed from a small, clean wound 1½ cm. long, situated at the base of the lower eyelid, but not penetrating to the bone. The lower eyelid was swollen and ecchymosed. The superior lid was slightly swollen and ecchymosed. The palpebral and bulbar conjunctiva was injected with blood; there was slight chemosis; media clear, fundus normal, as seen with the ophthalmoscope. Patient avowed that he could see light only. Liégey did not think that the eye had been seriously injured, and gave a favorable prognosis. About five weeks later the man returned to him saying that the eye was entirely blind. Iris was immobile and pupil dilated. No physical signs of the injury. Media still clear and fundus appeared normal. The diagnosis at this time was incomplete traumatic amaurosis, which may or may not continue and may become total. Two weeks later, no especial change had taken place. Five weeks after this visit Liégey examined the eye again and found signs of cataractous degeneration of the lens. The court allowed the plaintiff damages.

In every case, traumatic cataract permanently injures the eye. The cataract may be extracted, or its solution may be effected by operation. In either case, the images of objects may be formed upon the retina again, as soon as the obstruction is removed. But a cataract glass must be fitted to the eye in order that vision may be distinct. With glasses, however, the patient will not be able to adjust his eye for objects at variable distances. The power of accommodation is wanting; and the injured eye cannot work harmoniously with the sound eye. For this reason, patients soon abandon attempts to use both eyes again, for such attempts always prove abortive.

[1] Journal de Médecine, 1871, p. 496.

Traumatic cataract is a noticeable deformity. The white pupil attracts attention; and, therefore, it is a source of annoyance to the patient. Eventually, the injured eye turns outward; thus, divergent strabismus is added to the disfigurement already present. Operation upon these cataracts improves the appearance of the eye, and restores sufficient vision to improve slightly the sense of perspective, even without glasses. When the patient has only one eye, or when the fellow-eye does not retain sufficient visual power, operations on these cataracts will restore useful vision.

Traumatic cataracts may, in some cases, undergo complete solution, without operative interference. The pupil may thus become clear and black, and the eye may appear perfectly normal to the casual observer. In many cases, however, the solution is not complete, or the capsule of the lens subsequently becomes cloudy and the pupil remains white, or, after a variable period, becomes white, and the eye has an unsightly appearance. Operation (discission) will often clear the pupil in these cases.

Dislocation of the Lens.—Contusions of the eyeball may cause dislocation of the lens. The dislocation may be either partial or complete. The suspensory ligament, or zone of Zinn, is ruptured. The lens may be expelled from the eyeball and lodge under the conjunctiva, or it may be extruded from the eye altogether. Complete dislocation of the lens is spoken of as *luxation* of the lens; partial dislocation as *subluxation* of the lens.

Luxation of the Lens.—The lens may be dislocated into the vitreous, and will be found lying below the pupil. If the vitreous be fluid, the lens will change position when the eye or head is moved in certain directions. It may remain clear for some time, but will finally become opaque. After the primary irritation subsides, the eye may remain quiet during a number of years; or the eye may continue irritable and become very painful. This happened in the case of a patient who consulted me about eight months after the accident. She had attempted to break a stick of kindling-wood with an axe. The stick flew against her right eye, striking it with considerable force. Vision was immediately impaired. There was no laceration or other wound of the eye. Severe inflammation followed. The

eye continued painful for months, in spite of the treatment advised by her physician. Owing to excessive pain, she acquired the morphine habit. When I saw her, the eyeball was enlarged, hard, and tender to pressure. The pupil was semi-dilated. Ciliary staphylomata were present. The lens was dislocated downward into the vitreous. Vision was perception of light only. Her general health was very much shattered. The case was one of luxation of the lens, followed by secondary glaucoma. Enucleation was imperative.

The lens may be dislocated into the anterior chamber by contusions of the eyeball. The luxated lens appears transparent, like a drop of oil. By oblique illumination its peculiar structure may be discerned. The lens may remain clear for some weeks, but eventually it becomes opaque; in certain cases, opacity of the lens is noted soon after the injury. An opaque lens in the anterior chamber resembles in appearance a collection of thick pus. In every case vision is very much impaired.

A lens dislocated into the anterior chamber, and lying in contact with the cornea, will very often excite inflammation of that structure, which may terminate in a perforating ulceration of the cornea, expulsion of the lens, and *phthisis bulbi*. On the other hand, in some instances, a dislocated lens may lie in the anterior chamber for months without exciting much irritation. Very frequently, however, secondary glaucoma supervenes, causing excruciating distress. The lens may lodge in the pupil. When this occurs, secondary glaucoma is inevitable.

Dislocation of the lens under the conjunctiva occurs only when the tunics of the eyeball have been ruptured by the blow. Immediately after the injury the diagnosis may be obscured by the presence of extravasated blood. Subsequently, resorption of the blood will enable the attendant to detect the lens in its false position. A contusion which gives rise to such an injury as this must necessarily be a severe one.

SUBLUXATION OF THE LENS.—Subluxation of the lens depends upon a partial rupture of the zone of Zinn. The free margin of the lens, when the zone is torn, may fall away from the iris, while the opposite edge of the lens advances toward the anterior chamber. Hence, the lens lies in an oblique position in the pupil. Such a condition will cause irregular lenticular

astigmatism. This is not always easy to diagnosticate. But it may be presumed to exist when, in an eye the refraction of which was previously known, irregular astigmatism is detected for the first time after an injury, the media being clear and the fundus normal. The ophthalmometer will assist in making the differential diagnosis between corneal and lenticular astigmatism. The depth of the anterior chamber will not be the same at all points, and the iris will be tremulous, where it is not supported by the lens. Glasses will not improve the vision much.

When tilting of the lens is more marked, its free margin may be seen in the pupillary space. So long as the lens remains clear the patient may complain of monocular diplopia.

Lateral, or vertical, displacement of the lens is revealed by the presence of the margin of the lens in the pupillary space: it appears as a dark crescentic line. When the lens is displaced, the iris is no longer supported and trembles when the eye is moved quickly. The power of accommodation is wanting; and while the lens remains clear and its edge passes through the pupillary space, the patient may complain of monocular diplopia.

Monocular diplopia exists in these cases because the light entering the pupil passes in part through the lens and in part through the space from which the lens has moved. The rays of light passing through these two regions will be refracted differently, and two imperfect images of the same object will be formed upon different portions of the retina at the same time. Both images may be perceived by the patient. On account of this, the usefulness of the eye will be destroyed, unless the patient learn to suppress the less distinct image.

Subluxation ends sooner or later in complete dislocation. In time, the lens becomes cataractous. And, owing to the changes of position which some of these lenses undergo when the conditions are favorable, the eye may be irritated and cyclitis, choroiditis, or secondary glaucoma may supervene to destroy the eye definitively.

Dislocation of the lens of any sort always permanently injures the function of the eye. Nothing can be done to restore the lens to its normal position, nor is it possible to prevent the cataractous degeneration that is certain to ensue sooner or later.

When the eye becomes irritable, or when cyclitis, choroiditis, or secondary glaucoma develops, in a certain number of cases, the lens may be removed, and the necessity for enucleation of the eyeball obviated. Operations upon these lenses are most difficult when the dislocation is into the vitreous. In every case, the operation is a delicate one. It is least difficult when the lens lies under the conjunctiva. Glasses may improve the vision very much, but the disparity between the eyes (supposing the fellow-organ to have ordinary visual power), is such that, in general, patients are not as comfortable with as without them. A dislocated lens may excite irido-cyclitis, and some ophthalmologists believe that it is one cause of sympathetic inflammation.

Not all dislocations of the crystalline lens are traumatic. Congenital dislocation, or *ectopia lentis*, is a well-known deformity of the eye. In such cases both eyes are affected, and generally the lenses are partially dislocated in an upward and outward direction. Such lenses are smaller than normal. The anomaly is symmetrical.[1] "*Ectopia lentis* occurs mostly upward, or upward and inward, and upward and outward. It is often met with in several members of the same family, and is hereditary. . . . It probably always occurs in both eyes and is frequently associated with a defect in the power of convergence."[2] According to De Schweinitz, "complete congenital luxation is also described."[3]

Spontaneous dislocation of the lens into the anterior chamber or into the vitreous may occur, especially in cases of fluid vitreous, in myopia of high degree, and in cases of choroiditis. Hypermature cataracts may become spontaneously dislocated.

I have observed a case of subluxation of the lens, toward the nasal side into the chamber of the vitreous, in an eye which had been destroyed years before by a burn of the cornea. The cornea had been perforated, the iris had prolapsed, the pupil was irregular and presented the appearance which a large iridectomy would leave. There was absolutely no history of contusion of the eyeball. No operation had been performed upon the eye.

[1] Becker: "Graefe-Saemisch Handbuch," 5, p. 286.

[2] Berry: "Dis. of Eye," 1893, pp. 180, 181.

[3] "Dis. of Eye," p. 402.

Rupture of the Choroid and Detachment of the Retina.

Profuse hemorrhage into the vitreous arises from severe contusions of the eyeball. Until resorption of the blood has taken place, it is not possible to examine the fundus. When the media have become clear, a rupture of the choroid, or a detachment of the retina may be found. Ruptures of the choroid are situated between the macula and the optic disc, and are more or less concentric with the latter. They appear at first as a yellowish stripe, sometimes branched, becoming pale later on, with pigment deposits along the margins. Choroidal rupture has been observed near the equator of the eyeball.

Vision is commonly very much disturbed: in rare cases the eye may still retain useful vision. After resorption of the blood has become complete and the eye has become perfectly quiet, no further improvement in function may be expected.

Traumatic detachment of the retina may be diagnosticated only after the extravasation has been resorbed. It may be partial or complete. Partial detachments become complete sooner or later. The lesion is most easily produced in myopic eyes. The ophthalmoscopic appearances are characteristic. Useful vision is permanently destroyed in every case.

WOUNDS OF THE EYEBALL.

Wounds of the eyeball may be incised, punctured, lacerated, or contused. Lacerated and contused wounds differ from others especially in that the injured tissues are so torn and bruised that primary union is not possible, healing is prolonged, and danger of infection is correspondingly increased. Moreover, inasmuch as they are due to impact of blunt weapons, the force required to produce them is sufficient to cause a contusion, as well as a laceration of the eyeball.

Wounds of the eyeball may be infected or non-infected: that is to say, some wounds are contaminated by pathogenic microbes, and others are not. Such contamination may be due to an unclean instrument or weapon, to a pre-existing purulent inflammation of the conjunctiva, or the lachrymal sac, or to carelessness on the part of the patient or his attending physi-

cian. Non-infected, or aseptic, wounds heal with little or no inflammatory reaction, provided that close apposition of their edges may be maintained. Infected, or septic, wounds, even though trifling in appearance, heal slowly, and the consecutive inflammation often invades the whole eye and destroys it. Disinfection of wounds of the eyeball is much less readily accomplished than is the case with wounds of other parts of the body. Strong antiseptic solutions irritate the delicate structures of that organ and may seriously injure them. Moreover, the deeper parts of the wound are comparatively inaccessible. Hence it follows, that when infection of these lesions occurs, the consequences of them are much more disastrous than the nature of the injury would, at first sight, appear to warrant.

Wounds of the Cornea.

Wounds of the cornea may be either superficial or perforating. Perforating wounds open the anterior chamber. Wounds of the cornea heal by the formation of an opaque cicatrix. The cicatrix of an incised or a punctured wound is much less noticeable than that of a lacerated or a contused wound having the same linear measurement.

Both superficial and perforating wounds of the cornea cause distortion of its surface, resulting in irregular astigmatism, which may be only partially corrected by glasses. Vision is permanently impaired. The function of the eye is more disturbed when the cicatrix crosses the pupil than when it does not. In the former case, vision is impaired by the opaque scar and by the irregular astigmatism; in the latter, the uncorrectable astigmatism is responsible for the disturbance of sight.

Perforating wounds of the cornea, moreover, are frequently complicated by prolapse of the iris, which is washed into the wound by the flood of outpouring aqueous humor. Speaking generally, loss of the aqueous is not a serious accident, for it is reproduced within twenty-four hours. Sudden loss of a volume of aqueous, however, through a large wound in the cornea, may be followed by dislocation of the crystalline lens into the anterior chamber. Prolapsed iris commonly heals in the scar (anterior synechia), and the pupil is distorted. Dilatation and contraction of such pupils go on under the varying intensities

of light, and dragging upon the adhesion is the consequence. In many cases, this irritates the eye and may excite sympathetic irritation, or sympathetic inflammation. Or, if sympathetic disease be due to transmission of microbes, the entrance of the pathogenic germs into the exciting eye may be facilitated by the presence of iris-tissue in the corneal wound.

Wounds of the cornea may be so destructive in themselves that enucleation of the eyeball should be performed at once. And when they are followed by plastic irido-cyclitis, removal of the eye may be indicated to terminate the patient's suffering and to prevent an outbreak of sympathetic inflammation.

Wounds of the Ciliary Body.

Penetrating wounds of the eyeball, involving the circumcorneal zone, injure the ciliary body. When the wound is large, prolapse of the ciliary body may follow. This is always a serious complication; for it is not always advisable to abscise the prolapsed tissues, and incarceration of the ciliary body in the scar will rarely fail to excite a persistent cyclitis which will endanger the fellow-eye. Wounds of the ciliary body are universally regarded as among the most serious, if not actually the most dangerous, injuries that befall the eye. Even when the wound is aseptic and the healing is prompt, subsequent contraction of the scar is likely to result in chronic irritation, with great disturbance of vision, and may become the exciting cause of sympathetic disease. Septic wounds in this region are followed by violent inflammation, suppuration in the vitreous, and loss of the eyeball; or they may be followed by a less severe attack of cyclitis, which runs a chronic course, eventually blinding the eye and possibly exciting sympathetic disease. Profuse hemorrhage into the vitreous may occur with wounds of the ciliary body.

Wounds of the Lens.

Penetrating wounds frequently injure the crystalline lens or its capsule. Contused and lacerated wounds may be complicated by dislocation, or by extrusion, of the lens. When the capsule or the lens tissue is wounded, traumatic cataract subsequently develops. In the great majority of cases, the anterior

capsule is injured,—then the aqueous humor is admitted to the lens tissue. The lens becomes opaque, and, if the wound in the capsule do not heal too rapidly, solution of its tissue is effected by the aqueous. Solution of the lens may be complete after several weeks, when the pupil will become black and clear; or the solution may be incomplete, when opaque lens tissue will give a white appearance to the pupil and obstruct the passage of light. In the former set of cases, evidence of the lesion is not obvious to the casual observer, provided that the corneal wound have healed, leaving a narrow linear cicatrix. Subsequently the capsule, which remains unabsorbed, may become opaque and white. After complete solution of the traumatic cataract, before opacity of the capsule sets in, vision of the eye may be normal with proper lenses. But, power of accommodation is wanting in such eyes, the sense of perspective is impaired, the eyes cannot work harmoniously, and the patient is not able to perform work requiring correct binocular vision. When the rent in the capsule is large and the substance of the lens is much torn, it may swell so rapidly as to fill the anterior chamber; severe iritis may then set in, or secondary glaucoma may destroy the sight of the eye permanently. If solution of the lens be partial, or if, after complete solution, the capsule become opaque, vision is very much impaired, and the appearance of the eye is not pleasing. Divergent strabismus usually supervenes after a few weeks or a few months.

Wounds of the Iris.

Wounds of the cornea and wounds of the lens may be complicated by wounds of the iris. Hemorrhage into the anterior and the posterior chambers occurs at once, and may fill those chambers so that inspection of the structures behind the cornea cannot be made. Resorption of blood in the anterior or the posterior chamber takes place in a few days or a few weeks. The wound may have excited such an attack of plastic iritis that when the transparency of the aqueous is restored, the pupil may be found closed by an organized exudate. Plastic iritis and occlusion of the pupil are the great dangers to be met in wounds of the iris. Exclusion of the pupil (complete attachment of the margin of the pupil to the anterior cap-

sule of the lens) may supervene. This condition, as well as occlusion of the pupil, is productive of secondary glaucoma, unless relieved by a successful iridectomy. Naturally, septic wounds of the iris are followed by greater reaction than are aseptic wounds. The inflammatory reaction in the latter may be trifling; in the former, it will be intense and will extend to other portions of the uveal tract, viz., the ciliary body and the choroid.

Wounds of the Eyeball Opening the Chamber of the Vitreous.

Penetrating wounds of the eyeball may open the chamber of the vitreous and allow more or less of that tissue to escape. Loss of a small amount of vitreous may not prove harmful. Greater losses are followed eventually by detachment of the retina and blindness. When large losses of vitreous occur, the globe collapses and the eye is immediately destroyed. Prolapse of vitreous will be greatest, other things being equal, when the wound in the sclera runs at right angles to an antero-posterior meridian of the eyeball. Such wounds gape more than others and heal more slowly on that account. Profuse hemorrhage into the vitreous may occur in such injuries, and may destroy the visual power of the eye. Aseptic wounds entering the vitreous and parallel with the antero-posterior meridian of the globe, even when they are not trifling in extent, may not be complicated by dangerous prolapse of vitreous or profuse hemorrhage, and they may heal kindly, leaving the eye in a condition of usefulness. But, in general, such large wounds let out so much vitreous, cause so great intra-ocular hemorrhage, and injure the choroid and retina to such an extent, that the visual power of the eye is lost, although in some cases the eyeball may be preserved. Such eyes, however, generally become shrunken after a few weeks, or a few months. Septic wounds of the vitreous, both small and large, are followed by suppurative inflammation. Then the patient's suffering may be severe. Unrelieved by surgical interference, the ocular inflammation may possibly threaten his life by extending to the brain. Enucleation of eyes which were the seat of suppurative panophthalmitis has been followed by metastatic meningitis and death. Such eyes may be eviscerated without incurring such risks.

CHAPTER VI.

FOREIGN BODIES IN THE EYES.

FOREIGN bodies in great variety effect a lodgment in the eye. They may enter in consequence of an accident, or they may be introduced by an adversary, or, in rare cases, the patient may introduce them into his own eye. In the last set of cases, introduction of foreign bodies into an eye by the patient is the product of a desire to keep up an irritation of the organ for the purpose of gain, or of an hysterical condition of the nervous system that thrives upon the interest and sympathy which the "peculiar" case excites. Foreign bodies may traverse the eyelid on their way to the eyeball, or they enter through the palpebral slit. They may reach the eyeball after traversing one of the bony walls of the orbit. In gunshot wounds, splinters of bone may be forced into the eyeball.

FOREIGN BODIES IN THE EYELIDS.

When the foreign body is diminutive, the wound of entrance may be so small that the existence of a *corpus alienum* in the eyelid may not be suspected. Even a moderately large fragment of metal may lodge in the eyelid without making a wound sufficient to attract much attention, if the wound of entrance be linear and parallel to the margin of the eyelids, and, especially, if several days have elapsed before the wound is carefully examined.

Lodgment of foreign bodies in the eyelids may result in abscess, after which cicatricial contraction may lead to deformity of the lid. Occasionally, a foreign body remains quiescent in the eyelid for a number of years, possibly becoming encapsulated, and does not excite any further reaction, or occasion any symptoms whatever. A body which has been lodged in this way for a long time may, for one reason or another, set up an attack of inflammation in the eyelid, and be eventually extruded from

the tissues altogether. Septic bodies cause suppurative inflammation, which may be followed by an attack of erysipelas, unless the offending substance be removed and the wound be thoroughly disinfected. Erysipelatous inflammation of the eyelids may extend to the orbital cellular tissue. Notwithstanding the indication that a septic foreign body is lodged in the eyelid which is given by the history of the injury and the symptoms immediately following, it is not possible to locate and remove the foreign body in every case. It is even possible that a comparatively large body may escape detection, especially when it is lodged in a swollen eyelid.

A foreign body may lodge in the eyelid in such position that it perforates the conjunctival surface and irritates the eyeball. It is conceivable that in such a case the swollen conjunctiva may envelop and conceal the foreign body. A severe grade of inflammation of the globe would doubtless ensue. Sooner or later the foreign body will be expelled, and then the inflammation subsides.

Foreign Bodies in the Conjunctiva.

Foreign bodies frequently lodge in the bulbar or palpebral conjunctiva. A favorite site for them is the under surface of the superior eyelid. Minute particles of metal are not readily discovered. And even large bodies lodged in the superior retrotarsal fold are sometimes found only after prolonged search. A foreign body in the conjunctiva excites inflammation. It may scratch the cornea, and, unless removed, set up a keratitis. The conjunctiva becomes swollen and may enclose the body and conceal it from discovery. As a rule, the offending substance is extruded from the conjunctival sac after a longer or shorter period of inflammation. In some instances, encapsulation occurs, or the foreign body remains lodged in the mucous membrane without exciting any secondary reaction. The latter is observed most frequently in case of powder-grains blown into the eye.

Foreign Bodies in the Cornea.

Foreign bodies may lodge in any part of the cornea; they may be imbedded in the superficial layers, or they may lie in

the deeper layers, and they may project into the anterior chamber. Large bodies may lacerate the cornea so extensively that vision is destroyed by the resulting cicatrix, the appearance of which is not pleasing. Small bodies, unless very superficially imbedded, leave a small scar. When the epithelial layer only is wounded, healing will not leave a scar. Minute scars in the cornea are most certainly detected by oblique illumination. The location of them is important; for when they lie in that region of the cornea through which the visual line passes, irremediable dimness of vision will be noted; whereas, if they be laterally located, they do no harm whatever. If small bodies in the epithelial layers even of the cornea are not removed promptly, inflammation with ulceration is most likely to ensue, and the resultant cicatrix is correspondingly increased in size. This will hold true in the case of more deeply imbedded bodies. A minute septic foreign body, even though very superficially lodged in the cornea, excites destructive ulceration, leading to loss of the eye, by perforation of the cornea, or by the presence of a large cicatrix formed in the process of repair.

Deeply imbedded foreign bodies excite inflammatory reactions and lead to results similar to those already mentioned. Septic bodies deeply lodged excite very serious inflammation, which may extend to the uveal tract. Hypopyon, plastic iritis, and even cyclitis may follow in the train of such injuries. The offending substance may work its way to the surface and be extruded, or it may ulcerate through the posterior layers and drop into the anterior chamber. The latter event is a decisive catastrophe.

In certain uncommon cases, the corneal wound may close over the foreign body which may remain imbedded, either encapsulated or not, without exciting secondary reaction, through a period of years. But it is not uncommon to observe powder-grains in the cornea which have been lodged there many years without causing any irritation.

The presence of a foreign body in the cornea is not always easy to detect. This is true of the following sets of cases: those appearing for examination after an intense keratitis has set in; those in which awkward and unsuccessful attempts have been made to extract the foreign body; those in which the foreign body has lodged deeply, and the adjacent cornea has become

opaque. Under such circumstances it may be impossible to detect the foreign body. But the attending physician should assume that a *corpus alienum* has lodged in the eye, whether he can find it or not, provided that the circumstances under which the accident occurred, together with the symptoms observed in the case, create a strong probability that a missile has entered the eye.

Foreign bodies in the cornea should be removed as soon as possible. Fragments of metal often enter the cornea in a heated state. The only disadvantage arising from this circumstance is that they adhere very firmly to their bed, and are therefore more difficult of removal. Deeply lodged bodies may drop into the anterior chamber during attempts to extract them. The eyeball must then be opened. Vegetable substances may be broken during attempts to extract them, and a small fragment be retained in the eye undetected. In still other cases, it may not be possible to remove the foreign body from the cornea.

Foreign Bodies in the Iris, the Anterior and the Posterior Chamber, and in the Ciliary Body.

Foreign bodies obtain access to the iris by passing through the cornea, or by penetrating the deeper regions behind the iris. As a rule, they enter through the cornea. They may lodge at any point on the surface of the iris; they may penetrate its tissues, they may perforate the iris and pass on to the lens or the ciliary body. The propulsive force may drive the body so that it simply impinges upon the anterior surface of the iris, from which it falls into the anterior chamber; or the force drives the body through the iris and it falls into the posterior chamber, where it may lie so as to persistently irritate the ciliary processes.

Aseptic foreign bodies may lodge in the iris or in the anterior or the posterior chamber, and remain there without doing much, if any harm, provided that they are of small size and their chemical composition is not deleterious. Small particles of iron or glass, in especial, may lodge in this way. They may become encapsulated. But these cases are exceptional. Septic bodies lodged in these regions excite violent suppurative iridocyclitis, which will prove fatal to the eye, and endanger its

fellow. Whether the foreign body be septic or aseptic, the mechanical injury to the iris may be followed by plastic iritis, resulting in a more or less permanent injury to the eye.

Foreign bodies in the iris, or the anterior chamber, are, as a rule, open to detection in recent injuries, unless considerable effusion of blood into the anterior chamber have occurred. After inflammation has set in, cloudiness of the cornea, swelling and discoloration of the iris, turbidity of the aqueous humor, a collection of blood or pus in the anterior chamber, may so obscure the view that the foreign body may not be found. A probable diagnosis of the presence of a foreign body in these regions of the eye may be based upon the history of the injury, the existence of a perforating wound of the cornea, the presence of blood or pus in the anterior chamber, irregularity of the pupil, and the existence of synechiæ, especially anterior synechia. It should be assumed that a foreign body has entered these regions, if the probability is strong that one has so entered. A few eyes may be sacrificed, perhaps, unnecessarily, by adhering to such a rule of action; but the danger of subsequent sympathetic disease and total blindness is sufficient reason for keeping on the safest side in all cases.

Mauthner[1] cites the following experience, which illustrates very forcibly the obscurity which enshrouds some of these injuries: "The patient had severely wounded his right eye while discharging a musket. He avowed with the utmost confidence that no foreign body was lodged in the eye. But it was evident that a perforation, located in the centre of the cornea, had been made by a bit of an exploded percussion-cap. Had the fragment rebounded from the capsule of the lens, or had it, perchance, penetrated the lens itself? These points could not be then determined, for a large amount of pus occupied the anterior chamber and concealed the pupil. The iris was prolapsed into a puncture, which had been made in the lower border of the cornea for the purpose of evacuating the pus. It was in this condition that I first saw the patient. It was impossible, at that time, to decide whether the purulent masses which still occupied the pupil were nodules of exudation upon the anterior capsule, or were swollen and suppurating fragments of the wounded lens; the latter condition, however, seemed the more

[1] "Sympath. Dis. of Eye," pp. 18, 19, 20.

probable. Nevertheless, the pus gradually disappeared, and although the pupillary border of the iris was found extensively adherent to the anterior capsule, neither the latter nor the lens had been wounded. The eye continued to improve, but, along with some lachrymation and pain, a slight conjunctival injection persisted around the dark-colored spot where the iris had prolapsed. One day, while examining the eye more carefully, in order to discover the cause of the obstinate irritation, I noticed that the dark, prolapsed iris had a distinct metallic lustre, so that I at once suspected the presence of a piece of metal. With a pair of fine forceps I extracted, from a small excavation in the corneal edge of the sclerotica, where it lay imbedded, a rolled-up piece of copper cap, 4 mm. long and 2½ mm. wide. All the signs of irritation now disappeared in a short time. A fortunate accident had saved the wounded eye and its mate. The piece of metal had penetrated the cornea, struck the anterior capsule of the lens without opening it, and had then rebounded to the bottom of the posterior chamber, where it lay directly upon the ciliary body and excited a severe inflammation of the whole anterior part of the eyeball. The puncture of the cornea which had been made for the removal of pus from the anterior chamber having luckily been unskilfully performed, a portion of the iris fell through the incision, and into the pocket-like duplication thus made the piece of metal was received. After necrosis of the prolapsed iris the metal lay freely exposed at the edge of the cornea. Had the operation been made according to rule the iris would not have prolapsed, and the foreign body left within the globe would, in all probability, have produced a dangerous cyclitis, with the chance of involving the second eye."

Disappearance, by chemical action, of small particles of iron, and copper, which had lodged in the iris, has been reported. Such occurrences, and also examples of encapsulation or of innocuous lodgment of foreign bodies in the iris, or anterior chamber, are observed so exceptionally, the onset of dangerous iridocyclitis being quite common to these injuries, it follows that the only safe rule to adopt for the management of the cases is to remove the foreign body as soon as possible. In the great majority of cases, so long as a foreign body remains lodged in the anterior chamber, the iris, the posterior chamber, or the ciliary body, so long is the eye in a dangerous state, both as

regards its own integrity, as well as that of its fellow, by virtue of the pathogenic, the mechanical, or the chemical influences exerted by the foreign body. No certainty exists, in any case, that an encapsulated foreign body will always be innocuous. It may subsequently excite a violent secondary reaction, precluding the possibility of saving the vision of either eye.

Foreign bodies enter the ciliary body through the cornea and iris, or through the sclera. In the most common cases, the wound of entrance is near the sclero-corneal junction. As a rule, severe cyclitis immediately supervenes. The inflammatory process extends forward to the iris and backward to the choroid. Suppuration may occur in the vitreous. The dangers incident to wounds of the ciliary body, referred to in a preceding section, are intensified when the injury is complicated by lodgment of a foreign body in that region. Unless removed, the foreign body in the ciliary region will almost certainly destroy the eye and excite a fatal sympathetic inflammation in the uninjured eye. After removal of the foreign body, the eye may become quiescent and remain so, or a chronic cyclitis may persist and obstinately threaten the fellow-eye, while it destroys the usefulness of the injured organ. A foreign body lodged in the ciliary region may, however, in very rare cases, remain there, doing comparatively little harm, after the primary reaction has subsided. Years afterward, relapses of the cyclitis may set in and the foreign body be expelled. After this has occurred, the eye may remain quiescent for the remainder of the patient's life, or relapses of cyclitis may recur, owing to the irritation incident to contraction of the cicatrices, and sympathetic inflammation may eventually break out in the sound eye.

Foreign Bodies in the Crystalline Lens.

The lens may be invaded from in front or from behind. The foreign body, in nearly all cases, penetrates the cornea before striking the lens. It may, or may not, wound the iris. It may lodge near the anterior capsule, or it may penetrate more deeply into the substance of the lens. Foreign bodies entering the lens from any direction wound the capsule. Either the aqueous or the vitreous then comes in contact with the lens tissue,

and a traumatic cataract will be developed. Lesions of the anterior capsule admit the aqueous humor to the lens. When the rent in the capsule is small, it may heal promptly, leaving the foreign body imbedded in the traumatic cataract, where it may remain for years without originating further irritation. Vision is obscured by the cataract. Large rents in the anterior capsule do not heal quickly enough to prevent solution of the cortex of the lens by the aqueous humor. The cases run the same course as that already described for wounds of the lens. When solution has advanced a certain stage, the foreign body may become loose in the capsule and excite a persistent irritation, leading to irido-cyclitis, and, possibly, sympathetic ophthalmia; or the foreign body may still be firmly attached in such position that it does not irritate the eye. As solution of the cataract progresses, vision of the eye improves, until eventually the media may be clear again, leaving the sight good with cataract glasses. The usefulness of the organ is impaired, however, as explained when discussing wounds of the lens.

It may be predicted as true of nearly all cases that small fragments of metal or stone lodged in a lens, which becomes cataractous but does not undergo solution, will remain imbedded for many years, without exciting secondary irritation of the eye and without predisposing to sympathetic inflammation. Bodies in a septic state, however, will excite suppuration and its attendant dangers. Whenever, therefore, a small fragment of metal has entered the lens, the eye may be kept under observation for a time before any surgical interference is undertaken. This is especially applicable to cases injured by fragments of iron, copper, stone, or glass, the temperature of which had been elevated immediately before entering the eye; for the elevation of temperature will more or less completely disinfect the foreign body. Should the primary irritation be moderate in severity and show a tendency to subside promptly, the foreign body may be allowed to remain in the eye. It may be extracted subsequently with the cataractous lens, if secondary irritation supervene, or if the patient desire the operation for cosmetic effect. If, however, the primary irritation become severe and threaten the eye by irido-cyclitis, an attempt must be made to remove the offending substance, lest the inflammatory reaction advance beyond control. Panophthalmitis and loss of the eyeball may

result, and the danger of sympathetic ophthalmia must be kept constantly in mind.

Larger bodies cause larger rents in the capsule, through which the aqueous reaches the lens and may cause so rapid swelling of it that iritis, or secondary glaucoma, may supervene. Moreover, such bodies excite greater reaction in the eye by virtue of mechanical irritation and the septic material borne into the eye by them. It may be possible to combat such conditions successfully, and the foreign body may become encapsulated in such a position that secondary irritation may not arise. But, while attempts are being made to attain this result, the patient is exposed to a greater danger than that incident to an operation for the removal of the foreign body. No guarantee may be given that the foreign body will become encapsulated; it is much more probable that it will sink into the ciliary region and cause a very dangerous irido-cyclitis, or it may fall into the vitreous and set up inflammation there. In either contingency, an outbreak of sympathetic ophthalmia may be anticipated. On the whole, therefore, extraction of such large bodies should be undertaken at the very beginning. Removal of the foreign body may not be accomplished in some cases, even by competent ophthalmic surgeons. Then the question of enucleation of the eyeball must be entertained.

Foreign Bodies in the Vitreous.

A foreign body may penetrate the cornea with sufficient force to pass on through the iris and lens into the vitreous. More frequently, foreign bodies enter the vitreous by perforating the sclera. When they pass through the circum-corneal zone, in their transit to the vitreous, they must penetrate the ciliary body. Foreign bodies may lodge in the scleral wound or in the ciliary body. They may have been propelled by a force just sufficient to drive them through the tunics of the eyeball (sclera, choroid, retina), when they will drop into the vitreous; or they may traverse the vitreous, impinge upon the opposite side and drop back, and sink to the bottom of the eye. Or, they may become imbedded in the retina, choroid, or sclera, on the opposite side of the eye. Cases showing that foreign bodies may be imbedded in the optic disc are on record. A

foreign body (*e.g.*, bird-shot) may perforate the eyeball and lodge in the tissues of the orbit. Splinters of wood, thorns, etc., may transfix the eyeball.

When a foreign body enters the vitreous by way of the cornea, the danger incident to the presence of the body in the vitreous is complicated by the perforating wound of the cornea, iris,[1] lens, and probably of the ciliary body. Other things being equal, such lesions are the most dangerous of this class of injuries.

When a foreign body enters the vitreous by way of the ciliary region, the case is complicated by wound of the ciliary body, often resulting in a destructive inflammation of the whole uveal tract.

The simplest cases of entrance of foreign bodies into the vitreous are those not complicated by traumatism of the ciliary body, lens, iris, or cornea. In these simpler lesions, much depends upon the size of the foreign body. Large fragments of stone, metal, glass, etc., rend the sclera so widely that a large prolapse of vitreous takes place immediately, the eye will fill with blood, and these two effects suffice to destroy the eye at once. The presence of a large body in the vitreous will mechanically excite so much inflammation that no hope may be entertained of preserving the function of the eye. Smaller bodies may enter the vitreous after slitting the sclera by striking it in an oblique direction and cause a fatal prolapse of vitreous.

Even large bodies may lodge in the vitreous chamber, and after the initial inflammation has subsided, the shrunken and useless globe may remain free from irritation for a number of years. Eventually, however, the inflammation will recur, and may subside again. Such recurrent inflammatory outbreaks will be noted from time to time until eventually the other eye may be sympathetically diseased. The resulting blindness will then be a consequence of an injury sustained many years before. In some cases, the eyeball opens during one of the relapses of inflammation, and the foreign body is expelled, thus greatly diminishing the danger of sympathetic disease. Fragments of glass seem to be better tolerated in the vitreous chamber than other large foreign bodies.

[1] Iris may escape injury.

Small particles of metal entering the vitreous may lodge in the retina, choroid, or optic nerve. They may fall to the bottom of the eye, where they may become encapsulated. They may lodge in the retina, choroid, or nerve, where they may become encapsulated, or they may not. It is not a very uncommon experience to observe small particles of metal lodged in the retina or choroid (apparently not encapsulated), which have remained in the eye for a number of years without destroying the usefulness of the organ and without endangering the fellow-eye.

In Hirschberg's Clinic, the writer saw a patient in whose retina a fragment of iron could be seen perfectly distinctly with the ophthalmoscope; the iron had entered the eye twenty years earlier and had neither destroyed vision, nor endangered the fellow-eye since the primary effects of the injury had subsided. Since then I have seen cases of a similar nature. One of them was a man whose right eye was useless, owing to a wound of the cornea received when he was a child. While driving nails, a fragment of iron penetrated his sound eye. The fragment made a very small wound in the conjunctiva and sclera about one centimetre from the nasal margin of the cornea. Vision was much blurred by hemorrhage into the vitreous. About one week after the accident he came under my observation. The track of the missile through the anterior portion of the vitreous was then visible; but the position of the missile could not be located. Subsequently, however, the vitreous cleared up and the fragment of iron was seen lodged in the retina below the optic nerve. Inflammatory reaction subsided in a few weeks, and the patient returned to work, with glasses for his hypermetropia and as a protection against further accident. Three years later, he called to inquire about his glasses. The fragment of iron was still in the retina, but appeared to be smaller. It had not given him any trouble, and he had worked as usual. He was enjoined to return if the eye troubled him. I have not seen him since, five years after the injury. Recently I have seen another case in which a fragment of iron or steel has been lodged in the retina for seven years (after perforating the sclera), without injuring the usefulness of the eye. The missile is still readily detected with the ophthalmoscope.

The favorable course observed in cases of this nature is dependent upon the following conditions, namely: The small size

of the foreign body, freedom from septic infection, the comparatively trifling hemorrhage into the vitreous, fixation of the missile, and the material of which it is composed. Attention has been directed to the effect that may be expected when large bodies enter the eye. Small foreign bodies generally make small wounds; prolapse of vitreous, therefore, either does not occur, or it is very trifling in amount. Other things being equal, small bodies are less likely to carry septic infection than large bodies. In a large number of cases, the small foreign body is a fragment of iron or steel, the temperature of which had been raised immediately before it entered the eye. Such missiles are aseptic, or nearly so. Missiles, such as bird-shot and heated fragments of glass are likewise aseptic. Particles of copper may enter the eye in an aseptic state. But fragments of stone and vegetable substances, for example, twigs, pieces of bark, etc., are never in an aseptic condition. Not all particles of iron or steel, or glass, or copper, or gunshot missiles enter the eye in an aseptic state. When they carry septic infection into the vitreous, suppurative panophthalmitis will follow and destroy the eye. Hemorrhage into the vitreous occurs when foreign bodies penetrate into that tissue. Large hemorrhages in themselves destroy, or seriously injure vision permanently. Small hemorrhages may be resorbed, leaving the vitreous clear.

Aseptic particles of iron, steel, or glass lodged in the interior of the eye, and immovably fixed by encapsulation or otherwise, may not cause very serious injury. But foreign bodies of any variety that are not fixed in the eye, but change their position from time to time, are exciters of destructive inflammation of the uveal tract, and of sympathetic ophthalmia. A foreign body having remained fixed for a number of years, may subsequently become movable. When this occurs, the eye, which had been free from irritation and perhaps as useful as its fellow, is attacked by an inflammation that may exist a few weeks and then subside, leaving the sight more or less impaired. Relapses recur at variable intervals, until the sight is lost, the globe shrinks, and sympathetic disease of the other eye sets in. In other cases, the inflammation does not subside until these effects have taken place. The patient may thus become blind in consequence of the primary inflammation, aggravated by the existence of a

movable foreign body in the chamber of the vitreous. A foreign body, that may at first have been movable, may become fixed by the products of inflammation, and the eye may recover with more or less vision, or the globe may be preserved, though sightless.

Vegetable substances, copper, and mercury are not tolerated in the eye. Copper and mercury excite chemical reactions, that in turn excite destructive inflammation.

The treatment of one of these cases may be the subject of a medico-legal investigation. And the question arises, what constitutes an appropriate treatment of a case of foreign body in the vitreous? Obviously, no hard and fast rules may be laid down for the surgeon's guidance. In general, it may be said that the body should be extracted as soon as possible. The cases cited show that this rule should not be applied to all eyes containing foreign bodies. When the scleral wound is large and the loss of vitreous is great, no hope should be fostered that conservative measures will give a favorable issue; then, the eyeball should be removed to prevent suffering, and to obviate danger to the fellow-eye. Chronic inflammation of the uveal tract, or relapsing inflammation of the uveal tract, in eyes that contain a foreign body, must be treated by removal of the foreign body, or by enucleation of the eye; for by such management only may an attack of sympathetic disease be prevented.

CHAPTER VII.

SYMPATHETIC DISEASES OF THE EYE.

I. SYMPATHETIC IRRITATION.—II. SYMPATHETIC INFLAMMATION.

SYN.—*Sympathetic Ophthalmia; Sympathetic Ophthalmitis; Ophthalmia Sympathica; Irido-Cyclitis Sympathetica.*

WHEN a morbid state of one eye depends for its existence upon a pre-existing disturbance of the other, the eye is said to be sympathetically affected. We have to consider *sympathetic irritation* and *sympathetic inflammation*. In both, the eye first affected is the exciting eye, or *exciter*, and the eye secondarily diseased is the sympathizing eye, or *sympathizer*. In the former, the changes in the sympathizer are not structural, but have the nature of a functional disturbance. In the latter, the sympathizer exhibits the lesions of an inflammatory process involving a greater or less extent of the uveal tract. The former is a disease which responds promptly to treatment; the latter is a very grave malady, difficult to handle, ending, in the majority of cases, in blindness.

I. SYMPATHETIC IRRITATION.

Symptoms in the Exciting Eye.—They are attacks of ciliary injection, tenderness in the ciliary region, pain, photophobia, and lachrymation. Vision is more or less impaired; the eye may be blind. Objectively, inflammatory changes may be readily discovered, although in some they may be so inconspicuous as to be overlooked. The subjective symptoms may subside and recur from time to time.

The Symptoms in the Sympathizing Eye.—The eye is weak and easily fatigued. The acuteness of vision is usually

impaired, but it may be normal. Photophobia, lachrymation, and pericorneal injection are more or less marked. The ciliary region may be tender to pressure at a point corresponding to the region of greatest tenderness in the exciter. Ciliary neuralgia may become a prominent symptom. Blepharospasm, photopsia, and contraction of the field of vision have been observed.

The symptoms of sympathetic irritation usually come on immediately after the outbreak of the disturbance in the exciter, or their appearance may be delayed a few days or a few weeks. The attacks may come and go at irregular intervals for months and years. That sympathetic irritation may pass into sympathetic inflammation is denied by Swanzy,[1] Meyer,[2] and D'Oench.[3] But Fuchs,[4] Nettleship,[5] Juler,[6] Mauthner,[7] and De Schweinitz[8] are of the opinion that, in some cases, sympathetic irritation is the premonitory stage of sympathetic inflammation. Rossander[9] holds that sympathetic inflammation may succeed sympathetic irritation, and accounts for the infrequent occurrence of such a change by the fact that competent surgeons resort to the preventive treatment early in the case. According to Lawson,[10] "sympathetic irritation is closely allied to sympathetic ophthalmia, and although it presents features different from sympathetic inflammation, yet it may and frequently does drift into it. . . ." In the report of the committee on sympathetic ophthalmitis,[11] Cases 2 and 40 in the tables are examples of irritation passing into, or succeeded by inflammation, after excision of the exciter.

Sympathetic irritation may run a course of a few days or a few weeks and terminate in permanent recovery; or the recovery may be temporary, and the symptoms may recur again and again at irregular intervals for years, without change in the character of the malady; or, in one of the attacks, the sympathizer may become the seat of true sympathetic inflammation.

[1] "Dis. of the Eye," 1890, p. 255.
[2] "A Practical Treatise on Dis. of Eye," 1887, p. 216
[3] Archives of Ophthalmology, New York, 1887, p. 201, vol. xvi.
[4] "Lehrbuch der Augenheilkunde," 1891, pp. 320, 321.
[5] "Dis. of the Eye," 1890, p. 173.
[6] "Handbook of Oph. Science and Practice," 1884, p. 162.
[7] "Sympathetic Diseases of the Eye," New York, 1881, pp. 68, 69.
[8] "Diseases of the Eye," 1892, p. 337.
[9] Annales d'Oculistique, 1876, p. 301 *et seq.*, abstract.
[10] Royal London Oph. Hosp. Reports, vol. x., 1880, p. 2.
[11] Tr. Ophth. Soc. Unit. King., vol. vi.

II. SYMPATHETIC INFLAMMATION.

Sympathetic inflammation has no typical form; it has no character *sui generis* which differentiates it from other cases of irido-choroiditis, whether they be serous or plastic.[1] To this opinion of De Wecker's there can be no valid objection; and it follows that by the objective symptoms alone a diagnosis of the *sympathetic* nature of the disease cannot be sustained.

Symptoms in the Exciter.—There is, commonly, well-marked objective evidence of inflammation in the uveal tract, but the lesions may be indistinct and unnoticed. "An inflammation in the uveal tract of the exciting eye is a necessary factor in the production of sympathetic inflammation."[2] Vision may be good; commonly it is seriously impaired, and often it is totally destroyed. Pain, photophobia, lachrymation, ciliary injection, and tenderness are usually present. In some cases, however, the exciter may be quiet, that is, it may give no signs of irritation, when sympathetic inflammation breaks out in the sympathizer.[3] Tenderness in the ciliary region, causing the patient to shrink away in a significant manner when that point is touched gently through the closed eyelid, is often marked. But that does not necessarily imply that an attack of sympathetic inflammation is imminent.[4]

Symptoms in the Sympathizer.—They depend in some measure upon the form of the disease. Sympathetic inflammation may present a variety of lesions. The greater number of the cases are examples of plastic irido-cyclitis and plastic irido-choroiditis.[5] A certain number of cases are instances of plastic iritis only. Frequently the sympathetic inflammation exhibits the characteristics of serous iritis and serous irido-choroiditis. Swanzy and others[6] believe that the serous form of inflamma-

[1] De Wecker: Annales d'Oculistique, June, 1892, p. 413.

[2] Schirmer: Ophthalmic Review, London, vol. xii., March, 1893, p. 89.

[3] Tr. Ophth. Soc. Unit. King., vol. vi. Tables of 211 cases of sympathetic ophthalmia. The committee making the report was composed of the following ophthalmologists: John Couper, W. A. Brailey, W. Adams Frost, R. Marcus Gunn, Wm. Lang, J. B. Lawford, E. Nettleship.

[4] Swanzy, *op. cit.*, p. 256.

[5] "Graefe-Saemisch Handbuch d. Augenheilkunde," 4, p. 520.

[6] *Op. cit.*, p. 256; De Wecker, "Traité complet d'Ophthal.," tome ii., Paris, 1886, p. 321. Milles, Brailey, Royal London Oph. Hos. Rep., vol. x.

tion is the first stage of nearly all cases of sympathetic ophthalmitis, which as a rule passes into the plastic variety. This opinion should be accepted with some reserve. Admitting that the presence of "keratitis punctata" is presumptive evidence that severe inflammation is present in the uveal tract, I examined the histories of the 211 cases of sympathetic ophthalmitis in the report[1] already alluded to, and found "keratitis punctata" mentioned in only 26 cases. After making due allowance for the unavoidable imperfections in the histories, this finding still casts a measure of doubt upon the accuracy of Swanzy's observation.[2]

Neuro-retinitis, in rare cases, is the form of the sympathetic disease.[3] Schirmer thinks there is "ample evidence that there is such a condition as a primary sympathetic papillo-retinitis." It is a benign affection, cured by enucleation, and depends upon the transmission of bacterial products from the exciter.[4]

Exceptional cases of sympathetic conjunctivitis and sympathetic keratitis are mentioned by Noyes and others.[5]

The disease may come on insidiously and pass beyond the initial stages before the patient's attention is attracted. Lawson[6] says: "The disease usually commences without pain as a warning, though it is commonly preceded by a certain amount of irritation, slight photophobia, impairment of accommodation sufficient to give rise to fatigue of the eye, and lachrymation. One or all of these symptoms may be present, and in an adult would probably draw attention to the state of the eye, but in a child they are not, as a rule, sufficient to lead him to make complaint, so that in children the disease is not infrequently far advanced before it is detected." In 40 of the 211 cases already referred to, the sympathetic disease began insidiously. In 36

[1] Tr. Oph. Soc. Unit. King., vol. vi.

[2] Compare Mauthner, "Sympathetic Diseases of the Eye, p. 81 *et seq.*, and p. 168. In same line is the evidence in Gunn's cases, R. L. Ophth. Hosp. Rep., xi., 1886–87.

[3] Tr. Oph. Soc. Unit. King.; Alt, Archives of Oph. and Otol., New York, vol. v.; Deutschmann, "Ophthalmia Migratoria," gives many references to cases of this nature, pp. 117–119.

[4] Ophthalmic Review, vol. xii., March, 1893.

[5] Noyes, "Dis. of the Eye," 1890, p. 492; G. L. Johnson, Archives d'Ophthalmologie, Jan., 1892, p. 53, case of sympathetic keratitis. For criticism of recorded cases of sympathetic conjunctivitis, and sympathetic keratitis, see Deutschmann, "Ophthalmia Migratoria," pp. 108–116, also Schirmer, Ophthalmic Review, March, 1893, pp. 91–92.

[6] R. L. Oph. Hosp. Reports, 1880, vol. x., p. 1.

of these both eyes were not painful, or were quiet. In 2 of the remaining 4, the exciter was quiet, while the sympathizer was painful; and in 2 the sympathizer was quiet, while the exciter was painful.

In the *plastic form* of inflammation in the sympathizer, ciliary injection and tenderness are usually well marked, the pupil is contracted, and numerous synechiæ quickly attach the pupillary margin of the iris to the capsule of the lens. The posterior synechiæ may be complete, shutting off all communication through the pupil between the anterior and the posterior chambers. The pupillary space may be filled with a plastic exudate, which may also fill the posterior chamber and invade the ciliary body. In rare cases, pus and blood may be found in the anterior chamber. The choroid may be invaded by the plastic inflammation. The vitreous becomes turbid with particles of plastic material. Thus, the eye may be the seat of plastic iritis, plastic cyclitis, and plastic choroiditis at the same time. Early in the disease, the intra-ocular tension may rise, but eventually, in severe cases, the eyeball becomes soft and atrophic.

The subjective symptoms are ciliary neuralgia, photophobia, lachrymation and impairment of vision, amounting to absolute blindness in the worst cases. The neuralgic pains may be very severe in the eye, and in bad cases they may extend to branches of the fifth nerve, other than the ophthalmic.

Both the objective and the subjective symptoms vary greatly in severity in the different cases. The symptoms may ameliorate and the eye may return to a state of usefulness, though generally it still exhibits some sequelæ of its hazardous experience. Exceptional cases have been observed in which there has been a single attack of sympathetic inflammation, resulting in recovery with a useful eye. As a rule, the course is less favorable. After a period of quiescence, a relapse occurs, and after one or more relapses the eye is destroyed. The severest cases are the more common and end in blindness.[1]

In the **serous variety** of inflammation in the sympathizer, the circumcorneal injection is not very marked; the iris is discolored, the pupil is small; there may be a few posterior synechiæ; the anterior chamber is deep; the aqueous humor is

[1] Fuchs, *op. cit.*, p. 312; Schirmer, Ophthalmic Review, vol. xii., March, 1893, p. 94.

cloudy. Small grayish-white dots in variable numbers are found on the posterior surface of the cornea—this is "keratitis punctata." The vitreous is turbid, and chorio-retinitis or papillitis may be noted, if the media are sufficiently clear. Vision is impaired. Photophobia, lachrymation, and mild attacks of pain complete the list of symptoms.

The disease may run a chronic course, and, in exceptional cases, terminate in recovery with a useful organ, without operative interference directed to the exciter.[1] Other cases make a less complete recovery and are subject to relapses. Still other cases, the greater number, end in blindness. The serous variety of sympathetic inflammation is considered the *benign* form of the disease, whereas the plastic variety is justly regarded as the *malignant* form.

Etiology.—Sympathetic irritation may appear in consequence of a variety of injuries and diseases of the eye. The causation of sympathetic inflammation has been held to be the same. But the more thoroughly the matter is sifted the clearer does it appear that in order that sympathetic inflammation may break out in the fellow-eye, it is necessary that inflammation of the iris and ciliary body in the *exciter* shall be present. An irido-cyclitis not due to a perforating lesion of the tunics of the eyeball is *very exceptionally* the cause of sympathetic inflammation. The committee on sympathetic ophthalmitis were of the opinion that "sympathetic ophthalmitis occurring without a perforating lesion of the exciting eye is, if not unknown, at any rate extremely rare."[2] The perforating lesions that may be followed by irido-cyclitis are wounds of all varieties—lacerated, contused, incised, punctured, accidental, and operative. The wound is most dangerous when it involves the ciliary region. This is the general opinion of ophthalmic surgeons. The strongest objection to this view of the matter is that made by Alt. Having critically examined 110 eyes enucleated for sympathetic ophthalmia, Alt reports the following conclusion bearing upon this question: "Cicatrices and foreign bodies in the ciliary body or incarceration of it—which are usually looked upon as the most important factor in sympathetic affections—appear in only 17¼ per cent, while the affections of the ciliary body all together amount to 76½ per cent. The iris is changed in

[1] Noyes, *op. cit.*, p. 490. [2] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., p. 179.

but 68 per cent, and the choroid in 73 per cent, thus showing about the same number of changes in each of the parts of the uveal tract, with only a slight percentage in favor of the ciliary body."[1] Gunn found that "as regards the accidental wounds, the mere position of the injury did not seem to influence the character of the inflammation or the result; wounds of the ciliary region had as low a percentage of severity as those confined to the cornea with implication of the iris. Similarly the nature of the instrument appeared to make no difference in this respect."[2]

The entrance of foreign bodies into the eye must cause a penetrating lesion. Such injuries may be the initial stage in the etiology of sympathetic inflammation. When the foreign body has lodged in the tissues of the eyeball in such a position that extraction of it is impossible, the gravity of the case is aggravated. Randolph thinks that "by far the greater number of sympathetic eye-troubles are caused by the entrance of foreign bodies. Clinical experience shows us every day that wounds resulting from infectious foreign bodies cause the most violent inflammations, and, on the contrary, wounds caused by aseptic matter result in comparatively little disturbance."[3] Schirmer's conclusions are doubtless nearer the truth. He is of the opinion that "it is the inflammation which follows a perforating wound, and not the wound itself, which threatens the fellow-eye, and such inflammation is usually due to infection through the wound. The danger attaching to the presence of a foreign body in the interior of the eye has probably been somewhat overrated, for there is no evidence that aseptic foreign bodies can cause sympathetic inflammation, even though, as in the case of fragments of copper, they may by chemical action damage the injured eye. The danger lies in the fact that very many foreign bodies carry infective organisms with them into the eye. The only cases in which a foreign body was supposed to affect the fellow-eye without the intervention of uveitis in the injured eye, were cases of sympathetic irritation only. The most dangerous cases are those in which the injured eye seems

[1] "Anat. Causes of Sympathetic Ophthalmia," Archives of Ophthalmology, N. Y., vol. v.

[2] Royal London Oph. Hosp. Reports, vol. xv., 1886–87, p. 316.

[3] "Pathogenesis of Sympathetic Ophthalmia," Archives of Ophthalmology, N. Y., vol. xvii., 1888, p. 192.

at first to tend toward recovery, but nevertheless remains more or less injected and tender on pressure. This tenderness is the expression of a persistent cyclitis, and is a most important indication. Its absence cannot, unfortunately, be taken as a proof that there is no cyclitis, for a slight cyclitis does not always reveal itself by tenderness on pressure."[1] Hirschberg finds that a foreign body lodged in the eye may excite destructive inflammation even though it may not have been infected.[2]

Perforating ulcers of the cornea may be succeeded by relapsing irido-cyclitis and lead to sympathetic inflammation of the fellow-eye.

Burns of the cornea and symblepharon are given as causes of sympathetic inflammation. It is altogether improbable that such could be the cause unless perforation of the cornea had occurred.

Panas has reported two cases of sympathetic irido-cyclitis following tattooing of the cornea.[3]

Intra-ocular tumors are said to cause sympathetic inflammation. Schirmer, after a careful search, found "twenty-eight cases attributed to sarcoma of the choroid and two to glioma of the retina. The analysis of these shows that nine were cases of sympathetic irritation; that some others were of doubtful character; and that in several more a perforation of the exciting eye had occurred either spontaneously or by operation. Excluding these, there remain at least three cases in which a choroidal sarcoma, with no perforation of the tunics, appeared to cause a true sympathetic inflammation in the fellow-eye. In these three cases the exciting eye presented in addition to the tumor a well-marked irido-cyclitis, and this complication was present also in some of the more doubtful cases just referred to. It appears, therefore, that a choroidal sarcoma can only cause sympathetic inflammation when it is associated with irido-cyclitis, and seeing that only a small minority of such tumors are complicated in this way, the irido-cyclitis and not the tumor must be regarded as the chief agent."[4]

Intra-ocular cysticercus is mentioned as a cause of sympa-

[1] Ophthalmic Review, vol. xii., March, 1893, pp. 87, 88.
[2] Graefe's Archiv für Ophthal.
[3] Cited in "Ophthalmia Migratoria," p. 87.
[4] Oph. Review, vol. xii., March, 1893, p. 85. See also Report of Com. Symp. Ophthalmitis, *op. cit.*, for similar criticism.

thetic inflammation. Deutschmann could not find such a case in literature, but Schirmer found one case of mild sympathetic irritation due to that cause.

Irritation due to wearing an artificial eye is also given as a cause of sympathetic inflammation. Such might be the consequence of wearing an artificial eye over a phthisical globe, for that might excite a relapse of irido-cyclitis in the degenerated eye. But it is highly improbable that an artificial eye ever excites sympathetic inflammation under other circumstances.

Incubation.—The onset of sympathetic inflammation occurs generally in from three to twelve weeks after the injury to the exciter. The shortest interval between the injury to the exciter and the outbreak of sympathetic inflammation, according to the Committee of the Ophthalmological Society of the United Kingdom,[1] was three days in Case 134, but this record is not above suspicion. In Case 95, the interval was only three or four days, but may have been much longer. De Schweinitz states that it occurs exceptionally as early as the seventh day.[2] According to Fuchs,[3] the shortest period is two weeks. Deutschmann[4] asserts that the shortest interval recorded in literature is ten days, in the case described by O. Becker. In his monograph on "The Sympathetic Diseases of the Eye,"[5] Mauthner says: "I must emphasize the fact that, in my own experience, I know of no case in which I ever saw sympathetic ophthalmia appear sooner than in four weeks after the injury. I grant, indeed, that this period of four weeks might be somewhat shortened, in occasional cases, but I will not grant that the necessary period can be reduced *to a few days*, as is alleged to have been observed by several authors."

There is no definite limit to the period during which an attack of sympathetic ophthalmia may occur. Cases observed twenty, thirty, forty, and even sixty years after the injury to the exciter are on record. According to Fuchs,[6] "so long as an eye destroyed by injury remains free from inflammation and tenderness it is not liable to excite sympathetic inflammation. But if such an eye become irritable and inflamed, which it is apt to do if there be a foreign body lodged in it, the danger of

[1] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., p. 264.
[2] *Op. cit.*, p. 338.
[3] *Op. cit.*, p. 322.
[4] "Ophthalmia Migratoria," p. 104.
[5] P. 143.
[6] *Op. cit.*, pp. 321, 322.

sympathetic inflammation again appears. An eye destroyed by a traumatism is a standing menace to its fellow. The danger of sympathetic inflammation is greatest during the most active stage of irido-cyclitis in the exciting eye." This accords with the experience of ophthalmic surgeons in general.

Frequency of Occurrence.—As a contribution to this part of the subject the following facts are offered. They will give an approximately correct idea of the matter. Among the inmates of asylums for the blind, about 4.5 per cent lost their vision by sympathetic ophthalmia.[1] Among 627 blind inmates of the Hospice des Quinze Vingts, Paris, Trousseau[2] found that 14, or 2.2 per cent of the number, became blind in consequence of sympathetic ophthalmia. Out of 500 enucleations of the eye in the practice of Knapp,[3] 51 eyes were removed for sympathetic irritation and 21 were removed for genuine sympathetic ophthalmia. Among the 360 enucleations made by Becker,[4] the eye was removed for irido-cyclitis with sympathetic disease in 10 cases. From the practice of Roosa, 131 cases of enucleation are reported;[5] among them were 35 cases of sympathetic ophthalmia and 15 cases of sympathetic irritation.

Diagnosis.—Ordinarily it is not difficult to detect inflammatory changes in the uveal tract. But there are cases of sympathetic ophthalmia which, in the early stages at least, may deceive the observer. The diagnosis of papillitis, neuro-retinitis, and chorio-retinitis, when the changes are inconspicuous, will be more difficult to establish, should the refraction of the eye present a high degree of hypermetropia or astigmatism, especially if the observer be not on his guard. In obscure cases of sympathetic ophthalmia, atropine may be used to facilitate the ophthalmoscopic examination and to reveal inflammatory lesions that might otherwise pass unnoticed. Especial attention should be given to the cornea and iris, for the existence of keratitis punctata and slight posterior synechia may be overlooked unless the examination be thorough.

Having noted the presence of a lesion in the fellow-eye, the question arises, Is that lesion due to the presence of disease in the eye primarily affected; in other words, have we to deal with

[1] Noyes, *op. cit.*, p. 698 *et seq.*
[2] "Hygiène de l'Œil," p. 16.
[3] Archives of Ophthalmology, N. Y., vol. xvi., p. 201.
[4] Augenklinik in Heidelberg, 1888, p. 93.
[5] N. Y. Med. Record, Oct. 15th, 1892, pp. 445, 446.

a case of sympathetic trouble? The differential diagnosis is very important, and, in certain cases, is surrounded by great difficulties. For, lesions undistinguishable from those observed in sympathetic inflammation are the effect of a variety of causes. Inflammations of the uveal tract dependent upon constitutional causes may first appear in one eye and subsequently break out in the other, but it cannot be said of such cases that the disease has been transmitted from one eye to the other. In both instances the cause of the disease is a constitutional one. Thus, inflammations of the cornea, iris, ciliary body, and choroid may be due to syphilis, scrofula, rheumatism, diabetes, gonorrhœa, acute febrile diseases, and traumatisms, or they may be idiopathic. Inflammation of the choroid may be due also to anæmia, chlorosis, septic emboli, meningitis and cerebro-spinal meningitis, orbital abscess, and thrombosis of the orbital veins. Inflammations of the retina may be due to syphilis, nephritis, diabetes, leukæmia, or they may be idiopathic. Inflammations of the optic nerve may be due to syphilis, scrofula, nephritis, diabetes, cerebral disease, acute febrile diseases, severe hemorrhages, menstrual disorders, pregnancy, childbirth, lead poisoning, prolonged exposure to cold, inflammation and tumors of the orbit, and heredity.[1] The presence of any of those conditions and their etiological bearing upon the case under consideration must be ascertained before a correct opinion respecting the sympathetic nature of the disease may be formulated. Primary glaucoma also must be excluded.

The nature of the injury and the condition of the eye first affected will throw some light on the differential diagnosis. Severe injuries resulting in penetration of the eyeball and lesion of the ciliary body, especially when they are followed by a chronic irido-cyclitis showing marked and persistent tenderness in the ciliary region, are very dangerous. Foreign bodies remaining in the eye, especially fragments of stone, copper, and lead, and infected bodies of all kinds are very prone to excite sympathetic ophthalmia sooner or later. On the other hand, eyes in the condition of purulent panophthalmitis are comparatively infrequently exciters of sympathetic disease. Sympathetic disease does occur, however, when the exciter is in a state of panophthalmitis.[2]

[1] Fuchs, *op. cit.*, pp. 316, 347, 353, 446, 479, 480. [2] Alt, *op. cit.*

Should the inflammation in the second eye begin in from three to twelve weeks after the injury to the first eye, or after an outbreak of cyclitis in an eye disorganized by a penetrating wound received months or years before, a suspicion that the disease is sympathetic must be entertained. But should the disease break out in the second eye after a much shorter or a much longer interval, the opinion that the disease is sympathetic should be accepted with greater reserve.

If the injured eye be enucleated and the disease in the fellow-eye promptly abate, the second eye was probably sympathetically affected. On the contrary, should inflammation in the second eye remain unchanged after excision of the first, or should the disease increase in severity, it cannot be said that the second eye was not sympathetically diseased; for, after sympathetic inflammation has appeared, enucleation of the exciter may not produce any effect upon it.

Prognosis.—In addition to what has preceded, it may be stated that sympathetic irritation, although it may have recurred again and again, is very amenable to treatment. Meyer[1] says: "The prognosis may be regarded as very good in sympathetic irritation, favorable in serous iritis, very bad for plastic irido-cyclitis, for useful vision is rarely preserved." According to Swanzy,[2] "the vast majority of cases of sympathetic inflammation end in blindness." Nettleship[3] remarks: "When once sympathetic inflammation has begun we can do little to modify its course." De Schweinitz[4] says: "The prognosis of sympathetic ophthalmitis is usually grave. In some cases recovery occurs; this has been seen in those cases in which neuro-retinitis is present. More frequently, especially in the forms which appear as an irido-cyclitis or irido-choroiditis, the sight of the eye is lost, and the organ shrinks. The varieties which appear as a serous iritis give the greatest hope of a good result. It is extremely important to warn patients of the grave nature of this malady, and if an attempt is made to save an eye injured in the way already described, it must be done with the full understanding of the serious risks which are undertaken."

Referring again to the report of the committee on sympathetic ophthalmitis,[5] we find that of 211 cases the details of the

[1] *Op. cit.*, p. 217.
[2] *Op. cit.*, p. 258.
[3] *Op. cit.*, p. 175.
[4] *Op. cit.*, pp. 341, 342.
[5] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., p. 173.

treatment were given in 90; of these 50 recovered completely. Taking 203 of these cases for the basis of calculation, I found that about 26 per cent were totally lost, about 23 per cent recovered with V=$\frac{2}{20}$, and about 50 per cent partially recovered. It should be noted that a reasonable doubt may be entertained respecting the sympathetic nature of the inflammation in a few of the cases; and that in others the records were very imperfect. Eyes reported as having recovered may have been destroyed subsequently by a relapse of the inflammation. The committee were of the opinion that "the prognosis in sympathetic ophthalmitis is, on the whole, more favorable if the disease comes on after a short than after a long interval."[1]

Gunn,[2] in a carefully prepared paper, reported 47 cases of sympathetic ophthalmia in which the final condition of the patient is given as follows: "In 34 cases the *exciting eye* was lost; in 30 of these it was excised. In 3 cases the exciter although not really lost was excised. In 6 cases the exciter retained useful vision, although the sympathizer was lost in 5 and greatly damaged in the sixth." "In 5 cases the final condition of the *sympathizing eye* was good, *i.e.*, retained at least $\frac{3}{4}$ of normal vision; in 12 the result was moderate (able to get about); in 25 cases the sympathizer was known to have been rendered useless. In 8 of the 12 cases in which the result was "moderate," a progressive degeneration was noticeable.

Propagation of the Sympathetic Diseases.—It is generally believed that sympathetic irritation is due to reflex action through the ciliary nerves. But the *raison d'être* of sympathetic inflammation is still under discussion. Mackenzie,[3] in the earliest systematic description of the disease, speaking of the *ratio symptomatum*, offered the conjecture that the blood-vessels, the ciliary nerves, and especially the optic nerves may be the various channels by which the morbid process is transmitted from one eye to the other. In 1858, Müller enunciated the theory that the disease is propagated by reflex action through the ciliary nerves. This theory has been supported by various eminent observers and still claims many partisans. Deutschmann[4] opposes that theory and has undertaken to prove, by ex-

[1] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., p. 189.
[2] R. L. Oph. Hosp. Reports, vol. xi., 1886-87.
[3] "Diseases of the Eye," 1844.
[4] "Ophthalmia Migratoria," 1889.

periments on animals and by pathological and bacteriological examinations of human eyes, that sympathetic ophthalmia is due to the action of micro-organisms and is propagated from the exciter to the sympathizer by the lymph channels of the optic nerves. This theory has excited much discussion. It has been provisionally accepted by many competent ophthalmologists and totally repudiated by as many others. At the present time, the most that can be said of this matter is that no theory pretending to explain the propagation of sympathetic ophthalmia has withstood the assaults of adverse criticism.

Treatment. I. THE PREVENTIVE TREATMENT, WHEN THE EXCITER IS DESTROYED.—The surest prophylaxis of sympathetic inflammation consists in enucleation of the exciter. The operation is indicated when useful vision has been destroyed by a penetrating injury or by disease of the cornea, resulting in perforation of that structure, if the eye be painful or tender to pressure, and especially if it contain or may be supposed to contain a foreign body. Enucleation should be more urgently advised, when the symptoms of sympathetic irritation have become manifest in the fellow-eye. Globes in the state of *phthisis bulbi*, and stumps of the optic nerve, when tender to pressure, should be removed, and especially if the other eye show any signs of sympathetic disturbance.[1] It is the duty of the physician in charge of such cases to warn the patient against the dangers of sympathetic inflammation. And too much faith should not be put in the patient's ability to note the first sign of disturbance in the healthy eye, which shall bring him to an operation for excision of the injured organ. The disease sometimes begins insidiously and its existence may not be suspected until well-marked structural changes are developed; this is especially true of children and ignorant persons. But not all such eyes, or stumps of eyes, are exciters of sympathetic inflammation or even sympathetic irritation, although they may be painful and tender and contain a foreign body. Just how many, or which one, will cause sympathetic disease cannot be predicted with certainty. Some latitude, therefore, must be allowed to

[1] Compare Fuchs, *op. cit.*, pp. 328, 329; Graefe-Saemisch, *op. cit.*, 4. p. 520; Lawson, *op. cit.*, p. 130; Nettleship, *op. cit.*, p. 175; Swanzy, *op. cit.*, p. 259; Meyer, *op. cit.*, p. 218; Juler, *op. cit.*, p. 164; Noyes, *op. cit.*, p. 494; De Schweinitz, *op. cit.*, p. 340; Warlomont, Annales d'Oculistique, 1876, t. lxxv., p. 52; Rossander, *ibid.*, p. 305, abstract.

the judgment of the attendant in a given case respecting the time when an excision of the eye should be performed, but the patient must be made to understand that attempts to save the injured eye are fraught with more or less danger to the other. Should the patient wish that every possible precaution be taken against the outbreak of disease in his remaining eye, the injured organ should be enucleated without further delay.

So far as regards sympathetic irritation, excision of the exciter is an almost absolutely certain preventive, and is curative in nearly all cases even after the disease has broken out. Rheindorf, in 1865, collected 75 cases of sympathetic disease, 55 of which were treated by enucleation. Of these, 28 were cases of sympathetic irritation, in 27 the result was cure or improvement, and in *one* the disease was said to have been aggravated by the operation. Mooren, in 1869, published a series of 35 cases of sympathetic ophthalmia treated by enucleation. Of these, 16 were cases of sympathetic irritation, and all were cured. In 1876, Rossander published 117 enucleations for diverse causes: in 68 the disease was sympathetic ophthalmia. Of these, 33 were cases of sympathetic irritation, and all were cured. Vignaux, in 1877, published 48 cases of sympathetic irritation treated by enucleation; complete cure in 43, cure incomplete or disease stationary in 3, and in 2 the treatment failed. In 16 cases in which the appearance of sympathetic inflammation was imminent at the moment of enucleation, he was able to determine in all cases the persistence of the normal state after a period of one to four and one-half years. D'Oench, 1887, reports from Knapp's practice 51 enucleations, for sympathetic irritation, with a speedy cure in every case, although in some the symptoms had existed for a long time.

In a certain number of cases of sympathetic inflammation, neither enucleation of the exciter nor any other treatment will prevent an outbreak of the disease. The report on sympathetic ophthalmitis [1] gives "three cases in which the damaged eye was excised almost immediately after the injury and yet iritis afterward occurred in the other. We think it well to quote these cases without expressing an opinion as to their nature, pointing out, however, that the attack in each case differed materially

[1] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., pp. 192-194.

from common sympathetic ophthalmitis, and that in each case the damaged exciting eye had been ruptured by a severe blow.

"In Case 48, a woman, æt. 45, had her left eye ruptured by a blow, on January 15th, 1884. It was excised by Dr. Little, of Manchester, on the same day. The other (right) eye seemed healthy at the date of excision. On the 20th there was slight muco-purulent conjunctivitis, but pupil was clear and active. On the 23d, chemosis, pupil sluggish, acting imperfectly to atropine. 24th, distinct iritis with lymph in iris and pupil, severe congestion and pain, conjunctival discharge nearly stopped. 25th, iritis worse, no keratitis punctata could be made out; there was marked congestion at the limbus corneæ. From this time rapid improvement, and by February 20th the eye was practically well, free from synechiæ and V. perfect. There was no history or evidence of syphilis and no other apparent cause for the iritis.

"Case 112.—Man, aged about 20, left eye hurt by a blow on January 22d, 1883, and excised the next day. The socket healed well and remained free from irritation. A glass shell worn after two weeks. Seven weeks after excision acute iritis with ciliary congestion and pain set in in the other (right) eye. The attack not severe, and was well in a few days, vision not being affected. It remained well for seven months, when a relapse occurred with more synechiæ. This attack lasted nearly two months, but the eye recovered with V=$\frac{20}{40}$. No keratitis punctata was observed. None of the ordinary causes of iritis noted."

"Case 109.—An engine-driver, æt. 41, had his right eye smashed and orbital tissue much bruised in a railway accident. The eye was excised within forty-eight hours. The tissues healed tardily and discharged more than usual. From four to six weeks later severe acute iritis came on in the other (left) eye. The attack lasted about a month. Then the eye became quiet and sight improved somewhat, but a few days before admission, six months after the accident, a tolerably severe relapse took place, vision not 20 Jaeger, Tn. Rapid improvement. Five weeks later V=$\frac{20}{40}$, numerous synechiæ, thin membrane in the pupil, iris texture natural. The eye remained quiet for the few following weeks, during which he remained under notice. Chronic articular rheumatism in hip, knee, and elbow, on same side as the iritis, four years previously; but no inflammation of the eye then; no syphilis."

It may be assumed that these three cases belong to the mild grade of sympathetic inflammation. As such they are absolutely exceptional; and, if it be admitted that they are genuine cases of sympathetic inflammation, the cause of the outbreak of the sympathetic disease, after the prompt excision of the injured organ, may be sought in the bruising of the tissues of the orbit.

On the other hand, sympathetic inflammation may occur after excision of the exciter, when the operation is performed after a longer delay. Mauthner[1] has claimed that in some of those cases the operation was the starting-point of the sympathetic disease. He cites two cases of neuro-retinitis published from Mooren's practice, and another case of "hyperæsthesia ciliaris" also Mooren's, all of which, he claims, were produced by the enucleation. Davis[2] has reported from the practice of Roosa two cases of sympathetic inflammation occurring after enucleation of the exciter. In the first, enucleation of an atrophied globe, resulting from an accident after a cataract extraction two months earlier, was performed, June 7th, 1890. On July 16th, 1890, the patient returned with sympathetic irido-cyclitis in the remaining (right) eye. Removal of the stump of left eye on the following day. Other treatment immediately inaugurated. Finally the eye became soft and V=pl (?). The second case was one of injury and traumatic cataract, seen August 5th, 1890. Cataract removed, iridectomy performed; eye remained painful and was enucleated, November 20th, 1890. Good recovery, no sympathetic irritation when discharged. December 20th, 1890, patient returned with sympathetic irido-cyclitis. Patient had noticed for a week that he could not see distinctly. In June, 1892, V=$\frac{10}{200}$; patient gets about with difficulty. "The plastic irido-cyclitis is slowly destroying his sight."

Referring again to the Report on Sympathetic Ophthalmitis[3] for further information regarding this question, we find that there were "30 cases of genuine sympathetic ophthalmitis setting in after enucleation of the exciter, and 6 others the sympathetic nature of which is doubtful. Taking the 30 true cases we find that 18 recovered completely, 3 partially, and 9 were lost.

"The first subject of inquiry in this group is whether the sympathetic disease is caused by the injured eye or by the operation for its removal. If the disease were due to the excision we should expect to meet occasionally with cases coming on a long time afterward. We find the following four cases in which such is said to be the case:

"CASE 1.—A young woman lost the left eye from spontaneous irido-choroiditis. Many years after, at the age of 30, it was excised on

[1] "Symp. Dis. of the Eye," p. 153.
[2] N. Y. Med. Rec., Oct. 15th, 1892.
[3] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., pp. 190–192.

account of irritation in the right. This ceased after excision, but twelve months after the operation the right eye passed through a painless attack of iritis with keratitis punctata and opacities in the vitreous. It improved for a time, but four years later the disease was still active and vision very bad. Other possible causes of iritis not mentioned. (Cant, Case 1, unpublished.)

"CASE 191.—A woman lost her left eye by sloughing of the cornea in gonorrhœal ophthalmia at 36. After being quiet ten years it became painful, and was excised. A year afterward, at the age of 47, there was pain in this orbit with puckering around the end of the optic nerve. At the same time acute iritis came on in the other (right) eye. The stump of the left optic nerve was cut out, and under treatment the right rapidly and completely recovered, and did not relapse. There is no note as to syphilis or gonorrhœal rheumatism. (Ayres, Knapp's *Archives*, XI., 199.)

"CASE 199.—The left eye of a man, æt. 30, was excised, reason not stated. He wore an artificial eye without trouble for the next fifteen years, when, on getting a new eye, much irritation of the conjunctiva came on. Two and one-half weeks after beginning the use of this eye, well-marked plastic iritis with much effusion began in the other (right) eye. It recovered perfectly under the usual measures, including mercury and removal of the artificial eye. Three months later vision perfect. No history of rheumatism or syphilis. (Culbertson, *Amer. Jour. Ophth.*, I., 161.)

"CASE 200.—A man, æt. 23. Blow on right eye with a small piece of wood, probably causing rupture. Excised seven months later for irritation in the left. All irritation ceased, and for nearly nine years he could see as well as ever he did in his life. Then (nine years after excision) slight pain in the eye and progressive failure of sight. When seen twelve months later, very severe plastic iritis with ciliary staphylomata, T slightly +, severe pain, V= p. l. in the outer part of the field. After sclerotomy, pain subsided, but the eye became soft. Other possible causes of iritis not mentioned. (Lawson, O. H. R., X., p. 3.)

"Another case by Colsmann (Case 207) may be mentioned, in which the interval was six months, but as the disease in the second eye took the form of neuro-retinitis only, the sympathetic nature of the attack is very doubtful.

"The only two of these cases which are at all convincing are Cases 1 and 200, and to them we do not see that any exception can be taken, unless it be assumed that the disease in the second eye was spontaneous.

"Again if the sympathetic disease were due to the excision, we should expect to meet with it sometimes after the removal of eyes which, had they been left, would not have produced it.

But in turning to the cases we find only a single instance, and that one already quoted as doubtful (Case 1 above), in which the exciter was lost by spontaneous inflammation. In all the others there had been a complicated wound, operation, or perforating ulcer.

"Assume then that sympathetic disease beginning after excision is due to the eye and not to the operation for its removal, we may next ask: What is the interval that may elapse between removal of exciter and the onset of the sympathetic inflammation? We find that this (the 'second interval') was between two and five days in 11 cases; between one and two weeks in 7 cases; about three weeks in 6 cases; and from one month to eight weeks in 5 cases. The 5 cases just quoted in which the interval was extraordinary in length are not here included. Although the length of the 'second interval'[1] thus varied from two or three days to seven or eight weeks, the sum of the first and second intervals showed a much smaller range, viz., from four to eight weeks, only exceeding the latter in two cases. Now, from four to eight weeks is a common interval between injury and sympathetic disease, but the second interval alone was, as the above figures show, usually too short to permit of our assuming the excision to have been the cause. It may further be observed that in none of these cases was the eye excised promptly; ample time was always allowed for traumatic inflammation to set in. In fact the 'first interval' alone was nearly always of sufficient length to account for the occurrence."

Such is the nature of the evidence both for and against the opinion that enucleation may excite sympathetic inflammation. In conclusion, it may be said that while the *possibility* that the operation may be the starting-point of sympathetic disease cannot be denied absolutely, still the burden of proof remains with those who maintain that in a given case it has excited an attack of sympathetic inflammation.

II. The Preventive Treatment, when the Exciter is Not Destroyed.—Traumatisms may destroy an eye directly and immediately, or indirectly through the consecutive inflammation. It follows, in some instances, that an injured eye may,

[1] "First interval" equals time intervening between the lesion and the excision; "second interval" equals time intervening between the excision and occurrence of sympathetic ophthalmia.

in the early days, retain a fair amount of vision, which later on is destroyed more or less thoroughly by the inflammatory process. Hence, in coming to a decision regarding the treatment to be adopted in a case of injury, it is necessary to consider both the immediate and the remote effects of the accident upon the usefulness of the organ. Should the eye still retain fair vision, and, after a few days' observation of the case, should it appear highly probable that the function of the eye will be permanently destroyed by the inflammatory process, enucleation may be advised as a protective measure against sympathetic ophthalmia.

If, after an accident which has not totally destroyed the usefulness of an eye, the symptoms of sympathetic irritation appear in the fellow-eye, the injured organ may be removed; and it is not advisable to delay the radical treatment when the symtoms of irritation are intense enough to excite apprehension that the other eye may experience an outbreak of sympathetic inflammation.[1]

As a general rule, to which there are exceptions, it may be advised that all eyes in a state of chronic irido-cyclitis, which contain foreign bodies that cannot be removed, should be enucleated to prevent sympathetic ophthalmia, even though they may retain useful vision.[2]

In many cases, when the exciter retains considerable visual power, it is difficult to decide upon the best treatment to adopt. The dangers incident to an attempt to save some of these eyeballs should be fully and fairly explained to the patient and his family. Should they leave the attendant untrammelled in his management of the case, he should adopt the surest method of saving his patient's vision, even at the expense of an eye which may still retain considerable visual acuteness. On the other hand, the patient or his family may interdict operative interference, and it is then the surgeon's duty to do as well as possible under the circumstances, in which contingency he should not be held responsible for a disastrous termination of the case.

III. Curative Treatment, when the Exciter is Destroyed.—Should enucleation of the exciter be performed after sympathetic inflammation has broken out? The strongest ob-

[1] Mauthner, "Sympath. Dis. of the Eye," p. 167.

[2] Swanzy, *op. cit.*, 1890, p. 259.

jection to that practice is raised by Mauthner,[1] who says: "In my opinion, there cannot be the least doubt that *iritis serosa* may become transformed into *iritis maligna* by the operation of enucleating the other eye." Enucleation "may cause sympathetic inflammation in a previously healthy eye, as well as increase a mild inflammation to the most severe. Enucleation is of no benefit whatever in genuine *iritis maligna*, but occasionally, when the sympathizer is extremely irritated, does harm." This opinion is defended by the citations of a few undecisive cases. Opposed to Mauthner stands the report of the committee on sympathetic ophthalmitis.[2] In it we find the following: "When sympathetic inflammation has begun does excision of the exciting eye influence its progress? . . . Of our total (about 200) we find 4 cases in which the exciter was removed within a short time of the outset of sympathetic inflammation (that is, within three weeks of the outbreak of the symptoms of structural disease in the sympathizing eye) and of these the sympathizing eye was known to be lost in only 8. In an almost identical number (65), the exciter was either not removed at all, or not till long after the sympathetic disease had set in, and in no less than 26 of these the sympathizer was lost. . . . Whether early removal of the exciting eye be positively useful in staying the disease or no, it is certainly not injurious, as no less an authority than Mauthner has asserted that it is when sympathetic disease is of the 'serous form.' . . . Recovery of the sympathizer after early removal of the exciter may be in part ascribed to the natural mildness of the disease (in both eyes). . . . Loss of the sympathizer when exciter is not removed may in part be ascribed to the natural severity of the disease (in both eyes). On the other hand the fact that sympathetic ophthalmitis, when it sets in *after* enucleation of the exciting eye, is usually mild seems to show that early removal of the cause does in some degree check the disease."

Schirmer entertains a similar opinion. He says: "If sympathetic inflammation has already broken out, the exciting eye, if blind, should be removed. The removal of the exciting eye has never been proved to have an ill effect on the sympathetic inflammation, but has on the other hand appeared in many

[1] "Sympath. Dis. of the Eye," pp. 157, 159.

[2] Tr. Oph. Soc. U. K., vol. vi., pp. 171–173.

cases to act beneficially in this respect, although the improvement may not be permanent. It is rational to remove the source of the infection, and thereby to obviate the chance of a further migration of germs from one eye to the other; moreover, the enucleation cuts short any sympathetic irritation which may be present, and thereby, in all probability, favors the subsidence of the inflammation."[1]

IV. CURATIVE TREATMENT, WHEN THE EXCITER IS NOT DESTROYED.—Given a case of sympathetic inflammation in which the exciter retains useful vision, should enucleation be performed? Mauthner[2] replies: "Every one will admit that it is a crime, in a case of pronounced sympathetic irido-cyclitis, to enucleate an eye which still possesses vision, or in which vision might at a later date be restored." Swanzy[3] says: "I would not enucleate the exciting eye, if sympathetic ophthalmitis had already appeared, should the vision of the exciting eye be fairly good. For it often occurs that the process in the sympathizing eye is not arrested by the proceeding, and that, when the latter is not undertaken, the exciting eye turns out in the end to be the organ with the better vision."

Nettleship[4] advises as follows: "The exciting eye, if quite blind or so seriously damaged as to be for practical purposes certainly useless, is to be excised at once, though the evidence of benefit from this course is slender. But it is not to be removed if there is reason to hope for restoration of useful sight in it; if there is simply a moderate degree of subacute iritis, with or without traumatic cataract, and with sight proportionate to the state of the lens, the eye is to be carefully treated, since it may very probably in the end be the better of the two."

Finally, Lawson[5] makes the following observation: "On several occasions, when the injured eye has retained some sight, I have seen the opposite eye destroyed by sympathetic ophthalmia, while the injured eye so recovered that useful sight has been restored, and the patient has been able to get about without assistance. . . . If sympathetic ophthalmia be established, the injured eye should not be removed if it retains any sight." When the sympathizer is lost, it may be enucleated if the exciter

[1] Ophthalmic Review, London, March, 1893, pp. 97, 98.
[2] *Op. cit.*, p. 169.
[3] *Op. cit.*, p. 260.
[4] *Op. cit.*, p. 176.
[5] R. L. Oph. Hosp. Rep., vol. x., p. 5.

retain some vision. For, according to Berry,[1] "cases have been met with when there seems to have been good reason to think it has reacted on the first or original exciter."

In the present state of our knowledge, enucleation must be ranked superior to any of its substitutes in sympathetic disease. The most noteworthy of the substitutes are evisceration, Mules' operation, and optico-ciliary neurectomy. Evisceration is especially favored by Graefe of Halle. The objections to it are, the wound heals more slowly than in the case after enucleation, and the local reaction is more intense. Moreover, the posterior one-half of the sclera of the displaced organ is permitted to remain to form the stump. The operation of inserting a glass sphere into the scooped-out sclera (Mules' operation) is open to the same criticism. Optico-ciliary neurectomy, championed by DeWecker and performed also by Schweigger, consists in the abscission of a segment of the optic and ciliary nerves, leaving the eyeball in the orbit. The focus of the exciting cause therefore is not removed; and, since the mode of propagation of the sympathetic disease is still unknown, this operation should not be as favorably regarded as the others.[2] Undoubtedly there are cases suitable for each of these operations. The question whether, in a given case, one or the other should have been performed can be answered only after consideration of the circumstances which confronted the surgeon. When such heroic measures are indicated, enucleation will give the patient the best chance of a favorable result; and an operator, who elects a procedure other than that in a case of sympathetic inflammation, should be prepared to give a sufficient reason for his choice.

[1] "Dis. of the Eye," 1893, p. 348. [2] Compare Berry, *op. cit.*, p. 350.

CHAPTER VIII.

INJURIES OF THE EAR.

Injuries of the External Ear.

Contusions, contused wounds, incised, punctured, and lacerated wounds, gunshot wounds, and burns of the external ear are occasionally observed. The cartilages may be fractured by a contusion. Destruction of tissue by wounds may be extensive or it may be trifling; it may be an immediate consequence of the injury, or the greatest loss of tissue may ensue from inflammation and gangrene of the affected structures. The auricle has been completely severed from the head.

Even severe wounds of the auricle show a marked tendency to heal kindly. Completely severed parts will occasionally unite if brought into proper coaptation with the wounded member and held there by sutures and carefully applied dressings. Of course this extraordinary result will not be attained if the wound be not thoroughly disinfected and the entrance of microbes into it be not prevented by appropriate antiseptic precautions. On the other hand, not all wounds of the auricle run a favorable course. Inflammation with suppuration sometimes sets in, causing swelling of the ear and adjacent parts, destroying the cartilages to a greater or less extent, and resulting in prolonged annoyance and permanent deformity.

Contusions of the auricle give rise to inflammation of the investing membrane of the cartilages,—the perichondrium. Such inflammation may be productive of abscess and subsequent deformity of the ear. In other cases, contusions are followed by the appearance of a blood tumor of the auricle, known as *othæmatoma*. This tumor is due to extravasation of blood between the perichondrium and the cartilage, or between the perichondrium and the skin, or to extravasations into the substance of the cartilage. Experiments on animals[1] indicate that

[1] Hüttig. Viertelsjahrsschrift für gericht. Med. u. öffentlich. Sanitätswesen, Oct., 1893, 221.

the extravasation may not set in for twenty-four hours, or a longer time. Othæmatoma occurs also as a spontaneous or idiopathic affection. In both the traumatic and the idiopathic cases, the left ear is commonly the site of the trouble; and in both, the tumor is observed almost invariably upon the anterior aspect of the concha. But it has been found on the back side of the external ear. Idiopathic cases are observed among the insane; rare exceptions to this rule have been reported as occurring in sane, but debilitated subjects.

Gruber[1] describes the appearance of idiopathic othæmatoma as follows: It "commences most commonly in the upper part, in the fossa triangularis (fork of the antihelix), or in the upper half of the concha; appearing as a larger or smaller, more or less distinctly fluctuating, circumscribed tumor; the skin covering it being either normal or of a livid red color. The surface is regular and smooth, if the blood has been effused into the subcutaneous areolar tissue; or if, as is often the case, the extravasation has taken place into the substance of the cartilage itself, or between this and the perichondrium, the external surface exhibits more or less definitely the ordinary elevations and depressions of the auricle." In traumatic cases there is no characteristic hemorrhage, but the appearances may be identical with those of the idiopathic variety. Other evidence of injury may be found. Fracture of the cartilages may be noted. But, inasmuch as the cartilages are softened in some idiopathic cases, and fragments of them may be felt beneath the fluctuating swelling, the signs of fracture of the cartilages do not necessarily indicate the nature of the cause of the extravasation.

The subjective symptoms of idiopathic othæmatoma are a feeling of fulness and burning in the auricle. Traumatic cases may give more marked symptoms, especially pain, tenderness, and heat. An abscess forms occasionally. Should the tumor rupture, septicæmia may follow. Cases of that nature have been reported. Both traumatic and idiopathic othæmatomata cause permanent, unsightly deformity of the auricle.

Burns of the external ear by heat or corrosive agents present considerable variety as regards the extent of surface involved and the degree of destruction of tissue. Superficial burns of the auricle heal very satisfactorily, leaving inconspicuous traces

[1] "Dis. of the Ear," N. Y., 1890, p. 221.

behind. Deep burns, however, deform the auricle. The entire external ear may be burned away. When the burn involves the parts surrounding the orifice of the external auditory canal, the resulting cicatrix will close the ear. Such a result will cause deafness. Considerable difficulty would be experienced in attempting to re-establish the opening of the external auditory canal if the cicatrix were not very thin. In some cases, failure would follow every such attempt.

Spontaneous gangrene of the auricle has been observed by Eitelberg,[1] who has reported two cases of it: that of a boy thirteen months old, who suffered also from suppuration of the middle ear and died on the fifth day of exhaustion; and that of a badly nourished girl, three weeks old, in whom the lobule and concha became dark brown, shrunken, and cold (a similar spot was found at the umbilicus).

Injuries of the External Auditory Canal.

The external auditory canal is anatomically divided into two portions, a cartilaginous and a bony. Either, or both, may be injured by direct violence. Lesions of the cartilaginous portion of the canal are of minor importance. They may excite inflammation which will temporarily diminish the acuteness of hearing. Healing occurs, however, in the greater number of cases, with no permanent impairment of the organ. Burns may close the canal permanently by cicatricial contraction, if the lesion be a severe one. Knapp[2] has reported one such case from sulphuric acid. Permanent atresia resulted.

Lesions of the bony portion of the external auditory canal are the result of either direct or of indirect violence. They may be complicated by direct injury to the drum-head and middle ear. Or, injury to the canal may excite an inflammation of the drum-head which will lead to perforation of the latter and suppuration in the middle ear. Hüttig[3] asserts that this result is most common after injury to the superior wall of the canal. The mastoid process may be invaded by inflammation, which sometimes extends to the drum, when the posterior or posterior-superior wall is injured. When the anterior wall is injured, the parotid gland may become inflamed.

[1] Hüttig, *op. cit.*, p. 221. [2] *Ibid.*, p. 224. [3] *Ibid.*, p. 223.

Diffuse inflammation of the canal occurs in consequence of direct injury; but, in general, resolution is perfect, leaving no permanent effects. In other cases, subjective noises and deafness remain. In still other cases, the canal is partially or completely closed by the results of the inflammatory process, thereby affecting the hearing to a marked degree.

Intense inflammation of the external auditory canal has been excited by introducing into it cotton moistened with creosote. Trautmann[1] reported two such cases; in both hearing was temporarily affected. Christinneck[2] reported a case of inflammation following the introduction of concentrated carbolic acid into the canal; healing was complete in two weeks.

Injuries of the external auditory canal occur in consequence of indirect violence. The soft parts have been injured by pulling the ears. The bony walls have been fractured by a blow or a fall upon the head, or by a blow, or a fall upon the chin or lower jaw. When the force is transmitted through the lower jaw, the anterior wall of the canal is fractured, and the lesion may occur in both ears at the same time. Baudrimont[3] observed such a case in which the lower jaw was dislocated backward. After the dislocation was reduced the right drum-head was found badly lacerated; some splinters of the anterior wall were removed, and recovery took place.

When the fracture of the bony walls is *simple*, hemorrhage takes place beneath the soft parts, and blood does not come from the ear. A subcutaneous blood-tumor may form and close the canal. In the case of *compound* fracture of the bony walls the ear bleeds. The hemorrhage may be moderately copious, but soon ceases spontaneously. If, however, there is also a fracture of the base of the skull, the hemorrhage is more persistent, and may become serious enough to require treatment. The jugular vein and the carotid artery may be injured by the fracture. In such cases the bleeding is profuse. When the hemorrhage comes from the carotid, it will prove fatal.

In compound fractures, the lesion may be diagnosticated with the sound before inflammation and swelling set in. Mastication will be painful or impossible in fractures of the anterior wall of the canal.

[1] "Handbuch der gerichtlichen Medicin," von Dr. J. Maschka, Tübingen, 1881, i., 386.

[2] Hüttig, *op. cit.*, p. 224; Archiv f. Ohrenheilk., Bd. 18, S. 291.

[3] Hüttig, *op. cit.*, 227.

Uncomplicated fractures of the canal do not, in general, leave any permanent evil consequences. Protracted inflammation, or caries or necrosis of the bones ensues, in a certain number of cases.

Injuries of the Drum-Head.

Ruptures or perforations of the drum-head are caused by direct or by indirect violence. Direct violence to the drum-head is done by penetration of objects thrust into the ear; by shot wounds; by violently syringing the ear; by surf bathing; by entrance into the ear of molten metals, steam, scalding water, or corrosive agents. Indirect violence to the drum-head is caused by blows upon the ear with the open hand, fist, or missiles; by falls upon the ear; by severe concussion transmitted through the bones of the skull; by intense sounds (explosion of projectiles, great guns, long-continued musketry fire, machine guns, steam whistles, loud voice); by violent traction on the auricle; by sudden condensation of air in the drum as when the ear is inflated with the air douche; by rarefaction of air external to the drum-head as in diving; by entering caissons; by fracture of the temporal bone.[1]

A great variety of things may be thrust into the ear and perforate or rupture the membrana tympani. The membrana may be simply contused by such foreign bodies, and subsequently a perforation result from the inflammation excited thereby.

Destruction of the membrana tympani, together with other serious lesions in the auditory apparatus, has been criminally produced by pouring corrosive liquids or molten metal into the external auditory canal. Even the entrance of cold water into the external auditory canal may excite inflammation and consecutive perforation of the membrana and suppuration in the middle ear.

Indirect violence by blows upon the ear with the open hand or fist has often resulted in rupture of the membrana tympani. Trautmann[2] cites 11 such cases; Sexton[3] refers to 51 cases among his records; other writers refer to similar cases. The violence may be comparatively slight and yet cause rupture of

[1] *Vide* Sexton, "The Ear and its Diseases," 1888, p. 176; also Trautmann, *op. cit.*, 1, p. 392.

[2] *Op. cit.*, p. 400 *et seq.*

[3] *Op. cit.*, p. 177.

the drum-head. Gruber[1] refers to two cases observed by him in which the rupture was caused by a kiss on the ear (rarefaction of the air in the external auditory canal).

The following cases are cited from Sexton:[2]

"That of a young man, aged 22, whose father had given him a blow upon the left ear six years previously. Severe inflammation of the middle ear followed, lasting for two years, during which time the air whistled through a perforation in the drum-head whenever he blew his nose. When seen the drum-head was found thickened, irregular, and otherwise changed almost beyond recognition. Hearing very much impaired.

"A young man was slapped upon the left ear by his father. There was immediate pain and deafness, followed in a few hours by a watery discharge, which afterward was tinged with blood. Two days after the boxing, a perforation in the lower segments of the drum-head was giving vent to a free discharge and the middle-ear inflammation was complicated with periostitis externa—the mastoid cortex being swollen, red, and tender to the touch. Autophonia, noises in the head, and pain occurred at the beginning, and were very distressing for a long time, recovery not taking place for three months.

"The grave consequences of pounding the ear are well shown in the case of a woman addicted to drink, aged 38, who was struck violently by a man upon the right ear. The immediate result was severe dizziness, and she had to hold on to a stair-railing to keep from falling. Vertiginous symptoms became more severe, and the pain and autophonia with this alarmed her very much. She was taken to a dispensary, where an energetic attendant, feeling that something must be done, vigorously inflated the ear by Politzer's method, causing extreme pain in the ear, and afterward introduced some irritating medicament on cotton-wool with instructions to keep it in the ear. After this the pain became more severe, and she came to the Eye and Ear Infirmary, where the drum-head was examined. This was found to be ruptured. An enormous quantity of serous fluid was escaping from the ear, which was believed to consist largely of the water of the labyrinth, thus indicating that the round window had also been ruptured by the blow. She had now become extremely nervous and experienced insane hallucinations, as was confirmed by the physician who saw the case. She was admitted to the wards of the infirmary, and purulent inflammation of the middle ear soon set in. The cerebral symptoms—pain, vertigo, hallucinations, etc.—became more grave. They seemed due in part to the concussion of the blow; but on reviewing the case the author is convinced that there was also transmission of a septic irritant through the cerebro-spinal fluid into the cranial

[1] *Op. cit.*, 257. [2] *Op. cit.*, pp. 178, 179.

cavity, inducing leptomeningitis. The patient left the infirmary before she was well, and when last heard from, a month after the injury, had not recovered."

Falls upon the ear and blows upon the ear with missiles produce ruptures of the membrana similar to those caused by boxing the ears.

Pulling the ears in a violent manner has ruptured the drum-head. The following cases are quoted from Sexton:[1]

"Female, 11 years of age. While playing with some other children in front of a shop, the proprietor ran out and seized the patient by the left auricle, and, during her struggles to escape, the organ was violently wrung and pulled. She cried out with pain, which continued for some time; a discharge appeared the next day, and she was brought a few days afterward, July 14th, 1884, to the New York Eye and Ear Infirmary for relief. An examination of the ear showed that the integument covering the superior wall of the canal and the upper portion of the drum-head was inflamed and exfoliating, and, furthermore, that the membrane was lacerated in several places about the umbo. There was a discharge through the perforations from the drum; also deafness and autophonia.

"The patient was under observation for about seven weeks, after which she failed to return. The drum-head had not then healed, and a purulent discharge from the ear still existed. There was also considerable deafness. On December 4th, 1887, three and a half years after the injury, this patient called on the author, stating that for two or three weeks she had had a good deal of pain and discharge in the right ear. On examining the left (injured) ear, it was found that the drum-head was adherent to the inner wall of the drum; furthermore, that a white cicatrix was present behind the handle of the hammer, which was drawn backward somewhat. The malleus was displaced downward. Anteriorly the drum-head had a little brilliancy. Loud ordinary voice could be heard in the left ear at twenty feet distance. She stated that the left ear had discharged off and on until four months ago; that there was tinnitus resembling musical sounds and intermittent pain in the same ear. She left off going to school six months since, as she was so deaf that she could not understand what the teacher said to her. Patient has many decayed teeth. She works at present in a cigarette factory.

"Male, aged 14 years. Three months ago his brother caught him by the lobule of the left ear, pulling it until some blood escaped from the canal. The ear has discharged ever since, and he only hears shouting voice in that ear. The left drum-head is hyperæmic; the

[1] *Op. cit.*, p. 223.

inner end of the canal, which is large, is red, dry, and exfoliating. A month later, when patient was last seen, the drum-head had healed.

"Male, 23 years old. Two days ago left auricle was seized by the teeth of a man during a fight. The lobule was much torn, and the traction made on the auricle lacerated the superior membranous wall of the canal, where it enters the bony portion. The membrana flaccida was also lacerated at its anterior insertion. The parts were still bleeding, and the neighborhood very much injected. There was no deafness. Patient seen but once."

The following case quoted from Gruber[1] exhibits other consequences of a blow upon the ear than rupture of the drum-head:

"As an example of injury to the ear from a blow, without rupture of the drum-head resulting, a case of Bürkner's[2] may be cited. The patient was knocked down and rendered senseless by a blow from the fist over the ear. On recovering consciousness, two hours later, he had a loud buzzing in the ear, with pain on moving his head to the same side, uncertainty in walking, and dizziness, increased on closure of the meatus. The tympanic membrane was depressed, but otherwise uninjured. All the symptoms disappeared in ten days under treatment by the Politzer process. Bürkner ascribes the symptoms to displacement inward of the membrane and auditory ossicles, especially the stapes, subsequently remedied by inflation."

The following case of rupture of the drum-head by *contre-coup* is taken from Gruber:[3]

"Ruptures of the membrane, brought about by so-called contre-coup, are particularly noteworthy. The author has seen several such cases in Vienna. A young lady, leaving the room, struck her forehead against the door-post, and ruptured her left tympanic membrane; it healed in the course of a week. A young man, while diving, struck his forehead against the bottom of the bath, and ruptured the left drum-head; a severe inflammation was set up, and it was some weeks before it had quite disappeared. Williams[4] oberved a fracture through the external auditory canal, with rupture of the membrane, in a boy who fell on the back of his head. Eitelberg[5] reports a case in which a perforation below the malleus, with fracture of its handle, were said to

[1] *Op. cit.*, p. 258.

[2] "Zur Casuistik der traumatischen und entzündlichen Mittelohraffectionen," Archiv für Ohrenheilkunde, Bd. xv.

[3] *Op. cit.*, p. 259.

[4] "Ein Fall von Fractur des äusseren Gehörganges durch Contrecoup mit Zerreissung des Trommelfelles," Zeitschrift für Ohrenheilkunde, Bd. xiv.

[5] "Bruch des Hammergriffes durch Schlag auf's Ohr," Separatabdruck aus der Wiener med. Presse.

have resulted from a blow upon the ear with the fist; both lesions healed. Kirchner[1] saw several cases of this kind. In a man of 60, who fell with the side of his head against a beam, fracture of the osseous portion of the auditory canal, with rupture of the membrane and fracture of the handle of the malleus, took place. In another case there was fracture of the temporal bone and of the hammer; in this instance the patient had been run over by an engine. He also observed a case where the os tympanicum was broken by the force of the lower jaw in a fall from a considerable height. On recovery, a deep furrow was seen on the anterior and lower surface of the osseous part of the auditory canal, extending as far as the membrane, and a fissure on the posterior wall 1½ mm. long; the membrane also was ruptured. Krakauer saw a fracture of the handle of the malleus which was due to examination of the ear with a sound under a bad light. In the author's collection is a preparation in which, besides a fissure parallel to the long axis of the petrous bone through the whole of the tegmen tympani, there is a tear through the tympanic membrane, with fracture of the handle of the malleus; the head of the malleus is likewise dislocated from the crown of the incus, the latter being untouched. The case was that of a man who fell upon his head from a third-floor flat."

Objective Symptoms.—The position and form of the rupture produced by direct violence vary with the shape and size of the offending body and the direction it takes in traversing the external auditory canal. Punctures and small wounds may not be visible, only a scanty extravasation of blood being found at the site of the lesion. In other cases of direct violence to the drum-head a more or less ragged aperture will be found, having, according to circumstances, greater or less dimensions, and either free or filled with coagulated blood. Fissures resulting from indirect violence have, as a rule, smooth margins and their form is more or less oval. Their edges are white or covered with coagulated blood. After twenty-four hours, the margins become red and swollen, thus narrowing the aperture.

Hemorrhage in these cases is very slight—a few drops only of blood being the limit. If more copious hemorrhage occur, other parts have probably been invaded by the traumatism. Copious hemorrhage is a rare incident.

Air may be forced through the fissure by the Valsalvian method with a sharp piping sound. A snapping noise is heard

[1] Jahresbericht der Würzburger otiatrischen Poliklinik, 1884–85; ferner, Bericht aus der otiatrischen Section der 59 Versamlung deutscher Naturforscher und Aerzte, Berlin, 1886.

at the time of injury when the membrana tympani is broken through by direct violence.

Subjective Symptoms.—Pain, especially severe in cases of direct injury, is usually experienced, but it may not be noted. As a rule, it subsides in a few hours, but will continue if inflammation supervene. Loss of consciousness for a few minutes commonly ensues from direct violence. Attacks of fainting may be repeated; and convulsions sometimes occur. Vertigo, autophonia, tinnitus aurium, and deafness are quite constant. Hearing, instead of being dulled, may be rendered abnormally acute, so that certain sounds are distressing to the patient. The perception of the direction of sounds is lost. The tuning-fork is heard best by bone conduction on the injured side.

Healing of uncomplicated fissures, due to indirect violence, occurs early—in from three to seventeen days, but may be prolonged to six weeks.[1] Those due to direct violence heal more slowly, according to the size and characteristics of the rupture. According to Trautmann, fissures do not leave a visible scar. Inflammation, suppuration in the lesion, and invasion of the middle ear by suppurative inflammation complicate some cases. The shape of the fissure will become more rounded if suppuration occur. Syringing and inflating such injured ears will retard the reparative process, and excite suppurative inflammation. Cold air blowing into the ear will produce the same effect. The aperture does not always close; especially is this true if suppurative inflammation have occurred. Relapses of this inflammation are often observed. And so long as the ear is discharging pus, the life of the patient is endangered, by virtue of the possible occurrence of meningitis, or of abscess of the brain, or of septic thrombosis of one of the sinuses.

Hearing is commonly restored when healing is complete; but in some cases it remains more or less impaired. An aperture through the drum-head does not necessarily diminish the acuteness of hearing.

Imprudence on the part of the patient will have an evil influence on the healing of the injured drum-head. And pre-existing disease of the ear will operate as a predisposition to protracted healing and complicating inflammatory disturbances.

[1] Trautmann, *op. cit.*

The question arises, naturally, whether the rupture of the drum-head or the suppurative inflammation of the middle ear is due to traumatism or not. It is well known that both occur without injury of any sort. As regards the causation of rupture, it can only be certainly attributed to injury when extravasations of blood are discovered in the drum-head, or when there is found evidence of hemorrhage in the margins of the fissure or in their immediate vicinity.[1] A probable diagnosis of the causation of the conditions may be made, however, in other cases. The relationship between an injury and suppurative inflammation involving the middle ear may be pronounced upon with certainty only, when the development of the various stages of the ear trouble has taken place under the eye of a competent observer. If the examination have been made first after the suppuration has set in, and if other traces of an injury be discovered, it is probable that the injury was the cause of the ear disease, and, indirectly, of the death of the patient. If, however, other traces of injury are wanting, it is not possible, after suppuration has set in, to state positively, on the strength of the objective evidence, that trauma and suppuration bear to one another the relationship of cause and effect.[2]

Injuries of the Drum.

The structures in the middle ear, *e.g.*, the ossicles of the ear, the chorda tympani and the facial nerve, the intrinsic muscles of the ear, the mucous lining of the cavities and their bony walls, may be directly injured by the entrance of such objects as have caused rupture of the drum-head by direct violence. Being the most exposed of the ossicles, the malleus, especially the handle of the malleus, is most frequently injured. Fracture of the handle of the malleus has been reported by a number of observers. In Ménière's case[3] the twig of a tree entered the external auditory canal, ruptured the membrana and fractured the malleus. Healing occurred without treatment. Von Tröltsch[4] saw the case reported by him after the fracture had united. The injury was done by a penholder which was driven

[1] Hüttig, *op. cit.*, p. 43.
[2] *Ibid.*, p. 203.
[3] Trautmann, *op. cit.*, 405. M. Gaz. médicale de Paris, 1856, No. 50.
[4] Trautmann, *ibid.*; von T., "Lehrbuch der Ohrenheilkunde," 1877, p. 149.

into the ear acidentally. Hearing was blunted and the patient complained of noises in the ear. In Weir's case, the fracture of the handle of the malleus had not united four months after injury. The patient gave a history of having fallen into an open areaway about fifteen feet. He was unconscious about sixteen hours. He had been informed that the right ear had bled for about an hour. He experienced pain in the right ear, forehead, and other ear for about a month; and great tinnitus, which remained unabated since the injury. There was no history of entrance of a foreign body into the ear. The watch was heard on affected side when pressed upon the ear. The drum-head was normal in color; there was an irregularity in the handle of the malleus. The bone was found to be fractured a short distance below the short process. The broken ends were completely and transversely displaced. Reposition of the ends of the fragments took place when the ear was inflated by Valsalva's method, but soon became displaced again. Two of Dr. Weir's colleagues were of the opinion that a faint, whitish line posterior to the malleus might be a cicatrix from a laceration of the drum-head. Patient was not seen again.[1] Hepburn reported a case of rupture of the drum-head and of fracture of the handle of the malleus due to thrusting a hair-pin into the ear. Hearing-distance, watch, one-half inch. Seven months later, necrosis of the fragments was observed.[2]

Severe injury to the ear, and other more serious consequences, have been produced by pouring corrosive liquids and molten metals into the ear. Trautmann[3] cites the following cases of that nature:

Morrison's[4] case, of a man who poured nitric acid into his wife's right ear while she was lying in a drunken slumber. Hemorrhage, violent inflammation, paralysis of the right side of the body, and death in six weeks, were the consequences. Caries of the petrous portion of the temporal bone and meningitis were found at the autopsy.

Rau's[5] case, in which melted lead was poured into the right ear of a drunken man; causing deafness, purulent discharge,

[1] Roosa, "Dis. of the Ear," N. Y., 1891, p. 277.

[2] Burnett, "Dis. Ear, Nose, and Throat," vol. i., p. 266; Trans. Amer. Otol. Soc., vol. i., 1870.

[3] *Op. cit.*, p. 387.

[4] Dublin Journal of Medical Science, vol. ix., No. 15.

[5] Med.-chirurg. Zeitung, 1852, 39.

paralysis of the corresponding half of the face. The lead was so firmly embedded that seventeen months later it could not be removed.

Ostander's [1] case, of an English woman who murdered six husbands by pouring molten lead into the ear. She was detected in the seventh attempt.

Taylor's [2] case, in which a mother poured molten metal (seven parts tin and three parts lead) into the right ear of her idiotic son to destroy his life. Violent pain and great inflammation ensued, but finally recovery took place.

Toynbee's [3] case exhibits the results of a traumatism of the middle ear involving the chorda tympani. The twig of a tree penetrated the patient's right ear. There was very severe pain, some bleeding (blood is said to have run from the ear), subjective noises, deafness, and, when the ear was inflated by the Valsalvian method, air passed through the drum-head. Seven days later some clotted blood was found in the external auditory canal. A fissure was found in the drum-head behind and parallel with the handle of the malleus. Its margins were red and swollen. Nine days later the fissure was healed, the subjective noises had diminished, and, the hearing had improved. Four days after the injury the patient had the feeling that a cold body had been rubbed over the right half of his tongue, and the sense of taste was diminished on the affected side. Klaatsch had also observed the sensation of cold in the tip of the tongue.

Commenting on this case Trautmann states that "patients in whom he has accidentally severed the chorda tympani in puncturing the drum-head give different replies: some state that they experience a sticking, prickling sensation with a metallic or sour taste on the affected half of the tongue, especially along its edge. Von Tröltsch, Neumann, and others have noted the prickling sensation on the edge of the tongue. In another case a sense of smoothness on the affected half of the tongue lasted six days. The sensation had been experienced immediately after division of the nerve, and disappeared absolutely, leaving nothing abnormal behind. Blunting of the sense of taste and anomalies of the secretion of saliva are frequently ob-

[1] "Ueber den Selbstmord," S. 395.
[2] "Med. Jurisprudence," London, 1861.
[3] Trautmann, *op. cit.*, 405, "Die Krankheiten des Gehörorgans," übers. von Moss, 1863, S. 180.

served. In many cases, these characteristic symptoms of injury to the chorda tympani were accompanied by a sudden, almost lightning-like movement of the head, mouth, and tongue. The head, affected as it were by electric shocks, is drawn slightly toward the affected side, as are also the corner of the mouth and the tongue, which is slightly protruded. In large perforations of the membrana which lay bare the chorda tympani, these symptoms may be induced by touching the nerve with a sound."

Direct violence to the middle ear has been done by the attending physician in attempting to extract a foreign body from the external auditory canal. The foreign body has been forced into the middle ear through a drum-head lacerated by the unskilful manipulations. A foreign body lodged in the middle ear causes suppurative inflammation, and may excite grave complications in the brain—meningitis, abscess, and thrombosis of the sinuses. Headache, vertigo, epilepsy, and mental disturbances of a serious nature sometimes occur in the non-fatal cases. Not only have foreign bodies lodged in the external auditory canal been forced into the middle ear, but methods adopted for their extraction have led to perforation of the skull, laceration of the brain, and death of the victim. Worse than this has happened. Misguided by the statements of the patient or his friends regarding the presence of a foreign body in the external auditory canal, physicians have searched so unskilfully that not only has the drum-head been lacerated and removed, but the ossicles of the ear have been torn out, and even the walls of the middle ear have been perforated and the brain injured in the vain hunt for a thing that did not exist. Ordinarily, removal of foreign bodies from the ear may be accomplished without injury to the organ, by simply syringing the ear. Whenever it becomes necessary to resort to other measures than that, it is best for the patient that the case be referred to a competent specialist in aural surgery, or that the foreign body be allowed to remain in the ear. In a certain number of cases it may do no harm if allowed to remain in its bed unmolested.

Injury to the middle ear by indirect violence occurs by virtue of shocks to, or blows upon, the head, falls upon the knees, gunshot wounds in the immediate vicinity of the ear, violent vomiting and coughing, forcible inflation of the ear, and falls upon the chin. In consequence of such injuries, hemorrhage

into the drum has taken place to an extent sufficient to cause deafness, noises and pressure sensations in the ear, and vertigo. Loss of consciousness and vomiting signify the coexistence of concussion of the brain. Eventually—after some weeks or months—the effused blood will be absorbed and the function of the organ restored. Sometimes suppuration, with perforation of the drum-head, occurs. In other cases, inflammation of the middle ear without suppuration ensues. When inflammation of the middle ear ensues, whether suppuration occur or not, the probability that the function of the organ will ever be restored is proportionately lessened; but it is not always impossible to restore such organs to their normal function.

The drum is injured indirectly by such causes as effect a fracture of the base of the skull. The characteristic symptoms are those of fracture of the base of the skull, viz., marked hemorrhage from the ear, escape of cerebro-spinal fluid from the ear, and, in exceptional cases, escape of brain matter through the external auditory canal. Even in such cases, death is not inevitable.

The mastoid process is occasionally injured by heavy blows and gunshot wounds. Dupuytren [1] reported a case in which the mastoid was torn away from the skull. As a rule, the injuries cause fissure or splintering of the bone. They heal kindly, in some cases; in others, necrosis of the bone occurs; in still other cases, death follows from consecutive meningitis.

"In gunshot wounds, which involve the mastoid only, or the adjacent bones and soft parts also, the ball may become encapsulated and excite no further disturbance; yet in other cases, if the missile press upon the sterno-cleido muscle, neuralgia and interference with the movements of the neck may bother the patient." [2] Absolute deafness is the consequence of gunshot wounds of this region, in nearly all cases.

Injuries of the internal ear and auditory nerve are due either to direct or to indirect violence. In the former set of cases, the direct injury involves, almost without exception, other structures within the cranium and terminates fatally. In the latter, when the internal ear and the auditory nerve *only* are indirectly injured, the objective symptoms are not sufficiently positive to base a diagnosis upon them. Thus is afforded a

[1] Hüttig, *op. cit.*, Jan., 1894, p. 25. [2] *Ibid.*, p. 25.

favorable opportunity for malingering. And, inasmuch as it is not possible objectively to differentiate between a malingerer and a truthful patient in this class of cases, on account of the absence of objective evidence, discussion of the subject is postponed until our knowledge of these injuries is more satisfactory. The reader is referred, however, to the writings of Trautmann and Hüttig for a discussion of that class of injuries.

THE MEDICO-LEGAL ASPECT

OF

INSURANCE.

BY

DAVID MURRAY

AND

GUY J. EDWORDS

of the New York Bar.

THE MEDICO-LEGAL ASPECT OF INSURANCE.

In writing on the subject of the medico-legal aspect of life and accident insurance, we shall confine ourselves strictly to those cases where the sciences of law and medicine must co-operate to properly elucidate the questions involved in determining the nature and effect of the contract between the insurer and the insured. These questions are quite different in the two forms of insurance treated of in this article. In life insurance they arise as a rule from facts existing prior to the contract, while in accident insurance they spring from circumstances arising after the contract and affecting the question as to whether the injury or death happened through accident or otherwise.

A contract of life insurance is one of indemnity in case of death, however caused (with certain exceptions, such as suicide, violation of law, forbidden travel, etc.), so that defences arising subsequently under such a policy rarely present a medico-legal question, while accident insurance, being a contract of indemnity against external, violent and accidental injury only, frequently requires the aid of medical science to determine the cause of death or injury.

We shall treat first of the subject of life insurance, and secondly of accident insurance.

LIFE INSURANCE.

Life insurance companies do not insure lives generally, but certain accepted risks based upon the physical condition, past and present, family history, age, and occupation. The applicant is required to pass a rigid examination by the medical examiner of the company and to answer a series of questions. The effect upon the contract of the correctness of these answers depends upon whether they are made under such circumstances

as to constitute them warranties or mere representations. The statements and answers made by the insured are usually made warranties by the terms of the policy; but even in such cases the courts will examine into the nature and language of the statements, and of the policy, to determine the question as to whether the statements are to be considered as warranties or representations. The general principle of construction may be gathered from a few citations of cases.

In the case of Campbell *v.* Life Insurance Company[1] the court say: "A warranty in insurance enters into and forms a part of the contract itself. It defines by way of particular stipulation, description, condition, or otherwise the precise limits of the obligation which the insurers undertook to assume. No liability can arise except within those limits. In order to charge the insurers, therefore, every one of the terms which define their obligation must be satisfied by the facts which appear in the proof. . . . The burden of proof is upon the plaintiff to present a case in all respects conforming to the terms under which the risk was assumed. It must be not merely a substantial conformity, but exact and literal, not only in material particulars, but in those that are immaterial as well.

"A representation is, on the other hand, in its nature no part of the contract of insurance. Its relation to the contract is usually described by the term 'collateral.' It may be proved although existing only in parol and preceding the written instrument. . . . Representations to insurers before or at the time of making a contract are a presentation of the elements upon which to estimate the risk proposed to be assumed. They are the basis of the contract, its foundation, on the faith of which it is entered into. If wrongly presented in any respect material to the risk, the policy that may be issued thereupon will not take effect.

"When statements or engagements on the part of the insured are inserted or referred to in the policy itself, it often becomes difficult to determine to which class they belong. If they appear on the face of the policy they do not necessarily become warranties. Their character will depend on the form of expression used, the apparent purpose of the insertion, and sometimes upon the connection or relation to other parts of the

[1] 98 Mass., 381.

instrument. If they are contained in a separate paper, referred to in such a manner as to make it a part of the contract, the same considerations of course will apply; but if the reference appears to be for a special purpose, and not with a view to import the separate paper into the policy as a part of the contract, the statements it contains will not thereby be changed from representations into warranties.

"In considering the question whether a part of the contract is a warranty, it must be borne in mind as an established maxim that warranties are not to be created nor extended by construction. They must arise, if at all, from the fair interpretation and clear intendment of the words used by the parties.

"The application is in itself collateral merely to the contract of insurance. Its statements, whether of facts or of agreements, belong to the class of representations. They are to be so construed, unless converted into warranties by force of a reference to them in the policy and a clear purpose manifested in the papers thus connected that the whole shall form one entire contract."

The difference in effect between a warranty and a representation is that if a statement is warranted to be true, its falsity, whether the discrepancy is on a point material to the risk or not, will avoid the contract, while the falsity of a representation must be material in order to avoid the contract. In some jurisdictions a difference is made between the effect of a warranty and that of a material representation, as to the burden of proof; thus, that the insured, in order to enforce the liability, is bound to show the truth of his warranties, but that the insurer must prove the existence and non-performance of conditions arising from mere representations.[1] The weight of authority, however, has established the rule that the burden of proof of breach of warranty as well as of a material representation rests upon the insured.

The distinctions between warranty and representation in an insurance contract is well stated in Price *v.* Life Insurance Company.[2]

"So far as the question presented by the case at bar are con-

[1] Price *v.* Phœnix Mutual Company, 17 Minn. 497, 504; Miller *v.* Mutual Benefit Co., 31 Iowa, 216, 227; and so held also in the case of Campbell *v.* Insurance Company above quoted.

[2] 17 Minn., 473

cerned, it is sufficient to define a warranty in insurance to be a part of the contract evidenced by the policy, and a binding agreement that the facts stated are strictly true. A representation in insurance may for the purpose of this case be defined to be a statement in regard to the material fact made by the applicant for insurance to the insurer with reference to a proposed contract of insurance. As representations simply, they are not a part of the contract of insurance, and though expressly referred to in the policy so as to become a part of the written contract they may not become warranties.

"It is sufficient if representations be substantially true, while a warranty must be strictly complied with. A false warranty therefore avoids a policy, while a false representation (not fraudulent) does not avoid a policy, unless it relates to something which is material in fact or is made material by the contract of the parties. Warranties, then, are conditions precedent, so that their truth must be pleaded by the insured, upon whom, of course, the burden of proving the same rests; whereas the falsity of representations is matter of defence to be pleaded by the insurer."

As to the burden of proof as laid down in the above case, see, however, to the contrary, cases cited in Cooke on Life Insurance, section 14, note 2.

In the case of Jeffries *v.* Life Insurance Company,[1] the insured had stated that he was single, and that he had made no other application to any other company for insurance. Both statements were false, and the court held as follows:

"It is contended, also, that the false answers in the present case were not to the injury of the company, that they presented the applicant's case in a less favorable light to himself than if he had answered truly. Thus, to the inquiry, 'Are you married or single?' when he falsely answered that he was single he made himself a less eligible candidate for insurance than if he had truly stated that he was a married man; that although he deceived the company and caused it to enter into a contract that it did not intend to make, it was deceived to its advantage and made a more favorable bargain than was supposed. This is bad morality and bad law. None may do evil that good may come. No man is justified in the utterance of a falsehood. It is an

[1] 22 Wall., 47.

equal offence in morals, whether committed for his own benefit or that of another."[1]

It is not necessary to go exhaustively into the subject of warranty and representation, nor would the limits of this article permit of it. The doctrines established in the adjudications are important as laying down rules applicable generally to statements made by the applicant for insurance, whether such statements are of a nature to give rise to medico-legal questions or questions of fact. We have to deal now with those particular statements which concern the health of the applicant.

These statements are classified by life companies under such divisions as (1) occupation and residence; (2) personal habits (as to the use of alcohol and drugs); (3) insurance history; (4) personal record; (5) family history; and (6) physical condition. We shall treat of these in their order.

(1) **Occupation and Residence.**—Many interesting tables have been compiled showing the effect of occupation upon the expectancy of life, and while it would be generally recognized that some occupations are more trying and hazardous than others, it would undoubtedly be quite surprising to a lay mind in glancing over these tables to find that some preferred and attractive occupations show a higher death rate than other laborious and unpleasant ones. Who would suppose, for instance, that a farm hand, a coal merchant, or a fisherman had a better expectancy of life than a lawyer or an artist? A table in the "Medical Hand-Book of Insurance," by Pollock and Chisholm, is interesting in this respect. It shows that insurance risks would compare as follows:

1. Clergyman.
2. Gardener.
3. Farmer.
4. Schoolmaster.
5. Coal merchant.
6. Fisherman.
7. Carpenter.
8. Stationer.
9. Lawyer.
10. General shopkeeper.
11. Ironmonger.
12. Artist.
13. Baker.
14. Mason and builder.
15. Fishmonger.

The above fifteen are below the average of mortality, while

[1] See also the English case of Anderson *v.* Fitzgerald, 4 H. L., 484; Clapp *v.* Mass. Ben. Assn., 146 Mass., 519.

the next, "Tobacconist," is exactly the average, and the following are above the average of mortality:

17. Cheesemonger.
18. Chemist.
19. Green grocer.
20. Tailor.
21. Printer.
22. { Physician. / Stone-quarryman.
23. Butcher.
24. Cutler.
25. Musician.
26. Brewer.
27. Cabman.
28. Inn-keeper.
29. File-maker.
30. Earthenware manufacturer.
31. Costermonger.

The last two are nearly double the average of mortality.

In the case of Dwight *v.* Life Insurance Company[1] the insured stated that he had not been, nor was at the time of making application, engaged in or connected with the manufacture or sale of any beer, wine, or other intoxicating liquors. The insured had kept a hotel for three years and had sold wines and liquors to his guests, but sold nothing over the bar. It was held that this constituted a breach of warranty.

On the other hand, in the case of McGurk *v.* Life Insurance Company,[2] the insured stated his occupation as grocer. The court held that as Webster defined the meaning of the word "grocer" to be "a trader who deals in tea, sugar, spices, coffee, liquors, fruit, etc.," McGurk's occupation was properly described and covered the sale of liquors; so that there was no deception practised by the insured in stating his occupation as grocer, although he dealt in liquors.

So, also, in Kenyon *v.* Knight Templars Aid Association[3] the insured had stated that his occupation was importing and wholesale dealer in wines and liquors, and that he was not engaged in any way in retailing liquors. It was shown that he sold in quantities less than five gallons, but not to be drunk on the premises. The jury in the case below had found for the plaintiff, and the Court of Appeals held that it was not error to submit to the jury the question as to whether the insured was engaged in the occupation of retailing liquors.

On the question of residence there is a case which presents a medical question as to the meaning of the word "epidemic."

[1] 103 N. Y., 341. [2] 56 Conn., 528. [3] 122 N. Y., 247.

The case is that of Pohalski *v.* Life Insurance Company,[1] where the insured obtained permission from the insurance company to go to Cuba and return before April 1st, 1871, "he to take his own risk of death from epidemics." He died in Cuba in February, 1871, of yellow fever. It was contended by the insurer that yellow fever was one of the diseases classed as epidemic. The referee found that yellow fever was not epidemic in Havana at the time of the insured's illness there, and judgment was given for the plaintiff. The Court of Appeals in the same case on appeal[2] affirms the judgment below without opinion.

It will be remembered that when Boss Tweed made his escape from custody in September, 1875, he fled to Cuba and thence to Spain, where he was captured at Vigo. A suit on a policy of insurance taken out by him in 1868 was successfully resisted by the insurance company on the ground that he had violated the condition in the policy that he should not "without the written consent of this company, previously obtained, travel upon the seas, except between coastwise parts of the United States."[3]

(2) **Personal Habits.**—Applicants for insurance are required to answer questions as to their consumption of wines, spirits, or malt liquors; whether they have at any time drunk any of them to excess, and whether they have at any time taken, or do, at the time of making application, take tobacco, narcotics, or other drugs, to excess.

There are many decisions defining the meaning of the words "sober and temperate." In the case of Brockway *v.* Life Insurance Company[4] the insured had answered that he was sober and temperate and had always been so. The judge charged that "the words 'sober and temperate' are to be taken in their ordinary sense. The language does not imply abstinence from intoxicating liquors. The moderate, temperate use of intoxicating liquors is consistent with sobriety, but if a man uses liquors to such an extent as to produce frequent intoxication he is not sober and temperate within the meaning of this contract of insurance."

In Holterhoff *v.* Life Insurance Company[5] the insured an-

[1] 36 N. Y. Sup. Ct., 234.
[2] 56 N. Y., 640.
[3] Douglass *v.* Life Ins. Co., 83 N. Y., 492.
[4] 9 Fed. Rep., 249.
[5] 4 Bigelow's Life and Accident Reports, 395.

swered in the affirmative the questions "Is the party sober and temperate?" "Has he always been so?" The court charged, "As a matter of construction, it is manifest and clear to the court that these words, taken as they are placed together, refer to the character, state, or habit of the party, and that they are fairly convertible into the phrase or statement that the party was and always had been a sober and temperate person. The question of fact will then be 'Was he such?' In considering this question you will inquire whether or not he continued the use of intoxicating liquors sufficiently long or repeated libations sufficiently often to amount to a habit, and if he did, then whether such habit considered in reference to its extent or the degree of indulgence was such that he was not temperate and sober."

The socialistic tendency of juries in suits against insurance corporations is apparent in the case of Miller *v.* Life Insurance Company.[1] The policy provided that the company should not be liable if the insured died "by reason of intemperance from the use of intoxicating liquors." The insured died from the effects of exposure while in a fit of *delirium tremens* brought on by a prolonged spree. The exposure produced congestion of the lungs and brain, from which he died. The jury returned a verdict for the plaintiff. The Court of Appeals granted a new trial. The jury again found for the plaintiff, and the Court of Appeals in again reviewing the case[2] said, "How, in view of the evidence and the law given by the court, an impartial and unprejudiced jury, indifferent as between the parties and anxious to ascertain the truth and effectuate the right, could return a general verdict for the plaintiff and find specially that the congestion of the lungs and brain which caused Miller's death was not caused by the intemperate use of intoxicating liquors passes our comprehension.

"We deprecate the necessity which impels us a second time to set aside a verdict upon substantially the same testimony, but it were much more to be deprecated if the pertinacity of a jury could override law and right and give triumph to injustice and wrong."

The Supreme Court of the United States has decided that a person may have had *delirium tremens* and still be a person of temperate habits.

[1] 34 Ia., 222. [2] 39 Ia., 304.

In Insurance Company *v.* Foley,[1] the Circuit Court charged the jury that if they found that the habits of the insured had been temperate in the ordinary every-day routine of his life, then his representations that he was of temperate habits were not untrue within the meaning of the policy, although he had had an attack of *delirium tremens* prior to the issue of the policy.

In the United States Supreme Court on appeal of this case, the court held, the opinion being given by Mr. Justice Field, as follows:

"The charge given by the court as stated above accurately presented the law of the case. The question was as to the habits of the insured. His occasional use of intoxicating liquors did not render him a man of intemperate habits, nor would an exceptional case of excess justify the application of this character to him. An attack of *delirium tremens* may sometimes follow a single excessive indulgence."

The learned judge, after quoting Ray on Medical Jurisprudence and the American Encyclopedia under the head of "Delirium Tremens" to the effect that *delirium tremens* may be the consequence of a single debauch, continues:

"The court, therefore, did not err in instructing the jury that if the habits of the insured in the usual, ordinary, every-day routine of his life were temperate, the representations made are not untrue within the meaning of the policy, although he may have had an attack of *delirium tremens* from an exceptional over-indulgence."

From these and kindred cases on the subject of the use of intoxicants, it would appear that the judicial definition of a temperate man would be a man who was not habitually intemperate, though he might occasionally drink to excess.

The insurer proceeds upon the assumption that the use of intoxicants and narcotics tends to shorten life, and many policies frame the clause against intemperance in such words as "It is further agreed and understood that if he shall become so far intemperate as to seriously and permanently impair his health, then this company shall not be liable."

In the case of Odd Fellows Mutual Life Insurance Company *v.* Rohkopp[2] the clause was: "It is further agreed and under-

[1] 105 U. S., 350. [2] 94 Pa., St. 59.

stood that if he shall become so far intemperate as to seriously and permanently impair his health or induce *delirium tremens*, then this company shall not be liable."

In this case the court held that it was not error to reject an offer to prove "that Rohkopp was an habitual drunkard for many years prior to and at the time the insurance was taken; that he had created an appetite which had become fixed upon him; but that it had not seriously impaired his health at that time. The offer did not propose to show that he thereafter became so intemperate as to either 'seriously or permanently impair his health.' It was to show 'by experts that the amount he had drunk before and the amount he had drunk afterward was sufficient to seriously impair a man's health.' The capacity of persons to drink liquor is so unequal and the effect is so different in different individuals, it by no means follows that a quantity sufficient to affect some other man's health had the same effect on the health of Rohkopp."

In Forbes *v.* Edinburgh Company[1] it was left to the jury to find whether the habit of taking opium was a breach of warranty of perfect health.

(3) **Insurance History.**—The statements as to the amount of other insurance carried by the applicant do not present a medico-legal question, but knowledge of such insurance is considered important by the insurer for the purpose of determining the moral risk. Cases on such points are decided on the ground of breach of warranty or false representation.

(4) **Personal Record.**—Under this head the applicant is required to go fully into his past physical history. The questions are directed toward diseases of the brain and nervous system, the respiratory organs, the heart, abdominal organs, kidneys, etc., and to medical attendance.

The applicant is asked whether since childhood he has suffered from headaches, fits, mental derangement, sunstroke, or any disease of brain or nervous system, or from asthma, spitting of blood, or other evidences of pulmonary trouble, or palpitation or pain or distress about the heart, or dyspepsia, or liver disease, or other troubles of the digestive organs.

The general run of decisions is to the effect that it is not necessary for the applicant in replying to these questions to

[1] 10 Scotch Sessions Cases, First Series, 451.

state every trivial ailment, such as would not indicate a vice in the constitution or be so serious as to have some bearing upon his general health, as in the case of Benevolent Society *v.* Winthrop,[1] where the Court say that a representation that the applicant has had no serious illness means that he has never been so seriously sick as to permanently impair his constitution and render the risk unusually hazardous; and in Northwestern Mutual Insurance Company *v.* Heimann,[2] where the policy was conditioned that it should be void if any of the statements or declarations in the application should be found in any material respect untrue. In this case it was held that it was correct to instruct the jury that before a temporary ailment could be called a disease, it must be such as to indicate a vice in the constitution, or be so serious as to have some bearing upon the general health ; that if prior to the application the insured had some sickness, or some symptoms of sickness, which was merely a temporary disorder, which had no bearing upon his general health and did not materially affect the truth of the answers or statements made, the policy would not on that account be avoided.

In Higbie *v.* Guardian Insurance Company of New York[3] the defence was based upon alleged misrepresentations made by the assured in the application to the medical examiner. Upon the trial evidence was given showing that the assured had for several years before the application for the policy been subject to severe headaches and had been in the habit of using laudanum. Among the printed questions to the medical examiner was this, "Are the functions of the brain, the muscular and nervous system, in a healthy state?" This he answered in the affirmative. He testified that he put the question to the applicant in this form, as better adapted to his capacity: "Have you ever had any difficulty with your head or brain?" and that he answered "No." Held that the question evidently pointed to mental unsoundness, or some functional or organic derangement of the head or brain, and was so understood by the examiner and the applicant; that it did not include a temporary or occasional physical disturbance, the result of accidental causes; that there was no evidence that the recurrence of the periodical attacks of headache had an origin or cause indicating any such unsoundness or derangement or permanent dis-

[1] 85 Ill., 537. [2] 93 Ind., 24. [3] 53 N. Y., 603.

ease, or that the fact of their existence was at all material to the risk; that the policy would not be vitiated, although the representation was not strictly true, if the applicant answered the question truthfully as he understood it.

In Chattock *v.* Shaw,[1] one Lieut. Col. Griswold had stated in his application that he had not been afflicted with, nor was he subject to, "gout, vertigo, fits, . . . or to any disease, ailments, or bodily infirmity." In the suit on the policy it was claimed by the insurer that the insured had been afflicted with and was subject to fits. The evidence was that the colonel, whilst quartered at Macclesfield, had met with an accident in which he received a severe injury, and as a result was attacked by a seizure, said to be of an epileptic character, and a few days afterward was affected by a second seizure of the same kind.

Lord Abinger, C. B., in his charge to the jury, said, "The interpretation I put on a clause of this kind is, not that the party never accidentally had a fit, but that he was not at the time of the insurance being made a person habitually or constitutionally afflicted with fits; or a person liable to fits from some peculiarity of temperament, either natural or contracted from some cause or other during life."

Mr. Parsons, in his book on contracts, cites and approves this case, and adds, "We apprehend the materiality of the fact would be taken into consideration; that is, for example, the policy would not be defeated by proof that the life insured, long years before and when a teething child, had a fit."

The question of sunstroke as a disease will be found treated in the second part of this article, where the cases of Sinclair *v.* Maritime Company,[2] and Dozier *v.* Fidelity and Casualty Company,[3] are fully quoted.

Among diseases of the respiratory organs, the question as to the significance of the words "spitting of blood" has received considerable attention from the courts. In the case of Geach *v.* Ingalls,[4] Pollock, C. B., and Alderson and Rolfe, Barons, each rendered an opinion on the expression.

Pollock said: "By the expression 'spitting of blood' is no doubt meant the disorder so called, whether proceeding from

[1] 3 Bigelow's Life and Accident Insurance Reports, 10.
[2] 3 Ellis & Ellis, 478.
[3] 46 Fed. Rep., 446.
[4] 14 M. & W., 95.

the lungs, the stomach, or any other part of the body; still, however, one single act of spitting of blood would be sufficient to put the insurers on inquiry as to the cause of it, and ought therefore to be stated."

Alderson: "By 'spitting of blood' must no doubt be understood a spitting of blood as a symptom of disease tending to shorten life; the mere fact is nothing: a man cannot have a tooth pulled out without spitting blood; but, on the other hand, if a person has an habitual spitting of blood, although he cannot fix the particular part of his frame from whence it proceeds, still, as this shows a weakness of some organ which contains blood, he ought to communicate the fact to the insurance company, for no man can doubt that it would most materially assist them in deciding whether they should execute the policy; and good faith ought to be kept with them; so, if he had spitting of blood only once, but that once was the result of the disease called 'spitting of blood' he ought to state it, and his not doing so would probably avoid the policy."

Rolfe: "I have no doubt that if a man had spitting of blood from his lungs, no matter in how small a quantity, or even had spit blood from an ulcerated sore throat, he would be bound to state it. The fact should be made known to the office, in order that their medical adviser might make inquiry into its cause."

In Dreier *v.* Life Insurance Company [1] the court took a different view, saying: "There is no warranty in this case that the insured never had spitting or raising of blood, but only that he had not the complaint of spitting or raising of blood, equivalent to a warranty that he had not blood-spitting in such form as to be called a disease, disorder, or constitutional vice."

The weight of authority, however, is to the effect that spitting of blood is such a serious symptom that the insurer is entitled to know of any instance of it, and that the concealment of it, whether intentional or not, would avoid the contract.

In Singleton *v.* St. Louis Mutual Company [2] medical testimony was held properly admitted to show that the words "spitting of blood" is a medical term and means spitting of blood from the lungs; that spitting of blood from the mouth, throat, stomach, or nose, is not called by that name by doctors or in medical books.

[1] 24 Fed. Rep., 670.

[2] 66 Mo., 61.

Tonsillitis was held to be a disease in McCallum *v.* Life Insurance Company.[1] So pneumonia was held to be a serious disease in Boos *v.* World Mutual Company.[2]

The term "local disease" was held to include tubercular affection of lungs or brain in Schols *v.* Universal Company.[3]

In Vose *v.* Life Insurance Company[4] the insured stated that he had some general debility of the system. It appeared that he had consumption prior to the date of the examination, and died of it soon after the policy was issued. The court held: "It is immaterial that the assured did not suppose himself in a consumption; the fact was so, and the statement was manifestly contrary to the fact, which was a most material and conclusive fact. The fact of a general debility of the system stated by the assured was not important in the manner which it was stated, as it might arise from a variety of causes not materially affecting the risk, and would not, therefore, by any means, give the insurers the information wanted. The insured was asked directly whether he was at the time affected with any disease or disorder, and what; to which he answered that he could not say he was afflicted with any disease or disorder; but he could have stated the symptoms of consumption, which he had, and which he knew he had, and which he had had for five months previous, and which were most certainly material and important to be known by the insurers. It is believed that omissions or concealments less important than this, and without any intentional fraud, have been held to avoid policies upon life."

The question of what is liver disease has come before the courts, and has been very strictly construed. In Cushman *v.* Life Insurance Company[5] the court held: "By the questions answered in the application the defendant was seeking for information bearing upon the risk which it was to take, the probable duration of the life of the insured. It was not seeking information as to merely temporary disorders or functional disturbances having no bearing upon general health or continuance of life. Colds are generally accompanied with more or less congestion of the lungs, and yet in such a case there is no disease

[1] 55 Hun., 108.
[2] 6 T. & C., 364, affirmed in 64 N. Y., 236.
[3] 42 Cal., 523.
[4] 6 Cush., 42.
[5] 70 N. Y., 76.

of the lungs which an applicant for insurance would be bound to state. So most, if not all, persons will have at times congestion of the liver, causing slight functional derangements and temporary illness; and yet in the contemplation of parties entering into contracts of life insurance and having regard to general health and continuance of life it may safely be said that in such cases there is no disease of the liver."

So also in Life Insurance Company *v.* Trust Company[1] it was held that "Unless he had an affection of the liver that amounted to a disease—that is, of a character so well defined and marked as to materially derange for a time the functions of that organ—the answer that he never had the disease called 'affection of the liver' was a 'fair and true' one; for such an answer involved neither fraud, misrepresentation, evasion, nor concealment, and withheld no information as to his physical condition with which the company ought to have been made acquainted."

In McGrath *v.* Metropolitan Life Insurance Company[2] the action was on three policies of insurance on the life of Matthew McGrath, payable to the plaintiff, his widow. The defence was fraud and breach of warranty because of false statements and answers given in the applications for the insurances, and in the application the representations and answers were declared to be warranties to the effect that they were strictly correct and wholly true. In each application the applicant answered "No" to the question whether he ever had disease of the kidneys or disease of the liver. The court say: "It seems that he had at one time the jaundice—torpid liver, chronic, that is, continuing for a time and to an extent that was observable and for which he was treated; but, as is also testified to, from this ailment he seemed to entirely recover, became a well, robust, rugged man, and attended to his business. The doctor stated that a torpid liver was not necessarily an organic disease, and might arise with any person as a temporary ailment, might however, become an organic disease. . . . Under this state of proof it became a question of fact for the jury on all the evidence whether a breach of warranty was or was not established, whether the illness of the insured amounted to a settled disease, or was a mere temporary ailment, such as ordinary

[1] 112 U. S., 250. [2] 6 N. Y. St. Rep., 376

healthy and well persons are subjected to, followed usually by immediate recovery without constitutional impairment."

The court, after citing Cushman *v.* Insurance Company, above referred to, continues, "Then, taking into consideration the symptoms and nature of the illness, how induced or contracted, its duration, with complete or partial recovery, and indeed, all the many circumstances bearing upon the subject brought out by the proof, it was for the jury to determine whether, prior to the obtaining of the insurance, the insured had upon him more or other than that which should be deemed a mere temporary ailment."

Most of the decisions rendered upon particular diseases have been in cases which have arisen on the warranty contained in the application that the applicant is in sound health or free from disease, and such cases are numerous; and the warranty is almost invariably construed very liberally toward the insured.

The general principle adopted by the courts in such cases, as has been mentioned, is that a statement by the applicant that he is in good health or free from disease is not falsified by a proof of the existence of a mere temporary ailment unless it be such as to indicate a vice in the constitution, or be so serious as to have some bearing upon the general health and the continuance of life, or such as according to common understanding would be called a disease. Northwestern Mutual Insurance Company *v.* Heimann,[1] Galbraith *v.* Arlington Mutual Company.[2]

In Morrison *v.* Life Insurance Company[3] it was said: "It would be most unreasonable to interpret the term 'in sound health' as used in contracts for life insurance to mean that the insured is absolutely free from all bodily infirmities, or from tendencies to disease. If that were its meaning, we apprehend that but few persons of middle age could truthfully say they were in sound health."

In Hutchison *v.* National Loan Society[4] the proposal for life insurance and relative declaration which formed the basis of contract in the policy contained a declaration that the party had no disease or symptoms of disease, and was then in good

[1] 93 Ind., 24.
[2] 12 Bush. (Ky.), 29, 40.
[3] 59 Wis., 162.
[4] 3 Bigelow's Life and Accident Insurance Reports, 444.

health and ordinarily enjoyed good health, and that no material circumstances or information touching health or habits of life with which the insurers ought to be made acquainted was withheld. In this case Lord Fullerton, one of the judges who delivered an opinion, says: "The tenth query in the proposal is, 'Has the party an habitual cough or any disease or symptom of disease?' answer, 'No.' And the declaration of Mrs. Armstrong bears that 'I am now in good health and do ordinarily enjoy good health.' The pursuers hold these expressions to denote simply the good health of the declarant in the ordinary sense of the term; that is, freedom from any apparent sensible disease or symptom of disease: while the defenders maintain that these expressions amount to an absolute warranty, not only that she never felt herself to be affected with any complaint or exhibited any symptom of complaint, but absolutely that whether felt or not no disease in any form existed in her constitution. This is a proposition rather startling, and it is necessary to examine with some attention the grounds on which it rests. It all turns on the meaning which in such a contract shall be attached to the term 'good health.' Does it mean external, sensible health, and the absence of any external, sensible symptom of ailment; or the total absence of any defect or disorder in the constitution, whether felt, rendered sensible or not?

" . . . The evident object of all those questions is to procure for the insurers before entering into the contract all the information on the subject of the health of the insured which he himself possesses.

"Then comes the declaration that 'I am now in good health and that I have not withheld any material circumstance or information touching my past or present state of health or habits of life with which the directors ought to be made acquainted.'

"Let a fair, not to say liberal, construction be applied to the term 'good health' on which the whole plea of the defenders is rested. It occurs in the description of the state of a living individual—which state, in so far as evident to others, or perceptible by himself, can alone form the subject of description—and when so employed, does it denote anything more than the absence of any ostensible or known or felt symptoms of disorder? . . . If the term of 'good health' means the perfect, conscious enjoyment of all one's faculties and functions and the conscious

freedom from any ailment affecting them, or any symptom of ailment, the question may be asked and answered; but if the term is construed as meaning an absolute freedom from all defect or derangement, imperceptible as well as perceptible, the declaration is one which cannot be made and which it would therefore be absurd to ask.

" . . . In my opinion the statement in the declaration here was in its sound construction true if the party making the declaration never had any consciousness of ailment and never had exhibited any symptoms of ailment. According to the ordinary and only intelligible sense of the term in the circumstances in which it was used, she was in 'good health' if she neither was conscious of nor exhibited the slightest symptoms of disease." It should be added that in the above case the declarations referred to were construed not to be warranties.

This principle was carried very far in the case of Watson *v.* Mainwaring.[1] The applicant concealed the fact that he had dyspepsia, and it was shown that this disease caused his death. It was held that "all disorders have more or less tendency to shorten life, even the most trifling; as, for instance, corns may end in mortification, but that is not the meaning of the clause. If dyspepsia were a disorder that tended to shorten life within this exception, the lives of half the members of the profession of law would be uninsurable." The court in this case was evidently looking after the interests of the profession.

Following the idea that a condition of health sufficient to constitute a breach of warranty of sound health must be a serious disease and not a mere temporary ailment, the United States Supreme Court in Life Insurance Company *v.* Francisco,[2] held that the "questions were in substance whether the person whose life was proposed for insurance had had certain diseases, or during the next preceding seven years any disease, and the answers given were that he had not. It was in reference to this that the court instructed the jury that it was for them to determine from the evidence whether the person whose life was insured had had, during the time mentioned in the questions propounded on making the application, any affliction that could be properly called a sickness or disease within the meaning of the term as used, and said: 'For example,

[1] 4 Taunton's Rep., 763. [2] 17 Wall., 672.

a man might have a slight cold in the head, or a slight headache, that in no way seriously affected his health or interfered with his usual avocation, and might be forgotten in a week or month, which might be of so trifling a character as not to constitute a sickness or a disease within the meaning of the term used, and which the party would not be required to mention in answering the questions. But, again, he might have a cold, or a headache, of so serious a character as to be a sickness or disease within the meaning of those terms as used, which it would be his duty to mention, and a failure to mention which would make his answer false.'

"There is no just ground of complaint in this instruction, either considered abstractly or in its application to the evidence in the case. It was in effect saying that substantial truth in the answer was what was required."

In many applications for insurance the applicant is now required to warrant that he is to the "best of his knowledge and belief" in sound physical condition, and under such a form of statement the decisions in the cases above stated would be unobjectionable; but when the policy contains a warranty that the applicant is absolutely sound or free from disease, it would seem that he should take the risk of his statement being true, and such was the decision in Powers *v.* Assn.[1] where it was said, "It is wholly immaterial whether the applicant knew of the existence of the disease, because he agreed absolutely that it did not exist; nor is it any answer to say that the question is a scientific one, and a layman might easily be deceived into a false answer. Scientific or simple, the applicant took the risk of the answer. If he had answered that he had no knowledge that the disease existed, the finding of the jury might affect the result."

So also in Day *v.* Mutual Benefit Company,[2] the policy contained the following provision: "And it is also understood and agreed by the within assured to be the true intent and meaning hereof that if the declaration made by and for the said assured, and bearing date the 16th day of June, 1869, and upon the faith of which this agreement is made, shall be found in any respect untrue, then, and in such cases, the policy shall be null and void."

[1] 5 Vt., 630.
[2] 4 Bigelow's Life and Accident Ins. Reps., 15 (Supreme Court, District of Columbia, April Term, 1873).

The court quotes the charge of the justice before whom the case was tried, as follows: "'And in reference to the defence set up in these special pleadings (and the instructions of the court extend to them all) the court charges you that you must find that they were material and substantial misrepresentations, that the nominal and immaterial misstatement of facts, though known to the applicant at the time of the application for the policy to be untrue, would not avoid the policy. The law holds all parties in a contract to a fair and faithful representation of truth and will permit neither to trifle with truth in dealing with each other; but the law does not allow trifling or immaterial matter to enter into the consideration of the subject. Now, in giving application to this principle, which the court has endeavored to state, you will inquire in this case in the light of the representations of the deceased, whether he either suppressed or falsified the condition of his health in such matter or manner as substantially to affect the application that he was making for an insurance.'

"We think this direction of the court was erroneous in point of law. . . . In the policy under consideration, it is declared to be the true intent and meaning thereof that if declaration upon the faith of which the agreement is made shall be found in any respect untrue the policy is to be null and void; and the provision in the declaration itself is that the answers of said Day should be the basis of the contract upon which said policy issued. These express stipulations would seem to exclude a doubt that the contract comprehended both policy and declaration. If this is a correct view, then it must be held that the parties have determined for themselves what they deem material, and it follows that all statements made by Day about his health . . . or as to his having had a medical attendant for himself or for his family for ten years, are all made material by the contract, and the only question of fact that can properly be determined by the jury is whether the statements contained in the proposal on these matters are true or false."

In Volker *v.* Metropolitan Life Insurance Company[1] it was held that there can be no recovery in an action on a life insurance policy conditioned that no application is assumed by the company, unless at the date of its issuance the insured is "in

[1] 21 N. Y. S., 456.

sound health" when the evidence shows that for three years before said date the insured was afflicted with chronic asthma to such an extent that he was unable to pursue his usual calling, and that this ailment, accompanied by subsequent and resultant complications, led to his death.

A peculiar decision is that in the case of Jacklin *v.* National Life Association,[1] in which it was held that in an action on a life insurance policy it will not be held as a matter of law that the insanity of the insured, when the application for insurance was made, was an unsound condition of health.

It has been held, and properly so, that it is the duty of the assured to communicate to the company any material change in health in the interval between the making of the application and the completion of the contract by the payment of premium. Such was the ruling in Whitney *v.* Piedmont Insurance Company,[2] where the facts were as follows: One Hahn on the 31st of March, 1892, made his written application for an insurance on his life for two thousand dollars in the defendant company. The application was forwarded to the company by its agent, Courts, who received a policy dated April 8th, 1872. Courts wrote to Hahn, informing him that the policy had been received and directing him to send the premium to him (Courts) at Ruffin, N. C. Hahn received the letter April 20th. Early in May Hahn was taken sick; he was quite sick on the 11th of May, and on that day he sent to Courts by express a package containing the amount of the premium. On May 13th Hahn died. The policy itself reached the late residence of Hahn on the 17th of June. The premium was forwarded to and received by the company. The court say, "The main questions are:

"When was the contract of insurance consummated? Was it upon the acceptance and approval of the application by the company, or upon the payment of the premium on the 11th of May?

"Supposing it was consummated only on the payment of the premium, was the representation of health contained in the application a continuing one up to the consummation of the policy? Because, in this last case, it would be the duty of the assured to disclose to the company any material alteration in his health in the interval, and as this was not done, and the repre-

[1] 24 N. Y. S., 746. [2] 4 Bigelow's Life and Accident Ins. Reps., 361.

sentation of his health contained in the application, although true at its date, was not true on the 11th of May, if the representation must be considered as made on that day, it would be false to the knowledge of the plaintiff, and he would not be entitled to recover."

The court, after deciding that the contract was consummated on the day the premium was deposited in the express office, continues, quoting Edwards *v.* Footner:[1]

"No rule seems to be better settled than that upon a contract of insurance it is the duty of the assured at or before the making of a contract to communicate all the facts within his knowledge which may affect the risk.

"This duty cannot be the less obligatory because the assured has shortly before represented and warranted a fact to be true which then was true, but has since ceased to be so. In such case the insurer naturally and rightfully infers that the thing insured continues in the same condition as far as the assured knows.

"The plaintiff is not entitled to recover on the policy. He is entitled to recover the premium paid on the ground that as the risk never accrued there was a total failure of consideration."

(5) **Family History—Heredity.**—Insurance companies always require information as to facts relating to the family and relatives of the applicant; what diseases they died from; their condition of health, if living; the age of parents, etc. These facts are all material in determining the risk, and must be truly stated. The same rules of law apply to statements of this kind as to statements of personal record—that is, (1) that if statements are warranted to be true, the applicant must abide by the effect of his answer, and will not be excused by ignorance; but if the statements are representations only, a more liberal rule would be followed, according to the circumstances of the case. These statements apply to relationship as well as to family statistics. It was held in the case of the Supreme Council, A. L. H. *v.* Green[2] that where in an application designating a beneficiary a person was falsely represented to be a niece, the contract was void; and to the same effect in Mace *v.* Provident Life Insurance Association,[3] where one was falsely

[1] 1 Camp., 530, and Traill *v.* Baring, 4 De G. J. and S., 318.

[2] 71 Md., 263.

[3] 101 N. C., 122.

described as a cousin; but it seems that the weight of authority is that such false designation avoids the contract only as to the person wrongfully designated as beneficiary, and inures to the benefit of the next of kin, as in the case of no designation. In Spitz *v.* Mutual Benefit Association[1] it was left to the jury to say whether a failure to mention half-brothers among relatives was a concealment of a material fact. In Baker *v.* Home Life Insurance Company[2] one of the questions was, "Have the parents, uncles, aunts, brothers, or sisters of the party been afflicted with insanity, consumption, or with any pulmonary, scrofulous, or other constitutional disease?" The question was answered "No." It was shown that the applicant's brother had been afflicted and died with consumption. The court say: "The answer to the twentieth question" (the question stated) "being thus shown to be untrue by the express terms of the agreement accompanying the application and of the policy itself, the company was not liable for the amount insured, or any part thereof. It is true the twentieth question is very far-reaching, and the answer to it being an absolute and unqualified negative was a very incautious and dangerous assertion, but it is not for the court to alter the plain contract of the parties."

A similar decision was made in the case of Insurance Company *v.* Gray,[3] where it was held: "Thee vidence that both parents died of pulmonary consumption, of which they each suffered for several years before their respective deaths, is all one way, . . . and it is not reasonable to assume that the assured was even ignorant of this fact, for he seems to have been living with or near his parents during the time they were thus afflicted. There is no offer to prove that either of them died of a fever or were even sick of a fever. The disease of which they died is generally believed to be hereditary, and it is impossible to escape the conviction that the truth here was withheld because its communication would either have defeated the application for the policy, or materially increased the premium for the risk."

The circumstances in the case of Insurance Company *v.* Gridley,[4] were different, and led to a different ruling. In this case the question was, "Have the person's parents, uncles,

[1] 25 N. Y. Supp., 469.
[2] 4 Bigelow's Life and Accident Ins. Reps., 355.
[3] 91 Ill., 159.
[4] 100 U. S., 614.

aunts, brothers, or sisters been afflicted with consumption, scrofula, insanity, . . . or any other hereditary disease?" Answer, "No hereditary taint of any kind in family on either side of house to my knowledge."

The evidence was that an uncle of the insured was insane for more than a year, and died in an asylum many years before the application for insurance. The court held: "To make out the defence sought to be established by the insurers three things were therefore necessary to be shown: that the alleged insanity of the uncle had existed; that it was hereditary; and that both of these things were known to the applicant when he answered the question. The first point was clearly proved. In relation to the second and third there was no proof whatever. What was proved without what was not proved was of no account. The defence therefore, wholly failed." [1]

There is one other point to be treated of in this branch of our subject, which has frequently engaged the attention of courts, and that is the subject of

(6) **Medical Attendance.**—The insurer does not rely entirely upon the statements made by the applicant for insurance, but seeks information from such other source as it can find. Consequently the applicant is required to give the name and address of his physician, and the name and address of each physician consulted by him during certain years past; the object being to enable the company to learn from the medical attendants of the applicant further facts relating to his physical condition.

The question in the application is sometimes framed, "Give the name of your family physician." This raised a question in the case of Price *v.* Life Insurance Company [2] as to what is meant by "family physician." In this case the question was, "Name and residence of family physician of the party, or of one whom the party has usually employed or consulted." The answer was, "Have none." The court held:

"The phrase 'family physician' is in common use, and has not, so far as we are aware, any technical signification. As used in this instance, and for the purpose of the testimony appearing

[1] On this point, see also Sinclair *v.* Life Insurance Company, 9 Ins. L. J., 523; and Peasley *v.* Life Ins. Co., 15 Hun., 227.

[2] 17 Minn., 473.

in this case, the chief justice and myself are of the opinion that it may be sufficiently defined as signifying the physician who usually attends and is consulted by the members of a family in the capacity of a physician. We employ the word 'usually' both because we do not deem it necessary to constitute a person a family physician (as the phrase is used in this instance) that he should invariably attend and be consulted by the members of a family in the capacity of a physician, and because we do not deem it necessary that he should attend and be consulted as such physician by each and all members of a family. . . . We think that a person who usually attended and was consulted by the wife and children of Richard Price, as a physician, would be the family physician of Richard Price in the meaning of the above twenty-fifth interrogatory, although he did not usually attend on, and was not usually consulted as a physician by, Richard Price himself."

As to consultation with a physician during past years, the case of Cobb *v.* Benefit Association[1] is in point. The applicant answered "No" to the question, "Have you personally consulted a physician, been prescribed for, or professionally treated within the past ten years?"

The court, reviewing the charge below, say:

"The presiding judge instructed them" (the jury) "that if the insured, being, as he supposed, in need of a physician, went to one for the purpose of consulting him as to what was the matter with him, and had an interview, answering such inquiries as the physician deemed pertinent, receiving aid, advice, or assistance from him, that the insured consulted a physician within the meaning of the interrogatory; and further, that if they found that he went to a physician for the purpose of procuring aid or assistance from the physician as such, and the physician prescribed a remedy or treated him professionally, either by giving him a prescription or by administering hypodermic injections of morphine (of which there was some evidence), then he was professionally treated within the meaning of the interrogatory, or professionally prescribed for. This ruling seems to us correct. . . . Even if the insured had only visited a physician from time to time for temporary disturbances proceeding from accidental causes, the defendant had a

[1] 153 Mass., 176.

right to know this in order that it might make such further investigation as it deemed necessary."

The principle was carried still further in the case of Life Insurance Company *v.* McTague,[1] where the insured, who was applying to have a lapsed policy restored, had stated that he had not consulted or been prescribed for by a physician since the policy was issued. He had consulted a physician, who had prescribed for a cold. The court held the statement a warranty and said, "Indeed, so material does such a representation seem to be to the contract proposed by the application that in my judgment if made falsely and knowingly it would avoid the contract."

There are cases, however, where the courts make an opportunity for escaping from this kind of ruling, as in Cushman *v.* Life Insurance Company,[2] where the insured stated Dr. Purdy as his "usual medical attendant," and on the trial Dr. Ormsby testified that he had been his attending physician for the preceding five years (the application having been made within said five years). It was shown that Dr. Ormsby and Dr. Greenleaf had both attended the insured, but that Dr. Purdy was usually consulted by him and had been his father's family physician, and the court held that Dr. Purdy "could more properly be called the 'usual medical attendant.'

It is rather difficult to see, however, upon what principle the court rendered the following decision, although it endeavors to explain it. In the case of Life Insurance Company *v.* Schultz[3] the question was, "Has the party employed or consulted individually any physician? Please answer this Yes or No. When Yes, please give name or names and residence." The insured answered "No." The evidence showed that the insured, about a year prior to his application for insurance, was confined to his bed for about a week with an abscess, and was attended several times by a physician. The jury found for the plaintiff, and on appeal the court held:

"The question not unnaturally might be understood as an inquiry whether the party had employed or consulted a physician with reference to having his life insured. The auxiliary 'have' as here used serves to denote a tense, grammatically, which expresses an action past, and often that which is just

[1] 49 N. J. L., 587. [2] 70 N. Y., 72. [3] 73 Ill., 586.

past and completed. To allow the interrogatory as put to have reference to any accomplished event wholly disconnected with the application, and which may have taken place in any previous period of time then fully completed, would be to say that it covered the whole period of the applicant's life. To give any such effect to the interrogatory would be to make it extremely misleading to the applicant. We are of the opinion the question was not sufficiently definite and specific as regards time to warrant the finding of a breach of warranty upon this point from the fact of the insured having employed a physician six months or a year and a half before in the way as testified."

There are many other cases reported bearing upon all the questions discussed above, but the cases we have selected will be found to embody all of the principles underlying the decisions in such cases.

The principles applying to contracts in general govern insurance contracts, with the exception that where an insurance contract is in any way ambiguous it is construed against the insurer, on the principle that as the contract is always drawn by the insurance company it must be held to the strict meaning of the words employed, and the courts will not go into the investigation as to what was the contract understood between the parties.

This has given rise to a state of affairs having very much the appearance of a continuous conflict between courts and the insurance companies, but the result is that policies are now much more carefully drawn than in the early days of insurance.

ACCIDENT INSURANCE.

Policies of accident insurance agree to indemnify the insured against disability or death caused by external, accidental, and violent means, and to enable the insured to recover under an accident policy the existence of each and all of these elements must be shown. It is not sufficient that the injury or death occurred through one or two of these causes.

Where an injury has been sustained, or death has occurred, through apparently external, accidental and violent means, there will frequently be a question as to whether some one or more of these elements were absent in the cause of injury or death.

When an accident insurance company defends a suit

upon a policy on the ground that the injury sustained, or the death, occurred through means other than that of accident, it is usually upon one of three causes: (1) that the injury occurred through the intentional act of a third person, (2) or through the intentional or reckless act of the person injured, or (3) wholly or in part from disease.

It is only in the question raised by this third cause that the province of medical experts comes into play.

The courts of England and America have varied considerably in their rulings as to what is a disease and what an accident, and distinctions have been drawn between cases where the accident has been the proximate cause of the disease and where the disease has caused the accident. Where the accident causes or renders the insured susceptible to the disease from which death ensues, the ruling has generally been in favor of the insured, while in cases of disease causing the happening of the casualty the insurer has been discharged from liability under the policy. But the decisions are not uniform on this subject and do not establish a logical rule of construction.

In discussing the medico-legal aspect of accident insurance, then, there are two points to consider:

First, The distinction between disease and an external accidental and violent injury.

Second, The effect upon an accident of coexisting or consequent disease, which wholly or in part causes the disability or death.

An important case under the first head is the case of Bacon *v.* The United States Mutual Accident Association.[1] In this case the insured died of a malignant pustule caused by contact with a particular kind of bacterium known as "bacillus anthracis," the external, accidental violence being alleged to be the germ moving through the air and striking the face of the insured. The expert witness testified that the pustule is caused "by the infliction upon the body of a certain kind of animal substance, contact with diseased or putrid animal matter; a papula, something like a flea bite, which rapidly becomes a vesicle, a blister-like affair, and then a pustule; this is accompanied by a great deal of swelling in the parts immediately around it and a great deal of pain in the individual;

[1] 123 N. Y., 304.

the glands in the vicinity become infiltrated with blood and pus and become dark red, or even black in color; the neighboring glands become involved; then comes almost immediately after, or together with these signs, a great prostration, and the patient dies in a short time, the extreme limits being from twenty-four hours to sixteen days; he dies of exhaustion."

As to the cause of the pustule, witness stated that the virus comes from the hide or hair or wool of animals suffering from this disease. It is commonly known as malignant pustule or charbon or anthrax; they are all synonymous terms. It has one particular germ from which it originates, as small-pox has another, and hydrophobia another, and the cause of the difficulty in each case is some form of bacteria transmissible to mankind. The two medical experts in this case refused to designate malignant pustule as a disease. One defined is as "a pathological condition and succumbing of the body to the infliction of this particular poison." The other considered it a "pathological condition following this particular inroad of this particular kind of bacilli."

The court say: "The insurance in this case was against bodily injuries effected through external, violent, and accidental means. 'It was not to extend to any death or disability which may have been caused wholly or in part by bodily infirmities or disease existing prior or subsequent to the date' of the policy, 'nor to any case except where the injury is the proximate or sole cause of the disability or death.' There cannot be the slightest doubt that malignant pustle is regarded generally by those who have but the usual acquaintance with such matters as a disease. The difference between the cause of this condition and the causes of typhoid fever, tuberculosis, small-pox, scarlet fever, and such like diseases, is that this particular condition is caused by different bacilli than the others, and they come in contact with the skin, or enter into its pores, while in the other cases they are generally breathed in.

"It seems to me clear that the meaning of the words used in the policy cover just such a case, and that the parties never intended that a cause of death, which, to all outward appearances, and to the world in general, was a disease, should be converted into a 'pathological condition' of the body caused by an accident."

So, also, sunstroke has been decided in England and the United States to be a disease and not an accident. The English case is that of Sinclair *v.* Maritime Passengers Assurance Company.[1] In this case the insured, master of a vessel, was the holder of a policy insuring him against accident "which should happen to him upon any ocean, sea, river, or lake." He was stricken by a sunstroke while voyaging on a river in India. The court held the company not liable upon the policy. Cockburn, C. J., delivering the opinion, said, "It is difficult to define the term 'accident' as used in a policy of this nature so as to draw with perfect accuracy the boundary line between injury or death from accident and injury or death from natural causes, such as shall be of universal application. At the same time we think we may safely assume that in the term 'accident' as so used, some violence, casualty, or *vis major*, is necessarily involved. We cannot think disease produced by the action of a known natural cause can be considered as accidental. . . . It is true that in one sense disease or death through the direct effect of a non-natural cause may be said to be accidental inasmuch as it is uncertain beforehand whether the effect will ensue in any particular case. Exposed to the same malaria or infection, one man escapes, another succumbs. Yet diseases thus arising have always been considered not as accidental, but as proceeding from natural causes. In the present instance the disease called sunstroke, although the name would at first imply something of external violence, is, so far as we are informed, an involuntary disease of the brain brought on by exposure to the too intense heat of the sun's rays. We think, for the reasons we have given, that his death must be considered as having arisen from a natural cause and not from accident within the meaning of this policy."

The court in Dozier *v.* Fidelity and Casualty Company[2] follow the case above cited and hold that sunstroke is a disease and not an accident. The insurance was against bodily injuries sustained through external, violent, and accidental means, and did not cover disease or bodily infirmity. The insured, a supervising architect, came to his death "by sunstroke or heat prostration." The court, Philips, J., say, "Sunstroke is discussed in works on pathology under the head of diseases of the

[1] 3 Ellis and Ellis, 478.

[2] 46 Federal Reporter, 446.

brain. Niemeyer, in his work on practical medicine,[1] treats it under the head of 'Disease of the Brain.' He asserts that the investigations and experiments of so renowned a specialist as Obernier have entirely exploded the once common notion that sunstroke or *insolatio* depends on hyperæmia of the brain induced by the action of the sun's rays on the head. 'It is now known that in this disease there is a serious derangement of the heat-producing function, and a great rise in the bodily temperature, which in extreme cases may reach 109 or 110° Fahr.' And he concludes that . . . 'the disorder has a definite material basis.'"

Asphyxiation has also been the subject of legal construction. In United States Mutual Accident Association *v.* Newman[2] the insured was found dead in his bed, the death claimed to have been caused by asphyxiation or suffocation from the inhalation of coal gas. The defence was that death from coal gas was caused by poisonous elements admitted to be present therein, and therefore came within one of the exceptions in the policy excluding death caused by taking poison or contact with poisonous substances. The court held: "That it was for the jury to determine upon all the evidence in this cause, whether the monoxide of carbon, sometimes known as carbonic oxide, is poisonous or not within the intent and meaning of the words 'poison or poisonous substances' as used by way of exceptions and proviso in the policy in suit; and even if they should believe that it is poisonous within such intent and meaning, and if they believe that the death was not caused by this carbonic oxide, but with the elements of coal gas with which it was combined, and that such other elements were not poisonous but acted by way of asphyxiation or suffocation, then this would be death by external, violent, and accidental means within the intent and meaning of the policy." (See *Poisons, Definition of*, Vol. IV.)

So also asphyxiation caused by illuminating gas has been held to be death by external, accidental, and violent means. Paul *v.* Travelers Insurance Company.[3] This case was a peculiar one in that the policy excepted death caused by "inhaling" gas, the court ruling that the word "inhaling" meant a voluntary breathing in of the gas. In Richardson *v.* Trav-

[1] Vol. 2, pp. 181-182. [2] 84 Va., 52. [3] 112 N. Y., 472.

elers Insurance Company[1] the court expressed itself as not satisfied with the reasoning by which the court reached its conclusion in Paul *v.* Travelers Insurance Company, and held that the company was not liable. Asphyxiation from drowning is construed as an accident (Knickerbocker Casualty Insurance Company *v.* Jordan).[2]

Insanity is generally recognized as a disease of the brain, but under a policy a provision that such "insurance shall not extend to death or disability which may have been caused wholly or in part by bodily infirmities or disease, or by suicide or self-inflicted injuries," there are many cases deciding that sucide while insane is an accident and is not covered by the exception. In Accident Insurance Company *v.* Crandal,[3] Gray, J., said, "The decisions upon the effect of a policy of life insurance which provides that it shall be void if the insured shall die by suicide, or shall die by his own hand, go far toward determining this question. This court, on full consideration of the conflicting authorities upon that subject, has repeatedly and uniformly held that such a provision not containing the words 'sane or insane' does not include a self-killing by an insane person, whether his unsoundness of mind is such as to prevent him from understanding the physical nature and consequences of his act or only such as to prevent him, while foreseeing or premeditating its physical consequences, from understanding its moral nature and aspect."

In Manhattan Life Insurance Company *v.* Broughton[4] the court say: "Self-destruction by a fellow-being bereft of reason can with no more propriety be ascribed to the act of his own hand than to the deadly instrument that may have been used by him for the purpose, and was no more his act in the sense of the law than if he had been impelled by irresistible physical power."

In a like case Vice-Chancellor Wood observed that the deceased was subject to that which is really just as much an accident as if he had fallen from the top of a house.

Where, however, the policy excepts suicide, "sane or insane," self-destruction while insane was held to come within the exception (Billings *v.* Accident Insurance Company of North America).[5]

[1] 46 Fed. Rep., 843.
[2] 11 Ins. Law Journal, 475.
[3] 120 U. S., 527.
[4] 109 U. S., 121.
[5] 64 Vt., 78.

Passing to the second division of our subject we will now consider those cases wherein coexisting or consequent disease has contributed to the accident or to the consequences of the accident. These cases arise through two different sets of circumstances: (1) where disease is the cause of the accident, and (2) where the accident causes the disease or renders the system peculiarly susceptible to disease. The rule, as far as a general rule can be deduced from contradictory decisions, seems to be that where disease or bodily infirmity is the cause of the injury (where the policy excepts injuries or death resulting from or attributable to disease) the insurer is not liable; but where the disease is the result of the injury then the insurer is liable.

In Sharpe *v.* Commercial Travelers Mutual Accident Association[1] the assured while pursuing his business as a travelling salesman sustained a heavy fall, producing an injury. The evidence of experts who conducted and witnessed the post-mortem examination was that the brain and heart had been diseased for more than a year next before the death; that at the time of the autopsy a tumor was found near the base of the brain, and fatty degeneration of the brain had so far advanced that a great portion of the brain substance had nearly, if not entirely, been converted into fat. The court (Supreme Court of Indiana, April, 1894) held that an instruction by the trial court to the jury to return a verdict for the defendant was not error.

A somewhat similar case is that of Hall *v.* American Masonic Accident Association.[2] Two medical witnesses testified that the post-mortem examination showed a contusion of the cerebellum which culminated in an effusion of blood on the brain producing apoplexy and death, and that in their opinion the contusion was caused by the fall. A third medical witness testified to the existence of degeneration of the cerebrum and to a diseased condition of certain arteries, which in his opinion were of long standing and caused death independently of the fall. A fourth medical expert agreed with this last opinion if the diagnosis was correct. On this conflict of testimony the jury found for the plaintiff.

In Lawrence *v.* Accident Insurance Company[3] the in-

[1] 37 Northeastern Reporter, 353.
[2] 57 N. W., 366; 86 Wis., 518.
[3] L. R. 7, Q. B. Div., 216.

sured while standing at a railway station was seized with a fit and fell across the track and was killed by a train passing over him. In this case the policy excepted death arising from fits . . . . or any disease whatsoever arising before or at the time or following such accidental injury, whether consequent upon such accidental injury or not, and whether causing such death directly or jointly with such accidental injury." The court held the company liable on the ground that the death was caused by being run over by the engine and not by a fit, and says, "It seems to me that the well-known maxim of Lord Bacon . . . is directly applicable to this case. Lord Bacon's language runs thus: 'It were infinite for the law to consider the cause of causes and their impulsions one of another; therefore it contenteth itself with the immediate cause.' Therefore I say according to the true principle of law, we must look at only the immediate and proximate cause of death, and it seems to me to be impracticable to go back to cause upon cause, etc., etc."

We quote this language to call attention to another case (Freeman *v.* Mercantile Mutual Accident Association) cited later in this chapter, where this rule, *causa proxima non remota spectatur*, was applied in a different manner.

In Winspear *v.* Accident Company,[1] insured while in a fit fell into a stream and was drowned. The court held this to be external, violent, and accidental death.

An injury which in itself is not sufficient to cause death or disability frequently causes disease or renders the system peculiarly susceptible to disease.

In the case of Freeman *v.* Mercantile Mutual Accident Association,[2] referred to in the third preceding paragraph, the insured died of peritonitis occasioned by a fall. The court ruled, "Where different forces and conditions concur in producing a result, it is often difficult to determine which is properly to be considered the cause, and in dealing with such cases the maxim *causa proxima non remota spectatur* is applied. But this does not mean that the cause or condition which is nearest in time or space to the result is necessarily to be deemed the proximate cause. It means that the law will not go further back in the line of causation than to find the active, efficient,

[1] L. R. 6, Q. B. Div., 42. [2] 156 Mass., 351.

procuring cause of which the event under consideration is a natural and probable consequence in view of the existing circumstances and conditions. An injury which might naturally produce death in a person of a certain temperament or state of health is the cause of his death if he dies by reason of it, even if he would not have died if his temperament or previous health had been different; and this is so as well when death comes through the medium of a disease directly induced by the injury, as when the injury immediately interrupts the vital processes."

In United States Mutual Accident Association *v.* Barry[1] the court clearly expresses the doctrine applicable to disease following upon an injury, as follows: "An efficient, adequate cause being found, it must be deemed the true cause, unless some other cause not incidental to it, but independent of it, is shown to have intervened between it and the results. If, for example, the deceased sustained injury to an internal organ, and that necessarily produced inflammation, and that produced a disordered condition of the injured parts whereby other organs of the body could not perform their natural and usual functions, and in consequence the injured person died, the death could be properly attributed to the original injury. In other words, if these results followed the injury as its necessary consequence and would not have taken place had it not been for the injury, then I think the injury could be said to be the proximate or sole cause of death; but if an independent disease or disorder supervened upon the injury, if there was an injury, I mean a disease or derangement of the parts not necessarily produced by the injury, and if the alleged injury merely brought into activity a then existing but dormant disorder or disease, and the death of the dec ased resulted wholly or in part from such disease, then it could not be said that the injury was the sole or proximate cause of the death. But if the deceased received an internal injury, which in direct course produced *duodenitis*, and thereby caused his death, the injury was the proximate cause of death."

An English case, Isitt *v.* Railway Passenger Assurance Company,[2] decided that pneumonia contracted by the insured while in a weakened state resulting from an accident was a

[1] 131 U. S., 100-111. [2] L. R. 22, Q. B. Div., 504.

part of and a natural result of the accident. In this case the court held the company liable, and construing the words in the policy "if the assured shall sustain any injury caused by accident . . . and shall die from the effects of such injury," Huddleston, B., said, "These words appear to me to mean that the injury must be immediately caused by the accident, but that the death need not be immediately caused by the injury. Now, I think, that the facts stated by the umpire do show in this case, that the injury was not the proximate cause of the death of the insured, yet his death did ensue from the natural consequences of the injury. These facts appear to me to constitute a chain of circumstances leading naturally from the injury to the death."

On the other hand, erysipelas resulting from and caused by a wound was held in Smith *v.* Accident Insurance Company,[1] to come under an exception in the policy which read: "but it does not insure against death or disability arising from rheumatism, gout, hernia, erysipelas, or any other disease arising within the system of the insured before, or at the time, or following such accidental injury." In this case the company was held to be protected by the condition and was not liable.

In Fitton *v.* Accidental Death Company,[2] under the same exception as in the last case cited, it was held that "death from hernia caused solely and directly by external violence followed by a surgical operation performed for the purpose of relieving the patient is not within the exception."

So, also, in McKechnie's Trustees *v.* Scottish Accident Insurance Company,[3] it was proven that the insured had for years suffered from kidney disease, that he was free from active symptoms of that disease when he met with the accident, and that the disease had again appeared five weeks after the accident. The court, on appeal, found that death by accidental means had not been proved.

Southard *v.* Railway Passengers Assurance Company[4] was a case in which the insured sued for disability under an accident policy. He had jumped from a car at a station and ran a considerable distance, which action on his part was not necessary to his safety, but was voluntarily undertaken to effect

[1] L. R. 5 Exch., 302.
[2] 17 C. B. N. S., 122.
[3] 17 Sess. Cas. (Sc.), 6.
[4] 34 Conn., 574.

an important object which required haste. He discovered a few hours later that he was ruptured. Judge Shipman said, "The degree of violence or force is not material; and had the insured in this case in jumping from the car lost his balance and fallen, or struck upon some unseen object and wounded himself, or in running had stumbled or slipped on the ice, his injury might be attributed to accidental as well as violent means. But as I have already stated, the injury which he received was in no sense the result of accident. He jumped from the car with his eyes open, for his own convenience and not from any perilous necessity. He encountered no obstacle in doing so. He alighted erect on the ground, just as he intended to do. So in running: he ran from no peril or necessity, but for his own convenience, voluntarily, and, from all it appears, without stumbling, slipping, or falling. No accidents of any kind interfered with his movements, or for an instant relaxed his self-control. All that he claims is that some hours after it was discovered that a muscle in the walls of the abdomen had given way under the strains to which he had voluntarily put it under circumstances free from all peril or necessity. Assuming that this rupture was caused either by his jumping or running, or both, does not help the matter, unless we call running and jumping accidents."

Cases frequently arise under an exception in most policies which provides that the insurance "shall not extend to or cover accidental injuries or death resulting from, or caused directly or indirectly, wholly or in part, by surgical operations or medical treatment." Bayless *v.* Travelers Insurance Company,[1] is a case in which a physician prescribed opium in a specified quantity. The patient (the insured) inadvertently took more than was prescribed, and death resulted. The court held that the case was within the proviso quoted, and also that it was not one of bodily injury effected through external, violent, and accidental means occasioning death.

A surgical operation rendered necessary by the accidental injury is held to be without the proviso, and death or disability thereby resulting is covered by the policy (Fitton *v.* Accidental Death Company, *supra*).

The aid of medical experts frequently becomes of great im-

[1] 14 Blatch., 143.

portance in the investigation of cases of supposed drowning. The insured is found dead in the water, or with his face in a pool or spring, and a claim is made upon the policy for accidental drowning. An autopsy in such cases has usually been conclusive and satisfactory as to the cause of death, and but very few cases under such conditions have been submitted to the courts for decision.

This article would be incomplete without stating briefly some of the means employed in ascertaining the cause of death in cases of supposed drowning. The evidences are both external and internal, the external appearances varying so much in different cases that no definite reliance can be placed upon them, the internal appearances being usually conclusive. The general position of a drowned body may constitute important evidence, as if, for instance, a body is found tightly clutching a rope or piece of timber the conclusion that death resulted from drowning is greatly strengthened. Goose skin, or *cutis anserina*, is strongly suggestive, if present, of a body having been submerged either during life or soon after death. But as it may appear through submersion in cold water immediately after death, it is not conclusive as to drowning being the cause of death; sand, gravel, mud, etc., are often found under the finger nails, and fragments of weeds clutched in the hands. If, however, the body remains sufficiently long in the water, sand, etc., might find its way into the ears, mouth, nose, and even under the nails, notwithstanding that the immersion took place after death. The presence of weeds in the hands could scarcely be explained by any process of mere deposition. The body is generally rigid.

An autopsy, however, will usually disclose the real cause of death. If the brain or heart appears to be diseased, and no water is found in the lungs, it is clear that the deceased died before falling into the water. It would seem that the ingress of water occurs when the drowning person attempts to draw in air; hence its presence in the pulmonary vesicles is strong evidence that submersion occurred during life and that asphyxia was the cause of death.

Conclusions are also deduced from the time in which the body rises to the surface of the water. A drowned body in a temperate climate floats after from five to eight days, but in

tropical climates the time varies and is much shorter than in a temperate climate, on account of the rapidity with which decomposition sets in. If a body be thrown into the water after death it is not improbable, especially if it be hot weather, that it may float almost immediately, sufficient gas being generated with such rapidity after death as to prevent its sinking.

The internal appearances of water in the lungs and stomach, frothy mucus in the air passages, congestion of the larynx and trachea, and fluidity of blood, together with the ordinary appearances of death by asphyxia, may be regarded as complete evidence of death by drowning. On the other hand, traces of poison, or collapsed condition of lungs, and the absence of the signs above mentioned, would lead to the conclusion that death occurred before submersion, and if, together with these signs, an autopsy reveals abnormal and diseased conditions, such as might of themselves have caused death, the evidence of death before submersion is conclusive. (See *Death from Submersion*, Vol. I., p. 795.)

Thus it will be seen that, although as a rule medical examinations are not made or required by an accident insurance company upon an application for a policy, the services of the physician or medical expert are often of great importance to an accident company in determining its liability.

An accident policy is a contract simply to insure for a small annual premium or assessment against external, violent, and accidental injuries, and it would be impossible for a company doing this kind of business to recognize claims made for deaths occasioned in any other manner. The premiums are fixed in accordance with statistics of acidental injuries and death, and it therefore becomes of importance to limit the liability of the company strictly to such cases. The closeness of the lines drawn between accident and disease therefore makes the services of medical experts of great value to such a company.

MEDICAL ASPECTS

OF

INSANITY

IN ITS

RELATIONS TO MEDICAL JURISPRUDENCE.

BY

EDWARD D. FISHER, M.D.,

Professor of Mental and Nervous Diseases, University of the City of New York, Medical Department; Consulting Physician to the New York City Insane Asylum; Neurologist to Hospital for Incurables, B. I.; Visiting Physician to Hospital for Nervous Diseases; Assistant Visiting Physician to Bellevue Hospital; President of the New York Neurological Society, etc., etc.

INSANITY IN ITS RELATIONS TO MEDICAL JURISPRUDENCE.

INTRODUCTION.

Difficulties of the Subject.

An introduction to a subject of this nature is at once difficult and yet important. It is but natural that difficulties should surround it, as the action of the mind in its normal condition is as yet but partly understood. The position of the public to this subject has, however, materially changed from that which it occupied even a quarter of a century ago. The idea of disease of the brain as associated with mental derangement has done much to remove the horror and mystery associated with mental disease. In the early centuries physicians had associated insanity with disease of the brain, and all through the literature of this period we find descriptions of cases of insanity; but in the Middle Ages superstition and ignorance again held sway, and the intelligent and more or less scientific opinions of the past were lost sight of. Under the direction of the priest the insane were regarded as possessed by spirits or under the displeasure of God. The consideration that morbid changes in the organ of the mind, the brain, as in other organs of the body, must necessarily interfere with its functional activity, provides a material basis for the consideration of the subject, which alike to the professional and lay mind has had the effect of removing the stigma from those who are so unfortunately affected. This conception also suggests the idea that, as in other diseases, we may have acute and chronic, curable and incurable forms, so in mental disease, like conditions may exist, opening up in this way a solution of many questions of the relation of the insane to their surroundings.

The study of psychology from a physiological standpoint has done much to bring about this improved condition. It is

not possible at present, and probably never will be, to establish a material basis for thought, nor in my opinion would much be gained thereby; but it is of great importance to have arrived at a definite conclusion as to the method of study of thought or mental action. Proceeding from this we can see that to understand insanity we must hold some conception of sanity. No definition can be made to apply to all civilizations. The normal mind expresses itself through the feelings, thought, and volition, in accordance with the accepted customs and rulings of its surroundings, and departure from this recognized order of action constitutes just so far a departure from the normal. *The legal aspect* of the question only arises where the welfare of the *individual or community* is affected. One can well understand that acts by savages, cruel and inhuman though they may be, cannot be ascribed to mental disease, though they would be classified as insane acts in a civilized nation. The great advance of modern times, then, is the consideration of insanity or mental derangement as *a disease of the brain.* The term "*partial insanity*" is a poor one and open to criticism, for, as has been truly said, the person must be either sane or insane; and yet as all the other organs of the body may be more or less completely disorganized and still functionate, although imperfectly, so the mind may be able to act although imperfectly. The principle here laid down is of great importance, and if applied would do away with much of the contradiction of expert testimony; for, after all, it is not the question *of insanity that is most often in dispute*, but the question of responsibility for the act committed, which must depend on the form and degree of mental impairment. The absurd travesty of justice and common sense is seen too often in our courts, by which persons are declared insane and irresponsible at the time of the act, although sane at the time of and following the trial. Such conditions lead juries, from fear of allowing the dangerous if not insane man his liberty, to discard the plea of insanity. The commission of certain acts, which are held to be those of an irresponsible person, usually also mark that person as one who should remain in the custody of the State. The fact that he has at one time been capable of irresponsible action of a serious character makes it possible, if not probable, that he will again be subject to a like impulse. We should *estimate his*

condition from his past history as well as from his present apparent state.

Cullen[1] discusses the subject of *partial responsibility* or *partial insanity* very fully. He says in substance as follows:

Considering the profound and complex modifications which the moral organism of the individual is subject to, it is very difficult for the physician to define the limits within which moral liberty remains intact. The doctrine, however, of partial or attenuate responsibility is admitted by a certain number of physicians and legal writers.

Casper, at a period still recent, "considered that any one, the subject of a delusion, should be held responsible, if the act was not committed under the influence of that delusion." This is the generally accepted ruling in civil and criminal procedure. Legrand du Saulle[2] admits total irresponsibility only in cases of general insanity. In cases of partial alienation (a term untenable from a medical point of view) the individual "should not be held responsible when he has acted under the influence of the delusion, but should be so considered, when the impulse under which he acted is foreign to the sphere of his maniacal conceptions."

These opinions, however, have as a foundation psychological considerations *not consistent with medical views* and contrary to clinical observation. For admitting them, it is necessary to deny the solidarity of the faculties which compose the human intelligence and to admit, for instance, that the individual possessed by a fixed idea is sufficiently master of his reason to resist all other impulses. To-day, however, there can scarcely be found a clinical expert, who does not admit that, "however limited the circle in which the delusion moves, the intelligence is altered in its totality, and that morbid ideas can germinate and develop only on a territory previously morbid; that insanity, if different in its manifestations, is a unit in its nature, and that monomaniacs present in the course of their existence several different monomanias, not constituting, however, different forms of insanity but different symptoms of one disease."

[1] "Maladies Mentales." 3d part: Legal Medicine and Legislation.

[2] "Traité de Médecine Légale." Paris, 1886.

"How can it be affirmed," says J. Falret,[1] "that a given act, accomplished at a certain moment, is totally foreign to the maniacal conceptions of the individual, while another act, committed at the same moment, must be ascribed to a morbid impulse?"

The whole question often hinges on the idea so common, with judge and jury, that insane persons must *at all times show evidence of insanity, so that, if they exhibit any natural desires and motives, or show any lucidity in their speech and actions, it is assumed at once that they are of sound mind and responsible for their acts.* This is especially seen where the person after the act uses methods to escape the result of his act, or has shown skill in planning its accomplishment. Another element, which, while of great importance indeed in deciding these questions, namely, that of a *motive for the deed*, is *given too great weight*, for motive is often present in the insane. A delusion, perhaps a concealed one, may be back of it, but except in the violently maniacal cases, where great mental confusion exists, there is frequently a motive, more or less well defined, present.

The tendency of modern times to give more weight to the testimony of physicians, trained in mental diseases and accustomed to observe the method of thought in the insane, is to be encouraged. The two aspects of view, *i.e.*, the medical and legal, are necessarily different, but at the same time cannot be absolutely divorced. It cannot be the province of the expert to render a decision as to the responsibility of the person in question, nor can he define insanity in a way which can always be of practical use for the courts, but he can and should state how far the mental condition depends on disease and to what extent the individual has been deprived of the free exercise and control of his will, either by reason of overpowering false ideas or by general impairment of his mental faculties.

The object of all law is the protection of the public. Punishment of the criminal is only a means to that end. In the principle, laid down by all civilized nations, for the protection of those who are considered mentally unsound, from the consequences of their acts, this idea is present. Any difficulty in this respect arises only where the question of fact as

[1] "Dict. Encyclop. des Sciences Médicales," 3e série, t. iii.

to the insanity of the accused exists, especially in the so-called borderland cases or when again the mental disorder manifests itself either intermittently or periodically.

Practically, however, another phase of the question arises, especially in *criminal cases*—that is, whether the mental disorder is of such a character as to deprive the individual of the knowledge of the moral character of his acts, as to whether they are right or wrong, and as to whether he knew they were contrary also to the law of the land. A person might understand the character of his acts, while from a medical standpoint he might be considered insane. The English and American law follows this method of procedure, while the German courts give greater weight to the medical testimony, and have special, so-called court physicians, who are called upon to state the mental condition of the accused. As a result there is more frequently partial responsibility for the act allowed than with us. The question of partial insanity can in this way be eluded. Casper, the great German authority, in the last edition by Liman takes this ground very positively.

While agreeing with most of the authorities, as Griesinger, Krafft-Ebing, Kirchhoff, and others, *that we must regard the mind as a whole, and not as consisting of independent faculties*, or functions, which can be individually and independently diseased, he holds for this very reason that disease especially affecting one of these divisions of the mind must involve the integrity of the whole. If these views can be accepted, it is reasonable to consider degrees of responsibility—without accepting the idea of partial insanity.

A delusion which does not affect the act committed or has no bearing on it, or again if true would not justify the act in a sane person, is not accepted by the courts as a defence. While this is right in so far as it should not preclude the accused from all responsibility for his act, the fact that the individual is so far mentally affected that he has delusions, should have its weight in respect to the kind of punishment to be meted out.

These remarks have especially to do with criminal cases. In civil cases, indeed, as in matter of contracts, wills, torts, etc., the presence of delusions having no bearing on the subject-matter are justly excluded from rendering the acts void.

In no way can the great difference between the medical and

legal estimate of the fact of insanity and its relations be better shown than in the degree of responsibility ascribed to those of unsound mind, in civil or criminal procedure.

An individual might be held responsible for his civil act, who, however, would not be held criminally responsible.

It is impossible, therefore, for the law ever to establish lasting or permanent principles. Each case must be studied by itself, and changes in opinions on social questions will always modify with time present rulings.

Mechanism of Thought, or the Science of Mind.

In order to properly consider the subject of mental disease, we must in a brief manner consider the subject of the mind itself. Mind is represented by mental action, which is only the psychical function of the brain, as distinguished from its physical function. Mental action can only be understood or appreciated by its expression in the feelings generally and their subdivisions, the various emotions; and by thought, which is represented by perceptions dependent in every case on the special sense impressions received into consciousness. Under the head of thought, therefore, must come ideation, which depends on the reception of perceptions, their retention or memory, and their comparison and association, or judgment. The knowledge whether or not thought exists in the individual depends on its expression, either in language or action, in other words in volition. The combination of the three general faculties of the mind constitutes the psychical function of the brain. Volition must, therefore, represent thought, as action must be purposive in normal mental function. It is under this consideration that we are able to recognize the great difference between sanity and insanity.

In considering the various faculties of the mind, their activity implies consciousness on the part of the individual—a special consciousness, in which the individual or Ego is cognizant of the impressions which are being perceived.

We have to do with, in fact, self-consciousness, which has been defined as the recognition of one's own personality. *Self-consciousness differs from consciousness in general; it is what makes the individual.*

In a child impressions are received, painful ones resulting in reflex expressions of painful feeling or emotion, and *vice versa*. Mere excitation of the special senses of sight or hearing are usually pleasurable. Repetition of these impressions creates permanent mental perceptions, which are recalled by similar impressions, by which means memory, so-called, is established. At first a new impression of a similar character is required to recall the former perception; later this may arise of itself. The comparison of these various perceptions results in an idea or conception; this implies memory, that is, the recalling of former perceptions, or, as it is called, apperception. It is now that a higher grade of feeling manifests itself in the form of desire; this is not at first present, all the responses of the cerebro-spinal system being reflex. Following close upon ideation and desire comes judgment or comparison of the various conceptions, and this is associated with volition. It is some time before the infant can dissociate himself from his environment, or in other words establish the Ego as distinct from his surroundings; self-consciousness is not acquired until that is accomplished.

In our brief study of the development of mind in the infant, the close and almost indissoluble relation or connection of the three faculties of mind is plainly seen. Another fact should be commented on, and that is, that the first evidence of mental function is in the field of the feelings. This seems the first to be evolved and in fact always accompanies the further development of the mental function. As it is the first to appear in the evolution of the mind, so, following a well-observed law of the nervous system, it is the first to be affected in its dissolution.

It is only with the evolution of the Ego into the consciousness, that desire can be said to be fully established and that the individual is able to discriminate what is for his own personal good or injury. Up to this point none of the higher qualities of man have shown themselves. The ethical side has not been developed; his relations have only been those which have concerned his own good or pleasure—the last stone to be laid on the edifice is regard for the good of others, under which head comes love of family, of country, and as the top stone love of mankind.

Feelings, as we have said, represent the emotions. In gen-

eral they are divided into pleasurable and painful. All mental action is accompanied by one or the other in some degree.

Subdivisions or forms of emotion are joy, sorrow, anger, fear, etc.

Perceptions are received through the special senses of sight, hearing, taste, and smell and general sensibility, under which we will include touch, pain, and temperature.

The intensity of these perceptions depends on the character of the irritation of the special sense and on the manner of reception into the sentient consciousness, that is, on the degree of attention. On these two conditions will depend the ability to correctly recall the perception. It is imperfect recollection in this regard which leads to phantasy. Where the *attention* has not been intense or active, or in cases where several impressions or presentations are taking place at the same time, or again where the impression in itself is not sharp and defined, erroneous perceptions may result; this is recognized in the form of hallucinations or illusions, or again in delusion.

A certain duration of time is also necessary for the complete recognition or reception of impressions; there must also be a certain degree of feeling accompanying it, else no attention is given. When impressions are rapidly received, there is usually a pleasurable condition resulting; when, however, one perception remains long in the consciousness, a sense of fatigue or pain results.

Intellection or thought implies the presence of perceptions, which by association of previous perceptions has led to a comparison of the various attributes of an object as received through the special senses. This recalling of former perceptions is memory, and any defect in it interferes with ideation or thought.

This can be studied from a psychological standpoint very well in the insane, where either a false perception, or the failure to recall all in regard to an object, results in a delusion or wrong conception.

In judgment we have the same mental process going on, only now conceptions or ideas are reached by memory and compared, their resemblances and differences noted. Here again, attention is of great importance, associated as it is also with feeling.

There cannot be thought or intellection without its expression in action or speech; in fact, speech is, probably, the agent or means by which thought takes place.

Speech was no doubt later evolved; nevertheless, by long hereditary influences, it has become a part of ratiocination. I do not mean by this that speech is necessarily articulate in the mental process. In our consideration so far we see the close relation of the various processes employed in mental action. It seems psychologically impossible to consider one as being affected, without involving the action of the others. Excessive pain or sorrow, pleasure or joy, can entirely prevent thought from taking place; again, the continued presence of certain ideas which cannot be removed can establish emotional conditions of pleasure or pain.

Just such conditions occur in the insane; the self-consciousness or the Ego being so changed or affected that the usual response to impressions no longer takes place, leading thus in a logical way to abnormal feeling, thought, and volition.

MEDICO-LEGAL ASPECT.

Our conception of mental disease depends entirely on whether we look at it from a medical or legal standpoint. Ordroneaux, quoting Ray, says: "*Insanity in medicine* has to do with a prolonged departure of the individual from his natural mental state arising from bodily disease." "*Insanity in law* covers nothing more than the relation of the person and the particular act which is the subject of judicial investigation. The legal problem must resolve itself into the inquiry, whether there was mental capacity and moral freedom to do or abstain from doing the particular act."

Legally, the question of civil and criminal responsibility arises, making it necessary that we should consider not so much the form and character of the disease, as the mental soundness of the person affected, and also as to whether there can be any motive for simulation.

All countries agree in absolving from responsibility for criminal acts any one who is mentally unsound. According to the German law, a crime is not counted such when the doer at the time is unconscious, or is deprived of his free will by disease

of the mind. Austrian law defines an act as not criminal when the doer is unconscious or when his will is affected, or the character of the act not perceived. The French law is virtually the same.[1]

What is Insanity?

Synonyms.—Insania, Folie, Alienation mentale, Insania Folia, Irrsinn, Irresein, Wahnsinn, Verrücktheit. It is hardly possible to give a succinct *definition* of insanity. So long as the mental processes arise from natural causes and correspond to the condition of the surroundings, so long is the mind sound; when the feelings, ideas, and acts arise without cause, but rather from cerebral disease, we have the reverse. Mental disease is brain disease, but the reverse is not true. The organ of the mind has its basis in the cortex of the brain.[2] "Insanity is a matter of fact, and is not amenable to any legal test. It is for the jury or experts to determine the fact of insanity; for the courts to determine its effect on civil rights." *The general meaning of insanity at law* is "a permanently disordered state of the mind beyond the control of the individual, produced by disease. This must be proved, the burden of proof resting on the party alleging it. As mind is represented by feeling, thought, and volition, any departure from their normal relation must represent mental disorder. Persons may, however, be insane medically, but not in the eye of the law, and *vice versa*."[3]

"It is a trite but a most important observation, that in the question of what constitutes insanity, the members of the two great and learned professions of law and medicine entertain essentially different and seemingly irreconcilable views, and that on the question of the irresponsibility of criminals, who are supposed to be insane, there is still a wide chasm of difference of opinion between them. To a certain extent this is true, and perhaps inevitable, and the reason of it is not difficult to find—that the two professions have to regard insanity and to deal with the insane with different aims and purposes. The physician has to prevent or cure it, and to him, therefore, the whole and especially the early history of the patient, embracing the causes and the development of the changes, bodily and men-

[1] Krafft-Ebing: "Gerichtliche Psycho-Pathologie," edition of 1875.
[2] *Ibid.*
[3] Ordronaux.

tal, and affording perhaps some insight into the pathology, is of preponderating importance. With him the main question is to prevent its interference with the enjoyment and duration of the life of the patient.

"*To the lawyer* it matters not how the seed of insanity was sown, nor the growth of the plant, except as confirmatory evidence that the plant is there. With him the sole question is, *its existence, its degree, and its influence on the conduct*, not therefore a medical but a moral one; and if the same mental states were capable of being produced by other conditions than disease, the same amount of irresponsibility would, I think, be recognized, as indeed is the case for children under seven years of age, in whom the law refuses to recognize the responsible knowledge of right and wrong."[1]

While indeed, as the writer just quoted states, the standpoint of law and medicine is different in the view of what insanity is, there are many points which they must investigate in common, especially heredity, injuries, etc., as causative agents, and again "the bodily and mental changes" are fully as important for the lawyer to study as for the physician. *In fact it is impossible for the law to do without the knowledge which belongs to the medical expert*, for the question of responsibility is determined by the fact, whether or not the disease of the brain is of such a character as to fall under the rulings of the courts, as to what constitutes insanity. This cannot be left to laymen to decide, and therefore, despite the somewhat contemptuous reference to medical experts by some judges, they are forced to make use of their knowledge.

"No doubt the extension of the meaning of insanity, as understood by medical men, has been due in a great measure to more laborious and accurate methods of observation, resulting in actual discovery and increase of knowledge, and also to a more enlightened estimate of the correlation of insanity with other nervous diseases; but also it seems to me it has gained an impulse from the adoption of hypotheses which have no direct relation with the actual existence of mental disease, and which, however useful and admissible in the theoretical conception and in the practical study of other causation of insanity, are completely out of place in the investigation of such practical

[1] Bucknill: "Insanity in its Legal Relations."

questions as whether a criminal is or is not insane. As a type of this kind of hypothesis I may cite what is called the insane neurosis, being, if I understand it aright, the condition of a man who is more liable than other men to become insane, but who has hitherto shown no signs of the presence of the disease itself. No doubt there is such a condition as an insane neurosis. And there is also such a condition as a criminal neurosis. It is the Hegelian theory of becoming, and we are all becoming, something which we are not. But the inquiries of criminal courts are restricted to actual events of the past; and if these forty-fold forms of insanity, this tendency, to comprehend all nervous disease within the pale of insanity, these speculative views as to the existence of inherited insanity which shows no signs, are in any way reflected in the evidence of medical witnesses, no wonder if our legal fellow-laborers, in the interest of truth and justice and the welfare of society, should take a stand which may be nothing more than the conservatism of common sense."[1]

One observes perhaps primarily, in all mental disease, a change in the feelings or the emotions, and therefore in the personality. There may be excitement or apathy, but in either case a concentration upon the *ego* or individual who becomes the central figure amid disordered perceptions and conceptions. As all mental action is carried on through perception, we expect and find disorders of the various perceptions, as represented in hallucinations and illusions. While these latter conditions are not necessary for our diagnosis of insanity, still in conjunction with other symptoms they are perhaps the strongest and most common evidence we have of mental disease. Delusions, either primary or secondary to hallucination and illusion, are the best proof we possess of mental aberration, but they are not absolutely necessary, and in many cases are not present in well-recognized forms of insanity. As a necessary part of the normal mental activity, consciousness must be present, and the recognition of one's own personality, by which we mean self-consciousness. We observe then, in the insane, first some change in this entity—self-consciousness.

J. Battey Tuke defined insanity as consisting "*in morbid conditions of the brain, the result of defective formation or*

[1] Bucknill: "Insanity in its Legal Relations."

altered nutrition of its substance, induced by local or general morbid processes, and characterized especially by non-development, obliteration, impairment, or perversion of one or more of its psychological functions." Bucknill[1] defines insanity as "a condition of the mind in which a false action of perception or judgment, a defective power of the will, or an uncontrollable violence of the emotions and instincts have separately or conjointly been produced by disease." The legal question must always involve the *extent of impairment of the will, and the consequent irresponsibility.* As Ray has well said, "certain it is that as we have become better acquainted with the anatomy of the brain, and have become more thorough and persevering in our examinations, the more rarely do we find a case of insanity presenting no organic changes after death."

Clinically, insanity is a disturbance of self-consciousness, and is dependent upon disease of the cerebro-spinal system. The object of the study of insanity is to discover the conditions under which psychical function or mental action departs from the normal, and to learn the method by which this function may be restored.

Brain affections with predominating disturbance of mental function are called diseases of the mind. The question necessarily arises, however, as to where the seat of the psychical or mental function lies. The cortex of the cerebrum is the organ of all mentality, the rest of the nervous system acting only as a conductor. Here are grouped the result of former feelings, perception, and volition. Mental action springs from, and depends upon, conscious perception in the cortex. There alone is the seat of thought. By comparative study of the hemispheres of the various grades of mammalians it is noted that the anterior brain, and the convolutions around the fissure of Sylvius, which pathology and physiology designate as the centre for speech, are especially developed in man. The significance of the anterior brain for the intellect is also shown by its proportionate increase in the more intelligent races, its loss in weight (Meynert) in mental disease. The convolutions become more complicated and increase as we ascend in the species. The significance of these fissures and convolutions lies in the fact of the increased

[1] "Unsoundness of Mind in Relation to Criminal Acts."

surface they present for the gray matter, which is proportional to the intelligence.

Mental action consists in perceptions and their action one on the other. In general, the three principal functions or faculties of the mind—the feelings, thoughts, and will—must act in harmony. We cannot separate them before the law. The fact of mental unsoundness is the important thing.[1] Mental disease must then affect these different factors of the mind, manifesting itself by anomalies of the feelings, and disturbances of the perceptions and conceptions.

"Any one or more of numerous causes may produce disease of the brain or nervous system, which interferes more or less with the feeling, will, or intellect of the person affected. Commonly the disease, if it runs its full course, affects the emotions first, and afterward the intellect and the will. It may affect the emotions, either by producing morbid depression, or by producing morbid excitement or feeling. In the first, which is much the commoner of the two cases, it is called melancholia, and in the second mania. Melancholia often passes into mania. Both melancholia and mania commonly cause false opinions as to existing facts, which suggest themselves to the mind of the sufferer as explanations of its morbid feelings. These delusions are often accompanied by hallucinations which are deceptions of the senses. Melancholia, mania, and the delusions arising from them often supply powerful motives to do destructive and mischievous acts, and cases occur in which an earnest and passionate desire to do such acts is the first and perhaps the only marked symptom of mental disease. It is probable that in such cases some morbid state of the brain produces a vague craving for a relief by some form of passionate action, the special form of which is determined by accidental circumstances, so that such impulses may differ in their nature and mode of operation from the motives which operate on the sane and insane persons alike. The difference may be compared to the difference between hunger prompting a man to eat, and the impulse which, when he suffers violent pain, prompts him to relieve himself by screaming. Insanity affecting the emotions in the forms of melancholia and mania is often succeeded by insanity affecting the intellect and

[1] Neuman's "Lehrbuch der Psychiatrie."

the will. In this stage of the disease, the characteristic symptom is the existence of permanent incurable delusions, commonly called monomania. The existence of any such delusion indicates disorganization of all the mental powers, not only the power of thinking correctly, but the power of keeping before the mind and applying to particular cases the general principles of conduct. The last stage of insanity is one of utter feebleness, in which all the intellectual powers are so much prostrated as to reduce the sufferer to a state of imbecility. Lastly, paralysis and epilepsy are so closely allied with insanity, that insanity frequently forms a symptom of each. In all the cases above referred to, the sufferer is supposed to have been originally sane, but sanity may never be enjoyed at all. This happens in cases of idiocy."[1]

English law recognizes two states of mental disease: (1) *Dementia naturalis;* and (2) *dementia adventitia*, under which general insanity is included. To this the term "*lunacy*" is usually applied. In New York, Massachusetts, and several other of the States statutes have been passed defining the term "*insane person*," "lunatic," "non compos," and "insane," so as to embrace all forms of insanity except idiocy. In many of the States, the law has made the words "*lunatic*," "*insane*," and "*non compos mentis*" synonymous and convertible terms.[2] There is no distinction between the terms insanity and unsoundness of mind.

ANALOGOUS CONDITION IN HEALTH.

Mental disturbance as represented by hallucinations, illusions, and delusions is not confined to the insane, but analogous conditions are not infrequently seen in health and in various diseases, or in persons under the influence of drugs, such as alcohol, morphine, hasheesh, etc. A most typical example of this is seen in delirium tremens, which may be taken as a fair representation of mania. In it we find great excitement, hallucinations, especially of sight and hearing, marked volubility, and the accompanying mental confusion which is usually present to a greater or less degree in all mania. The distinction,

[1] Stephen's "History of Criminal Law of England," vol. ii.

[2] Taylor's "Medical Jurisprudence."

however, is easily made between this condition and mental disease, in that we are acquainted with its cause and also with the fact that clinically we can define its course and duration. But even in these cases, the truth of its close alliance with mental aberration is proven by the fact that in chronic alcoholism we have a well-defined chronic, and generally incurable, form of insanity.

With *morphine*, we find hallucinations and delusions, usually of a pleasant character, which, however, the subject is able, when aroused to full consciousness, to recognize as merely such, giving therefore one of the cardinal distinctions between the so-called hallucinations of the insane and of the sane. The brief duration of these conditions also, of whatever nature, is opposed to the idea of their dependence upon disease of the brain structure.

We find in the dreams accompanying sleep an almost typical reproduction of the mental condition of the insane, as in both instances self-consciousness is never fully in the ascendency. In both cases, not infrequently, a dual existence may be partially recognized; or, again, the two existences, accompanied frequently by a change of personality, remain distinct and apart, so that in the insane, at least, acts committed or persons met during one state are not recollected in the other.

Krafft-Ebing puts this very clearly:

The *physiological function of the brain, on its mental side, is the production of feelings, thought, and volition.*

The spontaneous origin of mental action without adequate cause is, in general, a sign of internal irritative processes, its pathological nature manifesting itself by its duration, intensity, and general disproportion. Only when we know the source and motive of the mental action, can we decide whether it is that of a sane or insane person. In the majority of cases, in the early stages of insanity, the most marked symptom is emotional, not intellectual, and apparently has arisen without cause. It is similar, however, to the normal physiological reaction; the course of the feelings can be tumultuous or depressive, corresponding to melancholia or mania. If we compare physiological or normal depression with melancholia we notice no substantial difference; in both individuals there is evidence of psychical pain, both are depressed, and given over

to their painful impressions, interesting themselves in nothing else, *i.e.*, their usual duties or pleasures. Physically they exhibit similar states: they are sleepless, the appetite is poor, the intestinal action is sluggish, and there is general malnutrition.

The difference is, that in the first the mental pain and depression have an adequate cause in some previous occurrence, and are the physiological reaction from it, while in the other there has been no external cause, or at least not a sufficient one, but it has arisen from an internal process, the result of a diseased brain. The self-consciousness is too much affected to distinguish the true from the false.

The laity rarely make this distinction, especially when some cause exists, and try vainly to arouse the patient by change and occupation. The analogy is the same for mania: it is only a permanent state of the joy following, for instance, a good piece of news; observe also the slight line between genius and insanity.

ETIOLOGY.

The causes of insanity are predisposing and exciting.

Predisposing.—The predisposing causes are those which come under a general head, as civilization and race; the latter, however, except where races have isolated themselves from others, has very little influence. Among the Chinese there is very little mental disease. This may be due to their methodical habits of living and temperate use of alcohol. Age, with its transitional periods—*e.g.*, childhood, puberty, senility—subject the individual to special danger. It is difficult to say whether celibacy has an influence in this disease, although the proportion of those admitted into asylums, as given in the report of the Lunacy Commission in England, shows a much larger number among the unmarried. Occupation, where mental worry or monotony is present, as in sailors, teachers, prisoners, etc., has a deleterious influence.

Inhabitants of cities are more liable to mental disease. This is probably the result of the increased demands on the energy of the individual to maintain his social position or in the greater struggle for mere existence; there is also greater dissipation of all kinds.

There is one form of insanity which is peculiar to modern

life—*that which Kirn has termed the characteristic psychosis of the nineteenth century, namely, general paresis.*

This disease does not seem peculiar to any race, but depends on the surroundings of the individual and the vicissitudes and anxieties of life.

Before slavery in the United States was abolished, the negro was never affected with this form of insanity; it is now common among those who have flocked to the cities and who have been compelled to assume the responsibilities of supporting themselves.

This can also be said of the Irish, that is, after leaving their agricultural pursuits, and being exposed to the vicissitudes and excitement of large cities.

The Chinese in this country also supply their quota, several cases having come under my observation. We observe no change in the class of symptoms from mere difference of race: there are the same delusions of grandeur, the feeling of power, and the ideas of great wealth, associated with the physical signs of tremor and disturbance of articulation.

Heredity.

A most important element among the individual predisposing causes is heredity. It is more often the inheritance of an unstable nervous organization than any special form of insanity. The effect of predisposition to insanity is seen in its relations to all the direct and exciting causes.

Injuries, fevers, grief, stress of any severe form, with the hereditary tendency to mental disease in the individual, result in insanity, where in other persons the tendency would be slight.

This predisposition by inheritance may be due to various nervous disorders in the progenitors, as epilepsy, dipsomania, neuralgia, hysteria, etc., all producing alike an unstable nervous organization. The reverse of this is also true, nervous disorders being the result in the descendants of insanity in the antecedents.

Marriage between persons either too similar in mental characteristics or tastes, or again too dissimilar, not unfrequently results in insanity, especially if there is any consanguinity.

The tendency to inheritance of insanity depends largely on

the condition of the parent at the time of procreation. If the insanity developed after the birth of the child the influence of heredity is not so great. In regard to the special form of disease inherited, it may be of the same kind. Especially is this seen in suicidal tendencies, occurring not infrequently at the same age, or again the occurrence of insanity at the puerperal and climacteric periods when it has been directly inherited.

Certain forms, as general paralysis, are rarely directly inherited, although the children may be idiotic or subject to the various neuroses (Savage).

Individual Predisposing Causes:—Occupation.

Prisoners.—Among those confined in institutions, mental disease is not uncommon. Here it is also that the different forms of insanity are often feigned in order to avoid work or to procure hospital treatment. In the older method of treating criminals, where punishment by separation from others was common, mental disease was very frequent. The monotony of work without mental exercise may result in delusions common to various forms of mental disease, especially those of persecution. Epilepsy may also result. Mania is not common, but impulses, homicidal and suicidal, are frequent. Masturbation with its accompanying result, dementia, is frequent; but where a system of occupation is carried out, all these conditions are much lessened. Perhaps the mental disturbance most often feigned among prisoners is that of dementia. It is also the easiest and the least liable to detection. Still epilepsy is not infrequently assumed, as in the case of the so-called "dummy chucker" in Sing Sing prison. This patient had deceived many expert examiners, and was only detected after many years. The opposite condition of attempt at concealment of insanity is more rarely present. It is observed sometimes on examining the patient, especially in the degenerative type of disease. Where the symptoms can be restrained, it implies a certain amount of control; however, under provocation, or when the patient is taken unawares, the true condition can usually be determined. It is only by frequent examinations, or allusions to the special delusion of such cases, that the true mental condition can be discovered. In melancholia we find

this tendency to concealment of the condition, where it is of a mild type. After partial recovery from acute attacks, care is necessary to discover whether the delusions and hallucinations are still present. Our only method of estimating the sanity or insanity must ultimately rest on the conduct, whether expressed in speech or act.

There is little difference noted in the various business occupations. Those, however, whose life is more solitary or confined, as sailors, soldiers, governesses, teachers, etc., show greater tendency to mental disease. Professional beggars and prostitutes are especially liable; this is probably the result of sexual excess, drunkenness, and general privation.

Kirn finds that *prisoners*, probably through the physical weakness induced by imprisonment, and the influence of remorse, especially when solitary confinement has been carried out, are liable to *melancholia* with delusions of persecution and hallucinations of the special senses.

It has not been found that those engaged in the care of the insane are much affected. Certainly imitation is rare of the same form of disease. The social conditions do not seem to have any especial influence, except in so far as poverty and bad hygienical surroundings have in a general way a deleterious effect.

Religion.

According to Kirn religious formalism favors the occurrence of (primary) religious paranoia; this may even become epidemic under favorable circumstances. Investigation generally proves, however, that its effects are shown mainly in those predisposed to mental disorder by heredity or a neurotic disposition, or again at special periods of life, as puberty, the puerperal period, and during the climacteric. In regard to this latter class, also, it may be observed that the condition is not usually a permanent one, recovery taking place, while in true paranoia, which is itself a chronic delusional state, the religious excitement has acted simply as an exciting cause, and has given direction to the form of mental disturbance. Anxiety in regard to success in any special department, as in art or politics, especially when failure results, or even, though more rarely, great success, may

give rise to paranoia, though of a different type, as, for instance, with delusions of persecution.

During revivals mental disorder is common. The term "religious insanity" is misleading, and is to be deprecated. Where the delusions are of a religious character it is not infrequent to find associated with them an element of eroticism, so that those addicted to sexual abuse are frequently subject to such delusions. Communications with God are frequent, either through hallucinations of sight or hearing, leading to delusions in which special commands are received or in which a change of personality occurs. The character of God himself, or of some prophet is assumed. We find these conditions not infrequently among the uneducated, or among those of a low type of mental development. We often find among this class those who subject themselves to self-mutilation in their desire perhaps to atone for some crime, imaginary or otherwise. It is really a type of paranoia. *Epileptics are especially inclined to religiosity*, taking great pleasure in all exercises of a religious character. This, however, has little or no effect on their action, nor is true remorse likely to follow acts of the most extreme violence. Depression or self-condemnation is felt most often for imaginary acts of disobedience to God, especially in relation to self-abuse rather than to actual present wrong-doing.

Exciting Causes.

In those predisposed by heredity or a neurotic disposition, physical causes, as injuries, fevers, physiological states as pregnancy, lactation, etc., may induce mental disorder, but these causes may be the primary ones themselves.

The *various inflammation of the meninges, and the cortex of the brain*, rarely result in insanity. We may indeed have delirium and mania, but these symptoms are usually of comparatively short duration, and with the subsidence of the provoking cause they also subside.

We exclude from these remarks the specific characteristic affection of the brain peculiar to certain diseases, as general paralysis, as they are the pathological changes observed in the disease and not the cause.

Cerebral hemorrhage, tumors, multiple sclerosis impair the functional activity of the brain and tend to dementia rather than any well-defined psychosis. Here again we must not include in the list of causes what is a symptom of the disease, as apoplectic seizures in general paralysis.

Injuries to the skull may not manifest themselves in a deleterious way for years, but no doubt have an influence even after a long period, either directly or indirectly, in causing insanity. While we cannot consider it a predisposing cause to general paralysis it may be an exciting one.

Insanity may result from various diseases of the nervous system, as Basedow's disease, or exophthalmic goitre, hysteria, epilepsy, chorea, etc., tabes, multiple sclerosis. With the exception of tabes no special form is the result; here perhaps general paralysis not infrequently results. There are many allied and similar symptoms in these two diseases.

Following Griesinger we find that constitutional disease may result in insanity. General anæmic states following exhaustive disease, repeated loss of blood, special conditions as lactation, exposure as in the states of inanition following in shipwrecks, produce those forms of insanity which come under the head of functional psychoses, *i.e.*, mania, melancholia, hallucinatory and delusional insanity, and primary dementia.

Tuberculosis is very common among the insane, the mortality from this disease being large. I can scarcely agree that it is very frequently a direct cause of it, or that we are justified in establishing a special form under the name of phthisical insanity. Tuberculosis of the brain substance, or tubercular meningitis rarely terminates in insanity; the course of these diseases is usually a rapid and fatal one, and while such cases not infrequently are brought to the asylum, they cannot properly be considered as examples of insanity. The delusions and hallucinations may be excessive and the patient require restraint, the course of the disease resembling acute mania or delirium *gravé*. In such a patient under my observation, careful examination showed no physical signs of tuberculosis, either abdominal or cerebral. The temperature had suggested tuberculosis, and special attention had been given to these symptoms. Death ensued from exhaustion, and the post-mortem revealed a general miliary tuberculosis, involving the abdominal

region and the convex surface of the brain, the base not being affected.

The direct cause of the delirium and hallucination was the cerebral irritation by the miliary tubercles.

There was nothing characteristic to differentiate it from similar states occurring in acute mania, or in meningitis occurring in the course of acute inflammatory rheumatism.

Tuberculosis may run its course in the insane without being observed, the mental symptoms obscuring it, especially as the patients themselves frequently offer no complaint. The course of the disease is apt to be rapid, owing to the generally impaired nutrition.

My experience would not indicate that melancholia is more frequent than mania. Suicidal mania is not uncommon.

Syphilis stands in an important relation to insanity, associated as it is with disease of the meninges and the blood-vessels, as well as the brain substance itself. We frequently find acute conditions present.

Cerebral syphilis not infrequently passes into general paralysis of the insane. This implies organic changes in the meninges and cortex, secondary usually to the endarteritis, which are incurable. The estimate of the proportion of these latter cases due to syphilis varies with the author, some writers going so far as to say that it is the basis of general paresis in all cases with few exceptions. The initial stages in both may be very similar; in general paralysis, however, the fatal course of the disease is not affected by specific treatment, while cerebral syphilis not infrequently entirely clears up under the iodides and mercury.

Fevers, especially the infectious, may during their course cause insanity; this can be ascribed often to the high temperature or to the overwhelming of the brain by the direct poison. These states are rarely protracted, although at times they pass into chronic incurable forms. It is usual to find an hereditary history if that is the result, the constitutional condition acting only as the exciting cause.

Another cause for these mental states is the exhaustion and cerebral anæmia, which may result in hallucinatory mania or melancholia. This occurs in the course of all the fevers, as typhus, typhoid, small-pox, pneumonia, scarlet fever, etc.

Griesinger speaks especially of psychoses occurring in the course of *intermittent fever*, in regions where intermittent fever is endemic, the regular quartan or tertian attacks of fever being superseded by attacks of insanity (violent mania, suicidal impulse) without fever. This may terminate in chronic disease.

Influenza is not an infrequent cause of the functional type of the psychoses. The recent epidemic of the past few years has given occasion to many observations. While apparently melancholia is more common, mania of a violent character may follow. It would seem to be largely due to the exhaustion.

Rheumatism, when acute, causes meningeal irritation, the symptoms being usually acute and marked by delirium and hallucination. Clouston, Savage, and others speak of rheumatic insanity, but this is hardly a proper term. However, the close connection between the mental disturbances and the rheumatic attack can be noted by the fact that not infrequently a total disappearance of articular inflammation may be marked by the appearance of the mental symptoms, and *vice versa*.

Gout may be mentioned in the same relation and as following the same course.

The cause in both instances seems to be an overwhelming of the system with a distinct poison, and not to be due to the temperature changes. It can be compared to cases of metallic poisoning, as especially observed in lead and mercury, or again with uræmic conditions. The system can absorb slowly a large amount of these poisons, but if for any cause they are thrown suddenly into the system cerebral symptoms manifest themselves.

Alcohol, *morphine*, *cocaine*, *quinine* in excessive amounts show a similar class of mental symptoms, characterized by excitement or depression with various illusions and hallucinations of the special senses.

These acute conditions are to be distinguished from the chronic forms of mental disease, dependent principally upon arterial degeneration with its consequent malnutrition.

Too much weight is often placed on *malaria* in the production of mental disorder. Where mental disturbance has followed, it occurs in those previously disposed by a neurotic temperament or other hereditary forms of disease. Its occurrence

in the insane cannot be said to have any marked effect, except in a general way, upon the course of the disease.

ANÆSTHETICS AND MENTAL DISEASE.

Many cases of mental disturbance have been recorded as following the administration of anæsthetics, whether chloroform, ether, or nitrous oxide. This has often been observed in very slight operations, such as the extraction of the teeth while under the influence of nitrous oxide. It may take the form of maniacal excitement, or of marked stupor, or of acute dementia. It is, however, not as a rule of long duration. Dr. T. G. Thomas reports several cases following operations in which acute dementia followed, and several have come under the author's own observation. The most usual form in his experience has been of that type, or of a condition of stuporous insanity; rarely has it been of a maniacal character. It is probable that the nervous condition of anticipation is the effective cause of this mental disturbance rather than the use of the anæsthetic. It seems hardly possible that it alone would be effective, except in those who by their habits, as by the excessive use of alcohol, etc., are specially predisposed.

Genito-Urinary Irritation and Insanity.

Irritation of the sexual apparatus, whether due to disease or the practice of masturbation, not infrequently causes nervous and mental disorders; but these are more often of a functional than an organic type. They occur especially in those predisposed to nervous disorder by hereditary or acquired instability of organization. It is rare in my experience to find insanity *per se* due to masturbation, whether in the male or in the female. In all forms of insanity, especially in the later stages, as in dementia, where the higher powers of the mind have been affected, this practice is very frequent, but a true masturbational insanity probably does not exist. The effect of operations on the diseased organs is, as a rule, unsuccessful in producing recovery from mental disease if the hereditary predisposition is of the degenerative type. In other cases, it may

be favorable. In any case where disease is present, an operation for the removal of the abnormal condition is indicated.

Insolation and Insanity.

The influence of the sun, except in so far as it may cause inflammatory disease affecting the meninges, is not an important factor in insanity, but in connection with exhaustion, anxiety, and alcoholism it is of importance as a causative agent.

The heat of summer does not apparently influence the occurrence of mental disease, according to Krafft-Ebing, although Esquirol considered that more insane were received into asylums during the months of May and June. Arndt, Schüle, and Kraepelin think that great heat favors the outbreak of mental disease, especially mania. It is difficult, however, as has been remarked, to state when the disease commenced. The old idea that suicide due to insanity occurs in the gloomy month of November seems disproved and to be without foundation.

Change of climate seems to have some influence. Among those coming to a new country, especially among female domestics, I have observed a general impairment of nutrition, with amenorrhœa, associated with mental disease usually in the form of melancholia, either simple or with stupor.

Moral causes may act directly as the exciting agent. Especially is this seen following loss of relations, or business reverses, or any intense emotional disturbance, as disappointment in love, or the strain of great poverty, where the necessaries of life even are impossible of procurement. The mother in her despair may even be led to destroy herself and offspring to relieve them from suffering. Fear or terror following a criminal assault, or the shock from exposure to some great danger, as a railroad accident or fire, or the fear arising from epidemic disease—indeed, excessive anger itself—may cause insanity; but as has been said in reference to all these exciting causes, they fall most heavily on those already predisposed to mental disease.

Cretinism.

This is commonly a congenital condition, or commences early in life. The congenital type manifests itself by the stunted

appearance of the child, the thickness of the skin, and an appearance not unlike that of myxœdema. The intelligence is usually low, and the subsequent development is slow and imperfect. Speech is often, but not always, defective. The special senses are not infrequently affected, especially the senses of smell and hearing.

Table showing causes of insanity in patients admitted into the asylums and registered in hospitals in England and Wales during the ten years from 1878 to 1887:[1]

Moral.	Pregnancy.
Domestic trouble (loss of relatives).	Parturition and the puerpural state.
Adverse circumstances (business losses, etc.).	Lactation.
Mental anxiety and worry.	Uterine and ovarian disease.
Love affairs (including seduction).	Puberty.
	Changes of life.
Physical.	Fevers.
Intemperance in drink.	Privations and starvation.
Intemperance (sexual).	Old age.
Venereal disease.	Other bodily diseases or disorders.
Self-abuse.	Previous attacks.
Over-exertion.	Hereditary influence ascertained.
Sunstroke.	Congenital defect ascertained.
Accident or injury.	Other ascertained causes.
	Unknown.

GENERAL INDICATIONS OF INSANITY.

"The diagnosis of insanity presents itself to the physician in a purely medical or in a medico-legal point of view. In both cases, the grounds of the diagnosis must be the same. For although, in criminal trials, the nature of the crime itself and the manner in which it has been effected must often be allowed to have no inconsiderable weight in the formation of the judgment, yet these circumstances are essentially no other than a part of the conduct of the patient; and the conduct must be carefully estimated even when the question is not purely medical."[2]

"The *conduct* of the alleged lunatic himself *at, before, and immediately after*, the critical transaction, is relevant evidence of lunacy."[3]

[1] Tuke: "Dictionary of Psychological Medicine."

[2] Bucknill and Tuke: "Psychological Medicine."

[3] Beavan *v.* McDonnell, 10 Ex., 184; Lovatt *v.* Tribe, 3 F. and F., 9.

Mere eccentricity of dress and behavior, though admissible as evidence, goes but a little way to establish lunacy.[1]

The clinical phenomena and pathological changes do not stand in such close relation as in other diseases of the body. As Krafft-Ebing has well said: "We have not auscultation and percussion to help us in making our diagnosis; we have only psychological phenomena to deal with." From the disturbances of the *ego*, of the consciousness, of the memory (quantitatively and qualitatively), of the feelings, conceptions, and volition we must determine the nature of the cerebral disease. This special character is, however, only an apparent one; for if insanity is a disease of the brain, its symptoms must follow the laws of physiology and pathology which obtain in the nervous system. We must have the latency and the intermissions of disease; the exacerbations, the remissions, periodicity, and relapses; the response to irritation; the loss of response, the reflex action, etc., as in all nervous diseases. We can best understand this when we deal with it in the language used in disease. So we can speak in a certain sense of psychical or mental hyperæsthesia and anæsthesia; psychical convulsions or paralysis; increased or decreased reflex action or resistance to action. We must always remember that insanity is a disease, and that disease is life under abnormal conditions. Disease and health are not necessarily opposite; analogies and a neutral ground exist for both. The elements out of which diseased mental action results are the same for healthy mental action; the only differences are the conditions of their origin. The conditions for the process of psychical function in normal mental life are external irritation, that is, of the senses—sight and hearing—as well as an adequate cerebral reaction to this irritation. Along with this we have an understanding of the relation or agreement between the consciousness and the external irritation. In insanity the brain is under abnormal conditions. It is the seat of disease in which internal irritations will cause mental action. The mind acts spontaneously, uninfluenced by occurrences in the external world. So the patient stands in his inner world in opposition to the outer world, but this inner irritation produces the same result as if due to external irritation. This

[1] Boughton *v.* Knight, 1872, L. R. 3 P. & D., 84; D. Hack Tuke: "Dictionary of Psychological Medicine."

spontaneous internal action is the result of disturbed nutrition of the cortex of the brain.

We have two important disturbances resulting, viz.: (1) a changed reaction to external irritation, either increased or decreased, or qualitatively changed; (2) a change in the *ego*, that is, in the self-consciousness, and therefore a danger of taking the subjective internal irritations for objective external ones. The disturbance of the *ego* is the basis for the understanding of insanity. It consists especially in the failure to recall former experiences, and is important, therefore, as explaining the origin of delusions; or again, in taking for, or confounding, former perceptions with the present objective perceptions through mistaken interpretation of impressions in the disturbed consciousness. As all mental action is expressed through the feelings, thoughts, and actions, we must especially direct our attention to these three divisions. Under the head of feelings we shall therefore, as already said, observe changes in the individual, as indicated by depression or exaltation. As all thought or conception depends upon the perceptions, and as the latter are only received through the special senses, we must look for errors of perception of the special senses, such as hearing, smell, etc. We therefore find hallucinations and delusions among the common symptoms of mental disease.

HALLUCINATIONS.

Hallucinations may be defined as erroneous perceptions, not dependent on present external impressions, but evolved from the diseased brain itself, and dependent upon previous perceptions; or, as Taylor has defined them: "Those sensations which are supposed by the patient to be produced by external impressions, although no material object acts upon his senses at the time."

While, in general, we may accept this statement that *hallucinations* are not due to excitation of the special sense involved, still they may depend on some disease of that sense organ which without external irritation is thus capable of exciting an impulse to the receptive centre in the brain. It is more probable, however, that the actual cause is the morbid cerebral state, as otherwise the irritation would be correctly interpreted. An-

other evidence of this lies in the fact, that where the special sense is congenitally absent, no hallucinations referred to that special sense take place. Those born blind do not have hallucinations of sight, *but again, on the other hand, those who become blind may have them, showing that the hallucination depends on previous sight-perceptions.*

Hallucinations are very common in the insane, Esquirol putting the percentage as high as eighty per cent, which is probably too high. In many cases they are recognized as such, but oftener are accepted as real and lead to acts as a logical sequence. The character of the hallucination will depend largely on the occupation or the object which immediately interests the person. Sights may constantly recur, which were but imperfectly observed as at the time of a surgical operation, while the patient was passing under the influence of ether. A patient related to me that, following an operation, he felt as if he were before an abyss, and that the surgeon was about to throw him into it. An interesting feature in this case was the occurrence of a double hallucination, in which he heard voices saying that he was damned.

While realizing that these voices were not real, if spoken to about them, he could not prevent himself from firing his pistol in the court from which they apparently came.

Hallucinations may affect any or all the special senses, as sight, hearing, taste, smell, as well as the general sensibilities or sensations. Hallucinations of sight and hearing are the most common, and the latter more so than the former; the importance of those of hearing is greater, as here we more often have imperative orders from God, or some other influence directing the performance of some act. Without warning an act may be suddenly committed. These forms are most common in melancholia and mania, and while their presence cannot be absolutely accepted as evidence of insanity, they are strong proofs in its favor. *Hallucinations of smell and taste* are much more rare; however, some of the disgusting acts of the insane, as the eating of human excrement, or the covering themselves with it, may be due to them.

I have observed in the blind that hallucinations of smell are not uncommon. Among the class of so-called degenerates this form is frequent, and may be of a sexual character. Religious

hallucinations are of frequent occurrence, in which God or the Virgin Mary or the devil may appear or may address them.

An illusion, according to Griesinger, is a "false interpretation of an external object." The distinction between it and a hallucination, therefore, lies in the fact that the object in the one case is not present, while in the other it is. *In illusions and hallucinations the perceptions in both cases are false.*

There is always some confusion in law in understanding these terms, often no distinction being made.

The remarks in regard to hallucinations involving the special senses and general sensibility apply equally to illusions. Perhaps, in regard to general sensibility, they are more frequent. Visceral disturbances or cutaneous states, being misinterpreted, lead oftener to illusions than hallucinations.

Delusions are erroneous or false conceptions which may result from hallucinations and illusions or be the result of false reasoning. A delusion may be defined as an absurd and unfounded belief (Foster).

Delusion has reference to the reason, differing in this respect from illusion and hallucination, which have to do with the senses. It involves, therefore, more seriously the mental processes, and is a surer indication of insanity.

It is not, however, always present in the insane, as Griesinger well says: "In many cases no special delusion is present, or at least none is exhibited, but the sentiments, dispositions, and conduct are altered in a morbid manner, and owing to a morbid state of the brain the individual is influenced, so that the healthy faculty of judgment is obscured, the intelligence formally involved, and the spirit held in bond."

Delusions vary in character, especially as they so often depend on false perceptions of the special senses. Their character depends largely also on the form of the mental disorder in which they appear.

Those occurring in the various forms of mania are generally of an expansive character, in which the *ego* has become so altered that changes in the personality occur. The person imagines himself some exalted personage, either a great general, or artist, or even God himself. Especially in this form do delusions of an erotic or religious character occur. The sexual element is frequently prominent in religious delusions. This may be ob-

served in those cases of religious delusion where young women having hallucinations of sight or hearing have had the delusion of being pregnant through the influence of the Holy Spirit.

Delusions may be systematized; by which we mean, there is usually some basis for their origin. It may indeed be an absurd one or have actually some ground for belief. In any case the patient has established a chain of logical reasoning, satisfactory to himself in explanation. Another element in this form of delusion is its permanence. They are as a rule few in number; indeed, there may be but one. They may exist for years, the intellectual faculty being but little impaired with the course of time.

Conjoined with this form of delusion is that of *persecution.* The process of reasoning in these cases is simple and logical. The *ego* or self-consciousness being unable to understand the various false perceptions received into consciousness, the individual arrives at the conclusion that, as he feels a definite change in his personality, he must be some personage of importance, but realizing that he is not so considered by others, he readily assumes the idea that some one is preventing him from assuming his proper position, and that, therefore, he is being persecuted.

It is a short step from this to delusion of suspicion, of being followed, etc.

Unsystematized delusions, to use a term which has fastened itself upon our nomenclature, are usually multiple, varying with the circumstances of the individual and the causes. There is not, as a rule, any attempt to explain them on the part of the patient; they simply arise, and, according to their character, cause elation or depression.

Especially in this form do we observe *sudden impulses arise, imperative conceptions* (Hamilton). The logical element is absent. They may be those of suspicion, of persecution, of changed personality, etc. In these cases, however, the intellect is much more involved—their tendency to disappear is, however, much greater than in the former kind. The immediate cause, as exhaustion, fear, worry, alcohol, toxic agents of various nature, being removed, they cease.

While delusions are, as we said, not necessary to a diagnosis of insanity, they are of great importance and perhaps the strong-

est evidence, when observed, that we possess. This is true in a medical as well as a legal sense.

The law, however, requires that the delusion shall have reference to the particular act committed, both in civil and criminal relations, and it is here that the great difference between the medical and legal aspect of the question of insanity manifests itself.

Another element in delusions is of great importance; that is, the concealment of them by the insane.

This is especially observed in systematized delusions; here the intellect not being involved to so great an extent, the person may with great cunning suppress them. A patient who has been many years under observation, and who considers himself a great mathematician as well as the inventor of a theory in regard to the ocean tides, has a systematized delusion of persecution.

Ordinarily nothing can be elicited from him in regard to it —to the general observer, he has the appearance of a dignified, learned gentleman. So long as he can see no object in speaking of himself the delusion is concealed; if, however, he thinks he has before him a person or audience with influence, he becomes loquacious to a degree in the expression and defence of his delusion.

Concealed delusions are of great importance in a legal aspect, and many instances could be cited from the courts showing how court and jury have been deceived by the cunning and skill of an insane person.

Lucid intervals may occur in the course of mental disease, and are of importance in a legal sense. Bucknill and Tuke define them "as consisting, not in a mere cessation of the violent symptoms of the disorder, but an interval in which the mind, having thrown off disease, has recovered its general habit. The party must be capable of forming a sound judgment of what he is doing, and his state of mind such that any indifferent person would think him capable to manage his own affairs." Ordronaux defines a lucid interval as "a suspension of the active manifestations of mental disorder. It does not imply complete restoration; it simply means restoration to a degree of enabling the party to judge soundly of the act." Lucid intervals not infrequently occur in melancholia and

mania, lasting sufficiently long to enable the patient to be fully cognizant of the legal responsibility of his acts, whether in civil or criminal relations. "In regard to criminal offences committed during a lucid interval, it is the opinion of many alienists that no person should be convicted under such circumstances, because there is a probability that he might at the time have been under that degree of cerebral irritation which renders a man insane. This remark applies especially to those instances in which the lucid interval is very short" (Taylor[1]).

A lucid interval in a legal sense, therefore, implies that a condition may arise during the continuance of mental disease, in which the individual may be able to understand his relations to the outer world; especially does this apply to his civil capacity. Where the act carried out is consonant with what is known of the character and wishes of the person, there seems to be nothing out of the way in this view. In a medical sense, especially in the so-called functional psychoses, it would seem reasonable to expect that in mental disease, as in the delirium of typhoid fever, there could occur intervals in which the self-consciousness would be able to reassert itself for a longer or shorter period.

The burden of proof in these cases would naturally rest with the side making the assertion. It is difficult to define the difference between a remission and a lucid interval, except perhaps, as we might say, the latter is more complete than the former.

In a remission there is a mere abatement of the symptoms. It has been said that a lucid interval is only a more perfect remission, and that, although the lunatic may act rationally and talk coherently, yet his brain is in an excitable state, and he labors under a greater disposition to a fresh attack of insanity than one whose mind has never been affected.

Of this there can be no doubt, but the same reasoning would show that insanity is never cured, for the predisposition to an attack is undoubtedly greater in a recovered lunatic than in one who is and always has been perfectly sane. Even admitting the correctness of this reasoning, it cannot be denied that lunatics do occasionally recover for a longer or shorter period to such a degree as to render them perfectly conscious of and legally responsible for their acts."[1]

[1] Taylor's "Medical Jurisprudence," 11th ed.

The statement that a lucid interval "consists not in a mere cessation of the violent symptoms of a disorder, but an interval in which the mind, having thrown off the disease, has recovered its general habit" (see Collinson on "Lunacy"), is hardly correct, for while we observe a return to a reasonable judgment in his acts, and "that any indifferent person would think him able to manage his own affairs," still it is rarely that we can say that there is a return to a normal state. The emotions still remain affected, the intellect shows evidence of improvement indeed, but were there a complete return there would no longer be a question of insanity at all. The law, in its attempt to be precise or exact, passes beyond the bounds of the probable or possible.

Memory is involved in all forms of insanity. When the consciousness is much affected, as in a profound condition of melancholia, it may be almost a complete blank. In mania, with its rapidity of ideas, it may appear as even accentuated, but this in reality is not the case. The passing conceptions have lasted for so short a period individually that they have made no permanent impression. All perceptions and conceptions require time and intensity to be properly received into the consciousness and be capable of recall—the image must at one time be a distinct one.

This loss of memory refers especially to matters of the present; past history may remain as clear in the consciousness as ever. While these statements are true in the main, yet even in profound depression it is not rare to find that the individual can recall many if not all of the incidents that have occurred. This is not so often true in mania. In dementia there may be a complete loss of memory, but this is general in character, no idea of time, place, or even of the identity of the person himself remaining.

More important are the temporary losses of memory during special emotional or paroxysmal conditions, as in the mania following epileptic seizures, or in cases which have been defined as mania transitoria. The importance of this condition is very apparent in a legal aspect. A complete blotting-out of all previous experiences may take place, the patient living only in the present, so that there are really two individualities. Rare instances in certain forms of mental disease are recorded, when, in

passing from one state to another, no recollection of the previous state is recognized in the succeeding one. Persons met or places seen are no part of the experience in the separate states. These statements are always to be received with caution, however, especially if any motive can be suspected.

Delirium is "a perversion of the mental processes, the perversion being manifested in speech or action. The disturbance is characterized by incoherent speech, hallucinations, illusions and delusions, restlessness, watchfulness, apparently purposeless actions, inability to fix the attention. Delirium in a general sense implies disorder of the mind, and according to this definition is equivalent to insanity." [1]

From the fact that in delirium the patient is subject to delusions frequently accompanied by hallucinations and illusions of sight and hearing, this term is frequently used for, and confused with, delusion.

While delirium, either active or quiet, is often present in well-defined mental disease, it is more frequently due to either the exhaustion of the disease or accompanies the initial acute onset as in acute mania. It is rather a physical sign of mental disorder, following upon the various false perceptions and conceptions.

It is a mistake to speak, therefore, of various forms of delirium, as delirium grandiosum, delirium epileptoid, etc. The condition is simply the result in the first case of delusion of grandeur and general exaltation common to mania and especially to the earlier stages of general paralysis.

The proof of this statement is shown by the fact that in the various fevers, as typhoid and pneumonia, or in toxic conditions caused by various drugs, similar stages are common, and while they are truly mental disturbances, and therefore manifest themselves by disturbances in the field of feeling, thought, and volition, we do not consider such states as forms of mental disease.

In a legal sense the question would naturally and only arise in regard to responsibility, and the general rule would apply that where there is such a loss of consciousness as to prevent any knowledge of the act, all responsibility ends.

Heredity as an aid in diagnosis is of vast importance, as

[1] Tuke: "Dict. of Psych. Medicine."

can be seen from the importance in which it is held, as an etiological factor. It has especial value when the disease is directly received from the parents or even when a predisposition to mental disease can be presumed from the existence of various conditions in the parents or even collateral branches, as nervous diseases, alcoholism, or consanguinity. It is admitted as legal evidence in criminal and civil cases.

"The degree of hereditary taint may to a certain degree be ascertained and estimated. Thus the insanity of one parent would indicate a less degree of predisposition than that of a parent and an uncle, and still less than that of a parent and grandparent or of two parents. The insanity of a parent and a grandparent with an uncle or aunt in the same line, may be held to indicate even stronger predisposition than the insanity of both parents. The influence of the insanity of parents in creating a predisposition will depend to a great extent upon whether it has taken place before or after the state of parentage commenced. The insanity of a parent occurring after the birth of a child, if it arises from a cause adequate to excite it, without previous predisposition, would, of course, be held as of no value in the formation of an hereditary tendency. The insanity of brothers or sisters may be of much or little value, as evidence of predisposition, according to the circumstances under which it has shown itself. If several of them, both older and younger than the patient, have become insane, the fact shows strongly in favor of predisposition, although neither parent nor grandparent may have been lunatics; since it is well known that other conditions in the parent besides that of actual insanity may create this predisposition; for instance, violent and habitual passion, the debility of old age, and most of all, habits of intemperance at the time of procreation. It will thus be seen that the evidence of hereditary predisposition may be of such a character as to render the insanity of the patient an event in the highest degree probable; or, on the other hand, it may be so weak as to add a scarcely appreciable amount of probability to the character of the disease."[1]

Previous attacks must be considered as strong evidence in favor of insanity, especially when the act committed bears on its face signs of being irrational or lacking motive. Its

[1] Bucknill and Tuke: "Psychological Medicine."

importance is much increased if it can be shown that the present attack commenced in a similar manner with the previous one. It has long been observed that succeeding attacks follow the same course, even in detail, of those preceding them.

This can be observed in periodical insanity, and is of special interest, as months or years may elapse between the different seizures.

Again, complete recovery from even the simple psychoses is difficult to predicate, as there is frequently left a change or at least an instability in the emotional and intellectual condition.

Slight attacks, if due to some adequate cause, as domestic loss, financial reverses, injuries, or some special illness as fevers, have not as much weight.

While these special signs of mental disease are more or less marked in every case, there is also to be observed the general change in the individual himself. A most important indication is whether the disposition, which may have been lively, has become the reverse, whether extravagance or parsimony is present in contradistinction from the usual habit.

Excesses, alcoholic or venereal, occurring in a person whose life has been previously correct, even without any evidence of delusion or other signs, is significant.

Somatic Indications.

Physical or somatic conditions are of importance, especially in certain forms of mental disease, as *tremor, paralysis, loss or exaggeration of the reflexes, contraction or inequality of the pupils, interference with articulation*, which may become involved or clumsy, interference with general nutrition, etc.

Hæatoma Auris—Insane Ear.—Among the insane, especially the chronic, this affection of the ear is not uncommon. Is is difficult to say that it can be regarded as a sign, for we find it among the sane, especially pugilists, who are exposed to blows in this region. M. D. Field showed this in a number of cases which he described among this class of professionals.

However, it cannot be denied that, outside of the consideration of injuries received by the insane, this condition appears very frequently, and must be regarded as an indication of defective nutrition.

Facial Expression in the Insane.

Various types of mental disease are often characterized by special facial expression. Physiognomy is of considerable importance, especially in the class of patients coming under the head of the so-called degenerative types. We find among the insane irregularity of features, especially noted in the ears, which show various malformations in the structure of the helix or rim of the ear, and in the lobe. The former is not infrequently very much flattened so as to be almost absent. The lobe is often adherent or deficient. There may also be a tendency for the ears to stand out far from the head. The whole structure may be very much deformed. This condition is usually a congenital one.

The eyes and orbits are also frequently irregular, the almond shape being not uncommon, or one eyebrow being higher than the one on the opposite side, or there being an inequality in the size of the eyeballs.

The nose and jaw may show peculiarities, and there is not infrequently facial asymmetry. The cranial measurements show asymmetrical conditions or excessive developments beyond the physiological limits. The palate, especially in congenital conditions, is frequently very highly arched.

Many of the insane, it must be remembered, however, present almost classical features and typically correct cranial measurements, while excessive deviations are frequently observed among our most distinguished and highly gifted men.

The expression of the face as shown in various well-defined mental disorders can be classified under a few heads. In melancholia the angles of the mouth are usually depressed, the forehead wrinkled, the eyes downcast, and there is an appearance of despair associated with mental anxiety. The features are also extremely immobile and fixed. This condition has various grades of development. At times, the mental agony, as expressed in the wrinkling of the forehead, is the essential feature. Where the dementia is more marked and mental action has been more completely stopped, the simple depression as shown in the lower part of the face and mouth is the most prominent feature. Delusions, if present, of sight or hearing,

will again give an expression of attention in these directions, the patient appearing to see and watch for something or to listen attentively. If fear be present, the attitude will be expressive of this condition.

Fig. 1.—Melancholia.

In mania there is the reverse of what has been described. The features are mobile, constantly changing, and there is an appearance of pleasure and exaltation. The eye is bright and constantly changing its position. Here the hallucinations come and go more rapidly, and lead to a marked facility of expression, changing with each new emotion. Fear and delusions of persecution show themselves by an alertness of expression and an energy of resistance. (See photographs of Mental Disease.)

In paranoia, while perhaps not showing any well-defined expression, to the experienced eye the face reveals a sense of general self-satisfaction which is peculiar to the disease. Vanity and personal pride in their physical appearance is a marked feature. The fear of opposition or persecution so commonly present, but ascribed to envy of

Fig. 2.—Mania.

personal attainments or ability, or physical superiority, is here seen.

Fig. 3.—Dementia.

Dementia manifests itself chiefly by loss of expression, or vacuity. This is interrupted from time to time in less advanced cases by expressions of joy or depression, according as the emotions are excited by corresponding delusions or hallucinations. In chronic cases where the delusion has become fixed, the expression remains permanent and depends on its nature.

Fig. 4.—General Paresis.

In general paralysis the face is characteristic of the disease. There is usually a washing-out of the particular lines characteristic of the individual—a blankness and flatness almost diagnostic of this disease. There is rarely, however, any appearance of depression or anxiety, but rather that of fatuous placidity.

Too much importance has been attached to the facial expression in the insane, the rolling eye, the hair standing erect, giving a wild appearance to the individual. The hair may become coarse and thick in chronic mania, and in melancholia it may become thin; these states are, however, dependent on the general state of nutrition. Certainly in acute cases of mania I have not observed any special change. The scalp may in cases, usually of imbecility or dementia, especially in hereditary or congenital diseases, be formed into folds or rugæ. Some such cases have been reported, and I have had one under my observation—the hair was coarse and thick. Many of these ideas have been handed down by tradition. The malingerer usually attempts such a characterization.

Changes in Manners and Habits.

An important sign of mental disease is a complete change in manner of living and in dress. The more distinct this is, the more valuable does it become. If a sedate, methodical man becomes prodigal and profligate, or if he becomes depressed and sees nothing but ruin and loss when there is no cause for it, we must regard it as a strong indication of mental disturbance. It is necessary to inquire carefully into the previous habits; often latent tendencies, when the balance of self-control is removed by disease, will develop themselves. Every one is more or less influenced and controlled by his surroundings; what makes a person honest or moral is frequently simply his regard for the opinions of others; if this feeling is removed by emotional excitement or depression, acts of a character entirely foreign to what has been known of the character of the individual may be committed.

The appearance and dress are often strong indications of insanity.

The emotion which is predominant, or *the delusion which prevails*, frequently leads to gross carelessness in dress; a general lack of order and method in all personal arrangements, and in home and business relations is usually present. Erotic tendencies may lead to ornamentation of the person, or to indecent exposure of the person. Again, if the delusion of being some important personage is present, there may be a tendency to

decoration of the person with innumerable medals, often of a perfectly valueless character.

An epileptic long under my observation always decorated his coat with any badges of the various societies, city departments, as the police, fire, etc., which he could obtain. These were of absolutely no value, but afforded him infinite pleasure, as showing the importance with which he was regarded.

This is especially noticed in the chronic insane, who are apt to decorate themselves with any bright colors which they can obtain.

Sudden changes are of especial significance. Mere exaggeration of natural characteristics does not have so much weight.

Due consideration must also be given to a provocative cause if present. Loss of friends or property, or any annoyance, produce an exaggeration of feeling and action, which, although normal in character, is increased beyond that found in the sane. The action and gestures are important, different forms of mental disturbance manifesting themselves in special ways. The maniacal are restless and constantly in motion; they never seem to tire, their muscular system seeming to correspond to their mental state. As no two thoughts or ideas are the same or continue long, so their motions and gestures never remain long the same. In depression the attitude is often expressive of the despair within them. "It cannot be called acting, since it is real, and hence arises the most frequent cause of failure in attempts to simulate insanity."

Eye Symptoms.

These are of importance more especially in organic diseases. There cannot be said to be anything diagnostic in them in the so-called functional psychoses, as melancholia or mania, as they are not constant, depending on the physical state or nutrition.

Dr. Clifford Allbutt found in fifty-one cases of mania in the West Riding Asylum, which he examined, anæmia of the optic disc.

In general paresis inequality of the pupils is common, or there may be marked myosis. The Argyll-Robertson pupil is also present and perhaps has especially connection with cases involving disease of the spinal cord. According to Mickle in his work on general paresis, marked contraction of the pupil

succeeded by dilatation is a bad sign. The optic nerve not infrequently shows evidence of hyperæmia in general paresis, and it may even go on to atrophy. These conditions are not present, as a rule, except in the later stages of the disease. Rarely do we find ptosis or strabismus.

Aphasia in Insanity.

Aphasia is generally due to a lesion within the brain involving the cortex area for speech or regions in the internal capsule, pons, and medulla. The motor centre for speech in the cortex is in the third frontal convolution, while the sensory perceptive centres are posterior, in the parietal and temporal lobes. The two forms of aphasia are motor and sensory. The former represents an inability to articulate words with or without a loss of memory of the word or name itself. Sensory aphasia implies a loss of the power to understand spoken or written language, resulting in word-deafness or word-blindness. This latter condition especially indicates some mental impairment, and in fact in most cases we find loss of emotional control. Such persons are easily provoked to laughter or tears. The memory of present events may be impaired.

The question of responsibility, civil or criminal, is one of considerable importance in these cases. It is perfectly possible, especially in motor aphasia, for the patient, although unable to speak, to possess a full comprehension of his surroundings and of what is presented to him, either in words or in writing. In sensory aphasia the question is more doubtful, if neither writing or spoken language is intelligible. This latter condition in the double state is, however, very rare, and if the disease were so extensive, other symptoms showing marked evidence of dementia would probably be present. Where, therefore, as in making a will or executing legal documents, there is nothing inconsistent with the previous character of the patient in the statements made, or where no motive is shown which is contrary to what would be naturally expected from the previous character and actions of the patient, the person should be considered as capable, and as possessing sound reasoning power. This is often of great importance where estates have been devised away from the immediate relations.

Aphasia as a symptom in mental disease is commonly ob-

served in general paralysis. It is usually of short duration and liable to recurrence. It is frequently associated with hemiplegia and in most cases due to a meningeal hemorrhage. It, however, occurs at times as an isolated symptom and is of importance in point of diagnosis.

This is not to be confounded with the difficulty of articulation which is one of the common symptoms in paresis.

It is usually in connection with paralysis, *i.e.*, hemiplegia, that we have to consider aphasia, and especially in civil cases. The well-known Parish will case is an example.

Masturbation should be regarded as a symptom rather than a cause of insanity. It occurs in various forms of insanity, as paranoia, for example; in fact, most cases of so-called masturbational insanity are to be classified with this disease. We especially note the erotic and religious type. It is common also among epileptics, general paretics, and in dementia resulting from melancholia and mania. It is a sign of mental impairment, indicating a loss of the higher ethical nature of the individual. It may occur as a symptom in senility, where the most shameless and open practice of it may be carried on. Savage refers to a case in a chronic lunatic of over ninety years of age.

The same is observed among idiots and imbeciles. It may exist as an exciting cause of insanity or as an active agent in continuing the mental disorder, and, by its effects on general nutrition, prevent recovery.

"**Handwriting** must be looked upon as a highly developed method of muscular expression, and as such will be affected by any nervous states or conditions which affect the nervous control and the distribution of nervous energy. Persons suffering from any form of nervous exhaustion will show it in their methods of expression, the result being want of clearness and definiteness."[1]

We have two points to consider in the letters of the insane, the contents and the handwriting itself.

In some cases they are a direct help in diagnosis, especially in the formation of the letters as evidencing tremor or again in the omission or repetition of certain letters in a word.

This is especially seen in general paralysis of the insane;

[1] Tuke: "Dict. of Psych. Medicine."

early in the disease, perhaps one of the first signs to be observed when the person has acted in the capacity of an accountant, there will be tremor causing indistinctness of the lines—again misspelled words are frequent. At times again the letters form no definite word.

In the first three specimens here shown of well-marked general paresis—all represent educated men. Fig. 5 was an expert

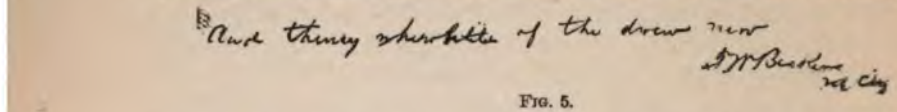


FIG. 5.

accountant. The attempt to write, "And they whistled as they drew near," is unintelligible; there is, however, very little tremor.

The confusion in the formation of the words is not unlike the indistinctness of the articulation in these cases.

Fig. 6 is a letter of an educated man, a lawyer and college

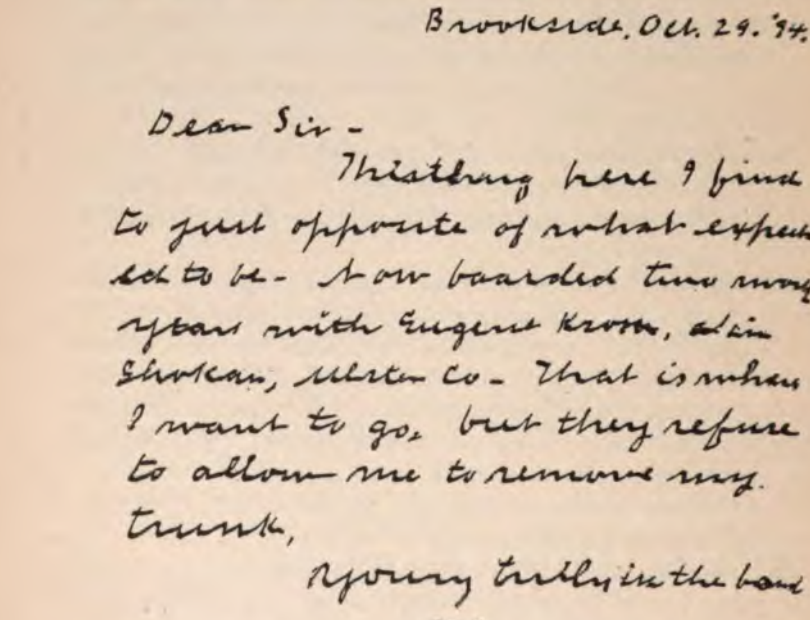
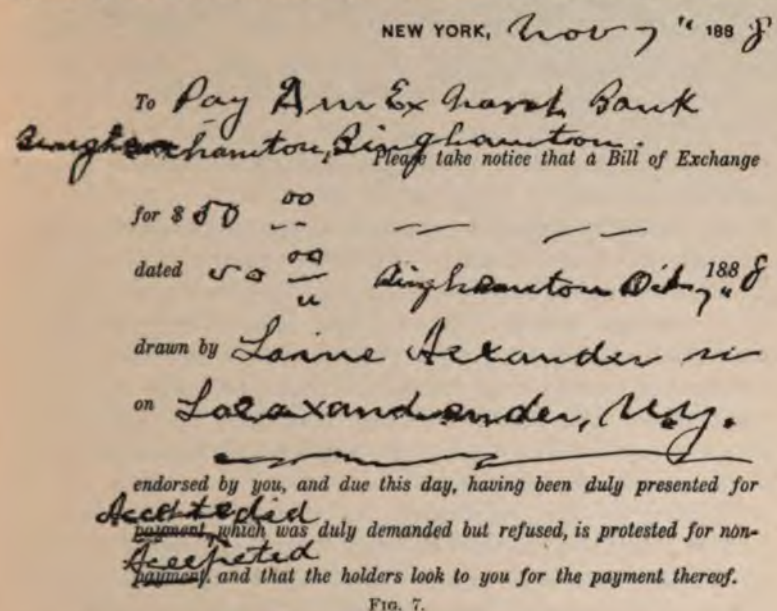


FIG. 6.

graduate. The tremor is well marked, and the omission of certain words necessary to complete the sense. There is no

structure to the sentence and the two words "this" and "thing" are run into one.

Fig. 7 is an instance showing the mental confusion, the misspelling, the repetition of syllables, and the tremor characteris-


NEW YORK, Nov 7 " 188 8

To Pay Am Ex Search Bank

Binghamton, Binghamton,

Please take notice that a Bill of Exchange

for $ 50 00

dated 50 00 Binghamton Dec 7 " 188 8

drawn by Laine Alexander

on Laxander Alexander, Esq.

endorsed by you, and due this day, having been duly presented for payment, which was duly demanded but refused, is protested for non-payment, and that the holders look to you for the payment thereof.

Fig. 7.

tic of these cases. This man had for years been engaged in serving notice in cases of notes going to protest.

One peculiarity in most of these cases is the apparent absolute ignorance of anything wrong about their productions; they appear perfectly satisfactory, and even when unable to read them, they are satisfied. This is the case long before the final stage of dementia has taken place, and while the delusions of grandeur and ideas of great wealth and wonderful plans are most prominent.

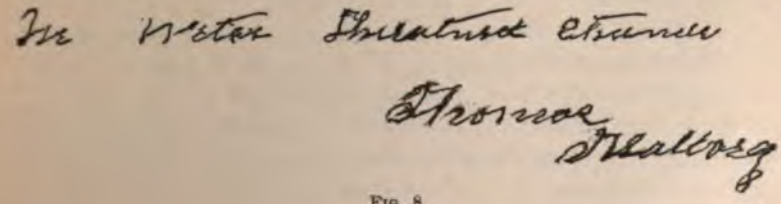


Fig. 8.

Figs. 8 and 9 illustrate the excessive tremor which is commonly present.

Tremor alone is insufficient to form a diagnosis on, as it is

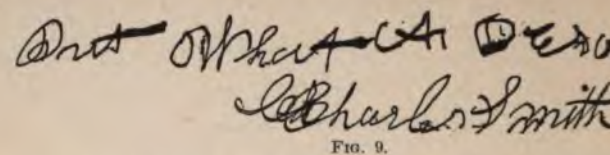


FIG. 9.

present in various other conditions, as in alcoholism, mercurialism, old age, etc.

In chronic mania there is a tendency to almost endless letter-writing, one subject being followed by another. No class of patients in our asylums are such voluminous writers as these. Here we find special characteristics, as the underscoring of words, the frequent use of capitals. This is especially seen in paranoiacs, where the egotism of the writer becomes very apparent. Where delusions pertaining to religion are present, the words God and Christ are very frequent, and usually underscored and in large letters.

Rhyming is not infrequent.

The letters may be the only sign for a long time of any mental disturbance and are of importance in this direction. A delusion may be concealed before others, but the strong belief in it may find expression in letters. *This is often observed in paranoia.* Letters of the most obscene character may be written.

The contents are often diagnostic of the form of the disease. In mania we have long epistles, carelessly written, with frequent omissions of words and letters; in hypochondria there is the dwelling on the personal ailments in great detail, the various hallucinations and delusions are minutely described. This is not rare among melancholics. Tuke quotes Dr. Bacon's summary of the important points of handwriting in relation to the insane as follows:

(1) The handwriting as illustrating chronic insanity; (2) as illustrating acute attacks; (3) as rarely the only evidence of insanity; (4) as a sign of convalescence; (5) as evidencing an oncoming attack; (6) as illustrating phases of cases of ordinary mania; (7) as showing the changes in handwriting in general paralysis.

In concluding the description of the indications I would designate the conditions of melancholia or depression and mania or exaltation as mental states, rather than definite diseases. In taking up the various forms of insanity, we shall observe that both these conditions are common to all the various forms of mental disease.

Dementia can be considered as the final stage toward which all insanity tends, where recovery does not take place.

In its completed form there is absence of the functional activity of mind. We have, therefore, an absence of all perception and conception; there is merely a vegetative existence. Hallucinations and delusions are absent, only the somatic signs, as interference with nutrition, tremor, pupillary changes, etc., are present.

Melancholia is "a condition of depression marked by a feeling of misery in excess of what is justified by the circumstances in which the individual is placed" (Kirchhoff).

Mania, like melancholia, is one of the primal elements of mental disease, and is a term which has been used from the earliest days. In our simpler classification it represented one of the chief forms of insanity, as melancholia did on the other side, the final stages of both these conditions being represented by dementia. This classification was long used, and is still employed in our hospitals, all cases being put under those three heads irrespective of the varying conditions under which they appear. Of late years, we know that mania may appear in various well-defined mental states which represent distinct diseases, and of which mania itself is simply one of various symptoms—as, for instance, mania in general paralysis, in hysteria, in puerperal fever, or again in alcoholism, etc.

Mania may be defined as consisting of great excitement characterized by increased mental activity, as shown in the great number of mental impressions or perceptions constantly received, and most frequently given out by continuous speech.

General Pathology.

In our classification of mental disease based on the pathological condition found in the brain, we divide insanity into the so-called functional and organic forms. Among the former we

do not find evidence of marked disease of the vessels of the brain, its membranes or structure ; while in the latter we find changes in some or all of these structures. In mania and melancholia, functional diseases, anæmia or congestion is present. In melancholia there may be a tendency to thromboses of cerebral sinuses, especially the longitudinal sinus. It is probable, however, that many of these thromboses occur a short time before death, so that it is questionable whether they can be considered as etiological factors in the disease. Hyperæmia, active or passive, is always difficult of recognition post mortem; similar conditions are frequently found in cases associated with high temperature, with or without delirium, in which no evidence of mental disturbance has been present clinically; while again in some cases of *mania grave*, slight, if any, changes outside of congestion, which may not be marked, are found. Anæmia of the brain is present in most diseases of an exhausting nature, as phthisis, and while in phthisis we not infrequently have insanity of a definite type peculiar to that disease, it is on the whole rare. In the so-called degenerative types of mental disease where heredity is an important factor in its causation, or where insanity has resulted in the course of well-known neuroses, such as epilepsy, hysteria, neurasthenia, and hypochondria, no definite pathological changes characteristic of these diseases have been found. In the more chronic forms of these so-called functional diseases, where secondary dementia is present, it is not unusual to find arterial changes, as thickening of the walls of the vessels, or an increase in the neuroglia tissue, with atrophy of the nerve cells and nerve fibres. These changes, however, are not distinctive of these special diseases, either as to localization or as to character, not infrequently being present where mental disease has not manifested itself. In some cases of epileptic insanity, it has been held that the frontal lobes show special signs of atrophy, or that the temporal lobes (Meynert) give evidence of connective-tissue changes with cellular degeneration. In organic diseases of the brain, as in general paralysis of the insane, we find inflammation of the dura mater with thickening associated with great increase of new blood-vessels, which frequently, on account of the thinness of their walls, lead to hemorrhages giving rise to pachymeningitis interna hemorrhagica. Again, there may be thickening of the

pia mater with adhesions between it and the dura mater as well as the brain substance. The structure of the cortex of the brain gives also evidence of disease, being atrophied and showing slight punctate depressions which give it a worm-eaten appearance. This is probably caused by obstructions in the small capillaries entering from the pia into the substance of the brain. We not infrequently find along lymph tracts deposits of a hyaline nature. The vessels themselves are frequently thickened, and probably the seat of slight cortical hemorrhages. The neuroglia tissue is increased; the nerve cells are atrophied and vacuolated, their processes lost, and in their interior we find granular substances, pigment, etc. The association fibres which connect functionally adjoining groups of cells and different areas of the brain are also involved, explaining perhaps the loss of association of ideas, and consequently of memory and judgment so frequently seen in general paresis. In syphilitic insanity we find changes pointing specially to arterial disease. The walls of the vessels are thickened, and an infiltration of a gummatous character decreases the lumen, leading to atrophy following loss of nutrition from partial or complete thrombosis. We may thus have in these cases more or less dementia. Insanity dependent upon alcoholism generally shows affections of the membranes of the brain, while in the brain structure there may be diseased vessels with increase of the neuroglia tissue and atrophy of the cortex cells. It is not surprising, therefore, that both of these latter diseases may have symptoms resembling general paresis, and may be not infrequently taken for that disease. In idiocy and imbecility, we have to deal with defective structure of the brain. The defects found are either atrophy, as seen in microcephaly or hydrocephalus with enlarged ventricles resulting in great decrease in the depth of the cortical substance; or we may find partial or complete absence of certain portions of the brain structure, as the greater part of the cerebrum, the basal ganglia only being present. The morbid changes in imbecility are of a similar nature, but the lesions have not been so destructive. Many of these changes seem inadequate to explain the various forms of insanity in a clinical aspect. H. A. Tomlinson, in a recent article entitled "The Inadequacy of the Morbid Changes Found

Post Mortem to Explain the Manifestations of Insanity," well says after a study of twenty-four cases: "A further proof of the want of significance of these changes in explanation of mental perversion is found in the facts that in an individual, no matter whether the condition be one of violent delirium or profound depression, if the attack has been acute, identical changes in the cortex and meninges will be presented, sometimes varying in their locality and extent, but never materially in their character. Again, there appears the implication that these may not stand in the relation of a causative factor to the mental perversion, and that the histological changes found do not result directly from the manifestations of mental perversion, but indirectly through impaired nutrition and exhaustion following in the wake of excessive motor activity accompanying insanity —an auto-intoxication resulting from impaired or inhibited somatic activity. A further fact seldom referred to, but stated elsewhere by the writer in this relation, is the evidence furnished by primary and terminal dementia. Either of them may, and often do, proceed to a degree involving mental annihilation without interfering with the somatic activities which are automatically performed, and yet post mortem no distinct histological changes are to be found. Whether mental activity is represented in the most unstable cells of the cortex independently, or whether, as I believe, it is represented synchronously with motor generative activity, and is the reflex of an association of all somatic activity, has not been demonstrated, and may not be capable of demonstration; but the latter would seem to be the most reasonable assumption from the data we have; especially as it will most definitely explain the absence of distinctive changes in the mental perversion, and the uniformity of change in associated mental and somatic impairment or destruction. The first point to study in the pathology of insanity is that we have to deal with alterations, not destruction of function. The activities involved are the same in amount and kind in both normal and abnormal mental function."

Nothing definite has been established in regard to the so-called criminal brain. The Italian school, especially among others Lombroso, have brought forward many interesting facts in reference to the convolutions and fissures in their efforts to establish a special type, but they are far from conclusive.

The weight also shows but little difference from those of the normal brain. Bischoff[1] compared 137 brains of criminals with 422 normal, and found but little difference.

The difference between the two hemispheres is not significant. Giacomeni found in 42 criminal brains the right hemisphere heavier in 20 cases, the left in 18, while 2 were equal.

Benedikt reports that in 16 criminal brains he found the cerebellum not covered by the cerebral hemispheres in six instances, and in three cases but partially so.

The author is a strong advocate of the criminal type of brain.

Bevan Lewis remarks that "our studies of the pathology of insanity would impress us with the important principle, that whenever the nervous elements of the cortex are primarily the seat of disease originating mental derangement, then the implication of the sphere of mind tends always to be more generally or universally involved; but where the nerve changes are secondarily induced as the result of vascular disease, the greater tendency is shown toward a local or partial implication of that sphere. Hence we find that whereas in ordinary uncomplicated acute insanity (acute mania or melancholia) the territorial implication is a very general one, although invariably expressed at certain sites more than at others; yet that in certain insanities (*i.e.*, general paralysis) special sites of election are taken by the diseased process, one area being affected after the other, until ultimately the localizing character of the ailment fades into a widespread general implication."

CLASSIFICATION.

"The exigencies of affairs compelled the lawyers themselves to construct one of the earliest classifications of insanity, namely, that well-known one of Lord Coke, who divided insane persons into (1) idiots from birth; (2) the accidentally insane who have wholly lost memory and understanding; (3) those who have lucid intervals; and (4) those who deprive themselves of understanding by vicious actions, as drunkards. Like all kinds of insanity which have any interest for lawyers, it is based upon the mental qualities and conditions, and not upon the physical

[1] "Hirngewicht d. Mensch." Wien, 1880.

substratum. It is this point which more than any other we are bound always to bear in mind in the consideration of the diagnosis of insanity for legal purposes." As the writer further says, it is not (disease) as the cause of disease in which law interests itself, but rather the product of that disease. This is, however, only begging the question, for we all acknowledge that insanity is simply a group of symptoms, the result of disease of the brain.

This subject has engaged the attention of all writers, so that we have had presented many and various divisions. The etiological classification has always received many supporters, and has its advantages in so far as it definitely defines the character of the disease. It leads, however, into a very complex subdivision which is of little value in a medico-legal sense. *The law recognizes simply the fact of insanity, not its particular form, it is interested only secondarily in the latter in so far as it explains the degree of impairment of the mental faculties.* "The medical terms are not recognized in law—the legal terms are dementia naturalis, which is equivalent to idiocy and imbecility, and dementia adventitia or acquired insanity."[1]

Krafft-Ebing has in his classification carried out this idea in some respects, as he divides all insanity into that of the undeveloped brain and that of the fully developed brain.

In the first division fall idiocy and imbecility, corresponding, therefore, to "dementia naturalis," while in the second come all the true forms of mental disease or insanity proper, corresponding to dementia adventitia, or acquired insanity.

He further bases his division of the various forms of insanity on the pathological changes found. All insanity must be ascribed to disease of the brain, either of a functional (nutritional) or organic character. Under the first head will come the so-called functional forms of mental disease, as melancholia and mania, and also he includes here the large class of degeneratives in which the element of heredity is the most important factor, as well as the forms of insanities following from the various neuroses, as epilepsy, chorea, etc. Under the second head are included those diseases due to organic disease of the brain. We have here a practical basis for subdivision of the

[1] J. Dixon Mann: "Forensic Medicine and Toxicology."

various forms of insanity, retaining the advantages of the etiological plan.

The attempt to divide insanities into those affecting the emotions and those involving the intellect and will, as has been done by Griesinger and Maudsley, seems to be based on a false principle. It is rare to find a distinct form of either class. If we include melancholia and mania as under this head, and as therefore being essentially emotional states, we are confronted with many cases where the intellect is also affected as shown by the presence of well-defined delusions. This last-named state implies an affection of the intellect, for delusion cannot take place without thought or conception. Again, in delusional insanity or the various organic forms, as general paresis, there is always emotional disturbance. We must conceive of the mind as a whole, in which no one element can be affected without to a greater or less extent affecting the integrity of the rest.

There is no doubt, at times, an involvement of the emotions, almost to the exclusion of the other function, and as a rule it does not imply as serious a lesion.

With some few modifications I will give Krafft-Ebing's classification:

A. Psychical Disease of the Developed Brain.

I. Functional neuroses or diseases without a pathological basis.

(1) *Melancholia* (inhibition of mental action).
   a. Melancholia simplex.
   b. Melancholia cum stupore.
(2) *Mania*.
   a. Mania with exaltation.
   b. Mania with frenzy.
(3) *Confusional insanity*, or primary dementia.
(4) *Stuporous insanity*.
(5) *Secondary dementia*.
   a. With agitation.
   b. With apathy.

II. Psychical degenerations, that is, diseased conditions of the developed brain, inherited or acquired.

(1) *Constitutional affective insanity* (folie raisonnante).

Moral insanity.
Impulsive insanity.
Transitory mania.
Kleptomania.
Pyromania.
Dipsomania.
Homicidal mania.
Suicidal mania.

(2) *Paranoia.*
a. Primary.
b. Acquired.
1. Typical form (with delusions of persecution and grandeur).
2. Questioning paranoia.
3. Religious paranoia.
4. Erotic paranoia (sexual perversion).

(3) *Periodical insanity*—circular insanity.
(4) *Insanity from constitutional neuroses.*
a. Neurasthenic insanity.
Agoraphobia.
Claustrophobia.
Aërophobia.
Zoöphobia.
b. Epileptic insanity.
c. Hysterical insanity.
d. Hypochondriacal insanity.

III. Cerebral disease with constant pathological changes, or organic psychoses.
(1) *Acute delirium.*
(2) *General paresis* (dementia paralytica).
(3) *Syphilitic insanity.*
(4) *Alcoholic insanity.*
(5) *Senile insanity.*

B. Arrested Cerebral Development.

(1) Idiocy.
a. With predominant intellectual defect.
b. With predominant ethical defect (primary moral weakness).

The mere statement of the varieties of insanity as given by the College of Physicians may be useful, although it can scarcely be placed under the head of a classification:

Mania.
Melancholia.
Dementia.
Imbecility.
Idiocy.
General paralysis.
Puerperal insanity.
Insanity of puberty.
Climacteric insanity.
Senile insanity.
Toxic insanity (alcohol, gout, lead, etc.).
Delirium tremens.
Traumatic insanity.
Insanity associated with obvious morbid change or changes in the brain.
Consecutive insanity, from fevers, visceral inflammations.

SPECIAL FORMS OF INSANITY DESCRIBED.

Following our classification we first take up the simple psychoses and those mental diseases characterized by a loss of responsibility in civil and criminal relations.

Melancholia.—Melancholia is characterized by marked mental depression, with or without cause. There is usually what may be termed mental neuralgia; the patient is centred in himself, and ascribes his trouble to some act of his own. Hallucinations, illusions, and delusions may or may not be present. Those of hearing are more common than those of sight. Voices condemnatory in character are not infrequently heard. Sin against God, which is held as unpardonable, is frequently assumed. Life becomes wearisome from the tedium of one constant idea which cannot be driven away, and which absorbs the patient to the exclusion of all other thought. In extreme cases he is unconscious of his surroundings, and frequently assumes an attitude of despair or one of petition. The physical condition manifests itself by marked anæmia, loss of appetite—dependent often upon delusions, as of the fear of poisoning—emacia-

tion, and insomnia. The pupils are frequently dilated, the pulse is slow and feeble. This condition may remain for several weeks or months, the earliest signs of recovery manifesting themselves by the recognition on the part of the patient of his delusions as such, and an improvement in his physical condition,

FIG. 10.—Melancholia. Shows very characteristically the attitude assumed in melancholia of the passive form—suicidal. M. S., female, æt. 21, single; admitted to the hospital March, 1893. Patient has apparently no delusions, but cries and moans constantly and has suicidal tendencies. Death occcured in June, 1894, from phthisis.

principally shown by an increase in weight. The terminal condition of this state, when recovery does not take place, is in secondary dementia.

Melancholia comprises, therefore, all those morbid states in which depression of a painful character is the cardinal symptom. It may more especially involve either the *emotions* or the *intellect*. In the simple form there is usually an absence of delusions or hallucinations; in fact, these are often later

symptoms, dependent upon and arising from the depression (Savage).

Melancholia is indeed a symptom in many of the different forms of insanity, but must in these relations be considered in a different light from the recognized psychosis. In true melancholia there is "a complete process in itself." It passes through certain stages, and its course of development can be followed.

Holtzendorff defines melancholia as a disease the essence of which is a painful depression of mind, which is not justified by any sufficient cause, being an expression of a morbid trouble of the cerebral function. Those affected feel sad without reason, anxious, discouraged, troubled by gloomy thoughts, cares, and doubts. They feel themselves and their relations with the outer world changed; they are indifferent to their interests in life; their usual occupations become difficult, even impossible, for them. Thought is checked; certain painful ideas are constantly before them (compulsory ideas), excluding or driving out all other ideas and thus destroying all volition. There is usually, at least at first, a clear recognition of this state by the patient, so that he feels himself under some mysterious control, often ascribing it to electricity or hypnotism. Subsequently *hallucinations and illusions* of the senses arise, which are not infrequently rather secondary to the depression than its

FIG. 11.—Melancholia. Exhibits typical facial expression of anxiety in melancholiacs. Patient, æt. 53, female, widow, had an acute attack at age of 33; had delusions of hearing, and at times is violent.

cause. The mental agony may become so extreme that there is loss of self-consciousness, the individual becoming oblivious to his surroundings. Such conditions (*raptus melancholicus*) may occur in *hypochondriacs*, *epileptics*, *hysterics*, and in *alcoholics*, but the duration is brief and the course of the disease is irregular. The physical and mental symptoms generally go hand in hand. The face has an anxious expression, the forehead is wrinkled, often characteristically, with special lines over and between the eyes (see Fig. 11). The general nutrition is impaired, the digestion is poor, flatulence is common, the skin is dry, the hands and feet are cold and blue, the cardiac action is weak, the pupils are usually dilated. There may be marked insomnia or the sleep may be restless, with little feeling of refreshment on rising. The patient is frequently the victim of subjective sensations of numbness, or there may even be anæsthesia. These states lead to hallucinations or delusions in many cases. A feeling as if the skin were pinched, as described by a man under my observation, was instantly ascribed to spirits about to seize him, and while perhaps laughing at the idea while speaking of it, he was unable to cast it aside when alone. There may be marked mental weakness, even approaching dementia; but this is rare, the patients usually being able on their recovery to relate all the instances, or many of them, occurring during their illness. The refusal to speak or perform any act when requested is often due to a delusion; they may hear a voice advising them not to do it.

The refusal to take food, which is so common among melancholiacs, is usually based on some delusion, rather than sensory anæsthesia to the pangs of hunger. There may be the belief that the food is poisoned or that the stomach is diseased and can no longer digest it. Suicide is common and may be an impulsive act or a deliberate one. Where the fear of being killed is present, to escape from it suicide may be attempted.

A boy, æt. 18, brought up in the lowest part of New York, after losing his position, became depressed and heard voices calling him opprobrious names, with threats of killing him. He applied to the police for protection and was sent to the asylum. He was completely filled with the terror of being killed, crying out constantly for protection and saying that he had done nothing. To escape this constant fear, he attempted suicide.

Homicide is not rare in the agitated or excited cases. Where excessive misery or want has been a causative agent in the disease, there may be the desire and wish to relieve the victims from like suffering, or the fear that, after killing themselves, the children, for instance, may be left without support. Again, when the belief of having committed the unpardonable sin is entertained, there may exist the wish to save others from a like condition. A mother may deliberately kill her children to save them from suffering, as in the case reported by Dr. M. D. Field, which I include here in full.

The Case of Mrs. Wilhelmina C. D. Lebkuchner.[1]—Mrs. Lebkuchner was indicted for the murder of two children. It was shown that on March 21st, 1888, she admininistered "Rough on Rats" to three children, two of whom died.

I saw Mrs. Lebkuchner several times during the month of October, 1888, and from time to time until the trial in March, 1889. I may state that I was called upon to make three reports.

First.—Capacity to plead to the indictment. Was she capable of comprehending the nature of the crime charged, and of aiding her counsel in the formation of a defence, if she had any?

Second.—What was her probable mental condition at the time of the commission of this crime?

Third.—After acquittal, to determine whether she be discharged or committed to an asylum.

First report was as follows: Physical condition poor. Is thin and appears at least ten years older than she really is. Her pulse is 108 and irregular. She has anæmic heart murmur (*i.e.*, a false sound of the heart due to poor blood). Her circulation is feeble; the extremities being cool. She has an eruption on her face due to syphilis. She complains of numbness in right arm and leg; examination shows excited reflexes and slight loss of power on that side. She complains of pain in her right side (abdomen), but much less than formerly. She states that she sleeps fairly well, and has an average appetite. While there is a very apparent indifference and lack of interest and she is without anxiety regarding her fate, little or no emotion, and no attempt to excuse or justify her acts, she is nevertheless rational, coherent, of good perception and rather remarkably good memory. She is free from illusions, hallucinations, and delusions so far as a searching and thorough examination could determine. She makes no attempt to simulate insanity; on the contrary, she does not want the plea of insanity entered, and did not inform me when asked that she had a sister in-

[1] By Matthew D. Field, M.D., of New York.

sane, though she knew that her sister was or had been at the asylum on Blackwell's Island.

My conclusions are that she is now capable of comprehending the nature of the crime of which she stands indicted, and of aiding her counsel in the formation of a defence, if she has one, as far as her natural intelligence would permit under ordinary circumstances.

Second report—probable mental condition on March 21st, 1888. To arrive at any satisfactory conclusion as to her mental state at the time when this deed was committed, it is necessary to carefully :

1. Review her life, both before and after marriage.
2. Her family history.
3. Her physical condition.
4. The circumstances leading up to the deed.
5. The deed itself. The manner of its execution. The time of day.
6. Her conduct after the deed.
7. The analogy and similarity of this deed with acts of the insane.
8. Were there rational motives for the commission of this deed?
9. Finally, was this deed the probable outcome of a diseased body and mind?

1. *She was born in Germany* some thirty-six years ago, and received a fair education, and in religion was brought up to attend the German Reformed Church, but for years has neglected all church duties. She came to America in 1871, and was employed as a domestic up to the time of her marriage on the 28th of November, 1877, when she married a man over twice her own age, and whose daughters were as old as herself. Her husband lost his money, and then started a saloon and became a drunkard. Her relations with his children were always unpleasant. By this husband she had two children and two miscarriages, and was again pregnant on the 23d of June, 1883, when he deserted her, leaving her nothing in the saloon but bills and notices of dispossession. She struggled to keep the saloon and pay off the debts and make a living for herself and her children. She sought to find her husband, but his children and other relatives deceived her as to his whereabouts, and gave her no aid. On September 1st, 1883, she was compelled to abandon the saloon, and was with her two children and pregnant again upon the streets, without money, friends, or home. On the 7th of September she applied to the Superintendent of the Out-door Poor, Department of Public Charities and Corrections, and the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children for aid, and on the following day her two children were committed to the care of the society. Her sister became insane and was taken to Bellevue Hospital, and on September 11th, 1883, was pronounced insane, and on September 13th, 1883, she was sent to the Lunatic Asylum on Blackwell's Island. Mrs. Lebkuchner herself now fell ill, and on September 12th, 1883, was admitted to Ward 11, Charity Hospital, where she was treated for syphilis. Christopher was born March 21st, 1884. The

above dates and facts have been verified by me from inspection of records.

Her husband died October 8th, 1888. For some time she lived with another man off and on, but was never married to him. He was also a drunkard, and contributed little or nothing to her support. By this man she had a child, born in February, 1887. This child was placed in some institution. In the summer of 1887 she found herself again pregnant, and during the late fall or early winter she injured her right side while carrying a stove. Such was her life up to the winter of 1887 and 1888.

2. *Family history (heredity).* Maternal grandmother was insane. Mother died of consumption. Father was an intemperate man. Sister Annie now an inmate of the City Asylum, where she was committed in September, 1883 (I gave one of the certificates upon which she was committed).

3. *Her physical condition was bad.* She is still in a very poor physical condition, and from those who saw her before and soon after the 21st of March, and from her own statements, she was at that time in very much worse physical condition than now. The matron and others about the Tombs tell me that she was much depressed and confused when first received, and that there has been marked improvement since her child was born.

She was and still is suffering from syphilis manifested by an eruption upon her face, and syphilitic disease of the brain is strongly suggested by the numbness, excited reflexes, and loss of power on the right ride, and slight irregularity and inactivity of the left pupil. She was approaching the end of pregnancy, her poor physique was being taxed to nourish this coming and developing child, had the morbid feelings of women at such times, aggravated by lack of food, hard work, harassed and crippled by pain in her side, and believing that she would not survive her confinement, and that she would be confined on the 29th of March.

4. *The circumstances leading up to the deed.* We must not, in considering this part of the inquiry, lose sight of her physical condition as just cited. She was living in rooms for which she paid $8 a month; was paying for a sewing-machine by instalments of $3 per month. Anthony was at the asylum, but in February she was notified to take him home or he would be sent to the West. Christopher was being boarded at twenty-five cents a day. Charlie was sent to a day nursery when she went out to work, and for this she paid ten cents, and it cost her ten cents a day for car fares in taking him up and bringing him home, and then she allowed five cents for his supper, and this made twenty-five cents a day for Charlie. This made her monthly expenses (30 da; twenty-six dollars ($26). This is $1 for every week day, and not a cent was allowed for light, fuel, or food. When she went out to work she received her food. This problem was always with her, and

she says at night she could not sleep, thinking of what would become of them if it rained on the morrow and she could not work, for she could never make up for a day that was lost, and the expenses were all she could possibly earn, even if she could work every day. When the pain in her side got worse and she was unable to work, then she could not sleep. The officers of the society came to the house to make inquiries about her, and she got the idea that she was followed by detectives (this statement is verified by Mrs. Vermilyea, of No. 696 Greenwich Street, where she was employed pretty regularly for some two years, and where she worked on Tuesday, March 20th). In February, when she was notified to take Anthony from the Juvenile Asylum, she was much depressed, and the idea of this crime first came to her, but she fought it off and things were better, and she could work more regularly. Anthony was sent home. She could not have him go West, because she had the idea that the West was a terrible place, and that there he would suffer worse than death. It was in describing what she thought the West to be that she displayed the only emotion shown during my interviews with her. On the 12th of March the "blizzard" came, and that week she could work little and was compelled to buy food and fuel, and everything was very expensive that week. She was compelled to spend the money she had been saving to pay the rent and the instalment on the sewing-machine. She had promised to pay the rent on March 21st, and the woman called for the sewing-machine money early on Wednesday morning (March 21st). The Friday before the crime she was sick and unable to work, and late in the afternoon she fell asleep on the sofa in her room and slept soundly, and when she awoke she found Anthony and Charlie looking at her and crying. When she asked them what was the matter they said they thought she was dead. This made a great impression upon her, and she began to think what would become of them if she should die, and she believed she was surely going to die when the baby was born, for she had never suffered such pain before as she was suffering from her side. Now the idea of killing the children and herself again came to her, and she told the little girl who came for the money for Christopher's board to bring him home to her the next night. She wanted all the children together that they might die together. Saturday she was better and she was able to work, and on Sunday she took home some work and received a dollar and a half. She was brightened now and the idea left her. On Monday she could not work, but Tuesday she went to work and took little Christopher with her, but she suffered severe pain in her side, and in the afternoon was compelled to stop work. She took a car home, but on the way was very sick with great pain, and she had some discharge that soiled her clothes (says her petticoat would show this now if it could be recovered from her effects left at her rooms), and she believed that she would soon be confined. In this state she reached home; but she could not sleep that

night; she "cried and prayed all night," and "she felt that it was best that she should kill the children and herself than that she should die and leave the children behind." This idea took possession of her, and she sent Anthony out for a box of "Rough on Rats." While he was gone the woman called to collect the sewing-machine money.

5. *The deed itself.* This was done in the morning, after a sleepless and troubled night. It was calmly and quietly done. She put all the poison in a pot of tea and made four portions, one for each of the children and one for herself. She did not take her own portion, because she might die first, and she was not cowardly enough to leave them to suffer without somebody to look after them. She gave them the tea containing the poison and told them to drink it, but she could not look at them, but turned away and became faint and sustained herself by holding on to the mantel.

6. *Her conduct after the poisoning.* She remained with and cared for them as best she could. She would have gone for help, but she could not leave them, but stayed and looked at them. Two died and she put them in the bed. On Saturday morning, 3:30, little Christopher fell asleep and then when he was quiet, and would not miss her, she ran to the police station and told them what she had done and asked them to send a doctor. She did not seek a doctor to save his life, she seems not to have thought of this, but to relieve his sufferings. She was calm, gave herself up, made no excuse, and showed no remorse. She still believed that little Christopher could not recover, and that she would still die. She had not looked upon this as a crime, but thought that they would soon all be together in a better world.

7. *The analogy and similarity of this deed with acts of the insane.* It does not appear that this deed was the result of a defined insane delusion, or was the result of a defined hallucination. By this I mean that she was not impelled by any fixed and governing false idea, nor by any commanding voice, or any vision pointing out to her what she should do. She did not appear to have had what is called an imperative conception, that is, any sudden irresistible impulse taking such possession of her as to overpower all will and reason. She does not appear to have been unconscious at the time of the commitment of this deed, nor is there any evidence that she ever had epilepsy, the existence of which might account for the crime. Nevertheless, this deed, contrary to every natural instinct of a human being, much worse, a mother, without selfish motive, apparently the only selfish motive that might be attributed would be that, at any cost, these children should be kept from the relatives of her late husband. Had she wished to have freed herself from the care in order to abandon herself to a dissolute life, as is claimed, she might have left her children with the society without committing this crime. It is evident that she intended to take her own life, but was unwilling to do this until she was assured that all the children were dead. Suicides and homicides of the

insane are committed more frequently in the morning hours, especially after a sleepless and troubled night, and before the will and reason have fully asserted themselves. Insanity involves the *ego*, the insane delusions and hallucinations always pertain to and involve the *ego*, and that which is closest to the *ego;* and this is nowhere more conclusively shown than in the homicidal acts of the insane. Statistics show that thirty suicides are perpetrated by the insane to every homicide, and of the homicides committed by the insane those of the nearest and dearest relatives are eight times as frequent as of those not joined to them by these close ties. There was no attempt at concealment or self-protection; no effort to escape; but, on the contrary, she voluntarily gives herself up and confesses, in the calmest manner, all that she had done. There was also lack of all emotion and remorse.

8. *Were there rational motives for the commission of this deed?* Only that they would be better off dead than left unprotected in this world, when it was plain to her that she was too sick and poor to care for the children longer herself, and that she was going to die.

There was no motive of gain, anger, or revenge. In fact, there was nothing about the deed that was not irrational.

9. *Was this deed the probable outcome of diseased body and mind?* Yes. We find strong hereditary predisposition. We have syphilis, with symptoms of involvement of the brain.

We have pregnancy, with its morbid fears. I have said that there was no defined delusion, but there was great mental depression, with the ill-defined delusions that she would die during her confinement. Her distorted ideas of the West, and what her children would suffer there. She saw no hope in the future, and want and starvation at hand for herself and her children. She was in very poor physical condition and not fit to work, yet working. She was suffering from a severe injury to her side while carrying a heavy stove. She was troubled in every way, and was sleepless, and was in too poor a physical condition to appreciate the nature of her acts or to resist the impulse that impelled her to the commission of this act.

The act seems to have been the result of heredity, pregnancy, circumstances, a diseased and worn-out body, a mind weakened by these, and harassed by poverty and want, and so deeply depressed that the judgment and will were unable to act with anything like their accustomed power and force.

The third report was in the form of a certificate of insanity, the body of which read as follows:

"She is in very poor physical condition. She is thin, pale, and has an anæmic heart murmur, with a rapid, quick pulse. Her pupils are unequal, and there is loss of power and excited reflexes on the right side. She has an eruption upon her face, probably due to syphilis. She is at times depressed, and at other times is elated without adequate cause. She does not appreciate the gravity of her present position, nor

the enormity of her crimes. She has displayed both suicidal and homicidal impulses. On one occasion she poisoned three children, two of whom died. Considering this history, with her present physical and mental states, I believe her an unsafe person to be at large."

This case presents many points of especial interest to both the medical and legal professions. She was at first put on trial before Judge Martine and a jury as to her present sanity and capacity to plead to the indictment. The prosecution called Dr. Allen McLane Hamilton and Dr. George B. Fowler. Dr. Frank H. Ingram and myself were called by the counsel for the accused. The testimony was practically the same, and the jury found her sane.

A month later she was placed on trial before Judge Gildersleeve and a jury upon the indictment; insanity was interposed as the defence; the prosecution was conducted by Assistant District Attorney Macdonna, the prisoner being defended by Mr. John R. Heinzelman. The defence placed upon the stand, upon the question of insanity, Dr. Stuart Douglas, Dr. Allen McLane Hamilton, Dr. Frank H. Ingram and myself; no expert witnesses were called by the people. His Honor Judge Gildersleeve charged the jury. After reviewing the evidence and defining the degrees of murder and manslaughter, he charged upon the question of responsibility as follows:

"If you are satisfied, therefore, gentlemen, that she administered this poison and it resulted in the death of Charles Lebkuchner, and that she did it from a deliberate and premeditated design to effect his death and you are so satisfied beyond any fair and reasonable doubt, then she is guilty of the crime of murder in the first degree, unless you are satisfied that the defence which she has set up here has been established, viz., that of insanity.

"The 20th section of the Penal Code provides as follows: 'An act done by a person who is an idiot, imbecile, lunatic or insane, is not a crime.' It is claimed that the act of this defendant which it is charged resulted in the death of the deceased, is not a crime because she was insane at the time. Now that is a question of fact for you to decide in the light of all the evidence—her conduct, what she said and did, in the light of what the experts who have been called here have said in respect to that question. The rule of law that is controlling on the question of insanity seems to be clearly expressed in the opinion of Judge Andrews of the Court of Appeals in the case of Flanagan against the People, a portion of which was read to you by the learned District Attorney: 'It must be regarded as the settled law of this State that the test of responsibility for criminal acts where unsoundness of mind is interposed as a defence, is the capacity of the defendant to distinguish between right and wrong at the time of and with respect to the act which is the subject of inquiry.' The physicians when asked their opinion as to the condition of the defendant's mind at the time of the

commission of the act based upon the circumstances and condition of things disclosed by the evidence, such as her conduct, her previous history, all the circumstance under which the act was committed, their answer, you remember, was that it was their opinion that she was insane. Dr. Douglas was asked: 'Might she have known the differences between right and wrong and yet not have capacity to act upon that?' The answer was: 'Yes.' Dr. Hamilton said: 'I think her will was affected, that she committed this under a condition of diseased responsibility, she was irresponsible as the result of disease. *Q.* Do you believe that a person in the condition she was, was able to choose between the right and wrong? *A.* I do not. *Q.* You have heard the circumstances detailed under which it is claimed that this defendant poisoned her children? *A.* Yes, sir. Q. You have heard what her condition in life was at that time; without my stopping, therefore, to repeat all these conditions and all these details, bearing them in mind, what is your opinion now, at the time she administered the poison, was she sane or insane? *A.* I believe her to be insane, sir, and from my conversation with her.' This answer, viz.: 'I think her will was affected, that she committed this under a condition of diseased responsibility, she was irresponsible as the result of disease:' and then this question: 'Do you believe that a person in the condition she was, was able to choose between the right and the wrong?' and the answer: 'I do not'—brings up the real turning-point in this case. You must find from the evidence, before she is entitled to be acquitted on the ground of insanity, that she had not the capacity to distinguish between right and wrong in respect to that particular act. If you find in the abstract that her mind was sufficiently sound to enable her to distinguish between right and wrong, she would not necessarily be responsible. You may find that she had sufficient control of her intellect and of her faculties to be able to know and understand that it was wrong to kill, that it was a crime to take life, and yet that would not fasten the responsibility of taking the life of the deceased upon her under the law. Was her mind sufficiently sound, did she have sufficient control of her judgment to be able to distinguish right from wrong in respect to this particular act, viz., the taking of the life of her own child under those particular circumstances? If her mind was so affected by reason of the poverty that had pursued her, by reason of the misfortunes that had befallen her and followed her along from month to month and from year to year, if the sufferings she saw ahead of her or in store for her children in case of her death, or that she believed she saw in store for them, if this so affected her mind, so disturbed and deranged her judgment, so interrupted the ordinary and sensible course of reasoning as to honestly induce her to believe that she was doing a kind and merciful act, that she was taking this son from a world of trouble to a haven of peace and happiness, and that it was right for her to do it, although she knew and believed that

murder in the abstract was wrong and a crime—if, induced by this condition of things she was brought around to that condition of mind and was not able by reason of that condition of things to distinguish right from wrong in respect to that particular act, then she is entitled to an acquittal. The rule is the capacity of the defendant to distinguish between right and wrong at the time of and with respect to the act which is the subject of inquiry. The principle, or more properly the theory upon which she is entitled to an acquittal, if you believe that condition of things which I have named existed, must be distinguished from an uncontrollable impulse, because the courts have held that where it appears that a person takes the life of another under an uncontrollable impulse by reason of the pressure or influence they feel brought to bear upon them, having sufficient capacity to know that the act was wrong, being of sufficiently sound mind to distinguish right from wrong in respect to that particular act, although they have not the will power to resist this impulse, this insane force that is operating upon them, nevertheless, the law holds them responsible. The law does not recognize a form of insanity in which the capacity of knowing right from wrong exists without the power of choosing between them, says one case. Another case says, it is no defence that in consequence of an uncontrollable impulse the prisoner has no power over his will. In a case where the accused have said: 'I felt a command from God to do this act; I knew it was wrong; I did not want to do it, but I had not the will power to resist what I believed was the command.' Now, under these rulings in these cases, a person taking life under those circumstances would be held responsible for his acts. So that all this reasoning, you will see, gentlemen, brings you right around back to this principle, what was the particular condition of mind of the defendant at the time of the commission of the act? Was the defendant's mind so unsound that she was not capable of distinguishing between right and wrong in respect to the act which she was committing? This defence of insanity is an affirmative one. The burden is on the accused of establishing it; the burden is upon the accused of satisfying the jury that the defendant's mind was unsound at the time of the commission of the act. It is hardly proper for me to say to you that they are bound to go as far as the people are bound to go in making out a case, viz., to satisfy you beyond any fair and reasonable doubt, and yet the evidence must be convincing and satisfactory to the jury."

The jury retired, and after about two hours forwarded to the judge the two following questions:

"In case we find the defendant knew the difference between right and wrong, but had not the will power to resist the impulse to commit the crime, must we consider the law, as read by the District Attorney, binding, that is, take no regard as to her will power?" "Did the Court charge that in the case we found the defendant merely acted under an uncontrollable impulse, we should find her guilty?"

At this time I understood the jury stood nine "not guilty," and three "guilty;" the ground of difference being embraced in the two questions presented to the Court. The jury were again called into court and were addressed by Judge Gildersleeve as follows:

"Gentlemen of the jury:—In answer to these two questions which you have submitted, I doubt if I can do better than have the stenographer read to you what I said, and yet I will add to what I have said by reading from some authorities from which I did not read at the time of delivering the charge. The question presented for your consideration is a very delicate one, and so the principles of law that control cases of insanity are not very well settled. They differ in different States. I am bound to give you the law as it maintains in this State, where this court has jurisdiction. It is not an easy matter to determine just where responsibility ceases and irresponsibility begins in respect to particular acts, and I am not surprised that you ask for some further instruction. Now, the law does not recognize any moral power compelling a man to do what he knows to be wrong; that is substantially what I meant to say in reference to the operation of the alleged uncontrollable impulse. That convenient form of insanity which enables a person who does not choose to bridle his passions, to allow them to get and keep the upper hand just long enough to commit an act of violence and then subside, is not recognized by the law. The insanity which takes away the criminal quality of the act must be such as amounts to mental disease and prevents the accused from knowing the nature and quality of the act he was doing. The doctrine that a criminal act can be excused upon the notion of an irresistible impulse to commit it where the offender has the ability to discover his legal and moral duty in respect to it, has no place in the law. To establish defence on the ground of insanity—I now read an opinion of the Court of Appeals—it must be clearly proven that at the time of committing the act, the subject of the indictment, the party accused, was laboring under such a defect of reasoning, of diseased mind, as not to know the nature and quality of the act he was doing, and if he did not know it, that he did not know that he was doing wrong. Where insanity is interposed as a defence to an indictment for an alleged crime, the inquiry is always brought down to the single question of capacity to distinguish between right and wrong at the time the act was done; and, I might add, in respect to that particular act, it must be regarded as the settled law of this State that the test of responsibility for criminal acts where unsoundness of mind is interposed as a defence is the capacity of the defendant to distinguish between right and wrong at the time of and with respect to the act which is the subject of the inquiry. That is the law of this State with reference to this defence, and it is the law by which you will be governed in determining the question whether the defence that has been interposed here has been established or not. Now, as to the

burden of proof. Crimes can only be committed by human beings who are in a condition to be responsible for their acts; and upon this general proposition the prosecutor holds the affirmative and the burden of proof is upon him. Sanity being the normal and usual condition of mankind, the law presuming every individual is in that state, hence a prosecutor may rest upon that presumption without other proof. The fact is deemed to be proved *prima facie*, and whoever denies this or interposes a defence based upon its untruth must prove it; the burden of overthrowing the presumption of sanity and of showing insanity is upon the person who alleges it; and if evidence is given tending to show insanity, then the question is presented to the court and jury whether the crime, if committed, was committed by a person responsible for his acts, and upon this question the presumption of sanity and the evidence are all to be considered, and the prosecutor holds the affirmative. If a reasonable doubt exists as to whether the prisoner is sane or not, he is entitled to the benefit of the doubt and to an acquittal. Now, I declined, you remember, to instruct you that the defence were bound to establish the insanity of the accused beyond any fair and reasonable doubt. The benefit of a fair and reasonable doubt upon the whole case, upon all the evidence for the people, and for the defence is always the property of any prisoner charged with crime. Now you will see that if the defendant was required to satisfy you beyond any fair and reasonable doubt of her insanity and succeeded in satisfying you from the evidence that there was some doubt of her sanity, and if I charged you the proposition of law that you are bound to find beyond any fair and reasonable doubt, although she did go far enough to create some doubt, she would not have the benefit of the general principle of law that the accused is always entitled to the benefit of any fair and reasonable doubt upon the whole case—that would be requiring the defendant to go further than the law requires. Now I will not go over what I said to you in the first instance. I instruct you according to my own recollections of the law, not with the accuracy and precision with which the law is laid down in these authorities from which I have now read. These authorites which I have read to you embody, as I believe, the principles of law which I intended to lay before you in my charge. I have emphasized the principles by reading these authorities and perhaps have made clear to you the questions of doubt that were in your minds. If any of you have any question that you would like to ask, any point upon which you are not entirely clear, I will endeavor to it make clear. There can be no conviction unless an accused person has sufficient mind, has sufficient control over his reasoning faculties as to be able to form a criminal intent. Bishop, one of the leading authorities on criminal law, I think defines the question in about these words, and that is the test the jury is to apply, Was the mind of the accused, although diseased, sufficiently sound to be able to form a criminal intent? It all

comes back to this original statement which I said to you was the law of this State. The test of responsibility for criminal acts where unsoundness of mind is interposed as a defence, is the capacity of the defendant to distinguish between right and wrong at the time of, and with respect to, the act which is the subject of inquiry. Now in determining that question you see you must take into consideration the defendant's condition of pregnancy, and all her troubles, and all that happened before, and her conduct subsequently, as I instructed you, for the purpose of determining that particular question. You may now retire, gentlemen."

The jury rendered a verdict of not guilty, on the ground of insanity at the time of the commission of the offence.

Subsequently, Judge Gildersleeve committed Mrs. Lebkuchner to the State Hospital for the Insane, at Poughkeepsie, upon certificates of insanity furnished by Dr. Ingram and myself. Mr. Heinzelman procured a writ of habeas corpus, returnable before Justice Beach of the Supreme Court, to show cause why she should not be discharged. Justice Beach discharged Mrs. Lebkuchner upon the ground that the commitment was unauthorized, illegal, and void.

Again, the misery may be so great that instead of the *usual passive state* of these patients there may be almost a *maniacal state* resembling acute mania, in which the patient feels impelled to do something to escape from the depression, and, knowing no cause for it on his own part, may *ascribe his condition to some enemy or to a conspiracy* against him. These impulses to suicide or homicide are frequently recognized by the patient himself, so that self-commitments are more common in this disease than in any other form of insanity. As Cullen says, however, crimes are rare in melancholia. There are special forms of melancholia either dependent on the nature and duration of the seizure or on some special character of the delusions accompanying it.

Simple melancholia, by which we mean mental depression without delusions, is usually subacute or chronic. We find it most frequently among the overworked, or in persons subject to great strain or mental worry, especially of a domestic or financial character. There is a marked tendency to suicide, a constant fear that they will commit it. There is often a hypochondriacal element in these cases, the patients having an intense desire to explain their whole mental state. There is often a fear that the natural affection for their children, husband, wife, or family is absent. This condition is especially common

in women, occurring in the young and unmarried, when perhaps an unfortunate love affair may be the provocative cause. We observe it also at the menopause.

As Savage has observed, the attempts at suicide are often not serious, resembling those in hysteria.

The following cases illustrate the effect of over-strain in a patient with a predisposition to mental disease from hereditary taint, and also the influence of mental disease in one patient on another:

Two sisters, æt. 36 and 38 respectively, were brought to the hospital with the history of having attempted suicide.

Family history was as follows: The mother, still living, had been confined in a hospital for some years for melancholia with suicidal

FIG. 12.—Shows melancholia occurring within a few months of each other in two sisters. Both markedly depressed, and possessed of the delusion that some one wished kill them. They were both single and lived together, being seamstresses by occupation.

tendencies, and was at the time in a state of dementia. The father had also been in an asylum for several months, but had recovered to the extent that he was able to return to his work, although somewhat weak-minded.

Both sisters were very hard-working, conscientious women, and had tried successfully to support the family. They were of highly nervous, hysterical temperaments and had both previously been confined in an asylum for several months, for melancholia with suicidal tendencies.

The present attack, in the first sister, was due to anxiety and want of sleep, incurred in watching over the other sister during a severe attack of nervous prostration. She attempted to throw herself out of the window, and on being prevented became violent. The second sister,

who was recovering from her illness, then became maniacal and attempted to take poison. There was the same idea present in both, that her illness was preventing the other from working and supporting the aged parents. There was considerable mental confusion and extreme depression, without delusions of any kind (see Fig. 12).

These periods of depression are usually most marked during the menstrual periods, or following sexual excess, especially masturbation, which is not uncommon in both sexes in these cases.

The following case of simple melancholia without delusion illustrates these conditions:

A. B., female, æt. 27, family history negative. Five or six years previously, after a disappointment in love, had nervous prostration; following which she became filled with a constant desire to kill herself; however, was always anxious to have some one with her. These attacks would occur every spring. The patient became anæmic, depressed, and lost flesh, and suffered from amenorrhœa and dysmenorrhœa. Any report of a case of suicide in the papers would increase this feeling, and she felt that she must read the full details. She made several futile attempts to take her life: in one she tied a handkerchief around her throat, and was found in a practically unconscious state; at another time she swallowed the sulphur from some matches which she had made into a solution. In none of her various attempts was the intent truly serious. She was always ready after the attack to take any remedy which might relieve her.

This patient was an unusually intelligent person, of many accomplishments. She described herself as never free from this feeling, whether apparently enjoying herself at some place of amusement or alone in her room.

This condition is quite distinct from *acute melancholia with delusions*, into which, however, it not infrequently passes, and which may be *active* or *passive*. In both these latter states there is a profound depression; in the first, however, there is an inability to keep quiet, a constant desire to escape from themselves or from the hallucinations of hearing and sight. The second form seems to be often a stage on the way to *melancholia with stupor* or *melancholia attonita*. It is in these latter cases, as we have already stated, that delusions fixed in character are at the base of all their actions. *Cataleptic states* are not uncommon in which the muscles become rigid and remain fixed in certain positions for a long period. Even

here, however, there is usually consciousness of what is going on around. Patients in this condition will frequently accept food, when given, without opposition. *All these forms of melancholia* may be regarded, however, as simply phases of the same condition.

Chronic melancholia may result from either acute or ubacute states; there is usually some more or less fixed delusions remaining, but it differs from the fixed or systematized delusion found in paranoia. There is no attempt to understand it or explain it, nor any logical process of reasoning concerning it. The legal relations are often difficult in those forms unassociated with stupor. It is often difficult to find either a motive or the presence of a delusion to explain some of the acts committed.

FIG. 13.—Melancholia. S. R., male, æt. 25, tailor; maternal uncle insane; habits temperate; admitted to the hospital December, 1892. Patient would sit in one position all day and refused to answer any question. Had no hallucinations or delusions at any time. Was discharged improved.

Many of the acts are sudden and unexpected, but, as Casper has stated, careful investigation will often reveal delusions. This difficulty is increased by the fact that at times delusions are often concealed.

Letters of the patient, in which the whole mental trouble has been defined, are frequently of great importance.

There is usually a premonitory state, which, however, has passed unobserved, giving the act the character of suddenness or impulsiveness. Casper relates the case of one Taylor, who had always had the reputation of being a loving father and had

never been suspected of being insane by his friends. Having reverses, he killed his four children "to save them from becoming a public charge." He made a confession without any attempt at a defence of his act. Examination showed that his grandmother and sister had been insane; the latter (having a delusion of being pregnant by the Holy Ghost) had also murdered her children.

The absence of all motive for the act, or repentance or remorse, or attempts at concealment or escape, is strong evidence, in a legal sense, of absence of responsibility.

FIG. 14.—Melancholia. A. B., female, æt. 24, duration of disease five years. On admission to the hospital in August, 1893, was melancholic, with the delusion of being followed, and also that she had been poisoned; hallucinations of hearing. Patient has become demented and childish, but has not lost her delusions.

P. Max Simon[1] says that *impulsive acts* are especially frequent in those *melancholics* who shut themselves up within themselves, remaining oblivious to all their surroundings. It is true that very often there has been a long struggle between the impulse and the will, and that the suddenness of the act is only the final victory of the impulse over the will, in a long but silent battle.

He relates the case of a melancholic who had apparently recovered, who suddenly struck his wife with a heavy stone which he had carefully concealed, killing her instantly. He was filled with remorse but said that for a week past he had felt the desire to kill some one, which finally overcame all his powers of resistance.

[1] "Crimes et Délets dans la Folie."

This goes far to prove that these acts are truly morbid impulses and if the defence of insanity is pleaded they should only be put forward as symptoms of a definite psychosis.

In this State a criminal act cannot be excused upon the theory of irresistible impulse, where the offender knew what he was doing and had the ability to discover his legal and moral duty in respect to it. Again the mere presence of a delusion is not sufficient to establish irresponsibility, as the decision in the following case shows:

Appeal from judgment[1] of the Court of Oyer and Terminer of Cayuga County, entered upon a verdict rendered January 12th, 1893, convicting defendant of the crime of murder in the first degree.

William G. Taylor, the defendant, upon a conviction for burglary was sentenced to Dannemora prison for a term of three years, which expired in the summer of 1888, he having received the usual commutation for good behavior. Very soon after his discharge, and in the same year, he was returned to the prison to serve out two sentences for burglary, aggregating about eleven years. From the time of his readmission his conduct was exemplary with a single exception, when, on April 28th, 1890, without provocation or warning, he assaulted his keeper with a hatchet and felled him to the floor. The prison physician stated melancholia (with sucidal and homicidal impulses). On September 29th, 1890, he was transferred to the asylum for insane criminals at Auburn. On September 20th, 1891, he was, as "not insane," returned to the prison. The medical superintendent of the asylum stated that during this period he was sane, while his assistant was of the opinion that during all the time there was doubt as to his sanity. From the readmission his record was good. He had friendly relations with Salomon Johnson, the deceased, a fellow-convict, but in the month of April he exhibited, without any apparent cause, a feeling of great hostility to him, and during the summer he frequently threatened to kill him. On September 19th, 1892, he effected a reconciliation with the deceased, and the next afternoon he lured him into a shed under the shop, upon the pretense that he had some contraband articles to show him, and there killed him with a knife which he had concealed upon his person. Without any emotion he confessed his deed, stating that he had to do one of three things: either starve to death, or kill the deceased, or kill himself, and he did it in order "to be electrocuted." Until his trial, on January 10th, 1893, he was subject to medical examination. Three physicians stated melancholia (with homicidal, respectively homicidal and suicidal delu-

[1] Reports of cases decided in the Court of Appeals of the State of New York (by H. E. Sickels). Albany. People *v.* Taylor (vol. 138, p. 398), decided June 6th, 1893.

sions), five physicians declared him to be sane. The jury found him guilty. He was sentenced to death.

Maynard, J., said:

Proof on the trial of an indictment for murder that there existed in the mind of the defendant an insane delusion with reference to the conduct and attitude of the deceased will not excuse the homicide, unless the delusion was of such a character that if it had been true it would have rendered the act excusable or justifiable.

Accordingly *held*, that proof upon trial of such an indictment of the existence of a delusion in the mind of the defendant that the deceased was acting as a spy upon the defendant and had betrayed a plan of escape, did not affect the criminal nature of the act.

Under the provision of the Penal Code (§ 21) proof of partial or incipient insanity is not sufficient to require an acquittal, if there was still the ability to distinguish between right and wrong.

Mania is a condition of exaltation which affects the emotions and the intellect, and expresses itself by increased activity —mental and physical.

There are two forms to be considered, one in which there is mere excitement and the other in which this has passed on to frenzy. It is the reversal of the picture of melancholia; there is a rapid succession of ideas, and never a fixed idea.

The feeling of well-being and power is as well-defined in mania as the sense of a depression, which it is impossible to explain or throw off, is in melancholia. We have to do, however, with an entity in both instances distinct from the depression or exaltation which may accompany other well-recognized forms of mental disease.

Mania rarely commences suddenly, it is usually preceded for some time by feelings of depression or irritability, with indifference to the usual interests of daily life.

This depression soon changes to one of exaltation with a resistless impulse to activity in all directions, without, however, persistence in any one thing. The attempt to restrain the patient provokes opposition, he feels satisfied only when permitted to talk and act as he pleases. Esquirol defines mania as "a chronic affection of the brain, ordinarily without fever, characterized by the perturbation and exaltation of the sensibility, the intelligence, and will."

Hallucinations, illusions, and delusions are usually present, the patient seems to have lost all restraint over his

thoughts and actions. He appears to be in relation with another world, entirely apart from his environment. He holds conversations with various imaginary persons. His delusions may take the form of grandeur, in which he thinks he is the greatest athlete or pugilist in the world, or that he possesses great wealth, or again, that he is the ruler of the universe.

If the feelings go in the direction of sexual desire, there may be evidence of marked eroticism, and the speech may be obscene. This is frequently seen in those whose whole education has been directly the reverse.

Combined with this, delusions of a religious character are often present, direct commands from God are received, and a change in the personality may take place.

There is often the appearance of being under the special influence of some delusion, as in the position assumed of listening to some voice, or seeing something invisible to others (see Fig. 15). The special senses are especially acute, and general sensibility, as shown by the irritation caused by the clothing and the desire to remove anything that might cause restriction of the movements. The intellect seems at times peculiarly active, attention is fixed for the time intently on the object before it, and the memory of details is sometimes remarkable. There is, however, a real loss or decrease of mental power. The judgment is weakened, as no idea remains long enough in the consciousness to become fixed. The most notable symptom is loss of control, with great emotional excitement.

The physical condition seems to be an index of the mental. There is in the early stages an appearance of vigor, the appetite may be excessive, and a tendency to the use of alcoholic stimulants may precipitate the attack, while not being an etiological factor.

Many such cases bear a close resemblance to alcoholic mania, when on investigation it has been shown that the mental disturbance preceded the drinking.

There is always, however, finally a failure of nutrition with loss of flesh, the tongue becomes coated and the bowels are constipated. The pulse may be somewhat rapid, but frequently, even during great excitement, there is little change, it often being slow and small. Insomnia is a marked symptom, days passing without sleep despite the ceaseless activity.

There is one peculiarity about this constant activity, in that there seems to be no sense of fatigue accompanying it. There is, in fact, apparently a cerebral anæsthesia. This applies also to pain perception, as exposure to cold does not seem to be recognized, and even painful operations can be carried on without apparent suffering. Acts of self-mutilation, which are especially common where sexual disturbance is associated with the mania, are often done, which are harrowing in the extreme and yet are not appreciated by the patient.

In one case under observation the attempt was made to cut off the testicles; the patient in describing the act had no realization that it was painful. The absorbing idea at the time precluded any other perceptions entering into his consciousness.

The special forms are acute and chronic. In the former we may have actual frenzy, corresponding to the so-called raving madness. In such cases there is complete mental confusion, all knowledge of time and place is lost, no attention is given to what is going on around, one delusion follows after another, the patient being in a state of muttering delirium. Such conditions are common in acute fevers, but the presence of a high temperature differentiates them. There is great exhaustion, probably due largely to the loss of sleep (see Fig. 15).

FIG. 15.—Mania, Acute. There is evidence here of considerable excitement, and an hallucination of hearing, as shown by the attitude of apparent listening.

In chronic mania there is generally present some more or less fixed delusion, as the result of the previous delusional state. The patient may consider himself a king or a great general. There is never, however, any attempt to prove the truth of this belief; it is satisfactory to him to make the assertion. There is no incongruence in the fact that he is in an asylum or dressed poorly. These patients are very excitable at times; it is purely

an emotional state, however, which is easily aroused by some trivial irritation and usually as quickly subsides; there is apt to be a quick response by a blow or a torrent of abuse. (See Fig. 16.)

FIG. 16.—Chronic Mania.—Hallucinations of Sight. Female, æt. 34, married, addicted to alcohol and morphine; has delusions of being followed by strange people who wish to kill her. Is passing into stage of dementia.

These patients are great letter-writers, the product being a confused, incoherent mass of material, every passing thought being recorded. There may be a tendency to write rhymes. There is almost always associated with this condition a generally happy-go-lucky state of mind. There is in fact more or less *dementia*, the state toward which all cases tend which do not end in recovery.

The following poem and letter taken from hundreds written by the same patient show very clearly the mental condition referred to:

LINES ON THE WRECK OF THE BRITISH MAN-OF-WAR "THE SERPENT"—ON THE COAST OF SPAIN ON NOV. 12TH, 1890—A.D.

O Spain of Royal fame;
What occured on the main.
Or Has the serpent and all his fangs;
Left the ocean on thy land he sprang
Or is thy monarch in his bibbs so short
Thy shores invaded for war or extort—
Thy infantile sway both night and day
To thy Savour ever, ever pray
To be saved from such a fate
As befall the serpant of late

Her Britanic majesty a monarch pure
Would not envy thee in thy craddle sure—
For in the days eer mans estate
O'Donnell Ruled thy dominion to date—
Thy Royal Mother Queen Christina
To Queen Victoria sends a line—
With greetings from Her monarch son.
Hail Queen Victoria my day will come
When in kingly state I'll not write on slate
But in languarge thy mariner I'll berate—
Thy sailors Joyous, marines, and Jackets Blue—
In Neptunes embrace all are strew.
In numbers a hundred and seventy three
All are prisoners, and three are free—
God in His power that rules the weeve
Defend the defenseless, and bless the brave
Many are the weeping eyes on english Shores
Bereft of fathers laid in their Watery gore—

Lunatic Asylum Wards Island
U. S. America 16th Nov 1890, A.D.
Count The O'Haughey X O. P.
Lord and Poet to
Queen Victoria—By Pope Leo XIII.
Alfonso XIII. The *O'Haughey XIIII.*

Ward's Island, State and City of New York, and U. S. of America—
January 16 1891, An. Dom.

I am The O'Haughey to P. D. D. M. D. M. America, late Sergeant and Hereditary chief of the Royal Irish Constabulary Ireland 36238 a Knight of the Garter and Commander of the Bath and Hereditary Knight of St. Patrick Erin. Under all these circumstance I want Prince Thomas to bear all these titles each and every one them legally and constitutionally. I now put them in a row, so that they may not be confounded by the illiterate or inexperienced—or not know how to fix these titles or show the respect due to the wearer— :

O. P. D. D. M. D. F. L. R. C. Q. C. V. C. S. L. B. A. &c., &c.—Sergeant at law and attorney General—and K. C. B. and Knight of St Patrick and Hereditary Prince of the Universe by the Roman Pontiff—and by the special direction of the Blessed Virgin—and now I am The O'Haughey chief of R. I. C.

"Are you there Moriarty."

We have excluded from our description of *mania* a condition called *delirium grave*, or delirious mania, as it represents an entirely different disease both in its clinical and pathological

aspects. In our classification it is placed under the head of organic insanities with definite pathological changes. Clinically also it is distinct, generally running an acute course with a high temperature of 103–105°, and, as a rule, ending fatally from exhaustion in five or six days (see Fig. 17).

We also do not include here the *special manias*, associated with *epilepsy*, *alcohol*, the *menstrual periods*, etc., as their description belongs more properly to those special diseases.

Criminal acts are rarely committed in mania; the general

Fig. 17.—Chronic Mania. T. O. H., æt. 30, single, no hereditary history; admitted to hospital October, 1890. Had delusions that he was married spiritually to the queen of Heaven. Says that she appears to him and speaks to him by signs, never in words. Says also that he is the Poet Laureate of England, and a count by Pope Leo XIII., etc., etc. Patient frequently asks whether any telegram has come from his royal highness for him. This case presents all the characteristics of chronic mania, *e.g.*, the loquaciousness and tendency to letter-writing and to poetry; his condition has remained practically unchanged for five years. There is an expression of self-satisfaction in his face, dependent upon the absolute belief in his claims to royalty.

disturbance of the intellect renders it impossible to carry out or form any plans. During the paroxysm of delirium to which the patient is sometimes exposed, there may be as a consequence acts of violence and destruction committed. In such cases the knowledge of the facts is sufficient for the appreciation of their character.

STUPOROUS INSANITY OR PRIMARY DEMENTIA.

It consists in an almost complete loss of all mental action.

There may be hallucinations and delusion of sight and hearing. The patient appears to be under the influence of some overmastering spell. No notice is taken of the surroundings; there is no appreciation of the wants of nature; hunger or cold is not felt. One position may be taken and maintained for hours. A cataleptic state is not uncommon.

While the attitude seems to be that of despair or melancholia to a certain degree, it represents more fully a condition of absolute loss of all mental action. New perceptions certainly do not take place, and no thought goes on. However, at times, from the movement of the lips and the muttering, old memories are apparently revived. Rarely is there any recollection of them after recovery.

The physical state corresponds to the mental, the temperature is lowered, the pulse is feeble, the skin dry and cold, the pupils are dilated, loss of flesh is constant. It is essentially a condition of asthenia. The causes of this disease are those of an exhausting character, as loss of blood from any cause as during childbirth or shock consequent to an operation or injury. Fevers of an exhausting nature with high temperature may result in it. Mental anxiety and worry may cause it. I have observed a number of cases among immigrants to this country. Finding themselves among new surroundings, without friends or means of support, confused by the strangeness of the customs, or perhaps by a strange language, they sink into a condition of almost complete dementia. The onset appears sudden, although as a rule the cause has been at work for a long period. Masturbation in a person weakened by various other causes or of a neurotic disposition may be the exciting cause.

Heredity otherwise does not seem to be a direct agency in its production.

Direct injury causing concussion of the brain may result in a traumatic psychosis, sometimes called traumatic hystero-neurasthenia. There seems to be an interference with the functional activity of the brain, an inability to think or act, a feeling of great fatigue on attempting to do anything. There may be great stupor with loss of personality.

The prognosis in these cases is usually favorable. Of late years many such instances have been brought before the courts, the question of simulation or exaggeration of the symptoms being a difficult one to settle.

In the criminal procedure these cases do not often appear, but are more frequent where the question of civil responsibility arises. Shock from fright, some sudden and unexpected loss, has been known to cause complete dementia accompanied by stupor. The condition may continue for weeks or months, or may even pass into secondary dementia.

Secondary dementia is the form which generally presents itself to us. It is the final result in all cases of insanity which do not progress toward recovery (see Fig. 18).

In the various forms which we have so far considered it is not unusual, about forty per cent passing on to this state.

FIG. 18.—Secondary Dementia following Mania. R. F., æt. 53, female, widow; duration of disease 15 years. On admission was inclined to be ugly and obstinate, and had delusions of wealth and self-importance. Present condition, dementia; quiet and rarely speaks.

Complete dementia would imply an absence of all thought, and while this is not the rule, we notice a decided loss of mental power. There is usually a substratum of the delusions which have been present in the acute conditions, which have become more or less fixed and permanent. The melancholic still possesses the feeling of being a great sinner. He may still be constant in prayer, although hopeless of pardon. An egotism, which centres everything around his own personality, is al-

ways observed. With the gradual, or at times rapid, dementia, the identity becomes lost, the idea of time and place becomes confused, the relations of his previous life become vague and indistinct to his memory; he speaks of his children or wife as if he were relating some instance concerning a stranger.

FIG. 19.—Secondary Dementia following Acute Melancholia. E. M., female, æt. 40; duration of disease 12 years. On admission was depressed, remaining in one position, indifferent to her surroundings. At times is violent and has delusions of being the daughter of Queen Elizabeth.

The *maniacal patient* continues with his hallucinations and delusions, which are always of an expansive character. He speaks of being a rich man, or a great general, or God himself, with a certain pleasure, evident in his expression that he is able to talk and think so rapidly. All idea of time and place is likewise sooner or later lost. *Responsibility is absent*, reckless disregard of consequences is evident; the language is often profane and obscene. The actions are restless and apparently unceasing, but aimless. All acts are impulsive; it is impossible to think of motive or premeditation in the true sense. Affection or regard for family or friends is lost, and the ordinary observances in manners are forgotten. These patients when examined are apt to exaggerate all their vagaries, giving loose rein to their actions and thoughts.

Unless there is complete dementia, the character of the existing delusions defines the nature of the preceding disease (see Fig. 19).

While these cases may remain for years under observation,

and while there may be changes in their mental power, they have still in the main the same class of delusions in the end as in the beginning.

It is so in cases which relapse after recovery. The new seizure is frequently but a repetition of the previous hallucinations or delusions. We do not find on our records that the patient has been admitted at one time as melancholic, at another as maniacal.

The condition known as alternate or circular insanity is an exception to these remarks. The peculiar fixed and permanent delusions which may manifest themselves in a changed personality, as in the belief of being a general or king, may be shown by the attempt at decoration with medals or ribbons. While claiming to be such great personages they feel no incongruity in their existing surroundings. There is no desire or attempt to explain or logically to support their delusion, as seen in the following case.

A. B., æt. 62, became melancholic and possessed with the delusion of persecution, fearing that he was to be shot. He applied to the police for protection and was sent to the asylum. His dementia progressed rapidly; he was unable to state where he was or where he had formerly lived. He later had a delusion that his friends, to compensate him for his suffering and persecution, had raised $100,000,000 for him, and that it was subject to his draft at any time. He could not be reasoned out of this belief. His plans of using the money were in consonance with his previous religious delusions of self-condemnation, as he intended to give it to the churches.

Such delusions differ entirely from the systematized delusions observed in the class of monomaniacs or paranoia. In these there is always a logical train of reasoning ever ready for the defence of their opinion. The emotional states are rarely so marked. Excitement may indeed be extreme if there is opposition to the carrying out of the plans—otherwise not. The same may be said in regard to depression: this is rarely so extreme as to manifest itself by marked melancholia with complete loss of all interest in external matters. There may be indeed suicidal intent, but then again it is the result of a process of reasoning never present in melancholia or in the dementia following it, with permanent delusions of a depressive character. There is almost invariably the history of hereditary or

acquired disease in those with the systematized logical delusions of paranoia. A good example of secondary dementia in melancholia is seen in the following instance:

C. D., merchant, æt. 51, family history negative. Patient has been a very active business man, and has amassed a fortune. He has, however, been addicted to excess in the use of liquor, and in his sexual relation. In the past year he has had severe domestic trouble, which has caused much loss of sleep and anxiety. He resorted to liquor to drown his sorrows. One year and a half ago had a severe attack of delirium tremens, from which he recovered, but has never since been able to carry on his business with the same vigor or efficiency as previously. His judgment became unreliable and his memory defective.

Two months previously, after considerable mental worry and some excess in alcohol, he became depressed and filled with hallucinations, in which he saw a two-headed monster which attempted to kill him; also the porters and servants in the hotel appeared to him as threatening to do him harm. Patient would hold imaginary conversation with them. He became sleepless and refused all food, fearing that he would be poisoned. He interpreted all these terrors as a punishment and consequence of his previous life. He had no religious delusions of any kind. The depression increased, accompanied at times with violence in his attempts to escape from his surroundings. He gradually passed into a state of dementia, which became almost complete, the patient forgetting the day of the week, the place in which he was, or any knowledge of his business affairs. All anxiety disappeared. He would eat anything placed before him; seemed to have entirely lost all idea of the proprieties; would urinate at any time and place, as the desire prompted him.

The question from a legal point of view in this instance arose only as to his capability to enter into a business contract or to make a will. When aroused the force of habit made his conversation and actions apparently rational for a short period of time. Any attempt to state what his property consisted of, and to whom it should go, led to complete mental confusion. It was plain that the requirements of a disposing mind, as in the making of a will, were absent. Here also the question of undue influences would probably arise.

Secondary dementia may be of two varieties, *i.e.*, associated with agitation or with apathy.

The first form is more commonly the result in mania.

Here we find almost ceaseless activity, a marked tendency to destruction of anything which comes into their hands. There is no motive present, but an aimless, objectless activity. Anything attracts their attention for the time, bright colors,

music, etc., but there is never any concentration on it for any length of time. There is no real joy or sorrow. All serious relationship with the outer world is lost. There is usually marked loquaciousness, a constant talking concerning innumerable subjects, a change from moment to moment in the emotional field from pleasure to anger, an almost constant obstinacy to do as they please. Various hallucinations and delusions are present, as evinced by the expression of cunning or slyness or of self-importance shown in the face. Yet with all this activity there is complete loss of any appreciation of their circumstances. There is little feeling or regard for their nearest relations, a visit from whom causes but a transient evidence of pleasure. Their acts are all impulsive.

They are subject to excesses of maniacal excitement, when their mental powers seem to be revived, their delusions becoming more exact, and their acts more purposive. These conditions are simply flashes from the pan, the tendency being toward relapses into more complete states of dementia. A final characteristic symptom is the disappearance of all the former hallucinations and delusions, or at least the absence of any influence on the individual when present. They lead to no act on their part; there is no pressure to carry out any plan as the result of their feelings and thoughts. A *condition of partial dementia* may exist for years without apparently progressing to the final stage, although its terminal stage is sure to follow.

The recognition of this state of dementia is at times difficult when the previous history is unknown. The continued observation, however, of increasing intellectual weakness, decreasing emotional powers, increased loss of appreciation of the ordinary relations of life, and responsibility or care for any of its interests, with neglect of all the ethical and social considerations, indicate without question the final state of complete loss of mental activity, *i.e.*, dementia (Krafft-Ebing).

The description just given applies most truly to mania, but is not infrequently observed in melancholia.

Feelings of mental anxiety, unexplainable even by the patient himself, are apt to recur in the dementia of melancholia; in fact, a recurrence of the early stages is more common in all respects than in mania. We observe, therefore, a restlessness, a ceaseless attempt to escape from the unbearable men-

tal state. This may take the form of violence of a homicidal character, or, again, be suicidal in its nature.

There is *rarely any plan in these acts, the motive is a general one* rather than a specific one, and at no time is there in any sense a conspiracy. *It is rare, indeed, that in insanity there is any combination for carrying out a design, except perhaps in paranoia*, and even in these instances it is rare. The absence of real motive or of the attempt to conceal or escape from the consequences of the act, while not positive evidence in a legal sense of the irresponsibility of the individual, necessarily has great weight in disproving criminality. Doubt can only arise where the dementia is but partial.

The question of the knowledge of right and wrong in regard to the particular act committed is the only practical test which the law can make; the further question whether the person was able to control his acts is of importance only in so far as it can be established by evidence that all knowledge of right and wrong was absent or lost at the time the act was committed.

This does not involve at all the question of moral or impulsive insanity; for in these cases the acts are never impulsive, except in so far as they are random and purposeless, or a general result of the mental confusion induced by some oppressive influences driving the individual to attempt to escape from it, as in melancholia, or as in mania induced by the continuous weakened mental activity of a purposeless nature, which even to the patient himself often appears as an abnormal, unnatural condition. This is seen in the often gradual loss of identity, the life and experience of the past seeming to belong not to themselves but to another individual.

This condition differentiates itself from the *remissions* of either melancholia or mania by the fact that the intelligence in the latter is restored during these so-called lucid intervals, while behind all the evidence of the disturbances of the emotions and the presence of the hallucinations in dementia is seen the defect of the intellect. All attempts at judgment or opinion or reasonable action are impossible. No business can be carried on, no plan formed.

Dementia with apathy is more commonly the result in melancholia than mania. We frequently find at the basis of this profound interference with all mental activity a fixed perma-

nent delusion which controls and dominates the individual, preventing the entrance of any outside or new perceptions into consciousness. *It is as if some cerebral compression was present*, which if removed would permit the mind again to take up its functions. This idea is supported by the fact that in some rare instances, even after years of absolute passivity, during which the patient has apparently been unconscious of passing events, of time or locality, after some sudden shock, as an acute illness, *i.e.*, pneumonia, or again without any apparent cause there is a return of the mental powers. In many such cases there is a more or less complete knowledge of the past events.

There is this to be noted, that the depression, the condition of mental or psychical pain, is no longer of such an acute character. There is that condition previously referred to, as if all the events through which they pass were occurring to a third person. There is here also often the tendency for a stay in the progress of the dementia. However, the final stage is the same in all, interrupted as it may be by seizures of acute depression and anxiety—complete abolition of mind results if life is prolonged. *The physical appearance corresponds to the mental.* The vegetative processes are impaired. With the absence of active mental processes there is frequently a tendency to obesity, the face appears vacuous, differing from the characteristic expression of worry, with the lines of care on the forehead so generally present in the agitated form. There seems to be complete muscular relaxation; the patient falls into an inert mass; the position is one of flexion; the chin sinks on the chest; the saliva flows unnoticed from the mouth.

As has been said, with "the loss of all mental action they appear as animals after the removal of the brain, and in fact the cortex of the brain has lost its function." They no longer appreciate danger, hunger is absent, requiring the necessity of feeding them, and in fact looking after all their wants. There may be indeed a true amnesic aphasia. Death results from a general defect of bodily nutrition; and intercurrent diseases, as pneumonia, are common.

Hallucinatory mania (Mendel), delusional stupor (Newington), or *hallucinatorischer Wahnsinn* is an acute mental disturbance, the characteristic condition of which is the hallucinations and illusions of all the special senses. As a result there

is a complete loss of identity and of time and place, a mental confusion almost approaching acute dementia.

There are no delusions in the proper sense of the term. It is essentially a disease consequent upon exhaustion. Therefore any cause, as exhausting fevers, inanition, overwork, alcoholic excesses, sexual excesses, the puerperal period, loss of blood, etc., may be the provoking agent. These are all accentuated in those hereditarily affected or of a neuropathic disposition. However, a distinction should be made between this disease and the acute forms of paranoia. Maschka, in my opinion, confounds what he terms *primary paranoia*, a primary psycho-pathological state, with this disease. If we hold fast to the idea, as will be discussed later, that all forms of paranoia are due to degenerative conditions, either inherited or acquired, we can separate without difficulty the two forms of insanity. Acute conditions may arise in paranoia, but when they subside we still have left the original defective mental condition; while in hallucinatory mania, if that is recovered from, the patient returns to his normal mental soundness. It is essentially a disease, therefore, involving the affective or emotional element of the mind, and only secondarily the intellectual. Reason and judgment are for the time absolutely in abeyance, simply because the numberless new and erroneous perceptions do not allow of any proper conception of them to take place, or, again, may crowd out former perceptions. The mental confusion may be increased by the attempt on the part of the patient to reconcile the new and the old perceptions.

The course of the disease may be rapid, lasting but a few weeks or months, and ending in recovery. Other cases pass on to complete dementia.

The division of mental disturbance falling under the head of degeneration is one of the most important which comes to the attention of the jurist and physician.

It is, as we have said, a disease of the brain without well-defined pathological changes, but in which the element of heredity with all its attendant predispositions is the most important factor.

Into this question to-day comes the discussion of many of the social conditions of our generation. The criminal, the anarchist, and socialist, all have their defenders as irresponsi-

bles in relation to the crimes which they may commit. Perhaps no more important psychological considerations in their bearing on legal relations exist in the whole domain of insanity than in this class. It has been said that general paralysis is the distinctive disease which the exigencies of modern life have developed; and while this is true to some extent, it is equally certain that the development of the wealth of the world, to so great a degree by modern scientific discoveries, the possibilities of the individual in sudden acquisition, together with the free discussion of all possible subjects of thought in the religious and philosophical fields, without the usual limits of control formerly allowed to the Church and established schools, have developed an egotism and idea of self-importance which especially manifest themselves in the congenitally defective classes. This would probably have been held in check under strong central control, but the spirit of equality and frequently license thus evoked in the weak, and especially the ignorant, has developed one of the characteristic symptoms of insanity as a whole —that is, concentration on the individual, or egotism. *In our classification we have called this affective insanity*, that is, a form in which the feelings and emotions are chiefly involved. We have to do with the desires, therefore, with the ethical side of human nature, and hence the whole field of the social and moral relations of the individual to his surroundings is in question. The judgment, the reason, is not so much affected abstractly; the mind as a reasoning organ is often but slightly impaired; actually it is so far affected in that the emotional state exerts such a control over the intellect that it no longer is free to use its powers, and as a result we find more or less impairment of the will in all these cases.

The degrees of loss of free-will is the question for the jury to decide; the fact that it is impaired is for the expert to establish.

We find that the etiological factors are especially of an hereditary character. Either in the parents or in collateral branches of the family there were insanity, nervous diseases as epilepsy, chorea, hysteria, etc., or not uncommonly alcoholism, tuberculosis, etc. Again, during early life various deleterious causes may have been active in impairing the nervous system, as rachitis, which may have interfered with the development of the

skull and secondarily the brain; or, again, acute diseases, as meningitis or encephalitis or the various acute exanthematous fevers, as scarlet fever or measles. In such cases we often find evidence in the body of defective organization, as in various asymmetries of the head. The ears may show evidence of irregularity, the eyes be placed too widely apart, the forehead be markedly receding, the palate high. We are now approaching indeed a class of degenerates which belong to the so-called borderland of insanity. There is evidence from the previous history of their departure from the normal type, but often insufficient proof of irresponsibility.

There is no definite pathological condition which we can properly say belongs to it, except perhaps in those cases where we have evidence of injury to the brain structure from inflammatory disease, mal-development, or traumatism. And these instances are largely in the minority, and when excessive carry our case to the class of idiots or imbeciles in which we have predominant ethical defects or primary moral weakness. We can and should in these cases recognize the actual intellectual impairment which prevents the individual from controlling the natural desires common to the brute creation.

Krafft-Ebing has classified the physical and psychical evidence of this diseased condition as follows:

A quick reaction to all influences, whether atmospheric or those of disease; special inclination to various functional disturbances of the nervous system as convulsion, the various neuroses, etc., at the periods of development and decline (dentition, puberty, menstruation, climacteric period).

There may be a very early development of puberty and a mental precocity with slight bodily development. The sensory and motor fields show disturbances by hyperæsthesia, anæsthesia, paralysis of a functional type, spasmodic contractions as chorea, epilepsy, or epileptic seizures. The sexual organs are either functionally abnormally active or the reverse, leading to masturbation and sexual excesses of various kinds.

Similar mental disturbances of a functional character are present. Especially noticeable is the tendency, on slight provocation, to conditions of depression and excitement, which pass beyond the normal expression of pleasure or joy. Physiologically all are subject to emotional states of depression and exalta-

tion. Women at the menstrual periods and during pregnancy or lactation, and males are likewise subject to these periodical changes. At such times there is especially marked and noticed the ability to undertake a great amount of work, at other times there is (in both sexes) a condition almost of stupor and mental torpor. Among this diseased class, however, there seems to be no middle ground. In the exalted period there is a constant ceaseless activity in which often impulses of almost an "imperative" nature are present. The opposite condition of depression is characterized by equally intense mental pain and impulses to suicide, or a great fear of becoming insane. *A special group of this form of disease* is that class where the ethical part of their nature seems absolutely absent. Feelings of pity, right, honor, ordinary courtesy and consideration apparently do not enter into their minds.

The imagination is active, hallucinations are common, and there is especially noticeable the rapidity of their association of ideas. In art and science they may show themselves as inventive, but the mental process is intuitive rather than logical, and is rarely persistently followed out. There is constant pressure, often impulsive, to acts eccentric and bizarre.

Morel has described them as acting by instinct rather than reason.

There is a contradiction in their character—apparently great mental power, even genius, with inability to get along in life; they are the victims of grand schemes constantly formulating themselves without definiteness, and an inability to reproduce them accurately. They represent often our class of reformers, religious and political, and go to make up, as we have said, a large proportion of our leaders in social reform.

The physical bearing, the manner of dressing, the egotism often indicate the mental condition. This mental state may remain unchanged for years; the predisposition, however, on slight provocation to insanity is self-evident. Unfortunate financial condition, family loss, domestic trouble, failure to obtain political preferment, ill health, and excesses, venereal and alcoholic, may be the exciting cause.

Among the first of the various subdivisions of this class of the insane that we shall consider is *reasoning insanity*, or *folie raisonnante.*

It may assume the maniacal form or the melancholic, but more frequently the latter. Their acts imply a controlling interest, forcing them, despite their knowledge of the character of the act and its consequences, and often their fear of committing it, to do it. There is usually an absence of hallucinations or delusions.

Griesinger *defines the depressive form* as *hypochondriacal melancholia*, the French authorities as *folie raisonnante melancolique* (Tuke). In these cases, however, there is a distinct difference from melancholia, either in the acute or in the chronic form. The depression is more of an emotional character, and rarely gives the impression of delusions, which, as we have said, are usually absent. Again, the condition, which is generally constant, so that the patient feels its presence whether at a place of amusement or alone, is not always as intense but occurs paroxysmally or even periodically, as during menstruation. *It differs, again, however, from so-called periodical insanity*, although closely allied to it, especially in its etiological and pathological relations. Both occur in hereditary disease, but the latter has a more typical course either of mania or melancholia, during which the intellectual faculties are affected.

We have thus under this head reasoning mania, reasoning melancholia, reasoning monomania, for it seems proper to include here all those forms of mental disorder characterized by desires, often obscure and impulsive to a certain extent, which manifest themselves in acts often cruel, indecent, or foolish. The individual understands what he is doing and the true relation of the act, in its social and legal aspect. He, however, prefers the consequences to the restless, unhappy state of mind which exists, until he has carried out his desire. This mental state must be recognized as a pathological entity, and belongs to the legal aspect of the question of insanity fully as much as to the medical; in fact more so, as it rarely comes under consideration except in so far as the acts committed offend against the law. It is usually in regard to criminal procedure that we meet it.

"These terms are given to each particular form of insanity: mania, melancholia, monomania, respectively, when still accompanied by reasoning power, though the ordinary mental symptoms are evident" (Tuke).

Moral insanity is simply a division of the form just described. We have to do with mental defect especially characterized by the absence of the ethical side of man's nature. This was the last attribute to man's mental structure which we referred to in describing the process of development of the mind. In these cases, therefore, we find loss of the ordinary feelings of love toward family or mankind in general. Ideas of honor, truth, sacrifice or regard for others are absent. Desire is the only motive for all their acts; when therefore unrestrained by fear of punishment or by some power greater than their own, there is no limit to the cruelty or evil of their acts. This is not infrequently seen in the great tyrants of history, as Commodus and Nero, types of degeneratives so common during the degenerative periods of Roman history and which illustrate this point. Our criminal classes belong to this same order.

Investigation has shown that the hereditary taint has been carried down for generations with the same tendency to crime as other forms of mental disease. There is, indeed, intellectual defect, although not necessarily manifested in the ordinary processes of thought. It is observed rather in the lack of idea of consequence, the apparent disregard for those things which are by most men held as valuable, *i.e.*, respect, position, even wealth, if as its accompaniment any restrictions are added. This form of insanity is not infrequently associated with sexual excesses in which there may be perversion, the pain inflicted being the means of producing venereal excitement.

Definition of Moral Insanity.—A disorder which affects the feelings and affections, or what are termed the moral powers, in contradistinction to those of the understanding or intellect (Pritchard). The diagnosis depends largely on the previous history of the individual. The fact that one from several children under the same moral teaching and restraint has always shown a tendency to be obstinate and unruly, has been beyond control, and has developed tendencies to excesses of all kinds, often indeed of a petty nature, as thieving, drunkenness, etc., is strong evidence of congenital defect.

There is always some difficulty in distinguishing such cases from those which merely represent depravity, and in which punishment and discipline are salutary. This is illustrated again and again in our reformatories. The former class

are incapable of being reached by any influence; training, education, religion making no change in them. They show no appreciation of kindness or regret for their acts, which they may be cunning and skilful in concealing or planning.

The depraved, from lack of proper surroundings and education, will usually benefit by these systems. Delusions are usually absent, but I have observed in a number of cases delusions of persecution; nor is it to be forgotten that the so-called psychoses, as melancholia and mania, may affect these defective persons, running their usual course, leaving them perhaps more demented but with the same tendencies as before. The condition is essentially an incurable one. Its degree is the only point of interest as affecting the question of responsibility. The following case illustrates it very well:

A. B., æt. 26, male; parents healthy; one brother very musical, interested in nothing else; very nervous; one sister very similar in her disposition and also very musical. The patient was always unruly, would play with the roughs of the neighborhood and frequented saloons; was never a good scholar, but was good at figures and could keep accounts well. At the age of 17 was arrested for maliciously robbing a grocery shop. There was never at any time any need of his stealing, as he had a good home. Was sent to a reformatory, where he remained for some time, and showed the same disregard for discipline and was constantly guilty of mischievous acts. He was then transferred to the asylum at Auburn for insane criminals. On his release he resumed his former habits of living, associating with criminals and drinking to excess. He passed some months in an insane asylum again. He now has delusions of persecution; hears voices calling him opprobrious names. Is unable to escape from this mental state and at times becomes violent in his effort to free himself from his supposed oppressors.

Impulsive Insanity.—Under this head we are dealing with similar mental states as those previously described. The mental condition is not difficult to recognize as the act defines it. The question of civil and criminal responsibility is not so easy. We are on the borderland of sanity. Here again careful investigation will usually show that hereditary influences are of the greatest importance in aiding us in the diagnosis.

In all forms of insanity, especially, however, where we have exaltation or excitement, there is a tendency toward impulsive acts; even in melancholia this is observed. This is, however, due to the loss of control, induced by the generally impaired

intellectual state. There is, however, in impulsive insanity an irresistible impulse to the act, a feeling that the act must be carried out in order to satisfy some unexplained motive within the individual, and which no fear of consequences can prevent his carrying out. This is illustrated by the case of a school teacher to whom reference has already been made.

A. B., æt. 45, early in life, at the age of puberty, showed signs of sexual perversion, in that he yielded to an impulse to expose his genital organs to young girls. The consequences of this act were fully appreciated by him, he was ashamed of it immediately. He had always shown great aptitude in his studies, graduated from a university in Germany, and had good opportunities for advancement in life, from his social position and friends. Again guilty of a like offence against society, he escaped to England, where his acknowledged ability as a teacher soon procured him a good position.

After procuring, however, a comfortable position, the anxiety for his livelihood being relieved, the same impulse seized him, and despite his knowledge of the necessary results to follow and the disappointment to those friends who had aided him, he was again guilty of a similar offence. Coming to this country, he was again successful in securing occupation, and gained the respect of all with whom he came in contact, who never suspected him of his mental disorder. After becoming thoroughly established in his position, and, as he said, all strain and anxiety being removed, the same impulse presented itself. He strove by all means possible to overcome it. Ordinary sexual intercourse gave him no relief, nor was the same pleasure experienced. He was guilty again of exposing himself in a public place to little girls.

The patient, when I saw him soon after the committal of another offence, was perfectly cognizant of the extent of his crime against order, bewailed his condition, and threatened suicide. He presented the appearance of an educated, refined gentleman, and yet said that if he knew he was to have been killed the next moment he could not have prevented himself from committing the act.

Here we have the full reasoning power of the individual intact, a full knowledge of the consequences understood, and the necessary precautions of escape taken. The only element absent for constituting the act that of a responsible being is the motive. In this last every motive for not doing it, existed. Desire alone, and that certainly a morbid one, is the only explanation of the act.

While in a medical sense this is a sufficiently explanatory reason for ascribing the case to the field of disease, in the eye of the law we cannot recommend for the best good of the community that such persons should be held as irresponsible. They

do not belong to the borderland cases of insanity. The condition is purely a pathological one, still punishment should be meted out to them in order to conserve the best interests of society, where the few must suffer for the good of the many. Physicians should take this view of the matter and thus aid the law in coming to some modified ruling in regard to punishment for such crimes against decency and order.

"In the normal condition every sensation tends to translate itself into an action, but this tendency is restrained by the ego which intervenes, perceives the sensation, analyzes it, and finally decides for or against the accomplishment of the act. The equilibrium between the tendency to the act and the restraining power of the ego (determinism) constitutes the normal condition in this point of view. The impulse results from a rupture of this equilibrium.

"The equilibrium being lost, either by weakness of the ego or by both together, it follows that the impulse may be the consequence of one or other of these conditions, hence it occurs in those forms of alienation in which it is observed. Practically it is especially in the emotional neurasthenic, the degenerative conditions, imbecility, dementia (enfeeblement of the ego), acute mania, hallucinatory insanities, and, finally, in epilepsy (mixed state), that we meet with impulsions.

"*Impulsions may be divided* into *besetting impulsions* (obsessions) and *reflex impulses* (impulsions properly so-called), according as they act with or without resistance on the part of the individual. *They may also be divided into intellectual, emotional, or motor impulses, according to the sphere affected.*

"Motor impulsions, which are those generally referred to in the clinic when we speak of impulsions, are further designated by the morbid acts to which they give rise. Thus we speak of impulsion to theft (kleptomania), to incendiarism (pyromania), to drink (dipsomania), to murder, suicide, etc. At one time there was a tendency to consider each form of impulsion as an insanity, a special monomania; nowadays that is completely abandoned, and it is generally admitted that morbid impulse is only a symptomatic element of insanity that may occur under different characters in widely different conditions."
—E. Régis, "Practical Manual of Mental Medicine."

I have quoted this author at large, as he truly represents the present status of opinion in regard to all those forms of mental disturbance which formerly were classified as distinct forms of insanity. They are, as shown in our classification, simply symptoms of an insane state, coming under the head of the degenerative type, in which the emotional, rather than the intellectual, field is involved. The law can only recognize them in so far as they correspond to the generally accepted rulings in regard to civil and criminal responsibility. The practice of the courts in England and in this country, following the trial of McNaughton in 1843, has been that every man is presumed to be sane and to possess a sufficient degree of reason to be responsible for his acts, unless it can be clearly proved that at the time of committing the act the accused was laboring under such a defect of reason from disease of the mind as not to know the nature and quality of the act he was doing, or if he did know it, that he did not know that he was doing wrong.

Under these rules, which may be taken as outlining the law on this subject in a large number of the United States, the defence of irresistible impulse to do what is known to be morally wrong and what is legally a crime cannot be set up; for if the accused was conscious that the act was one which he ought not to do, and if that act was at the same time contrary to the law of the land, it is punishable.

This denial of the right of a person who knows the wrongfulness of an act to set up as a defence that he was under an insane and irresistible impulse to do it, has given rise to bitter denunciation of the law by medical writers who are practically agreed that such a condition of the mind may, and not infrequently does, exist, and who maintain that a person in such a condition is as helpless to refrain from his act and as irresponsible for it as is a person who commits a crime under irresistible physical compulsion. Acting upon the assumed truth of this proposition, the courts of Scotland and those of a number of the United States have recognized this as a defence in criminal actions.[1]

All forms of crime may be committed under the influence of irresistible impulse—homicide, suicide, arson, theft, and various acts indicative of sexual perversion.

[1] F. S. Allen, "Insanity before the Law." Johnson's "Universal Cyclopædia," vol. iv. New York, 1894.

We may have also melancholia or mania associated with this condition, and more rarely delusions and hallucinations. It is, however, not in these latter conditions that we should consider this disease as an entity. In fact, the only safe course is to follow the dictum of the law in this respect, which virtually says that irresistible impulse is no defence unless a symptom of insanity.[1] In the case of Flanagan *v.* People,[2] Mark Flanagan was indicted for murder in the first degree, for killing his wife. The defence was insanity. Judge Andrews says:

"We are asked in this case to introduce a new element into the rule of criminal responsibility in cases of alleged insanity, and to hold that the power of choosing right from wrong is as essential to legal responsibility as the capacity of distinguishing between them, and that the absence of the former is consistent with the presence of the latter.

"The argument proceeds upon the theory that there is a form of insanity in which the faculties are so disordered and deranged that a man, though he perceives the moral quality of his acts, is unable to control them, and is urged by some mysterious pressure to the commission of acts, the consequences of which he anticipates but cannot avoid.

"Whatever medical or scientific authority there may be for this view, it has not been accepted by courts of law."

In the case of People *v.* Walworth[3] the same point of issue came up before Judge Davis.

The defendant, Frank H. Walworth, was indicted June 9th, 1873, in the court of Oyer and Terminer for the killing of his father.

The evidence showed that the father had been estranged from the defendant as well as all his family for some years. The defendant in an altercation shot his father, but asserted that he had no intention of killing him. Judge Davis gave the following opinion:

"If it be satisfactorily shown that the accused at the time of committing the act had not the capacity to understand what he was doing and know the consequences of his act, and know that it was wrong, then he is excused. But if he had capacity suf-

[1] People *v.* Coleman (I., p. 1), Oyer and Terminer N. Y. County, Dec., 1881. Davis, J.

[2] Reports of cases decided in the Court of Appeals of the State of New York (vol. 52, p. 469).

[3] New York Criminal Reports, vol. iv., p. 355.

ficient to know the legal and moral character of the act he was doing, the fact that he alleges that he had not the control of his will in respect to it, but that his will was controlled by irresistible impulses, is no defence."

The jury found the prisoner guilty of murder in the second degree.

Simon defines *an irresistible impulse as consisting of an imperative necessity which the patient cannot overcome and which leads him to commit some act, as homicide, suicide, arson, or theft.*

There may be physical signs of this condition at the time of the act, as marked headache, flushing of the face, palpitation of the heart, etc. All these symptoms often disappear when the desire is yielded to. There may have been a long and protracted struggle to overcome this impulse. Often, indeed, the patient may confess his fear of doing some violent act. The writer reports the following case: A lady who had married a widower with one child by his first wife had always shown great affection for the child. One day she was surprised in the act of choking the child. She had shown some time previous to this, signs of depression and preoccupation. Later she had similar attacks of violence, both suicidal and homicidal. She ultimately completely recovered. This author places the victim of irresistible impulse especially among cases of mania, melancholia, hysteria, alcoholism, and epilepsy. These conditions are, however, different from the form under consideration, in which the impulse stands out as the principal and often the only symptom of insanity. I would make an exception in epilepsy, for in this disease we find very frequently this condition; in fact, on investigation we may find that we are dealing with epileptic insanity, as shown in the following case reported by Simon: A young quarryman had set fire to thirteen quarries, barns, and buildings. The multiplicity of the crimes, the identity of the circumstances attending their accomplishment, and the doubt of the existence of a motive led the authorities to ask for an examination of the mental condition of the accused by Tardieu and Laségue. They declared the accused impulsive and irresponsible and recommended his commitment to an asylum. An epileptic seizure soon after explained unmistakably the cause and nature of his impulses.

Homicidal impulse, homicidal mania, or monomania are terms which have long been employed, so that they appear to represent distinct forms of insanity.

The subject has, however, been pretty well threshed out in the past century. Such writers as Pinel, Esquirol, Clouston, and Bevan Lewis, while not agreeing in all particulars, have established, that we have to do with a symptom which not only belongs essentially to the degenerative form of insanity, especially of the hereditary type, but also to the acquired form.

We have indeed in all forms of insanity tendencies to impulsive acts either homicidal or suicidal, as in mania, melancholia, alcoholism, general paresis, etc.; but these are not considered under this heading. In this class the cardinal symptom is a strong, at times irresistible, impulse to homicide. This may be struggled against and at last yielded to, as in the instance of impulses referred to previously in other relations. There is to be observed here also the feeling of satisfaction after the completion of the act. The condition is often preceded by physical excitement resembling the aura in epilepsy. In fact, among epileptics we find during the interparoxysmal periods tendencies to impulsive acts.

These cases are unattended by hallucinations or delusions and must be separated from this class, no motive being present. The manner in which the act is carried out does not indicate a motive, even though great care in all details is observed and careful plans of escape from the consequences are laid. It is not infrequent that the individual will calmly deliver himself up to the authorities, confessing without emotion the act committed. Again there may be great remorse for the act. Such acts differ from those due to the fixed ideas of melancholiacs who commit homicide, as in these cases the motive, while a false one, based often on delusion, is apparent.

Definition of Homicidal Insanity.—A fair statement of this character of impulse is given by Tuke "as a syndrome directly connected with hereditary moral degeneration, and essentially characterized by the desire to murder, without any intellectual disorder or passion, and necessarily requiring as concomitant mental conditions persistence of consciousness, anxious struggle against the besetting impulse, and lastly, in case the act is committed, subsequent moral depression."

The existence of such a condition cannot be denied; the physician is often the confidant of such fears of his patient. A woman, of bad hereditary tendency, would come to me and cry and bemoan the feeling which possessed her, that she would kill her husband and her child. This idea was always with her, but would come on especially at times almost paroxysmally, during which periods her face would become flushed and she experienced a general feeling of congestion.

This element of mental disease should be acknowledged by our courts, although it necessarily requires great care in its acceptance when set up as a defence for criminal acts. Clouston records a letter of a patient of his, which explains well this complete possession of the person by a fixed idea:

"MY DEAR SIR:—According to promise, I have written to the best of my ability what I feel mentally. God alone knows my feelings. They are truly awful to know. I lived in continual fear of doing harm each day. I had not a moment's peace in this world." (The patient was a physician and continues:) "I was afraid, when applying nitrate of silver to the throat of my patients, that I would push it down. . . . When I sat down at my own table I used to have horrible impulses to cut my children's throats with the carving knife," etc., etc.

Such accounts could be multiplied almost indefinitely in the experience of any alienist. We find no evidence of intellectual defect, the memory and judgment are not impaired except in regard to this fixed idea. As one patient said: "I must be mad, and yet I can do everything as I used to. I can read and talk, and yet I feel as if I was not myself."

Régis sums up the matter very well as follows: "The impulsion to homicide proceeds in an identical manner by intermittent and paroxysmal crises, preceded by melancholic prodromata. The patients are beset with the fixed idea of killing this or that person—for example, a child they adore. The sight of that child, of a weapon, a knife, arouses their obsession and plunges them into inexpressible torment. They realize that their will is bending, that they are yielding to the impulse, and, filled with horror, they lament, flee from home, ask aid and protection of physicians, not hesitating in some cases to have themselves locked up in order to escape from their morbid penchant."

There is little doubt that in many cases suicide is committed

from fear of committing homicide. This dread may be concealed for years from others, and probably the cause of certain mysterious, unexplained suicides can be ascribed to this morbid mental condition.

Suicide and Insanity.—This occurs in various forms of insanity, especially, however, in melancholia. It is, however, not infrequent in mania, epileptic insanity, general paresis, alcoholism, etc. The idea that suicide always indicates insanity is erroneous; that a large number are insane is not to be doubted, but the act alone cannot be accepted as a sign; the motive must always be sought for, and if sufficient cause, as loss of property or fear of disgrace, is discovered, the common plea of temporary insanity under these circumstances cannot scientifically be accepted.

Suicide among the ancients was very common, and it is referred to frequently in the Bible—a general to escape from the ignominy of defeat would frequently kill himself on his own sword. The ancient Greeks did not regard it as a crime, nor was it so considered among the Romans. "Seneca held that suicide was an actual duty under certain circumstances, as in great poverty, slavery, grief, old age, or hopeless disease." The frequency of suicide markedly increases as a nation advances in civilization. This is probably dependent upon the more complicated relations of life and the difficulties of self-support.

Climate, seasons, time of day have their influence: out of 11,822 cases in four years in Prussia, from 1869 to 1872, the greatest number occurred in the night, that is, in the early morning hours. The influence of race, religion, culture, sex, morality, political life, city and country life, age, celibacy, occupation, intemperance, heredity, is of importance.

Suicide may occur in those who have shown no other sign of mental disease. It is frequently threatened in melancholia and in neurotic persons. It may be impulsive or deliberate. The impulsive form may occur among the neurotic, hysterical, maniacal, alcoholic, and epileptic; the deliberate form occurs more frequently among paranoiacs, the chronic insane, and melancholiacs. In children it is almost always in those hereditarily affected (see Tuke, "Psychological Medicine").

Suicidal Impulse.—Suicidal mania so called belongs to the same category of mental diseases as the form just de-

scribed. What has been said in regard to hereditary and acquired degeneration applies equally well here.

Kleptomania.—CLEPTOMANIE (*Fr.*); STEHLSUCHT (*Ger.*)

Definition.—An irresistible impulse to steal (Tuke).

This condition must be classed among the neuroses, and is essentially a characteristic of defective mental development. We must make a sharp distinction between it and the tendency to steal or appropriate anything, whether valuable or not, so commonly observed in the well-defined forms of insanity.

Imbeciles and idiots, without apparent regard or knowledge of consequences, will steal, and may do so more or less cunningly, avoiding detection if possible. They usually take such things as would naturally please them or satisfy their desires, as food or clothing, etc.; these acts generally resemble those of children. They recognize that they are wrong because they have been punished for similar offences, but they have no feeling of moral responsibility in the act.

Again, in chronic melancholia, or especially in chronic mania associated with exaltation of the ego or individual, the appropriation of various articles to ornament the person is very common. There is no special impulse or longing in these cases; there is evident intellectual defect or there may be a delusion back of the act. Again, in the earlier stages of general paresis stealing is not uncommon, and persons have been convicted who have later developed all the typical symptoms of this disease.

Tuke refers to six cases related by Dr. Burman in the *Journal of Mental Science*, January, 1873: "All were convicted of stealing and sent to prison, and in all of them general paralysis became manifest soon afterward." We must make a careful distinction between a symptom of insanity and a condition which stands out alone as a mental characteristic.

The tendency of the past, as shown in the writings of Marc, Marie, Lasègue, to class all these cases as types of insanity with irresistible impulse, has of late taken the opposite direction. It is, however, without doubt a mental state, resembling in kind, but not so intense in degree, the various forms of mental disease already described under the head of homicidal and suicidal mania. We find an absence of the moral sense of wrong committed with the act. The only fear is that of detec-

tion; there is no apparent loss of the moral aspect of other questions; the intellect is unimpaired. There is, however, almost invariably present a neurotic disposition and not infrequently an hereditary taint of insanity.

One lady, long under observation, moving in the best society, and universally respected and liked for her versatility and pleasant manners, has for years been known to take articles of value from the houses of friends whom she has been visiting.

The motive was the desire to have the article which struck her fancy. There was, however, no need to resort to such means of obtaining it, as she could amply afford to purchase it. She at one time said that "she could see no harm in her taking it, her friend would have given it to her had she asked for it." This moral obliquity is not uncommon.

Another lady rarely visits the city in her shopping tours without returning with various articles which she has abstracted from the various store counters. At certain of these places she is simply watched and the various articles charged up against her, which she subsequently pays for. Many of these articles are never used afterward, but simply accumulate. This patient represents more closely the cases of irresistible impulse. In other respects there is no evidence of mental disease. She is an estimable wife and mother. Many similar instances are daily reported in our papers.

The question of responsibility is difficult to settle, and indeed most cases are settled by some arrangement. *The absence of any real motive, the knowledge of previous acts of a similar character, the history of hereditary taint, and a neurotic disposition, seem to establish the proof of a mental weakness which approaches the confines of insanity.* One cannot say that punishment should not be inflicted; for, as in other cases of mental disease, when the emotional side of the mental functions is more involved than the intellectual, the knowledge that punishment will follow such acts has a great deterrent effect; and while as physicians we might claim immunity for such defective individuals, as jurists we can only believe that the best interests of society are subserved by holding the person responsible.

Pyromania.—MONOMANIE INCENDIAIRE (*Fr.*); FEUERLUST, BRANDSTIFTUNGS-MONOMANIE (*Ger.*). These terms all indicate the idea of a fixed impulse, a single desire.

Definition.—A morbid impulse to burn (Tuke).

There is less evidence of impulse of a so-called irresistible character in these cases than in those of the class just described, although we have to deal with the same more or less morally and intellectually defective type.

These acts are more frequently committed by the young, about or before the age of puberty. There is often a well-defined history of imperfect mental development, difficulty in acquiring learning, lack of ordinary affection, or the existence of a cruel disposition. It has been noted also in children brought up in institutions, where probably the motive has been revenge for fancied or real wrongs. Again, homesickness has been often the motive.

While frequently there is discoverable some motive, as a feeling of hatred toward persons who have perhaps treated them cruelly, it is more often a supposed injury than a real one; or even love for some one may be the motive, the attempt being made to rid them of their enemies. These latter cases are more often homicidal in character. Again, in cases where homesickness has been the motive of the act, the individual thought thus to escape or be sent back to his home.

The true inconsequence of the acts is perceived in that no element of sorrow is experienced. These acts are similar to special acts of destruction, as breaking windows, destroying clothing, which have been performed by persons of this class. There is often a desire to attract attention, to be explained only by a morbid exaltation of the ego. There is not infrequently great skill and cunning shown in the concealment of these acts, or even shrewd attempts to throw the suspicion on others. This is often successful, as there is no reason to suspect them personally, as the extreme youth of the individual may make it seem impossible that they could have carried out the plan successfully. There often is an hysterical basis in many of these cases, and even in the very young this cannot be excluded. There are, however, cases again where the mere act of incendiarism, the pleasure and satisfaction derived, seems to be the only motive. The same condition is observed here as referred to in moral insanity or impulses toward other acts. There may be a long struggle to resist the impulse, which finally overmasters them, and there is also usually a sense of quiet and satisfaction following its accomplishment. It is not

unlike, as Lewis has stated, the quiet following an epileptic seizure. These patients resemble epileptics indeed in many mental characteristics. Lewis makes this distinction: "In the genuine impulsive forms of insanity consciousness is never so far impaired as to issue in forgetfulness of the details of the homicidal act. When such is the case, when any marked obscuration of memory is apparent, we may presume the impulse to have been of epileptic origin." This applies equally well to all impulses of the so-called imperative type.

We must be careful not to confound the tendency to impulse found in all forms of insanity, especially melancholia and mania, with this form, for frequently similar acts are committed by these patients, but the motive is usually perceived in the hallucination or delusion present.

I would agree with Griesinger in objecting to the term pyromania as defining a distinct form of insanity, but this applies equally well to all this class of impulses. It is simply a symptom, which, however, occurs so often and so uniformly among these defectives that, for convenience' sake, usage has so firmly established the term that we cannot well place it aside. The author just quoted says: "Away, then, with the term pyromania, and let there be a careful investigation in every case into the individual psychological peculiarities which lie at the bottom of and give rise to this impulse. The grand question *in foro* in all such cases must ever be to ascertain whether there existed a state of disease which limited or could have limited the liberty of the individual. Sometimes the feeling of anxiety, hallucinations, states of hysterical exaltation, in other cases the actual existence of a nervous disease (epilepsy or chorea), render probable the assumption that the accused has been subject to some passing mental aberration. We should not forget that usually very little is wanted to interfere with the liberty of action in such persons; they are, for the most part, young, childish, or half-childish, often morally and intellectually weak, silly, and suspicious individuals. The incendiary act often appears to be utterly without any motive, the feeble ego having opposed no resistance to the thought of the deed which suddenly sprang up." Clouston well says that these cases represent "*states of defective inhibition.*" "No doubt the theory of irresistible impulse is liable to abuse, and

to be applied where it does not exist; but one might as well assume that there is no real epilepsy because malingerers and hysterical girls simulate fits."

Coprolalia—an impulse to use obscene or profane language. We not infrequently find in the hysterical and in the early stages of acute insanity and in puerperal insanity the tendency to the use of words which at times it seems impossible that the individual, often refined and educated, could have ever been in a position to have heard or learned. This may manifest itself especially when there is an erotic element present in the disease. Our condition, however, is distinct from this: it stands out as the principal or only symptom of disease. It is usually observed in the young about the period of puberty or earlier, and may result from some fright. It is not infrequently associated with a neurotic predisposition to instability of the nervous system. The child may be very intelligent or the reverse, and often there has been noticed an absence of the usual moral understanding or estimate of things. Even in these patients there is evidence of some hysterical taint in the history. Many such cases are actual forms of mental disease developing later into the type of paranoiacs or showing signs of other impulses.

These exhibitions of obscenity are often paroxysmal or periodical, resembling in many aspects epilepsy, especially when there is convulsive excitement present. The consciousness is never involved, however, and a strong motive, as fear of punishment, may be sufficient at times to end the attack.

A. B., æt. 10, was brought to me by his mother with the following history: Family history negative, except that there was a strong nervous element in both parents. The boy had always been exceedingly bright at school, although not as easily controlled as the other. This the mother ascribed to the fact that he had never been made to obey. Following a severe castigation by his father for some act, he became very much excited, and the following morning went out in front of the house and began to swear in a most excessive way. He was apparently conscious of his acts, but appeared to be in a very excited state. This was repeated every morning and at no other time, and usually after his father had left the house. His sudden return with the threat of punishment was often sufficient to end the attack. At all other times the child's language was very proper. He usually complained of a peculiar feeling in the head just preceding the attack, and

said he knew what he was saying, but could not help it. Under treatment these attacks became less frequent and finally ceased. The bromides were used, as the attack seemed epileptoid in character.

Morphiomania, *or the opium habit*, consists in an excessive desire for morphia. It resembles dipsomania in regard to the irresistible desire for this drug. The will power seems to be absolutely lost, and any subterfuge will be employed to obtain the desired stimulant. In extreme cases no regard for consequences or affection for others has any influence in controlling these persons.

Again, we hold here that in the majority of cases, while the provoking cause may be simply the taking of the drug to relieve pain, its continuance and abuse with periodical excesses depend on a neurotic state which is due to an inherited degenerative nervous organization; in other words, rarely will this habit plant itself upon an otherwise sound organization.

The symptoms manifest themselves in the first place, as seen from the use of the drug in ordinary administration, as a pleasant excitation, an increase of mental action, even to brilliancy, which soon passes, where large amounts are taken, into a condition of apathy and mental stupor, and finally to a toxic condition, as shown by coma from which the patient can only be aroused with difficulty, soon to fall back into his previous state of unconsciousness, associated with slow respirations and slow pulse. The skin is usually moist. There may be more or less tremor, paresis, and ataxia. The walls of the bladder are paralyzed so that there is frequently incontinence, and there is also a paralysis of peristalsis. No special symptoms with reference to the reflexes exist. The secretions in all the organs are decreased; in extreme cases there is also loss of sexual power. The physical condition gives evidence of malnutrition, and finally there may be even emaciation; the hair turns gray, the finger-nails become dry, and the pupils are contracted and at times are unequal. There may be considerable pain of a neuralgic character, which is widely distributed, suggesting a neuritis.

The mental symptoms are those of great loss of energy unless under the direct influence of the drug. A constant habit of procrastination exists. In the true opium habit, one rarely has

the pleasurable imaginations observed in those who are not *habitués;* there is, however, a feeling of self-contentment induced, which takes its place—a calming of the whole nervous system. When the drug cannot be obtained, the patient becomes very tremulous, is subject to profuse sweatings, excessive cardiac action, and a feeling of impending death. There is also insomnia, and the patient may even pass into a maniacal condition, followed by intense exhaustion, and not infrequently by death. (Hallucinations, usually of sight, may be present.) The final results are those of dementia—loss of judgment and of memory, the moral character being lowered. There is a special tendency to lying, and no statements which such patients may make in their attempts to obtain the drug can be relied on. Forgery, neglect of family duties, etc., are not uncommon. Mania is often marked by a delusion of persecution and exaltation, not unlike paranoia; in fact, we may have to do with that disease in these cases.

Lead.—The special effects of lead on the nervous system are largely somatic rather than psychical. We find well-marked lesions affecting principally the peripheral nerves, causing paralyses and wasting of the muscles, especially of the extensor group of the upper extremities. Cord lesions, although more rare, are present, and in an autopsy made by me well-defined lesions involving the gray and white matter were present. This may also involve the cortex cells and association fibres of the brain, resulting in a mental condition in which the more prominent symptoms are those of lowered mental action, loss of memory, headache, and, in some few cases, great excitement of a maniacal type. Hallucinations of sight and of the other senses may be present. Convulsions are not rare. Depression is a not infrequent symptom, and if the patient remains still exposed to the poison, the condition advances to dementia. There is nothing, however, characteristic of the condition as far as any special well-defined form of insanity is concerned.

Dipsomania.—We must make a sharp distinction between the class of drinkers who are given to excess only periodically, and those in whom the habit is continuous. In the former we recognize a mental condition similar to other neuroses, especially to epilepsy. In these cases we find an almost irresistible impulse to satisfy a well-defined craving which can only be satisfied by

the use of alcohol. Under this head, we would refer to excesses in the use of other drugs, such as morphine and cocaine. In the chronic habitual drinker, the excess is more apt to be induced by the physical condition following continual abuse of alcohol, and its consequent exhaustion, resulting in a demand on the part of the system for a stimulant. In both instances, the final result after excessive debauches may be the same, that is, delirium tremens often follows, or a maniacal condition lasting frequently for weeks or even months. In dipsomania, however, the condition of chronic alcoholism or alcoholic dementia does not usually occur. There is more frequently an acute mental disturbance of the type of the degenerative diseases such as epileptic insanity or paranoia; in fact, in this class of patients hereditary taint is marked.

We can only regard dipsomania as a symptom of mental disease, or, in other words, as a sign or evidence. As we have already remarked, it occurs in the class of so-called degeneratives, those affected with an hereditary taint or predisposition to insanity. It belongs to the same type as moral, impulsive, reasoning, and periodical insanity.

In a legal sense it is difficult to accept it or the above as separate forms of insanity and their value in diagnosis is simply as one of a chain of symptoms, indicating mental disease.

It is of importance to establish the existence of the tendency to periodical excesses, as it may prove at least that premeditation in the commission of the act was absent, and also may be ground for a lessened degree of responsibility.

Nymphomania is a state found in the female, the most marked feature being desire to satisfy the sexual appetite by irritation of the clitoris. It is a form of insanity when carried to great excess, in which eroticism is the chief feature. Such individuals rarely obtain pleasure in the natural manner; they have a morbid tendency to self-gratification in this direction. They may derive a morbid pleasure in this direction from objects of art or pictures, in which case the excitation is entirely of a psychical character. We would also place this form of disease among those of the so-called degenerative type, in which heredity and acquired instability are important etiological factors. It may occur at various periods of life, not rarely even at the climacteric. It is found especially among those who lead a solitary

life. It is not confined to the uneducated classes. It is also observed in various forms of mental disease, in which there is a loss of the higher faculties of the mind as in idiocy, epilepsy, and hysteria. We note it also in various conditions in which delusions take a prominent part. It may be a symptom in various spinal diseases. It is at times caused by certain diseased conditions of the genital organs and by inflammatory affections of the uterus.

Mania Transitoria—transitory mania; *die transitorische Tobsucht.*

"We understand by transitory mania that kind of acute frenzy which, developing suddenly and rapidly, soon reaches its climax" (Tuke).

It is usually of short duration, lasting not longer, as a rule, than twelve hours, and passing off in a profound sleep, there being no recollection of the attack or the acts committed. It therefore very much resembles an epileptic seizure; and, in fact, many acts committed in known cases of epilepsy associated with mania, either preceding or following the convulsive seizures, are exactly parallel to those done in these cases.

We must, however, as Tuke says, distinguish it from mania by adopting the term *frenzy*, as its course is so much more sudden in its onset and short in its duration, and leaves little or no trace on the mental state, its integrity being unimpaired. It also has no tendency to return, differing in this respect from epilepsy. It, however, stands out as a distinct condition by itself, and is of special importance in a forensic sense, as the absence of preceding symptoms, or any marked hereditary influence, makes it difficult to establish as a defence in criminal cases, especially if any motive for the act is discoverable. In fact, it is not accepted as a defence in court.

It is difficult to find any definite cause for the condition; great excitement, physical exhaustion and mental worry, grief, insomnia, acute fevers, injuries to the head, no doubt have their influence. Again, very little is known of the morbid changes outside of congestion of the brain, which is an uncertain condition, and is not infrequent in other diseases without producing transitory mania or frenzy. We do not include under this head mania resulting from alcoholic excesses or occurring during the puerperal state.

Clouston believes that most of these cases are epileptic in character, of the nature of the mental epilepsy of Hughlings Jackson, or of the so-called *epilepsie larvée*, or masked epilepsy, of Morel. It is difficult, as has been said, however, to think of a single epileptic seizure occurring without cause, and not being repeated or leaving any of the signs of disease common to this well-known neurosis.

There is complete unconsciousness of the surroundings and of the personality during the attack. The patient is subject to hallucinations of various kinds, both of hearing and sight, and is usually violent and destructive, often homicidal. These cases resemble those of impulsive homicidal mania. Instances are reported of persons waking from sleep, and, probably under the influence of some fixed delusion, showing a homicidal tendency.

Maudsley also rather inclines toward the opinion that the attacks are epileptic in character, as shown from the following remarks quoted from Lewis' work on mental disease, but admits that, "although epilepsy, masked or overt, will, I think, be found to be at the bottom of most cases of mania transitoria, it must be admitted that there are some cases in which there is no evidence of epilepsy in any of its forms to be found; but it may well be doubted whether a distinct insane neurosis is not always present in these cases. With such a constitutional predisposition, a genuine attack of acute insanity, lasting for a few hours only or for a few days, may break out on the occasion of a suitable exciting cause, and during the paroxysm homicidal or other violence may be perpetrated. After child-birth it sometimes happens that a woman is seized with a paroxysm of acute mania of short duration, during which she kills her child without knowing what she is doing. The effect of alcoholic intemperance upon a person strongly predisposed to insanity, or upon one whom a former attack has left predisposed to a second, is sometimes a short but acute mania of violent character, with vivid hallucinations and destructive tendencies; and a like effect may be produced by powerful moral causes, sexual excitement, and other recognized causes of insanity" (Maudsley, "Responsibility and Mental Disease").

Paranoia is a form of insanity which comes especially under the class of degenerative diseases.

It is essentially characterized by a delusion or delusions of

a fixed and systematized character. They are usually indeed of one kind, and the disease has perhaps for this reason been called monomania. This is, however, an unfortunate term, as we find this symptom not infrequently in other forms of insanity, as melancholia, where we always observe decidedly fixed ideas of depression. The term delusional insanity, largely used by the English, is also not to be recommended, as it is not in any way descriptive of this special form. *The main fundamental characteristic of this disease is a delusion which has become a part of the belief of the individual, and which he believes himself able to explain and defend.*

Paranoia is usually a primary disease, that is, congenital in its origin—the predisposition to the disease is born with the individual; the exciting cause may not manifest itself until later in life. "The patients receive its germs at birth, and it develops at its appointed hour under the influence of the slightest cause—for example, poverty, difficulties of social life, disappointments, mortifi ations, conjugal unhappiness, the menopause, etc. That is to say, that the principal cause of partial insanity is heredity. It is well known that it is more frequent in females, celibates, and especially those born out of wedlock" (Régis). The term progressive systematized insanity used by the preceding author explains very well the condition, and he has defined it as follows: "A chronic, essential insanity, without disorder of the general activity, characterized by hallucinations, especially of hearing, by delusious tending to become systematized, and ending in a transformation of the personality."

The intellect is rarely much involved. In all other relations the individual may be able to carry on his business in life with ordinary acumen; where, however, the delusion affects his particular occupation, it will be found running through all its course.

This class of patients has been included, therefore, under the head of the partially insane. There is little doubt that in the general question of right and wrong, they are thoroughly responsible in their understanding of the moral issue and of the consequences of their acts. However, in a particular act, if the result of their delusion, it is not so much a question of their ability to control their actions, as that they do not attempt to do so. Under their delusion, which may in their changed personality appear to be a command from God, whose direc-

agent they may consider themselves, the question of the right or wrong of the act or its consequences is never taken into consideration. This condition differs from the so-called irresistible impulse of the former class which we have been considering, based as it is on a train of reasoning often logical, though wrong and unreasonable in its premises. *We have to do here with a class of the insane perhaps the most dangerous in any community. They have within themselves a law sufficient unto themselves.* With intellects often acute, they are at times patient and skilful in carrying out their plans, whether to regenerate the world or to remove a supposed tyrant. They may conceal their delusions from others, and in fact are usually ready to defend themselves against the accusation of being insane. Many cases indeed are harmless in their tendencies, having simply impracticable schemes, harmful only to their own prospects in life. *The disease is essentially a chronic and incurable one*, and tends slowly to dementia, which is rarely, however, profound.

As one would expect, from what has been said, these cases constantly come into conflict with the law, and perhaps no form of insanity has led to more protracted and heated discussions, or more contradictory statements, by various well-known experts in insanity in regard to their mental soundness and responsibility. The trials of Oxford, Guiteau, and Prendergast are striking examples. There can be no question of the insanity of such cases, and this from the medical standpoint might be considered sufficient ground for relieving them from all responsibility. But in law other questions, of policy, the welfare of the community, etc., have to be especially considered. To permit the idea to go forth, that persons known to be capable of reasoning in a logical manner, and who are cognizant of what is going on as reported in the papers, and yet have long been considered in the vernacular of the times as "cranks," nevertheless will not be held responsible for their acts, would probably lead to a great increase of such crimes.

These individuals are greatly influenced by the fear of the law. In a milder way in our asylums the restrictions, placed on this class of patients when they commit any overt act, restrain them from repeating them. The execution of homicides, when the head of a government has been the victim, cannot be called

a "judicial murder" but a necessary measure for the prevention of similar acts and the protection of the government and the community in general.

There are many physical signs of this form of mental disease. The Italian school has especially developed this subject.

There is frequently found asymmetry of the skull, of the face, irregularities of the jaw or palate, of the nose, ears, and eyes. These are not always present, nor can we say that any precise statement of uniform irregularities has as yet been made. They occupy about the same importance at present in diagnosis as the so-called criminal type of brain does in pathology. Enthusiasts have brought a great mass of statistics together, but have not as yet thoroughly investigated the other side of the question, *i.e.*, the existence of like irregularities among the sane. It is true, generally speaking, that beauty and symmetry are not common to criminals or the degenerative insane (see Fig. 20).

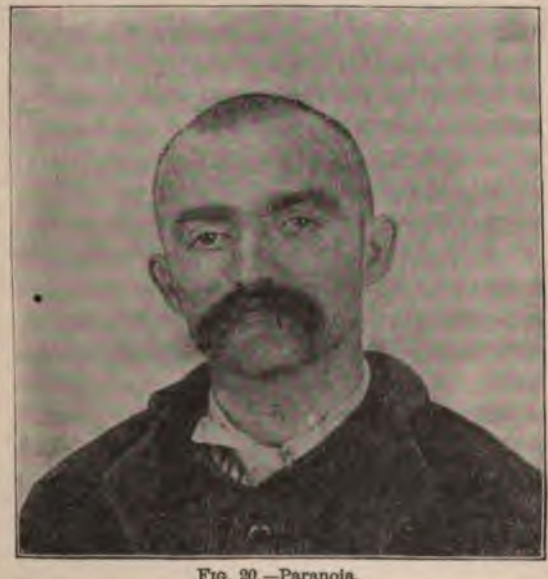


FIG. 20.—Paranoia.

I have spoken of paranoia as essentially a primary disease, not a secondary one. It has led to considerable confusion in our understanding of this disease, that certain fixed delusions, remaining after the acute stage of melancholia or mania, have been ascribed to paranoia. The whole course of these psychoses, and the attending dementia, should sharply mark them out as different in their very nature. The term secondary monomania could be well used in these latter conditions.

The prognosis in paranoia is unfavorable; no cure can be

accomplished. However, the delusion may become less active and the individual become at least harmless. Paranoiacs are usually unable to take their part in life, and frequently become the object of public care or charity.

The subdivisions of the forms of paranoia, were we to go into the various special delusions which exist in these cases, would be very numerous. Classifying them, however, under their principal headings, we would make the following:

The *typical form* is one of exaltation with delusions of grandeur, an increase in the feeling of importance. There may be a change in the personality so that the simple artisan, the ordinary workman or shop girl, feels that royal blood really flows in their veins. Again, they may conceive themselves great generals, or reformers, or specially appointed messengers from God. It is interesting to watch the evolution of their delusions, the gradual transformation into another personality, and to note the slight and trivial occurrences which are all conceived as referring to themselves and adopted as explanations of, and indications pointing inevitably to, the fact that they are what they claim. At first there may be no hallucinations, although almost invariably they appear sooner or later. This is shown in the following case:

A. M., æt. 25, male, single. Duration of disease fourteen years previous to admission to the hospital in 1892. Has the usual egotism of this class. Has the delusion of possessing great wealth (millions), and that the title of Prince von Michael has been conferred on him. Has hallucinations of hearing, one voice being that of Jay Gould, to whom he had written letters asking to be adopted as his son, etc. Is considerably demented.

The estimate which friends may make of such a mental condition is shown in the following letter: "I think A. wants to get a living without work. He thinks he is remarkably smart. I think that after he finds that he can't humbug you with his aspirations he will be perfectly sane." Patient's condition has not changed except that he has delusion of persecution (see Fig. 20).

Instead of a change of the personality there may be simply an exaltation of the existing ego. The artist becomes in his own estimation the greatest of living artists, the accountant the one most expert. It is, however, more frequent for this exaggeration of power and ability to be applied to a sphere in life apart from their ordinary occupation.

This feeling of self-importance may manifest itself in a quiet self-assurance which nothing can shake, and no discouragements alter; or it may show itself in an aggressive form, asserting itself in its attempt to take the part of reformer, whether in the political or theological world. This evolution is one of gradual growth; many things have occurred, perhaps at long intervals, suggesting to them that they are not what they seem. The peculiar feelings they have long had, and the hallucinations or illusions which at first produced only some slight mental confusion, finally, in a manner that appears sudden, manifest themselves in a fixed delusion in regard to their character and personality. Their reasoning now takes on a more or less logical character, which remains the same from year to year. The positiveness and certainty of their convictions lead finally, as they find themselves not believed in by others or unable or prevented from following out their plans, to the stage of persecution, which invariably early or late makes its appearance. The *delusion of persecution* has been defined by French writers as a special form of insanity (Laségue), but it is really simply a stage, as we have said, in this form of systematized delusional insanity.

FIG. 21.—Paranoia; Delusions of Persecution and Grandeur.

L. R. (Fig. 21) entered hospital May, 1874, æt. 51. Duration of disease approximately twenty-five years.

Has delusions of being poisoned by his enemies with lead and copper, and also of being infected with syphilis and phthisis.

Patient has many similar delusions, though his mind is active and his conversation connected.

Has exaggerated ideas of his own importance. Is at work (*i.e.*, 1876) in making a translation of Horace, which he thinks will be of more practical use in classical schools than any other. Says that he is being persecuted as all great men from Galileo down have been. Very slight causes excite his suspicions. The following letter was written on the library being closed for reorganization:

DEAR SIR:—Will you have the kindness to inform me whether, as far as you know, I have been supposed in my projected compilation from Horace to be in any way trenching upon rights of Prof. Chas. Anthon, Jr. (I presume the author of the part I was using) or of Gen. Cessnola (who is said to be writing on Cypress and early Eastern art), or any other elsewhere or here? I cannot see how such a thing can be possible; but if it is not so, let me speak to you as one educated man to another and entreat you will consider how much I must suffer in my feelings—a man as I am who has always been studious, thinking, industrious! at being stopped in my preparation of a treatise, etc., etc., etc.

In 1890 delusion of poisoning continued unchanged. Says is about to write a book and make a new religion which will change the destiny of New York City.

Patient constantly writes letters asking for protection. L. R. is exceedingly well read, and has held the position of professor in some college; his education has been, however, irregular and unsystematic.

The delusion of persecution may be present in various forms of insanity. It is common in alcoholic cases, the hallucinations of hearing and sight being usually of a terrifying character, with the delusion of being followed or hunted down, or of a conspiracy formed against them to kill them. This is seen, again, in melancholia, where not infrequently we also find the fear of being killed or of being followed existing (*Verfolgungswahn*). It is not always of the persecutory character, but is often the result of the various hallucinations and illusions resulting from the sensory disturbances common to this disease.

We observe it not less often in mental diseases accompanying puberty, great fear of being the subject of some conspiracy being very common. In all these instances the whole course of the development of this special delusion is very different from its logical development in paranoia. In the latter form it is either the result of the mental confusion or depression existing, or consequent upon the hallucinations. *It cannot be said that we have any form of insanity where the only existing symptom is that of the delusion of persecution—i.e.*, of being followed from place to place, etc. We will find on careful investigation that there is a reason in the minds of

these patients for the persecution; it does not exist as an entity inexplicable to them. They may explain it on the ground that they have possession of some important invention, of some secret power which perhaps the Government would like to possess; or, again, that they are the real king or governor of the country, which, if the fact were made public, would lead to the overthrow of the impostor who now is in power.

G. B. (Fig. 22), male, æt. 53. Duration of disease twenty-seven years. Patient says that if he had his rights he would be high king of the earth of the Masons, and also that he is Christ, the Son of God, alias G. B., etc.

The character of this delusion is not unlike those seen in chronic mania.

Fig. 22.—Paranoia; Delusions of Grandeur and Persecution.

The immediate cause for the establishment of the delusion of persecution may be failure to succeed; especially does this show itself in the professional walks of life. The worry and mental anxiety, perhaps overwork and strain, may result in a more or less sudden delusion of great self-importance, of great ability in their special lines of occupation, perhaps as a painter, a physician, or a banker.

This idea of a conspiracy against them, in paranoia, is not as a rule sudden in its development: it is a gradual process. Many peculiar things have occurred which the patient at least is unable to understand. These occurrences at first do not attract attention, but gradually they force themselves on the individual as having some particular meaning especially for him. This is not uncommonly seen in the ignorant, and the very fact of this ignorance is used by them as an argument in favor of their

delusion being the truth. It is not rare for them to entertain for a long time doubts as to the reality of the delusion. This was plainly seen in a negro, born in the South, who had had little or no education. He had been brought up without discipline or training. His first appreciation of anything unusual was hearing his name called at night, waking him up from his sleep. He at that time and subsequently thought it was simply a part of a dream. Later he began to think it was peculiar, and on investigation found that no one in the house could possibly have called him. He then reached the conclusion that it was the voice of God calling him, an ignorant negro, to be His prophet and special messenger to the people of the whole world. His personality was completely changed; he began to study out passages of Scripture especially applicable to his new vocation and to assume the position of a prophet. His confinement became necessary, and this seemed to him the opposition and persecution from the powers of darkness which were naturally to be expected. In regard to all other affairs he was intellectually as able to carry them on as formerly. His commitment to the asylum he accepted and was not at all depressed by it, believing absolutely that in the proper time God would provide a way to have his plan carried out. There is an appearance of self-satisfaction and exaltation and personal self-importance about him which is peculiar to these cases. He sees and laughs at the pretensions of others to similar aspirations, but is not disturbed at all by any doubts as to his position.

This acceptance of their surroundings without opposition is not by any means always present. In fact, in almost all cases every opportunity is taken to appeal to friends or the public for release if confined. Epistles, many and voluminous, are sent, especially to those holding official positions. The case above referred to was arrested for addressing letters to the President and for attempting to obtain an audience with him.

AMBITIOUS PARANOIA will fall properly under this heading. There are always delusions of grandeur present. They not infrequently take on the character of a political nature. There is a belief that the political world is corrupt and needs reformation. They are especially called either to assume high office or to remove those in power for the purpose of allowing others to take their place.

There is little doubt that many of the members of the various secret organizations, as the Nihilists, Anarchists, and various religious sects, are paranoiacs. The danger from such persons to the community is seen in the fact that intellectually they are capable of carrying out their plans, and possessed by the delusion, no fear of consequences can prevent them from attempting to carry them out.

There is usually, indeed, in these cases more or less mental weakness which may eventually pass on to dementia, but the progress is generally slow. The lack of mental balance or power is evident in the delusion itself, which is often an improbable or impossible belief. Their methods of reforming the world or establishing a righteous form of government, being foolish in every detail, are an evidence of mental weakness. In many cases there is a motive for the acts committed, often some position being sought which would be of advantage to the individual himself. The fact that he has absolutely no knowledge of the duties of the office has no bearing on his opinions of his ability to fill the place. The delusions are not by any means always single, they may be almost numberless; but they, as a rule, pivot around some central delusion, as the belief in their being descended from the royal line, or that they are prophets or great inventors, etc. This development of new delusions was well illustrated in a patient for many years under observation in the asylum, in whom the delusion of persecution was very marked.

Examples of political paranoia, where the element of self-interest or revenge introduced itself along with undoubted evidence of insane self-exaltation and a belief in their mission to remove certain officials, who prevented the proper carrying on of the government, are shown in the histories of Guiteau and Prendergast. In both instances the knowledge of the character of the act which they committed was full and complete, and the consequences thoroughly known. However, in neither case did they expect to suffer these consequences, but looked forward to the applause and appreciation of the public. *There is a marked difference in the motive and in the mental reasoning in these cases from the form of insanity included under the head of irresistible impulse.* There is, as we have previously said, however, grave doubt whether responsibility can be considered as absent.

QUERULANT PARANOIA.—Das Irresein der Querulanten und Processkrämer; Paranoia litigiosa. We find the same elements of egotism and delusions of persecution in these cases as in the other forms of paranoia. They are always in some form of litigation, either on their own account or for some one else, or for some class or principle. It is not infrequent for some cases who have been confined in an asylum, after their release, to start a crusade against all institutions. Endless suits for inventions and patents which they claim have been stolen from them, are instituted. Numerous letters are written, judges are appealed to, or others high in power, as the President or the king, are written to. Their egotism is usually shown by their belief in their own methods and plans of obtaining impossible results. Without understanding legal processes they may put together a large mass of high-sounding words, meaningless and useless, with a profound belief in their weight. Not succeeding in their plans, the result is always ascribed to the treachery and corruption of the courts and judges or to the general failure of justice in this world. The feeling of persecution soon allies itself to this condition. They feel themselves martyrs, their opponents have used bribery and other evil methods against them. There is always present a certain absurdity in their plans giving evidence of their mental weakness. The persistence in their beliefs and in their attempts to carry them out is often remarkable. No amount of work or delay or number of defeats seems to have any effect in discouraging them. A lawyer familiar with legal processes may, as in one instance under observation, carry out his plans with considerable acumen, observing the proper legal methods.

The inconsequence of some of the charges, the absolute failure of producing any creditable testimony, or even at times the failure to make any attempt to do so, is very striking and illustrative of mental weakness. At times, however, such paranoiacs may get others to believe their statements and obtain their support. There is always a dangerous element in these cases, for not infrequently they show evidence of violence in revenge for their supposed injuries, and often against those holding high official position. This may take the form of hatred to the lawyer or judges or others with whom they may have come in contact or against an unknown official, on the

general principle that all are corrupt and must be removed before justice can be obtained.

The general type of paranoia is seen in all these cases; the form differs only in the line which the delusion happens to take. They are ready and often cunning in their defence when on trial, never for a moment allowing the plea of insanity, protesting their sanity, and in this respect resembling especially the political and religious reformers. Hallucinations and illusions are rare in these cases. The provocative or exciting cause is not infrequently based on some actual or fancied wrong done them. On investigation, however, there will usually be found evidence of hereditary disease in their family history, or they will show marks of physical abnormalities, or at least they have always been considered eccentric if not actually insane by those who have known them. The question of responsibility in criminal cases of this class presents unusual difficulties.

The law is not uncertain in its statements, but litigation is frequently protracted, expert testimony varying with the number of experts called. The jury, left in doubt, generally decides on its own impressions, and in times of general public excitement usually against the plea of insanity and consequent irresponsibility. There is usually little doubt of the act having been committed, nor is any attempt made to conceal it, although at times plans have been well laid for escape. The egotism and feeling of self-importance, however, rarely permit the individual to remain long quiet. The almost irresistible desire for notoriety soon leads to exposure, and not infrequently there is a voluntary acknowledgment of the act. Conspiracy is rare; the combination of others with them in their plans scarcely ever occurs. This fact alone is strong evidence of their insanity.

Religious Paranoia; religious insanity.—This form of mental disturbance, in which delusions of a religious character are the prominent feature, is not rare.

S. M. (Fig. 23), female, æt. 46. Duration of disease fifteen years. Patient has delusions of a religious character; thinks she has a mission to proclaim the rights of the widows and orphans, and is being persecuted. Was arrested in the Cathedral for creating a disturbance. Has great desire to dress in a showy and gaudy manner. Delusion in regard to her greatness continues to increase, and she has become more affected in her manner and showy in her dress.

The expression in the face shows clearly the absolute feeling of self-belief and satisfaction.

We observe in various other varieties of insanity conditions in which hallucinations and delusions of a religious type are prominent features, but they lack the systematized logical process of thought which is the characteristic feature of paranoia

Fig. 23.—Paranoia; Delusion of Grandeur and Persecution.

in general. In the latter the onset may be sudden, but is in fact rarely so. A careful history will develop that peculiarities in mental relations have been observed from childhood, perhaps a close concentration on one's self, a condition of mental reserve. It is true that there are exciting causes, as perhaps a revival going on at the time may be the beginning of the disease, so that its onset may appear acute and sudden. Again, financial

or domestic stress, disappointment of the affections, overstrain from excessive study, or physical causes, such as the developmental periods of puberty, the climacteric period, etc., may appear as the direct exciting cause of the disease. These are, however, only, as we have said, the exciting causes, the real disease consists in the hereditary congenital degenerative state. It is especially important that we should distinguish this form of paranoia from the ordinary delusional form of insanity common to many conditions of mental disturbances, as in paranoia we have to do with a chronic, incurable state, often a most dangerous form of insanity so far as the peace and security of the community are concerned. Delusions of an imperative character exist, leading to commission of acts usually not impulsive in character, but founded on well-defined beliefs, with aims and designs of a far-reaching character, which nothing but force and repression can prevent being carried out. These persons are willing to die the death of the martyr for the sake of their belief, and possessing, as they frequently do, considerable mental ability, perhaps eloquence, may induce others to believe with them that they are the special agents of God to carry on His behests, or to organize religious reforms throughout the world. Many prominent figures in history have without doubt been paranoiacs. The crudity of the delusion depends largely on the education and social position of the person affected, as well as on the manner in which the evolution of the delusion has become gradually and fully developed.

Religious paranoia may manifest itself among the ignorant as well as the learned, among those living in the quietude of a small town or in the city. It is not rare among the professional classes. It is not uncommon in the ignorant. In this respect it is similar to the other forms of paranoia which we have referred to. It is this very fact, when occurring in the latter class, which doubly confirms them in their belief in their special selection by God as his divinely appointed messenger. They fully appreciate their ignorance and lowly station in life, and reason that they could not possibly of themselves have such visions of God or the Virgin or such conversation with these holy personages unless they had been chosen of God himself. This transformation of their personality is usually associated with exaltation, rarely depression, except, perhaps, in the beginning when

more or less mental confusion exists, when the hallucination and illusion of sight and hearing are more or less novel or infrequent and have not as yet been classified and evolved into a fixed delusion. There is almost invariably an erotic element in these cases, but it is not the primary or fundamental form of the delusion. We have indeed a form of paranoia in which eroticism is the basis of the delusion, which we will refer to later; but in this form it is only secondary, as we often find in various well-defined forms of insanity, as melancholia, mania, epileptic insanity, etc. In fact, whenever the higher ethical powers are in abeyance the lower sensual nature manifests itself.

Paranoia is rare in any form before puberty—that is, systematized delusions are not present in childhood. Certain mental and physical peculiarities may give strong indications of its future development, but it is rarely manifested before that period. However, at this time and during other developmental periods, it is especially apt to manifest itself. Under fortunate circumstances of life, wise educational care, absence of mental strain, a paranoiac may never have his delusions developed: success or the development of the mind in other directions may entirely overcome the inherited tendency. On the other hand, if the paranoiac becomes a priest or nun, the fixed attention on religious subjects may result in this form of insanity; not indeed that religion tends to produce insanity of a religious type, but we that perhaps find more paranoiacs, as yet undeveloped into those with systematized delusions, naturally selecting such religious separation as their mode of life.

Tuke, in the "Dictionary of Psychological Medicine," under the head of religious insanity, describes seven forms. These, however, do not, properly speaking, all belong to paranoia. Religious delusions may be classified according as they—

"(1) Accompany the mental development of over-stimulated and injudiciously educated children. The usual form is morbid fear; he fancies he has neglected some religious duty, and he is before long overwhelmed by remorse for imaginary sins.

"(2) Characterize the insanity of puberty. Here the mental depression and fear of death lead to the desire to perform some religious act as penance.

"(3) Are caused by self-abuse. The patient is introspective, falls into the delusion that he has committed the unpardonable

sin. Auditory hallucinations, visions, trances, and ecstasies are common. Suicide and fearful self-mutilation may result."

I would especially confirm the views of Tuke in regard to this class. While among masturbators there is not infrequently a marked degree of self-importance and exaltation associated with delusions of a sexual character in relation with the Virgin or Christ, it more frequently takes on the form, in my experience, of depression, in which their condition is altogether ascribed to their habits, which God is justly punishing them for. Many trivial errors of childhood will be recalled and self-accusations made, which take a far more important position in their minds as the cause of their hopeless condition than many more recent and more vulnerable acts, concerning which they will talk with but little repentance or sorrow.

A young woman who had led the life of a prostitute for several years became rather suddenly melancholic, bemoaning her fate, that she had committed the unpardonable sin, that her soul was lost, etc., but dwelt especially on an occurrence probably not based on fact, that she had attempted while a little girl to have unnatural relations with a New Foundland dog.

All these cases occurring in melancholia, as has been said, differ from the systematized religious delusions of paranoia, and complete recovery is possible.

"(4) Are associated with (so-called) paranoia. Sexual excitability is often associated with misapprehended religious duty."

This combination in a neurotic subject has repeatedly led to extravagant ideas and the foundation of fanatical sects. Texts of Scripture are applied personally, and nothing is too absurd for adoption under the guise of superior spirituality. The author has reference in this subdivision to the form of religious paranoia which is the subject of this chapter. It is not necessary that religion should have even interested this class previously to their delusion. The casual reading or hearing of a passage of Scripture may be the starting-point, and may occur in a person ignorant not only generally but in regard to the Scriptures themselves. They not infrequently become thereafter students of the Bible, selecting and memorizing passages which apply to their special delusion.

"(5) Are associated with epilepsy, dementia, and general

paralysis. In epilepsy Dr. Hurd says: 'There is never or rarely any sense of religious fear or unworthiness, but rather a sense of satisfaction in the performance of religious duties.' In general paralysis as in mania there may be extravagant delusions of religious importance.

"(6) Are observed in melancholic and climacteric insanity. Here the delusions may be the result of the influence of the special religious training.

"(7) Arise in chronic mania or toxic insanity. These delusions are usually of an exalted character."

In conclusion Tuke well says in regard to the course and determination of religious delusions: "As they are frequently associated with the insanity of pubescence the study of developmental insanities bears especially upon the subject of this article. The religious delusions which accompany masturbational insanity are not necessarily incurable. They are, however, liable to become persistent and are not readily amenable to treatment. They may be considered incurable whenever the patient has reached the stage of religious extravagance, which is surely indicative of mental deterioration.

"*The religious delusions of paranoia are essentially incurable*, being the legitimate development of a mental twist and the outgrowth of an abnormal personality. They eventually become thoroughly assimilated by the mind, an integral part of its constitution. During the stage of persecution they may at times pass from the mind, but after the stage of transformation they cannot."

I have quoted somewhat fully from Tuke, as he clearly defines the delusions of a religious nature as they appear in the various forms of insanity, and differentiates those peculiar to paranoia, as shown in his fourth subdivision.

Erotic Paranoia—Erotomania—a form of paranoia in which the delusion pertains to love of the opposite sex, and is usually, as Krafft-Ebing has said, directed toward one in a higher station in life, or at least toward one who has given no evidence of any knowledge of that person's existence. It is essentialy a mental distortion, the result often of hallucinations and illusions. The slightest acts are given a significance: a glance is taken as directed toward them, etc., etc. Notices in papers are construed into reference to their relations. The

object of this affection may never have been seen or may not be known, except through the visual hallucinations. This does not in any way affect their belief in the existence of the mutual love. The laborer may become the beloved one of the princess, indeed he may be sought after. There are always present evidence of hereditary taint, signs of degeneration.

The course of the disease is similar to paranoia in general, differing only in the special delusion. The exciting cause varies, often being excessive venery. Visions of a sexual character may be present, and this is specially so where the delusion has reference to some exalted person, perhaps never seen except in public prints. There is a tendency in many of these cases to develop a delusion of a changed personality to correspond to their exalted affections. The circumstantial and detailed description of their own personality, and their description of the relations they have with their imaginary loved ones, are remarkable. This grows in distinctness with time and repetition until it has become thoroughly systematized. It is usually later that the delusion of persecution associates itself to this condition, after perhaps some public exposure has led to their apprehension.

There may be religious delusions combined with the erotomania, and indeed sexual desire may not be present to any marked degree. There is little attempt at concealment, nor is there any shame felt. There is the same feeling of a special call to fill a mission as observed in the class of reformers. The evidence of mental weakness is apparent.

There is another class of these cases, however, where apparently there are no hallucinations or illusions and in which the intellectual field is but little involved. The delusion is simply one of being loved and loving one who has shown absolutely no regard for them, or perhaps is not even conscious of their existence until their presence is forced on them, or they are followed from place to place, or various signs, letters, etc., are constantly giving them proof. It is especially here that the delusion of persecution arises, and the obstacles put in the way to prevent them from seeing the object of their affection are ascribed to a conspiracy. Never is the object of the affection considered a party to this, but rather also the victim. This at least is at first the belief; it may finally take the form of hatred to the former object of their love, and result in a desire for revenge.

These cases are often dangerous in the extreme, following up their threats with skill and cunning; and being little affected mentally except in regard to this one fixed delusion, their judgment is good in all other respects. There is usually, however, evidence of some mental weakness. It is often most difficult on examination to find any symptoms indicating insanity. Especially if the patient is at all suspicious he will talk pleasantly and intelligently on all other subjects, and will enjoy his success in eluding the various questions put to him. The most wary may be deceived by them, and even the subject of their delusion may be so mixed with known facts as to convince many who are not conversant with all the facts. It is rare that they will admit that they are subject to a delusion or will accept the plea of insanity as a defence. However, when in confinement they may, for the purpose of obtaining their liberty, admit they have been subject to a delusion which they no longer entertain. These statements are always to be received with caution, as, from the opinion already given, their mental state is an incurable one. The recovery from a delusion, no matter how dangerous in its character, in mania and melancholia may be permanent, and its recognition by such cases is often the first sign of a permanent restoration to mental health.

The well-known case of Dougherty, who labored under the delusion that a celebrated actress entertained feelings of regard for him, illustrates what has been said. He followed her from place to place, even to Europe. Every unconscious movement would be ascribed to some secret acknowledgment by her of his regard. He was enabled by his skill as a telegrapher to obtain the necessary means to follow out his plans. Nothing seemed to discourage him; he possessed the usual feeling of exaltation and self-satisfaction peculiar to these cases. He at one time acknowledged that his opinion in regard to her liking for him was an error, but this was only for a purpose of his own. The dangerous character of the man was manifested later by his murder of a physician in the asylum to which he had been sent. His trial for this act, however, resulted in conviction, the plea of insanity not being accepted. There is no doubt that according to the law as it now stands the conviction was a just one. A clear knowledge of the right or wrong of his act existed in the mind of the prisoner; but we have to deal with a person who

does not allow that question to arise in his mind. His desire is the only thing which he thinks of, all moral and physical obstacles are disregarded. It is this disregard of consequences which is the strongest evidence of their insanity, combined as it often is with absolutely impossible methods of accomplishing their ends. The question, however, of their responsibility before the law is one that really belongs to the field of sociology.

INSANITY FROM CONSTITUTIONAL NEUROSES.

The various neuroses are described in books on diseases of the nervous system, and I shall not describe them except in so far as they bear on mental diseases. Under the head of neuroses are included the so-called functional diseases, which show no structural or organic changes in the organs which are affected. We find the same conditions in the nervous system. There is indeed some change due to malnutrition, exhaustion, or some toxic agencies, but as yet what these are no investigation has satisfactorily settled. As advances are made in our study of disease this class will be reduced in number, as from the very nature of things disease cannot exist without an adequate cause. Epilepsy, hysteria, pursuing as they do a developmental and chronic course, must be due to some definite and deep-seated lesion.

Neurasthenia.—Nervous prostration represents in general a lowering of the tone of the cerebro-spinal system. It may especially involve the brain or the cord, in which case the symptoms all point to functional rather than permanent or organic disturbance of function. There is usually, however, an affection of the whole nervous system, although one part may be more involved than the other. We may find almost absolute loss of function, an apparently sudden inhibition both in the physical and psychical fields. This inhibition often, however, disappears as suddenly as it arose. We see all the evidence of vaso-motor changes, temporary, as a rule, although at times they pass on into definite chronic states, ending in special neuroses resembling, although rarely exactly, those previously described.

Neurasthenia must at present be accepted as a distinct nervous state, and while under its head such conditions as hysteria, hypochondria, melancholia, etc., may be falsely included, as

many similar symptoms exist in all, yet despite this confusion careful examination will show that we have to do with a class of symptoms which, irregular and contradictory as they may appear, go to make an entity, as well defined and positive as other diseases, physical or psychical. A certain opprobrium has attached itself to the term or rather to the individual with the disease, as in the case of hysteria, as if the patient were capable of controlling or banishing altogether the symptoms he complains of. There is also considerable confusion in separating these latter conditions from each other. This is not so surprising, as they have many symptoms in common, and indeed one disease may engraft itself on the other or become associated with it.

Foster has defined neurasthenia as "a condition appearing in the early and middle periods of adult life, presenting objective symptoms of deranged functions of the nervous system, slight in degree but definite in character, and persisting for months, for years, for life. There is inability to walk more than a short distance without fatigue; a variable increase of myotatic irritability; headache; aching or pain in the back and legs, and spontaneous sensations of tingling, formication, heat and cold. Dyspepsia, constipation, and other derangements of the functions may result in anæmia. There is a mental phase in the condition, the patient being irritable, unable to pursue a consecutive train of thought, or there may be a cheerful, egotistical resignation to invalidism. It may be caused by emotional or mental strain, worry, fright, etc."

He further makes several subdivisions which more or less accurately give its symptomatology, *i.e.*—cerebral, cerebro-cardiac, cerebro-gastric, cerebro-spinal, gastric, genito-urinary, neuralgic, spasmodic, spinal, vaso-motor, and sexual neurasthenia.

It is rare, however, that we find any one of these forms distinct and by itself. They are usually associated, the cerebro-spinal type being the most common, with perhaps a predominance of a certain class of symptoms, as spinal irritation or a feeling of mental incapacity and fear of insanity.

Neurasthenia is by no means a disease peculiar to modern times or to any one country. It has been described by the older writers, even by the ancients. It has only come more into

prominence since its symptoms have been more clearly grouped. There can scarcely be made a differential diagnosis between it and cerebral and spinal irritation. Its symptoms are multitudinous and variable, but all point toward exhaustion and a departure from normal reaction. Their interest to us lies in the bearing they have on mental disease, either as prodromal symptoms of distinct psychoses as melancholia, general paralysis, epilepsy, etc., or in their relation to those ill-defined mental states lying in the so-called borderland of sanity, in which impulses more or less imperative manifest themselves. Here, perhaps, belong most properly all those peculiar mental disturbances which express themselves in fear of disease, frequently of insanity, of open places (agoraphobia), of closed places (or claustrophobia), etc. We shall describe these conditions later under this heading. These symptoms may pass beyond mere eccentricity into permanent states, which must be regarded as a true degenerative condition.

Neurasthenia may be regarded as a degenerative state, at least in the chronic forms. It is more often congenital or hereditary than acquired. We have, in other words, a predisposition to disease, a soil in which exciting causes as worry, mental strain, shock, excesses, alcoholism, etc., have an effect not resulting in the healthy. The most common exciting causes are overstrain, physical and mental, associated with domestic or financial loss. Shock from an accident, whether accompanied by actual physical injury or not, may precipitate the sudden or gradual onset of nerve exhaustion. Disappointment in the affections or in the attainment of some much wished-for position may excite in a constitution predisposed, either from hereditary taint or from long-continued overwork to disease, this tendency to an absolute collapse. It is not infrequent to find such conditions result in unsuccessful candidates for high political position; again, in the young after the excitement and exhaustion consequent upon the severe ordeal of an examination. Shock of any kind is a very common cause, as has been said. The frequent trials for damages in our courts have done much to develop an extensive literature concerning the consequences of such occurrences on the nervous system. Some cases of interest have arisen in which claims have been made against the telegraph companies in which there

has been neglect or failure in conveying the proper message, resulting in a shock to the recipient. Death may result in some instances; truly it is natural to expect some effect tending to disease of a serious nature.

A gentleman under my observation was present in an accident on a railway in France. His car was not involved in the wreck, and he was very active in rescuing and aiding the injured. He continued his journey, and it was not for some time that symptoms of a nervous character manifested themselves. He became timid while travelling, and would have recalled to his remembrance all the horrors of the scene, were there the slightest delay on the train he was travelling on. This gradually developed into a fixed morbid fear of travelling, and later he became a distinct example of neurasthenia.

Exhaustive diseases associated with pain, especially if much sleep is lost, are prone to result in this disease. Loss of sleep is indeed one of the most marked symptoms of neurasthenia; it is also one of the commonest causes of it. Venereal excess, especially masturbation, is often the basis of the exhaustion of the nervous system, and when this is the cause it gives rise to a form of neurasthenia peculiar in itself, and may indeed be the origin of many of the cases of sexual perversion.

The symptoms peculiar to neurasthenia are essentially cerebral and spinal, and the latter are in fact subordinate to the former.

"While neurasthenia is protean in its manifestations, there are still certain symptoms rarely in default, which for this reason have been called by Charcot neurasthenic stigmata. These are: a special form of headache (casque neurasthénique) and a sensation of emptiness in the head; insomnia and disturbed sleep; psychic adynamia; motor enfeeblement; spinal hyperæsthesia, and rhachialgia with points of election (plaque cervicale, plaque sacrée, and coccygodynia); gastro-intestinal atony; genital and vaso-motor disorders" (E. Régis, "Practical Manual of Mental Medicine").

In our study of the disease especial reference only will be given to the mental symptoms. Such patients complain of a feeling of loss of mental power, especially the power of concentration upon any given subject. They cannot read because their attention soon wanders, or they experience great fatigue. They are unable to carry on their usual business, either from some

cause as mentioned above or a fear that they will be unable to do so correctly. An almost insane dread of meeting business or social friends exists. The idea of an appointment, the anticipation of it, will often be sufficient to start up a train of symptoms, in which there is especially shown a loss of will power, even to the extent of absolute motor inability. The emotional state is also very much affected, as shown by a tendency to burst into tears, or even laughter; this is not really based on any true grief or joy, but seems to be something outside of themselves. There is usually a tendency to irritability and anger on slight provocation.

This state is fully recognized by the patients, who are usually introspective and love to talk over their various mental changes. Depression even to extreme melancholia is not uncommon as a result of morbid fear of losing their minds. They make constant threats of suicide, or fear that they will commit such an act. In fact such attempts are often made, but usually with no full intention of carrying them out. There is always a fixed idea present which has special reference to their mental condition. They constantly assert that they can bear any amount of pain if they could only get rid of the peculiar feeling of oppression and weight in the head, and of the feeling of absolute loss of mental power and ability to exercise their will. Under special excitement, or if carried away by the necessity of action, or even in extreme pleasure, they find themselves capable of carrying on plans or doing things involving great fatigue. The reaction in these instances is often extreme when the necessity for exertion is removed.

The intellectual faculties are rarely involved, the memory is not impaired. When the interest is awakened they will remember all the details and every direction given by the physician, and if they have faith in him, will depend on and carry out with exactitude all his directions.

Hallucinations, illusions, and delusions are rare, nor do we find a tendency to development into such forms of mental disease characterized by them. They seem to be subject to impulses, to doubts and fears, which occur suddenly. Under certain impulses they may be able to walk miles without fatigue; there is, in fact, rarely any actual motor weakness. At another time the sense of motor weakness is so extreme that they may

collapse before going half a block, and find themselves incapable of proceeding another step. These functional motor disturbances are shown also in various spasms of the muscles, especially of the face; or of the eyes, in frequent winking, or of the corners of the mouth. This may indeed involve the whole body. This is especially so if attention is drawn to it. It becomes indeed a habit, at first voluntary, but later it becomes more or less involuntary. The tremor of the hands is often shown in their inability to perform any act requiring skill; especially is this seen in writing. The mere attempt to write excites a feeling of mental and physical fatigue, although the ability to dictate a rational letter may not be impaired.

The muscular system is not impaired, unless indeed the health has been so much affected as to confine the patient to the house or bed.

Associated with these mental and motor disturbances there is much sensory disturbance. Hyperæsthesia or pain exquisite in its character may affect the head, and involve one-half of the cranium, or, as is more common, remain limited to the vertex or base. This may often be only dull in character, a feeling of weight at the base of the brain. Pain is widely distributed along the spine, and over various regions as the heart, kidneys, ovaries, and even in the bones. Pressure may elicit considerable pain, sometimes very extreme. Anæsthesia, loss of sensation, is not uncommon; a feeling as if the parts were dead. This may follow certain lines, as one-half of the body, or over given areas. Rarely in examination do we find any objective loss of sensation to the various tests of heat, cold, pain, or touch.

The symptoms are largely subjective. Vaso-motor disturbance is common. Sudden congestion or analgesia of the head or spine may cause vertigo, a sense of fulness, or a tendency to syncope. The pulse corresponds to this condition, so that we find marked variations in it, from a slow to a rapid one, with intermittence. These attacks are accompanied by a feeling of impending death.

Insomnia is perhaps one of the most characteristic symptoms, and the one which tends to aggravate all the mental symptoms defined. Even when sleep is present, it is usually accompanied by dreams of a distressing character, and there is no feeling of rest on waking. The interest, in a medico-legal

sense, in these cases arises when, perhaps, unreasonable antipathy or excessive friendship is present, which has influenced the individual perhaps unduly in his testamentary capacity; or, again, in criminal procedure the question of responsibility may present itself.

Many acts of these cases are, as we have said, impulsive in character, often imperative indeed. Not infrequently, especially when there is a sexual element in the form of neurasthenia we have to deal with, there exists an almost irresistible tendency to some overt and often indecent act. We will consider this in more detail under a special head. This disease belongs to the class of degenerations, and has much in common with paranoia, especially in the presence of a fixed idea. It is, however, not as logical in its development, and although at times there is an accompanying delusion of persecution, it is rare. The fluctuating character of the symptoms, the physical signs of physical exhaustion and pain, are absent in paranoia. The anxiety and depression are quite foreign to paranoia, in which indeed we usually find a spirit of egotism and self-appreciation.

The prognosis is usually good. There is, however, a possibility of termination in one of the well-defined mental diseases, especially mania or melancholia, with homicidal and suicidal intent.

It does not usually take the form of insanity with delusions, but rather that of melancholia with complete loss of hope of recovery. There is usually the desire to recover, but the constantly present dread of becoming insane may result in some overt act.

Tuke refers to neurasthenia as being a prodromal stage in general paralysis. This may be so, but is probably rare.

One such patient has been under my observation:

Male, æt. 27, a butcher by occupation. His history was negative, except that he had been overworked; he was, however, very successful and accumulated considerable money. He became sleepless and finally anxious about himself, and unable to attend to his business, which increased his anxiety. He feared that he was losing his mind. A year later he showed the symptoms of a typical case of general paresis. He became happy and self-satisfied, considered himself perfectly well, and in no way troubled himself about his business.

There could be no greater contrast than that between the previous mental state and its termination.

Hysterical Insanity.—Hysteria is essentially a disease in which degeneration is the most prominent feature. We are unable to point out the pathological changes in the brain which account for the symptoms. We class it, therefore, as a functional disturbance. Perhaps no condition involves so completely the whole nervous system as hysteria. It manifests itself, therefore, by both physical and mental symptoms. The former are multitudinous, simulating all other diseases. The multiplicity of the symptoms is, to a certain extent, a point of diagnosis; their shortness of duration and their sudden disappearance are as significant. We have noticed this same characteristic in neurasthenia, the two conditions having indeed much in common; often indeed we find them combined.

In hyteria we have to do with great instability of the nervous system; a slight cause may initiate marked mental symptoms. Despite, however, the multiplicity of the symptoms there is a certain uniformity about them, which more or less clearly defines them.

The line between hysteria and hysterical insanity is not always easy to draw. We find the emotions more affected than the intellect, and therefore the acts are of the impulsive type.

The most important element in the causation of hysteria is heredity—either of hysteria itself or the various neuroses as epilepsy, chorea, etc., or insanity. It is not rare to find in the descendants of the insane various functional diseases of the nervous system manifesting themselves, and among others this form of nervous instability. The exciting causes are various—any shock, whether traumatic or emotional, as fear, domestic loss, financial stress, disappointment in the affections, exhaustion from disease, as fever, loss of blood inducing anæmia, chlorosis, sexual excess, onanism, etc.

Hysteria is most common in young females about the age of puberty, but may occur in the more advanced in life, even indeed at the menopause; or, again, in children, although much more rarely. It is observed also in men.

The typical forms, as described by Charcot and other French writers, are not so common in this country or in England. Such cases present all the physical signs of the disease, as hemianæsthesia; hemiplegia, usually unassociated with wasting of the muscles; contractures, tremors, choreiform in character;

unilateral loss of vision, taste, etc. There is usually also great vaso-motor disturbance, cardiac palpitation, unilateral sweating associated with heat or cold of the extremities. This class of symptoms is often very definite, but usually we find the anæsthesia is but partial.

The paralysis, when present, whether hemiplegic in type or paraplegic, is too absolute and complete to render a diagnosis as a rule difficult. Still the previous history of other attacks is the most important fact in establishing an absolute diagnosis. Outside of the general physical condition which we have described are the convulsive seizures, so common in this disease. They are frequently epileptoid in character, and when so we have a condition called *hystero-epilepsy*, which is essentially hysteria, however. *A special characteristic of these convulsive seizures is that, as a rule, the patient appreciates their onset and therefore receives a warning more often than in epilepsy.* I believe, however, that these attacks are as impossible to check on the part of the individual as are true epileptic seizures. They, however, are usually able to get to a place of safety before the onset of the attack, although this is not always the case. The convulsions in hysteria of the milder or more usual form differ from those of epilepsy in that they are irregular. There may be rapid clonic convulsion, limited to one side, or one hand, or to both feet; more rarely there is a sudden fall, followed by clonic and tonic convulsions. A complete loss of consciousness is rare. Patients will generally remember what has occurred, and recall those who have been present. Following the attack, as a rule, there is not present the tendency to sleep which usually occurs in epilepsy.

A distinct mental state is present, which manifests itself by excessive talking, crying, or laughing, showing that cerebral excitement is present. Especial emotional states may show themselves by the attitude assumed by the patients, as that of prayer, of fear, etc. These attacks may continue for several hours, and are not infrequently followed by a mental condition of confusion, lasting usually but a few hours or again for days.

The severe form or *hysteria major* is, as I have said, rare in this country. Charcot describes three stages of the convulsive attacks, first the epileptoid, resembling very closely an ordinary epileptic seizure; second, one in which we have ex-

treme opisthotonos, pleurosthotonos, or emprosthotonos; and a third stage in which there is less of the convulsive character but mental symptoms are more marked.

There is excitement, as shown by the tendency to talk or sing, or to assume special attitudes indicative of certain emotions. There is little difference in their forms except in the character of the convulsive seizures. We may find the convulsive stage entirely absent, there being only successive attacks of mental excitement, a true maniacal seizure, which may require restraint. These attacks may occur several times during the twenty-four hours and continue for weeks. We frequently observe a religious or an erotic element in their conversation and their attitudes. There is no absolute loss of consciousness of what they are doing or saying, although it is beyond their control. They are frequently obscene in their language, and show signs of lasciviousness.

These acute attacks of hysterical mania may be absent, there being simply a mental condition which by its general symptoms of emotional instability, unreasonableness, selfishness, jealousy, and tendency to quarrel with every one, defines itself as hysteria.

In women all these states are increased at the menstrual epochs: especially is this the case when sexual ideas are present. There may be excessive masturbation at these periods. This element increases and prolongs the mental excitement. This is shown by the following case:

Miss L., æt. 17, a modest and accomplished young woman, is subject at her menstrual periods to attacks maniacal in character. She becomes suddenly excited, usually at night, and is aroused from her sleep by some fright; she cries out, talks upon innumerable subjects, has no convulsions, but has to be restrained owing to her incessant movements. She has such a sense of genital irritation that she resorts to masturbation, which she is unable to refrain from. These attacks are followed by a condition of extreme exhaustion, lasting several hours to several days, in which she seems to be unable to appreciate what is going on around her. These attacks may pass into cataleptic or trance states, lasting for days and weeks.

In an Italian boy brought to the hospital in an apparently unconscious state, we watched carefully for any sign of simulation or fraud. There seemed to be almost complete anæsthesia—a needle could be passed through the fleshy part of his leg or arm without apparent

feeling on his part. Any position in which his arm or leg was placed remained fixed for a long time, no matter how uncomfortable it might be. Carefully watched, he would lie for hours in the same position, the respirations being shallow and infrequent. There seemed to be no desire for food, which was never voluntarily taken. Having, however, stopped feeding him by force, and all food having been removed, he was observed one night to rise from his bed and get some articles of food from tables of the other patients.

This case corresponds to those which have been reported of the trance state, fasting mania, etc. Careful investigation will usually show that there is more or less simulation and fraud connected with them. There is without doubt a true condition of partial loss of consciousness similar to the hypnotic state.

In the constitutionally hysterical temperament, which is a fixed condition and in which paroxysmal seizures are absent, melancholia is more common than mania. Suicidal impulses are common; attempts are frequently made or at least threatened. They may indeed be carried out, though rarely. These patients become very depressed and possessed with the fear of going insane, or indeed of killing themselves or others. Hallucinations or delusions are rare, nor is the depression of the same character as in melancholia. There is not unusually present the feeling of self-condemnation. In children hysterical attacks are not uncommon and may be associated with epileptic seizures. We may observe true hysterical contractures, anæsthesia, paralysis, etc.

The attacks of crying, laughing, vomiting, barking, using obscene language, etc., are essentially hysterical. There is frequently present, even in these young cases, simulation or at least exaggeration.

It is among this class we find cases of pyromania, or, again, when a sexual element is present, accusations of assault may be falsely made. In fact many cases of impulsive insanity, so called, have a hysterical basis.

Hypochondriacal Insanity.—In this disease we have a condition which has passed beyond the feeling of anxiety and depression in regard to some bodily disease they may have, to a fixed idea which cannot be removed. It resembles in many respects neurasthenia, and yet differs from it in that there is greater concentration on the personal condition. The same

may be said in regard to melancholia; in both we have marked depression, but in the latter it is caused by the thoughts or delusions which may be present in the mind, while in hypochondria it is due to the actual or imagined disease of some organs of the body. In most of these cases there is a special delight or at least a feeling of necessity to describe all the individual symptoms of their disease. The tongue, pulse, digestion, etc., are carefully and anxiously observed.

The condition is generally observed in those with a predisposition to disease of the nervous system, especially those hereditarily affected. It may lead to a mental condition which completely inhibits all ability to do anything except to think and talk of their illness. The depression may become so extreme as to lead to suicide. We at least observe great loss of will power and inability to concentrate the attention.

Many of these fixed ideas of hypochondria refer themselves to sensations in the brain. Every feeling of fulness or pain in the head is dwelt upon. There is a feeling of complete inability to fix the attention on anything. Reading or writing causes complete exhaustion or pain at the vertex or more usually at the back of the neck.

Subjective sensations are common. The patient will complain that he can feel the blood all coming away from his brain. He feels certain that he will become insane, that his brain is dead, and so forth. These feelings are not infrequently excited by what has been read, especially is this so if masturbation has been practised at any time. This class of patients corresponds closely to those of sexual neurasthenia.

The most bizarre yet fixed beliefs may exist, however.

A young man under my observation maintained that one-half of his face was constantly getting smaller. This prevented him from keeping at his work, and finally he went voluntarily into an asylum for a year. During this period careful measurements were taken, which conclusively showed that there was no difference between the two sides of his face. He remained under my care for some time, but no argument could convince him of the truth of the facts.

Hypochondriasis in connection with the digestive organs is very common—there may be fixed ideas of disease of the stomach or intestines. There is frequently a feeling that the physi-

cian is deceiving them. The depression is often excessive, preventing all attempts at occupation. Sleep and general nutrition are interfered with. Any new disease is readily taken up by some of these cases.

Suicide is not rare. Hypochondriasis in regard to the sexual organs is frequently present in the young, more especially among men. There is usually a history of masturbation. The fear of impotency soon arises, the organs are felt to be undergoing atrophy; the penis is usually felt to be cold. This may occur about the time when marriage is contemplated or may have no reference to it. It was clearly illustrated in a patient, a professional man, who gave a history of marked venereal excess of all kinds. He had married and had nine children, but was possessed with the fixed idea that his organs were undergoing atrophy. The importance of the mental condition consisted in the depression associated with it and the tendency to suicide.

EPILEPTIC INSANITY, OR MENTAL DISEASE IN EPILEPSY.

I would here follow the definition given by W. Bevan Lewis in his recent work on mental disease, viz.: "Epileptic insanity is that form of mental derangement, in the antecedent history, the oncome, and further development of which we recognize an intimate connection with the epileptic neurosis."

Cullere defines epilepsy as a convulsive neurosis characterized by intermittent attacks of short duration and variable intensity, and accompanied by a sudden loss of consciousness and generally by mental disease (see Cullere, p. 419).

The tendency of epilepsy is toward dementia. The variations in its course are those found in all mental disease—that is, the periods of excitement and of depression either alternating the one with the other or, almost as in circular insanity, one following the other. There is likewise a special tendency to hallucinations, illusions, and delusions, but they have nothing about them which is characteristic of epilepsy proper. Any distinction between epilepsy *per se* and epileptic insanity is difficult, if not impossible, since, pathologically, we have the same ill-defined condition present in which, as Lewis has well

said, the question must often be asked in an asylum, why is such a patient confined? Indeed, we find many in whom epileptic seizures occur only at long intervals and whose condition in the interparoxysmal state is apparently normal, yet during the paroxysms they are maniacal, melancholic, or are possessed of some strong delusion, and are not infrequently subject to marked hallucinations and illusions of the special senses, either preceding or following the seizure.

In our study of epileptic insanity we must proceed on the same lines as in that of the neurosis itself; in fact, insanity is a mental condition to which all epileptics are liable, and probably no cases exist in which there is not more or less mental impairment present. This subject is one of great importance, because perhaps no line of defence is more frequently adopted than the claim that there has been a history of epilepsy in the individual under examination. It is certainly very difficult to come to a conclusion as to whether at the time of the commission of the act the person was influenced or under the control of some fixed delusion which was well defined at the time.

It is perhaps advisable, where a positive history of epileptic seizure is obtainable, to mitigate the punishment for the crime, while not allowing the criminal to be held as absolutely irresponsible.

While some examples of great mental brilliancy no doubt present themselves to the experience of all among epileptics, the great majority show at least some evidence of moral or mental deterioration. In this disease, as in other forms of insanity, we find the higher moral qualities are the ones first affected, so that on the ethical side of the character the loss is most marked. The patient becomes more or less brutal, the face often shows a loss of the finer elements, and the emotional state becomes so unstable that the individual is uncertain, impulsive, and suspicious. As a diagnostic point of a true epileptic seizure perhaps the most important is the suddenness of the onset of the attack, associated with complete loss of consciousness and convulsive seizures, general or localized. The complete loss of the reflexes, as seen in the pupil, in the conjunctival response, and knee jerk, as well as the loss of reflex control over the bladder and rectum, causing unconscious urination and defecation, are additional points of value in the diagnosis. No one of these, however, can

be held as of supreme importance; their association is principally of value.

We have considered two forms or groups of epileptics: those in whom the symptoms are dependent upon a general nervous disorder—in other words, so-called idiopathic epilepsy—and those whose disorder depends upon some local brain lesion, either traumatic or degenerative. The first class more properly belongs to mental disease, although in the second class the symptoms are often not dissimilar from those observed in the neurosis proper.

The first group will, therefore, present in many instances a bad hereditary history, so that either in the parent or collateral branches epilepsy or other neuroses—insanity or alcoholism—will be present; in fact, the descendants of epileptics themselves may present these various disorders rather than that special neurosis. The proportion of insane in our asylums with epilepsy as a cause is very large. In England, out of 14,336 patients admitted to the various asylums in the year 1887, there were 1,294 epileptics, of whom 777 were men and 517 women, or about nine per cent. The appearance of epileptic seizures among the insane is of very frequent occurrence, especially in general paresis; the distinction, however, between the neurosis proper and these irregular attacks is to be observed. The maniacal condition may precede the epileptic seizure or may follow it. It very often precedes the attack. For several hours, days, or even weeks a peculiar mental state may be observed in these patients which is noted by the attendants as premonitory of a series of attacks. They may be of the nature of hallucinations, and often those associated with the special sense of smell or taste, or of hearing or sight. Not infrequently the same kind of hallucinations precedes each attack, and this is especially indicative of some localized lesion as the seat of the disease. Delusions may follow and be founded on these hallucinations, and it is especially on this account that these patients are dangerous. *The wildest mania may be the result; it is more usually homicidal than suicidal in type.* There is a special tendency to the so-called form of moral insanity in these cases. The most purposeless, impulsive, and cruel acts are committed by them at times; indeed, the crimes resemble not infrequently those committed by paranoiacs which from time to time startle the world. As a rule, they have no recollection of the acts com-

mitted on returning to consciousness a double consciousness existing in many of these cases.

F. M. (Fig. 24), æt. 45, female (colored), has tendency to become excited and maniacal. Expression of the face indicates sullenness and obstinacy.

In the milder forms of mental aberration long journeys have been taken by such persons, and even business has been transacted without there being any observable peculiarity in their actions, and on returning to consciousness they have been surprised at their new surroundings. One should be cautious in forming opinions in regard to the statements made by the patient; the motive must always be carefully investigated, as this disease may be claimed simply as a cloak for various crimes which have been committed. Alcoholism must also be excluded.

FIG. 24.—Epileptic Mania.

Automatic acts apparently committed in the dream condition may be frequently observed after an attack of epilepsy, even of a mild character. In other cases mental disturbance may appear to take the place of a true convulsive seizure, and is then called "*masked epilepsy*." More frequently, however, these mental disturbances follow or precede a true epileptic seizure.

Idiocy is not present in ordinary epilepsy except when due to organic changes seen in infantile forms; but here there is generally associated some form of paralysis, either hemiplegia or diplegia of cerebral origin, along with convulsive seizures. This is

dependent upon actual destruction of the cortex surface of the brain, or upon the presence of cystic degenerations consequent upon a preceding inflammation, or upon direct injury and compression of the brain substance by a meningeal hemorrhage, occurring most frequently during a prolonged and tedious delivery or from forcible compression with the forceps. More rarely the condition is one of intracerebral hemorrhage. In these patients there is usually dementia in varying degrees. The epileptic seizures do not differ in character or in response to treatment from those observed in the idiopathic form. The question of responsibility in relation to crime would rarely be in doubt, as the evidence of the disease would be well shown by the palpable conditions present.

In reports of cases under my own observation there was evidence of marked degenerative changes in the conformation of the skull, actual measurement invariably showing in hemiplegic cases a diminution in the size of the skull on the affected side, while the brain frequently exhibited marked atrophy and shrivelling of the convolutions, thinning of the cortex, and dilatation of the ventricle on the same side, with secondary degenerations, extending especially in the motor tract into the spinal cord.

While the idiopathic cases do not show such definite brain lesions, still there is quite commonly a general affection of the brain of a degenerative type; and while we do not to-day hold as positive any special change in the frontal lobes, or in the temporal lobes, as formerly stated by Meynert, still in the cortex, especially, according to Lewis, in the third layer, the nerve cells are not infrequently degenerated and their nuclei filled with pigment, and the cells themselves the seat of vacuolation. We also find increase of connective tissue and involvement of the association fibres. While many similar conditions are found in other degenerative forms of mental disease—and therefore we are unable to speak of definite lesions peculiar to epilepsy—still we are certain of this much, that disease is present, and, in fact, is never absent on microscopical study of the brain.

All forms of insanity have certain varieties of symptoms in common—the change in the individual and concentration of the attention on the *ego*. We next observe some alteration in the feelings and thoughts and actions, and finally dementia. In epileptic insanity we have all these functions more or less in-

volved, and in a hundred cases which I made the subject of study, in none were these conditions absent. It is always difficult to get an accurate history of these patients.

One element observed in almost all cases is what might be called "religiosity." It is of an emotional type, and is perhaps more common among women. The attention to prayers and desire to attend religious services are very marked; however, it seems to be merely a superficial feeling, as any remorse for acts committed while in this state is entirely absent, and indeed, when interrupted in some specially brutal act following an expression of a high moral character, no appreciation of the discrepancy is apparent.

Clouston states that epileptic insanity is not so common among women as in men, nor does it respond so readily to treatment by the bromides. One feature—the suicidal impulse—seems to have been in my experience more frequent, especially among women, than is commonly recorded. Cullere and Clouston, however, report several such cases. In regard to treatment, the same course should be observed as in the neurosis itself.

Among criminals guilty of the minor offences, as petty larceny, etc., epilepsy is very common. We here find a bad hereditary history; but among burglars or forgers, whose crimes are against property, mental disease in general, as well as epilepsy, is rare.

As seen from our remarks on the character of the attack in epilepsy we must, especially in epileptic insanity, distinguish between the mental conditions immediately preceding, during, and following the convulsive seizures, and during the intervals of the attacks.

This is of great importance in a medico-legal sense; and, again, great care must be used to ascertain whether attacks of mania at times take the place of convulsive attacks. *In speaking of transitory mania* we referred to several writers as holding the opinion that the condition in reality is an epileptic seizure. The diagnosis, however, depends largely on the fact of well-known previous seizures, and also as to whether the act was committed just previous to an epileptic seizure or following one. During the intervals between the seizures the mental condition seems to be one, in many cases at least, in which dementia is

[1] Tuke, "Psych. Med."

not present, and in which the individual is fully conscious of all his acts. In these cases, therefore, we must carefully search for some motive for the act. If that is not present and the act is of the impulsive type, it is probably dependent on an hallucinatory condition due to the disease. The complete loss of memory of all the particulars of the act until informed, if deception in this respect can be excluded, is also of much diagnostic value. Remorse for the act will also be present when there is not considerable mental weakness. Among, however, the cases where the character has been changed, although no well-defined condition of dementia is present, this feeling of remorse may be absent. This is not infrequently seen in hystero-epileptics and in those whom the attacks consist mostly in transient or partial loss of consciousness, without convulsive seizures. Here we find a mental weakness indeed, but not so extreme but what the full knowledge of right and wrong can be appreciated. There seems to be rather an absolute disregard of the ethical or moral side of the question, and the only repressive agency is the fear of punishment.

Simulation of epilepsy has been referred to especially among the criminal classes and among prisoners.

The diagnosis in regard to the character of the seizure is often a very difficult one—the presence of the reflex response on the part of the conjunctiva, and the response to light on the part of the pupils, indicate almost surely that the attack is not truly epileptic. The thumbs are usually turned into the palms in true epilepsy, but this is not always the case. When simulation is suspected, it is important to watch for any appearance of suspicion on the part of the personator, and again we often find that the attacks are most severe and frequent in the malingerer when he is under observation. In a true epileptic seizure the onset is sudden, generally without warning, and no recollection of the events occurring during the seizure is present.

The prognosis in epilepsy is unfavorable as far as a cure is concerned, and this is of considerable importance in regard to the legal aspect of these cases. Months and in rare cases years may intervene between the convulsive and maniacal seizures. It is especially here that there may exist doubt as to the diagnosis. We may have the condition called by Morel épilepsie larvée, in which, as we have said, the convulsive seizure is re-

placed by a maniacal state. Falret describes this form as follows: The invasion of the morbid phenomena is sudden, the acts are instantaneous and of exceptional violence, the hallucinations are usually of a terrifying character, there is also absolutely no recollection of acts committed. A peculiarity in these attacks is that if they are repeated the same phenomena occur in the same order. This is the case in the ordinary convulsive seizure, the psychical convulsion being analogous to the physical one. In this respect numberless cases could be cited of maniacal attacks of violence, especially homicidal, just preceding or more usually following epileptic seizures. In these instances there is no doubt of the mental condition and absence of responsibility. It is, however, often difficult to make a differential diagnosis in the milder cases, in which, after perhaps an attack of the petit-mal type in which there has been simple obscuration of consciousness, for so brief a period as not to have been observed by others, the patient goes on with what he was doing or carries out some plan or piece of business with apparent correctness, and yet afterward has no recollection of the acts.

The following case illustrates this:

A lady, unmarried, æt. 40, had been subject to epileptic seizures for a number of years. Most of her attacks were of a mild type, of which she herself would be absolutely unconscious. On one occasion, while sitting at the breakfast-table in a hotel, she suddenly seized the newspaper of a gentleman sitting opposite and went to her room. She had no recollection of the act, and was surprised to find herself in her room with the paper. On another occasion she transacted considerable business involving the receiving of various sums of money, apparently attracting no attention as to her mental condition and performing her work correctly. Following these transactions, she had no recollection of seeing the various persons from whom she had received the money. Her acts were automatic, although in these instances of a character with which she was perfectly familiar. *There was evidently in her case a dual existence.*

Chorea in Insanity.—Chorea is a disease with a special motor disturbance. Under this head we would only consider the well-known neurosis in which we find motor disturbances, hardly convulsive in character, but marked by a condition of incoordination. We refer to the so-called Sydenham disease in contradistinction to the condition found in defective

brain formation, such as is seen in the imbecile or in cerebral hemiplegia the result of meningeal hemorrhages, inflammatory affections of the cortex, or porencephalus. Here, there are indeed choreiform movements, but the special condition is a mental defect dependent upon structural defect.

Chorea is a disease most commonly of childhood, especially in its acute form; the more chronic form occurs in adults. We also see it during pregnancy with special mental symptoms. Huntington described a form which is hereditary in certain families, associated with marked mental symptoms of the type of dementia.

In children the disease runs an acute course, varying from three weeks to as many months, with a tendency to periodical semi-annual or annual returns. The mental symptoms are those of excitability, instability of temper, and an hysterical condition. There is also a considerable impairment of memory. The patients are excessively emotional, being subject to attacks of laughing and crying, and prone to impulsive acts. Illusions, especially at night, are not infrequent.

We have already referred to the paroxysmal attacks of what has been termed coprolalia and echolalia in which there seems to be an irresistible impulse to the use of profane and indecent language, or again to especial attacks of obstinacy, the child being determined to do what it wishes, often being destructive and violent, in fact maniacal. Chorea occurring in adults, especially in young women, is often violent and uncontrollable, and there is indeed great cerebral excitement, resembling mania. It is usually chronic in its course. A hysterical basis often seems to exist in these cases.

PUERPERAL INSANITY.—We would here include all those mental disturbances occurring during or following gestation. There is, as Morel has well said, no special form of insanity peculiar to the puerperal state. The usual forms are melancholia and mania with hallucinations and delusions, which do not differ from these conditions under other circumstances.

The causes are first heredity, the exhaustion consequent on the condition of pregnancy, fright, previous attacks, illegitimacy, alcoholism, sepsis, etc.

During pregnancy it is common to find unusual conditions of feeling, longings often for special articles of diet. Some

women are cheerful only when pregnant, others again are always depressed. The usual form is that of melancholia with suicidal tendencies. A milder condition resembling hysteria is common. There may be marked aversion to the husband or an irresistible impulse to produce abortion in some way, the most moral and conscientious woman during these periods being absolutely regardless of all moral obligations. It is not unusual to observe almost any of the various forms of the so-called impulsive insanities, such as a tendency to theft or to the excessive use of alcohol; or, again, there may be marked eroticism. This mental condition may pass away at the time of labor, but is more apt to continue.

INSANITY OF DELIVERY is usually of the maniacal type and is probably due to excessive pain (as I have seen in some cases), or, again, to the delay, since many instances occur in a tedious labor. This is more apt to occur in the primipara. There is often during the first few days, before or during the establishment of the flow of milk, a marked maniacal condition, during which infanticide may occur.

INSANITY FOLLOWING SEPSIS usually occurs within a few days after delivery and is associated with high temperature. In these cases we find a maniacal condition as a rule, with muttering delirium, a constant agitation dependent often on hallucinations and delusions.

In *puerperal insanity per se*, not dependent on septic conditions, the onset is usually later, the direct cause is often mental—that is, due to anxiety or worry, or, again, due to physical exhaustion. There is usually an absence of high temperature. We may have mania with great excitement requiring restraint, or there may be marked melancholia in which there may be aversion to the husband and the child. Both these states may pass on into more or less chronic conditions in which delusions of suspicion are common, and impulses usually of a suicidal nature. The majority of cases, however, recover.

INSANITY OF LACTATION is usually of a depressive type. We have melancholia, usually subacute with delusions of self-condemnation and suspicion. There may, however, be acute mania. The cause that is the direct one is exhaustion, so that we find it especially among the weak. I have observed it also especially of the melancholic type, among women who have

suckled their children beyond the usual time in order to avoid becoming pregnant again. This is not an uncommon practice among the poor.

The crime most peculiar to these conditions is homicide. During pregnancy, however, the peculiar longings and desires may manifest themselves by theft, dipsomania, or infanticidal tendencies.

Savage refers to a condition of transitory mania occurring within the first few days after delivery, in which the woman may injure herself or her child, being perfectly unconscious of her act.

This may occur where there has been much exhaustion, or in cases where there has been marked cerebral excitement due to illegitimacy. In puerperal insanity of the ordinary type homicide or infanticide is the most usual crime.

INSANITY AT THE MENOPAUSE is usually of the depressive type, that is melancholia. It is usually subacute in character. The patients become anxious, sleepless, lose interest in affairs, and have a fear of impending evil. They are unable to apply themselves to their ordinary occupation. They feel that their family no longer has any regard for them. They become suspicious, the fidelity of the husband is suspected, intense jealousy of a most unreasonable character may be present. Suicidal tendencies may develop. It is not unusual also at this period to have a complete change in the character of the individual occur. They may become inclined to excessive use of alcohol or other drugs, they may manifest impulsive tendencies to theft, or become erotic. The most constant symptom is, however, that of depression, in which suicide is threatened and may indeed be carried out. They become essentially selfish and demanding, any inattention leading to reproaches of neglect. This may pass into a chronic state of dementia with delusions. There may often, however, be re-establishment of health after a few years.

This condition occurs in men also, but is more rare. There is nothing especially characteristic in the form of the insanity which occurs at this period. It is simply that at this special time of life, when certain changes are occurring in the body itself, the brain is liable to disturbances affecting its integrity. It is therefore a critical epoch in the life history of women.

INSANITY OF PUBERTY implies a mental disturbance occurring at an important transitional period of the organization. It is especially liable to take place where there exists a predisposing cause, as heredity or a neurotic disposition. The exciting causes are various—fright, grief, mental strain from overstudy, and as a physical cause, masturbation. It is more frequent in females but not unusual in males. There is almost always a great concentration on the ego, leading to habits of introspection. It may take the form of depression or exaltation. In the former we observe the usual condition of self-condemnation with a marked tendency to suicide. This is often due to the belief that habits of self-abuse have alienated them from God and that forgiveness is impossible. Such patients become suspicious; they think every one is aware of their sin and regards them with aversion. They are subject to hallucinations, especially of hearing, in which they imagine that they are called by the most obscene names, or that they are accused of acts of the most indecent character.

In the maniacal state, which may at times be very violent, they frequently have a feeling of great self-importance, considering themselves capable of carrying out great schemes. These ideas of importance often cover many fields, either in religion, art, literature, or business. They are impatient of all restraint and yet are unable to apply themselves long at any work. Delusions of persecution are not rare.

We observe also in these cases impulsions often of an irresistible character. There may be a marked erotic element present, leading to indecent exposure or open masturbation. In young girls this may lead to indecent proposals, and in the latter we usually find an increase of all these symptoms at the menstrual epoch.

The prognosis is not unfavorable except when there is a bad hereditary history.

The following case will illustrate this condition as occurring in a young boy:

A. B., æt. 17, family history negative. The patient had overworked and over-studied and had always shown himself very ambitious to succeed. His studies had to be carried on at a night school, as he worked by day. He was also a very regular attendant at the church meetings, frequently speaking at the meetings. He suddenly became quite

changed in all his habits, was aggressive and boastful. He no longer went to his work, but claimed that he felt that he could become a great preacher or architect, or in fact anything he wished to try for. He was irritable and at times violent, striking his mother if she did not do as he wished. This condition passed later into one of confusional insanity, in which he seemed to lose all idea of time and place, and in which from time to time he would become excited and destructive. This patient made a complete recovery.

A second case with a not dissimilar history, in which, however, there had been excessive masturbation as the exciting cause, had sexual desires of an unnatural character. He was evidently in great mental distress, and would remove all his clothing and beg the attendants to have relations with him in an unnatural manner. This case also made a good recovery.

Many of these cases correspond to the type of masturbational insanity. However, while we find it present often as an exciting cause, it may again only be one of the symptoms of disease. It necessarily acts as an effective cause in continuing the mental disturbance.

INSANITY IN CONNECTION WITH RHEUMATISM seems to depend on either the high temperature or an overwhelming of the system with the special poison.

We not infrequently observe in articular rheumatism a disappearance of the articular symptoms, and the onset of cerebral excitement resembling acute mania. There may be at the time a very high temperature, usually higher than we find in mania grave. The patient is delirious and is subject to illusions and delusions.

There is, however, nothing characteristic in the mania which occurs in these cases; there seems to be simply a metastasis of the poison from the joints to the brain and its meninges, resulting in excitement and delirium. It is rare that permanent or chronic mental disease results. It is more unusual for depressive conditions to result.

The following case illustrates mania occurring in the course of acute rheumatism, with a fatal ending:

A. R., æt. 35, was admitted to the hospital with acute articular rheumatism. He passed into a state of acute delirium with hallucinations and delusions. The temperature rose at times to 105°, and he died from exhaustion on the fifth day. There was nothing to distinguish the case in its course from acute mania. The autopsy showed nothing but acute congestion of the cortex of the brain.

GOUT IN ITS RELATIONS WITH INSANITY is especially observed in the general diathetic state rather than in the acute conditions. In the former it is usually of the depressive type. It is rare that delusions are present, but there is often a well-marked suicidal tendency. Such patients are suspicious and irritable and there is present a fear of some impending evil. These cases are more liable to occur in advanced adult life, and may be explained on the ground of the general arterial degeneration. A well-defined attack of gout affecting the extremities will often clear up the mental state. Among the young, with hereditary gout, which has never expressed itself locally except in various signs of malnutrition, indigestion, etc., there may be mental symptoms, usually of the nature of melancholia, which have been described under the head of cerebral neurasthenia. There is, however, at times observed in acute gout a metastasis from the inflamed joint to the brain and *vice versa;* its reappearance in the joint may relieve the brain affection. These acute states may assume the form of mania. There is no doubt of the close connection of this condition with the direct overwhelming of the brain itself with the special toxic poison.

PHTHISICAL INSANITY.—In phthisis among the insane it has long been noticed that certain mental symptoms characteristic of the disease are present, and, in fact, have a good deal to do with the progress of the disease. For a long time back the hopeful character of this class of patients has been referred to; even after periods of suffering and exhaustion we find them still believing and hoping that ultimate recovery will occur. Perhaps in no other disease do we find this condition so prominently present. Many diseases of different organs, as of the stomach and liver, frequently only of a functional type, will produce absolutely contrary mental states—marked depression, loss of interest in general affairs, hopelessness in regard to recovery—in fact, many of the symptoms are such as we see in the so-called functional psychoses, as for instance mania and melancholia. It is, therefore, not surprising that the ancients ascribed to various organs in the body the seat of diseases of the mind.

In the etiology of insanity, tuberculosis or phthisis has been cited as a prominent factor. In certain families it not rarely results in insanity, or the descendants of the insane may have phthisis. Again, not infrequently certain members of the

family will suffer from phthisis, while others have some form of mental disease. Atavism is also not infrequent.

We have considered in this relation phthisis as a cause of insanity, and phthisis as occurring among the insane. The class of patients in which the first division may be considered will give us the symptoms of disease as seen in the so-called degenerative type of mental disease; therefore it is not infrequent among paranoiacs and those subject to the various neuroses, such as epilepsy, chorea, neurasthenia, hysteria, etc. The second division, in which phthisis is an intercurrent disease in an already established mental derangement, is more frequently found where exhaustion or loss of nutrition is a marked feature, and therefore it is observed in melancholia and dementia from whatever cause. Many writers describe phthisical insanity as a special form of disease, while others, again, maintain that there is no special difference in the symptoms from those generally recognized in insanity.

An examination of patients with phthisis must be carried on with great care, as not infrequently it will run a very insidious course, the mental condition obscuring the ordinary signs of the disease, so much so, indeed, that where phthisis is present and insanity occurs in its course, there is an apparent improvement in the patient. The cough is no longer troublesome, and expectoration is apparently decreased; and so marked is this change that many have held the opinion that the course of the phthisis has been checked by the addition of mental disease. This, however, can hardly be the case. The improvement consequent upon relief of the exhausting symptoms may seem to lead to a general improvement in the patient. Again, some have claimed, for instance, in dementia, that the appearance of phthisis has improved the mental state; but this is probably explained by the rise of temperature causing some increase in the circulation of the blood in the brain, and in that way clearing up the mental torpor. In almost every case, however, when the disease approaches the final stages the course is most rapid; in fact, statistics would lead us to believe that the duration of the disease is shorter among the insane than among the sane. Phthisis is also more common among the insane than among people in general. The idea of improvement of the patient by the intercurrence of phthisis is not to be accepted. Certainly,

as in other diseases, such as typhoid, or in cases of injury or of extensive inflammation, we do notice for the time being an apparent improvement in the mental state, and while these conditions remain active, often in a case of extreme dementia or melancholia, the patient is much more active mentally than previously. On the conclusion of these acute conditions the previous symptoms return with increased severity, and it is evident that there has been no permanent improvement.

The special symptoms ascribable to phthisical cases seem to be those of suspicion; hallucinations and delusions are not uncommon, the tendency being to a morbid state in which the patients, from fear of poison or from suspicion of those around them, refuse to take food or medicine. There is frequently also a suicidal tendency, melancholia being the type of the disease, associated, as we have said, with marked suspicion. Some writers go so far as to claim that all cases which have a well-defined delusion of suspicion are ultimately the subjects of phthisis. In rare instances we find the opposite condition—of grandeur and a general feeling of well-being. We should be suspicious here of general paresis, for it is not uncommon to find among these patients phthisis either as an hereditary taint or as an intercurrent disease. It often passes unrecognized, and in fact the symptoms may run a course in which there is no indication of the existence of the disease until the final stages. Many of these patients continue at their work, or are out and around within a week or two of their death.

A. B. (colored), male, general paresis; family history negative; phthisis of an intercurrent nature, possibly hereditary. As far as the pulmonary disease was concerned, the illness was of only a few weeks' duration. The post-mortem revealed extensive tubercular disease of the lungs. The symptoms were of the usual type of general paresis.

In our present institutions, with the better attention to sanitary arrangements, there is far less phthisis than was formerly seen, the percentage being decidedly lower. The element of hopefulness is not often so frequently seen as among the sane. Strictly defined, phthisical insanity should not be considered as a special form of disease. The character of the hallucinations and delusions is not sufficiently distinctive to properly constitute a special type of insanity. There is this much, however,

in regard to all these cases: in the insane exposure often does not have the same deleterious effect in causing pulmonary or other disease as we find among the sane; but, on the other hand, as all forms of mental disease generally lead to a low trophic state of the body, they are specially prone to phthisis, a proper nidus for the bacillus being ever present.

PERIODICAL INSANITY is that form in which attacks of mania or melancholia occur at more or less regular intervals, the intervening periods being free from all mental disturbance. There is nothing peculiar in the attacks, the principal interest is from a medico-legal aspect, in regard to the complete remission of all symptoms during the intervals. Melancholia is more frequent in this form than mania. Clouston, in his description of the disease, includes circular insanity under the same head. In the latter disease we have alternating conditions of melancholia and mania, the first completing its course and often passing without intermission into the second form. There is usually a periodicity in these attacks also; often, as in periodical insanity of melancholia or mania alone, intervals of months or years intervening between the seizures. There is indeed, as I have said, generally a complete return to a normal mental state, but there may be observed some alteration in the character. The person is not precisely the same.

Marcé divides periodical and circular insanity into three forms:

1. *La folie intermittente simple* (periodical insanity). 2. *La folie à double forme*, consisting of an attack of mania and melancholia with a lucid interval. 3. *La folie circulaire*, a form in which the attacks are continuous without an interval.

Esquirol records a case of a merchant, æt. 40, of a neurotic disposition, who each fall, for four years, had an attack of mania, a spontaneous recovery taking place in the spring. This patient ultimately recovered. During the intervals between the spring and autumn he resumed his business.

A case of acute melancholia has long been under my observation, the attack recurring about once a year for the past six years. The onset is sudden, and came on first at the age of puberity. The recovery is always as sudden as the onset. During the intervals the patient, a young lady, returns to her family and resumes her usual occupation.

The prognosis is, as a rule, unfavorable as far as the ulti-

mate cure is concerned, as there is usually an hereditary element present.

HYPNOTISM is a subject concerning which much has been written for many years. Mesmer, in the Eighteenth Century, brought it prominently before the public, but the evident charlatanry and often fraud which were present in his methods led to the abandonment of its consideration by responsible scientific investigators. Braid, of England, in 1844, in his paper, described the condition most fully—in fact, little of importance has been added to our knowledge of it since. He also first used the name hypnotism. Since that time the subject has been investigated by various writers in France, as Charcot, Marie, Gilles de la Tourette, and others, and in Germany and England by Berger, Senator, Bramwell, and Tuckey. Early in the century surgical operations had been performed with success while the patient was under the influence of hypnotism.

Hypnotism has been defined (Foster's "Encyclopædic Medical Dictionary") as "an abnormal state into which some persons may be thrown, either by a voluntary act of their own, such as gazing continuously and with fixed attention on some small, bright object held close to the eyes, or by the exercise of another person's will; characterized by suspension of the will and consequent obedience to the promptings of 'suggestion' from without." The activity of the organs of special sense, except the eye, may be heightened and the power of the muscles increased. Perfect insensibility to pain may be induced by hypnotism, and it has been used as an anæsthetic. It is apt to be followed by severe headache of long continuance and by various nervous disturbances. On emerging from hypnotism the hypnotized person usually has no remembrance of what happened during its continuance, but in many persons such a remembrance may be induced by suggestion.

About one person in three is susceptible of hypnotism, and those of an hysterical or neurotic tendency (but rarely the insane) are the most readily hypnotized.[1] Charcot regarded it as an "artificially produced morbid condition or neurosis, because there is not, so far as we know, any anatomical lesion, but having none the less its definite laws."[2]

[1] C. J Braid, Month. Jour. of Med. Sci., July, 1853.

[2] Tuke: "Dictionary of Psychol. Medicine."

There are various methods of establishing this condition: the early one employed by Braid, in which the subject is requested to fix the attention on some bright object which is usually placed above the eyes in a position to cause fatigue (Voisin follows this plan), or pressure over the eyelids effects the same result, the suggestion being made repeatedly that they will soon fall asleep, etc. Self-hypnotism is also possible by fixing the attention on some object. The principle is evidently the attempt to place one's self entirely under some one single influence and thus become oblivious to all other surroundings.

Most healthy individuals can with practice allow themselves to be hypnotized; and the reverse is also true, they can prevent it. In some hysterical temperaments, and also in the insane, their inability to fix their attention on any one thing makes hypnotization impossible.

After considerable practice a bright light or a mere nod may be all that is necessary to establish this state. Charcot has described three conditions into which those hypnotized pass: catalepsy, lethargy, and somnambulism. In all three states suggestion is possible, and it is in reference to this latter condition that of late the subject has become of importance in legal medicine. While many acts, often foolish in character, will be carried out by the subject upon suggestion, it is doubtful whether a crime such as murder would be committed. The following cases, which have been reported, will explain the position which hypnotism to-day holds as a ground for defence in criminal procedures.

J. M. Baldwin[1] says, in regard to criminal suggestion, that "cases have been tried in the French courts in which evidence for and against such influence of a third person over the criminal has been admitted. The reality of the phenomena, however, is in dispute. The Paris school claims that criminal acts, which are just as certain to be performed by him as any other acts, can be suggested to the hypnotized subject. While admitting the facts, the Nancy theorists claim that the subject knows the performance to be a farce, gets suggestions of the unreality of it from the experimenters, and so acquiesces. This is probably true, as is frequently seen in cases in which patients have refused, in the hypnotic sleep, to perform suggested acts which shocked their modesty, veracity, etc."

[1] Johnson's "Universal Cyclopædia," 1894, p. 463.

The undoubted fact that such a control is temporarily possible was made the basis of a curious legal defence in the trial of a French woman, Gabrielle Bompard, for complicity in the murder of one Gouffé. At this trial in November, 1890, her counsel endeavored to secure her acquittal by introducing evidence to show that she was an hypnotic subject, and took part in the murder under the hypnotic compulsion of her confederate, Michel Eyraud. The court, however, refused to allow any testimony on this head to be presented.[1]

A very interesting case is reported by A. Motet.[2] The "Chambre des Appels de Police correctionelle" reversed the decision of the "Tribunal de première instance" condemning Emile D. to three months' imprisonment. He had been arrested for indecent acts in a public urinal. D. protested his innocence. Dr. Mesnet, under whose care D. had been in the Hôpital St. Antoine, and who knew him to be subject to spontaneous attacks of somnambulism, with others was able to obtain a new trial, on the ground that D. was irresponsible during these mental states.

The avocat-général, M. Bertrand, said that it was necessary, if D. passed into this mental condition, to prove its existence at the time of his arrest. Permission being granted to hypnotize the defendant, he was asked to undress himself, which he immediately did, but when roused from the hypnotic state, had no remembrance of his acts. The decision was based on the ground of irresponsibility.

I would refer to the following articles on the subject:

"Hypnotism," Moll, Albert, Berlin, 1890. *Juridical Review*, Jan., 1890 (contains trial of Eyraud and Bompard). "Bibliographie des modernen Hypnotismus," Dessoir, Berlin, 1891. *Contemporary Review*, Oct., 1890, "Hypnotism and Crime." A. T. Innes, "Der Hypnotismus in seiner psychol. Beziehung und forensischen Bedeutung," Schapira, Berlin, 1893.

CEREBRAL DISEASES WITH CONSTANT PATHOLOGICAL CHANGES OR ORGANIC PSYCHOSES.

Under this heading fall all those diseases of the brain in which there are mental disturbances, dependent upon definite

[1] "The International Cyclopædia," New York, 1893, p. 763.

[2] Annales d'Hygiène Publique et de Médecine Légale, iii. serie, tome v., Paris, 1881, p. 214.

lesions of the brain and its membranes. In all the other forms of insanity which we have described, with the exception of dementia, there have been no definite changes, outside of impaired nutritional states, whose exact relation to the disease itself it was possible to predicate.

In these organic psychoses, however, we find destruction or impairment of the cells of the cortex, associated with changes in the connective tissue and the blood-vessels, which are amply sufficient to establish a basis for the statement that insanity is essentially a disease of the brain—allowing us by inference to positively conclude that the so-called functional forms of insanity and those dependent on degenerative states are likewise the result of disease of the brain, as the symptoms are similar in character; that is, they consist in departure from the normal reaction of the various faculties of what we call mind, one on the other. Even here, however, all is not clear, for various similar lesions of the brain substance and its membranes may exist without producing mental disease. We constantly see inflammation of the membranes of the brain and the cortex itself, or even destruction of the brain substance by disease or traumatism, which does not result in mental disturbance, so that we are forced to accept the subdivision of this class of insanity, as stated by Krafft-Ebing, as consisting of brain disease, with predominating mental disturbance.

The explanation of this apparent anomaly, that in all cases of disease of the cortex cells we do not get like mental symptoms, remains for the future investigator to give us.

The tendency at present is, therefore, to study the cells themselves in their normal and pathological states, which may finally lead to a discovery of those special cortex cells of the brain which carry on the mental processes, and enable us to differentiate them from those which are the source of motor and sensory function.

The first disease under consideration in this class of organic insanities will be:

ACUTE DELIRIOUS MANIA.—Synonyms: Delirium grave; typhomania.

We have to do with a condition in which there is great excitement and violence associated with extreme exhaustion and a high temperature.

It differs essentially, therefore, from any other form of in-

sanity in that we have associated a high temperature. Acute mania, as described under our heading of functional psychoses, bears no resemblance to it in its clinical course, it being essentially a non-febrile state, even the greatest amount of violence rarely leading to an elevation of temperature of more than a degree. The marked degree of exhaustion, the evidence of some real illness being at the back of the delirious state, is not present in ordinary mania. As in the latter, there is frequently present an appearance of great vitality, at least in the early stages. The course of the disease is essentially different, death usually occurring within five to ten days. It suggests from the beginning some severe febrile state, due to some cause of infection. We have to do with a distinct disease, an entity, and not, as suggested by Régis, a higher degree of mania.

Acute delirious mania is essentially an acute disease of the brain, characterized by high temperature and extreme exhaustion, accompanied by hallucinations of sight and hearing, and delirium.

The causes are predisposing and exciting. Among the first is hereditary tendency or a neurotic, unstable disposition. It is usually a disease of adult life from twenty-five to fifty, and affects both sexes about equally. Women at the climacteric period are especially liable to it. It is, however, one of the rarer forms of insanity. Extreme exhaustion from overwork, especially of a mental character, shock from domestic and financial losses are exciting causes. It may follow or accompany typhoid fever or pneumonia or rheumatism. It is, as Bevan Lewis well says, a disease especially marked by the rapid disintegration, both mental and physical, of the patient.

The onset of the disease may be and usually is sudden, marking itself by acute delirium in which hallucinations are present. The patient requires restraint. This may be preceded by symptoms of a mild character, as of irritability, sleeplessness, and headache. In the early stages of rheumatism and miliary tuberculosis passing into acute delirious mania, the mental symptoms may entirely obscure the physical signs of the disease. The patient soon passes into a low muttering delirium and is unconscious of his surroundings, with no after-memory of the passing events. There seems to be a feeling of terror, and fear with a desire to escape; the face is flushed, the pupils con-

tracted or dilated, and the body bathed in a profuse perspiration. There is from the first rapid wasting; the tongue is dry and coated and the pulse frequent and small.

There is every sign of extreme bodily illness. The temperature from the beginning is usually high and continues to rise to 105°–106° before death. The course of the disease is rapid, death usually resulting within five days. The emaciation may be extreme despite the constant feeding. Recovery at times occurs, leaving little after-effects, although there may be dementia.

The post-mortem changes are often very inadequate to explain the violent class of symptoms which have passed over the patient like a storm. There is usually evidence of excessive hyperæmia, which probably at this time is less marked than *intra vitam.* Krafft-Ebing considers the changes essentially due to hyperæmia followed by venous congestion. There is usually considerable increase of the cerebro-spinal fluid, the brain substance appearing œdematous. The cortex is found to have a rosy appearance from the overfilling of the capillaries. The pial vessels are marked by white lines, probably due to stasis in the accompanying lymph tracts. The cortex cells are usually involved and show evidence of disintegration.

It would scarcely seem probable that such changes could presage the beginning of general paralysis, although this has been noted by some writers.

The general distinction of this disease from the other forms would seem evident. From delirium tremens the absence of fever in the latter and the absence of the extreme exhaustion are sufficient. Should it, however, be complicated by an acute disease, such as pneumonia or meningitis, it is more difficult to make the diagnosis.

The following case, which proved fatal in three days, and in which an autopsy was obtained, typically represents the disease:

R., laborer, æt. about 35, was admitted to the hospital November 19th, 1893. During the night of admission and the following day he was very delirious and had to be restrained. He was at no time conscious of his surroundings nor could he be aroused to give his name. He was constantly talking in an unintelligible manner and at times became very violent, calling out as if in great fear. There was constant twitching of the extremities, but no convulsions occurred at any time.

The temperature never rose above 100° until November 21st, the respiration being between 9–12. On the 21st the patient passed into a state of low muttering delirium, becoming angry and combative when disturbed. The following is the chart taken at that time:

	Temperature.	*Respiration.*	*Pulse.*
9 A. M.	100°	18	100
1 P. M.	100°	15	104
5 P. M.	97°	16	100
9 P. M.	99°	18	104
1 A. M.	100°	22	112
5 A. M.	102°	28	126

Death occurred 8:45 A.M. on the 22d. Toward the end there was a constant rise in the temperature and increase in the pulse and respiration.

The autopsy showed the calvarium adherent over the convexity. The pia was raised up from the cortex by a serous effusion, and there was evidence of marked capillary congestion of the cortex.

GENERAL PARESIS.—Synonyms: General paralysis of the insane; *Paralysie générale, méningite chronique avec alienation; periencéphalite chronique diffuse.*

It is a chronic disease, as the various synonyms given indicate, in which there are both mental and physical symptoms present.

The mental symptoms are those which most particularly interest us in a medico-legal sense, and they are rarely absent, although in some few cases, outside of a certain degree of dementia, they may be subordinate to the physical or somatic signs of the disease.

It is essentially a disease of the fully developed brain, coming on in adult life, usually between the ages of twenty-five and fifty, although some cases in childhood, especially where there has been an hereditary history of syphilis, have been reported, and again in some instances it has occurred after the age of seventy. The course of the disease is a chronic one, extending usually over a period of two or three years, but it may terminate in a few months, and in certain irregular cases, especially where the somatic symptoms are more prominent than the mental, extend even to fifteen years. It is a disease of modern life and affects men more frequently than women, although of late years it is found much more frequently among women than formerly. This may be explained by the increased anxieties

to which the latter are subjected in the more active part now assumed by them in business relations and the various professions.

Heredity is, as in all forms of insanity, an important element in its causation, it being present as a factor in about thirty-three per cent. of all cases. It is rarely directly inherited, but usually occurs in those whose antecedents have a history of epilepsy, chorea, alcoholism, phthisis, or in which the children are the products of old age or in families in which consanguinity in marriage has existed. Syphilis is perhaps the most important exciting cause, it being claimed by many writers that it always exists as the basis of every case. This is, however, probably not true. Among other exciting causes is found mental worry, especially when of a financial character, or even the struggle for existence. This is observed where certain races as the negro, the Chinese, etc., come in contact with a higher civilization, although in their own native surroundings the disease is very uncommon. Excesses of any nature, overwork, alcoholism, venereal excesses have an active part in its causation, so that we commonly find the disease among the professional classes, as lawyers, clergymen, physicians, brokers, merchants, and actors. It is not, however, confined to any class, affecting the highly educated and the ignorant. It is a disease of the brain characterized by a more or less rapid disintegration, associated with inflammation. It is this latter condition which supports the theory of a syphilitic origin of the disease, which is in fact present in the majority of the cases. However, I feel convinced from careful study of many cases, both in hospital and private practice, that in not a small proportion of such patients that element can be excluded.

The course of the disease is generally described as passing through certain stages, but this is for convenience only, as there are no well-defined periods during the progress toward its always fatal ending. In fact, there are often remissions in which, at times, recovery seems to have taken place. Especially is this observed when the patient is removed from the excitement and strain of ordinary life to the quiet and regular existence of hospital care. The course is rapid or slow also, depending on the frequency of epileptic seizures, one of the common symptoms of the disease. When these are present to a marked degree, there

seems to occur a rapid disintegration of the mental faculties and a tendency to physical exhaustion terminating in death.

The onset of the disease is rarely sudden, although it may appear so, as the first indication of the disease to the friends may be some extravagant act, either in social or business relations. Usually, however, if the patient has been closely observed, some change in the personality will have been noted. At times a condition of depression may precede the actual outbreak of the disease, or there may be some excitement expressed by irritability or obstinacy, or again in somatic symptoms, as apoplectic or epileptic seizures, or an attack of aphasia lasting a few hours or days. These prodromal symptoms are usually only remembered after the thorough establishment of the disease.

In a medico-legal aspect, according to Legrand du Saulle, general paralysis may be divided into four distinct periods, a short summary of which I will give, although the pathology of the disease does not sustain any such artificial division into periods.

1. "*Période prodromique*," or prodromal period, in which, while many irregular mental or physical symptoms may be present, they cannot be distinctly recognized as characteristic of the disease except in the light of its future development. There may be indeed for several months, or even years, a combination of characteristic phenomena, as one or several apoplectic attacks with loss of consciousness and passing paralysis of the arm or leg, or temporary aphasia. More important is the change in the personality. There is often an exaggeration of former tendencies. There is usually extreme irritability, or again depression. There is also, even at this period, an impairment of the memory and an evident inability to perform the usual work, even that of the most routine character. About this period there will now appear the feelings of self-satisfaction and expansiveness which really usher in the so-called—

2. "*Période initiale*," or initial period of the disease. This is usually expansive, showing exaggeration of the ego, but may at times be depressive, the patient apparently recognizing his mental condition. The *délire des grandeurs* is, however, far more frequent. The sense of well-being is thoroughly established at this period—a feeling of power and ability to do,

entirely at variance with the actual mental weakness. There is an exaggerated idea of wealth and strength. It is at this period that speculations of the wildest character may be undertaken. In the depression there is constant dread of approaching ruin; a belief that acts have been committed which have dishonored them. There may at this time be a cessation of the progress of the disease, or else what may appear as a recovery, but there is sooner or later the establishment of the full physical and mental signs of the disease in the so-called—

3. *Période d'état*, which continues for months, passing into the stage of complete dementia, *i.e.*, the fourth stage, or

4. *Période terminale.*

The age and social condition of patients with general paresis is shown in the report furnished me by Dr. Louis C. Pettit, of the New York City Insane Asylum, of one thousand and six cases:

AGE AT DEATH IN ONE THOUSAND AND SIX CASES OF PARESIS.

Age.	Cases.	Single.	Married.	Widowed.	Age.	Cases.	Single.	Married.	Widowed.
21	0	0	0	0	48	27	7	17	3
22	1	1	0	0	49	20	1	19	0
23	2	0	2	0	50	48	6	39	3
24	1	0	1	0	51	20	5	12	3
25	13	5	7	1	52	19	4	14	1
26	9	8	1	0	53	22	3	18	1
27	7	5	2	0	54	14	3	7	4
28	14	5	9	0	55	25	3	17	5
29	17	3	13	1	56	17	2	13	2
30	22	13	9	0	57	5	1	4	0
31	21	3	17	1	58	17	4	11	2
32	32	14	18	0	59	6	2	4	0
33	24	13	11	0	60	16	2	13	1
34	27	4	23	0	61	4	0	4	0
35	58	15	38	5	62	6	1	4	1
36	38	7	27	4	63	4	0	3	1
37	37	14	23	0	64	6	1	2	3
38	42	16	25	1	65	5	0	4	1
39	24	4	19	1	66	7	2	4	1
40	70	14	53	3	67	0	0	0	0
41	34	6	28	0	68	3	0	3	0
42	46	12	32	2	69	4	0	4	0
43	25	7	15	3	70	0	0	0	0
44	32	8	21	3	72	1	0	1	0
45	52	9	42	1	79	1	0	0	1
46	28	5	21	2					
47	33	4	27	2	Total	1,006	242	701	63

Convulsions 387. Syphilis 117.

It is possible for the prodromal period referred to, in which there is evidence of change of character and great irritability with a tendency to exhibitions of anger or violence, which at this time is often bitterly repented of, to extend over a number of years. The actual establishment of the disease is marked intellectually by the absence of all feelings of regret for their acts and the natural feelings of anxiety or even interest in their personal affairs. A fatuous state of contentment takes its place, a belief that mistakes will be made right in some way. Habits of extravagance are established; purchases of articles of every variety, often useless in character, are made; enterprises are entered into, houses built without regard to expense. The formerly temperate man may order large quantities of wine, and during periods of excitement, which are often paroxysmal in character, may be subject to excesses in drinking.

Appropriation of money or property may take place, due to the expansive ideas of the patient, his belief in his great wealth or his numerous plans causing him to utterly disregard the rights of others. It is at this period, therefore, before the condition has been recognized by those with whom he comes in contact, that questions of medico-legal interest may arise. It is important to recognize this early stage before fortunes are dissipated and the family disgraced. The mental change from the previous condition is, therefore, of primary importance. At this period, also usually accompanying or following close upon the intellectual impairment, appear bodily conditions which are as positively diagnostic of the disease as those affecting the mind. There is usually at an early stage more or less tremor of the muscles of the face, especially of the muscles of the mouth and the folds of the cheek, and also of the tongue. The speech becomes thus secondarily affected and is slow and clumsy—the ideas may flow rapidly, but cannot be enunciated clearly. There is not true aphasia, and there is no loss of memory of words, but there is marked inability to coördinate the muscles necessary for articulation. There is also some actual paresis of the muscles of the face, giving a characteristic blank and fatuous expression. The pupils are also soon involved, showing inequality, and slowness of response to light, but retaining the power of accommodation; later there is often permanent dilatation or, more rarely, contraction.

Again at this early stage, though more rarely, there may be epileptic seizures at considerable intervals of time apart, or apoplectic seizures with hemiplegia rapidly recovered from, or true aphasia of a transient character. This latter disturbance of speech is entirely distinct from the slow, clumsy speech previously referred to. We now recognize symptoms dependent upon disease of the spinal cord, as tremor of the hands, manifesting itself in the writing or in any delicate work, even in dressing. There may also be marked ataxia of both the upper and lower extremities, with loss or exaggeration of the reflexes. Accompanying all these mental and physical symptoms of disease, as an undertone, there is usually a constant feeling of well-being, already referred to; the patients are always feeling well, and this even continues to the final stage of dementia. There may be increase of the sexual appetite; in this early period it being often regarded as the cause of the disease when in reality it is a symptom; or again we may have the reverse condition. No disease shows such complete wrecking of all that can be called man in his moral and intellectual characteristics as general paresis. Paroxysmal attacks of mania of great violence, usually destructive or homicidal, may occur. It is at this period that remission may occur, or at least the disease may remain stationary for months or even years.

The so-called third stage simply emphasizes the symptoms already detailed. The aphasia becomes more marked, until the speech is almost unintelligible, and the ataxia and paralysis increase, so that the patient is confined to his bed, unable to feed himself. The delusions of grandeur and hallucination continue, and still the absolutely helpless patient may express himself as never having felt better in his life.

Epileptic seizures are at times very frequent, continuing for hours, and are usually of the clonic type, without loss of consciousness. These are dependent upon the meningitis, and are often the direct cause of the death of the patient from exhaustion. They have a great influence in increasing the dementia Apoplexies may cause paralysis, or when occurring, as they at times do, in the parietal and occipital regions of the brain, cause mind blindness, that is, a loss of appreciation of what an article is, or its use; or again word deafness and word blindness. These conditions are usually temporary.

The final dementia may be complete, but death usually results from exhaustion or some intercurrent disease, as pneumonia, before it is reached.

The course of the disease as described is the usual and typical one; there are, however, many variations which occur in its onset and course. It is always fatal. The remissions, however, in some cases are often of long duration, for a time making the diagnosis subject to question.

In certain cases again, when the physical signs of the disease are well defined, but the mental are not so well developed, there may be considerable difficulty of diagnosis, especially as this class may continue long beyond the usual term of the disease. Again in the so-called spinal type the early affection of the cord, with the extension of the disease to the brain, may make it at first difficult to give a positive diagnosis.

The first class is well illustrated in the following case:

A. B., lawyer, æt. 34; family history negative. Patient had contracted syphilis in early life. Married and had several healthy children. Exciting cause of disease, financial anxiety, overwork, and grief from domestic affliction. It was recollected that for two or three years previous to my examination of him, he had become very irritable and liable to outbursts of anger, his natural temperament being mild and agreeable. This was, however, ascribed to his business anxiety and insomnia. The first symptom ascribed to mental disease was a transient attack of aphasia, lasting a few hours. This was followed a few months later by a second attack, after which there seemed to be a permanent change in his disposition. He no longer had any anxiety in regard to his business, neglecting to appear in court at the time of trial, but expressing no regret for it. He became placid and contented, sleep and appetite improved. Memory for present wants became very defective, but he would relate with full details events occurring within the last few years. Was perfectly able to carry on accurately the routine business of his office. At no time did he have any delusion of grandeur or any expansive ideas. Became rather careless at times in money-matters, but at no time extravagant. His speech became slow and clumsy, and from a brilliant, rapid talker in court, he at times became almost unintelligible. Such catch-expressions as "Around the rugged rocks the ragged rascals ran," were impossible to him. There was considerable tremor of the several muscles of the face, and that characteristic flat, fatuous expression of countenance peculiar to general paresis.

He at times is subject to maniacal attacks, in which he has struck his wife and children; these are soon over, and he has deepest repentance for his acts. As a rule he is docile and easily forgets any ill-feel-

ing. Has at no time had any convulsive seizures, or been subject to hallucinations or delusions.

He has relinquished all business, and although regularly going to his office and remaining the usual time, seems to have no appreciation of the fact that he is doing nothing.

Is emotional, a sad story causing him to burst into tears, but is generally in a happy and self-satisfied condition of mind. The disease has now lasted, with very little change except a slowly increasing dementia, for five years, which, with the previous two or three years which were a part of the disease, makes its course at least seven years.

In this form the physical signs of the disease and dementia are the prominent symptoms. Another patient's history extended over fifteen years.

The onset was gradual and unexpected, the symptoms being altogether of a spinal character. However, he had still earlier delusions of an expansive character, which had resulted in speculation which involved him in financial ruin. During the last eight years of his life, while under my observation, he had no delusions. He was always happy and expressed himself as perfectly well. There was, however, a progressive dementia, interrupted at times by attacks of maniacal violence, in which he had an intense desire for alcohol.

Complications.—Among the special complications peculiar to this disease is often the very early condition of failure or loss of appreciation of moral, ethical, and religious questions, so that we notice men and women commit acts opposed to the ordinary customs of society, often in public, without apparently any appreciation of their heinousness or any regard for the feelings of others. Combined with this there is more or less confusion of ideas, especially in regard to the rights of those around them, whether in reference to their comfort or to their property. Perhaps one of the most important signs of dementia which manifests itself even at an early stage is to be found in this direction. Long before there is any marked failure of mental power, as shown in the occupation or daily relations of life, this partial confusion of the proprieties is seen and here it is of importance to recollect that this symptom may long remain unrecognized, and probably is the premonitory sign of the disease itself. It may take the form of extreme nervousness, or of despondency, or again of irritability, or lack of consideration for others, whether in regard to their opinions or their rights. A

case under my observation first presented all the conditions common to neurasthenia and general nervous exhaustion, with inability to attend strictly to business. There was marked hypochondria with reference to the sexual organs, and the constant fear that he had contracted some imaginary disease. This was followed, much to my surprise, in the course of a year and a half, by all the characteristic phenomena of general paresis. In this case there has been no history of syphilis, but excessive worry in regard to business, and his apparent appreciation of his inability to carry on his business with his former success seemed to be the exciting causes of the disease. A change in his condition, which was noticed by his physician, was supposed to be the beginning of improvement on his part; it was, however, the beginning of the mental derangement which is common to general paresis. At this time he began to see only the pleasant side of things, and to form great plans about his business, and he seemed to have no longer any fear of failure in his enterprises. The extensiveness of his schemes, with their impracticability, drew the attention of his business friends to his mental state, and when utterly unable to go to business, or to speak intelligently or connectedly about his business, he was as much over-sanguine as he had formerly been despondent. Few cases, however, apparently have this prodromal stage, most of them showing first more or less mental excitement, rather than a prolonged condition of general nervous ill-health.

The differential diagnosis may require to be made at times from alcoholic dementia—a fuller description of which will be given later—from syphilitic disease of the brain, from acute mania, and from paranoia, where there may be ideas of grandeur not dissimilar from those found in general paresis. The ambitious ideas of paranoia may offer special difficulties at first in the way of diagnosis. Intra-cranial growths are not likely to lead to errors in diagnosis. Disseminated sclerosis is at times most difficult to distinguish from it; but here we have the marked tremor, the nystagmus, the peculiar speech, and the rigid and almost spasmodic condition of the lower extremities, to aid us in making the diagnosis. Both diseases may occur at an early period of life, the disseminated sclerosis as a rule somewhat earlier than general paresis. In a few rare cases, general

paresis is found among elderly people, and under such circumstances it may be difficult to differentiate it from senile dementia. In a case which I had under observation, a patient with strong religious ideas began to develop considerable excitement and irritability on account of the opposition to plans which he had devised for the union of all religious denominations. There was marked tremor, and also inequality of the pupils, and evident signs of exhaustion. It looked as though the disease would progress rapidly, but on removal to an asylum, the routine of the institution and the proper regulation of the diet and of all his actions, along with the needed rest, led to marked physical improvement. The case is still under observation, and it is probable that it will again progress rapidly as soon as the effect of the change in the patient's surroundings has passed off. From ordinary epilepsy and apoplexy there should be no difficulty in differentiating the disease.

In legal relations general paresis comes very often in question. Especially is this seen in the early stages, before the disease has been actually suspected. The extravagance in expenditure may make it necessary to inquire into the mental state of the individual. Again the question of responsibility for theft committed (which is not unusual in this disease), or malfeasance in office, or the care of moneys or estate may arise, or even offences against decency, for erotic tendencies are not uncommon in the early stages of the disease. As we have seen, maniacal attacks with homicidal tendencies may also occur.

Remission simulating complete recovery often comes into question. There is no true remission in this disease. The later stages of the disease are so well defined that the question of responsibility can scarcely arise. I would refer here to the following case in which the probate of a will was contested:

Will of Kiedaisch, 13 N. Y. Supp., 255.—Contested probate of a will. Testator was confined to an insane asylum in 1886 as being afflicted with general paresis. In 1887 he was taken out, and in 1888 married the proponent. It was not objected that he was incompetent to marry, and the will was executed shortly after; in 1889 he was again confined to the asylum, where he died in 1890. During the time he was not confined to the asylum he transacted business. The testimony of experts was conflicting. Held, that the testator was competent to make a will.

The following cuts illustrate the facial expression in general paralysis, which is as distinctive as the mental symptoms themselves:

FIG. 25.—General Paralysis during Period of Excitement.

A. B. (Fig. 25), æt. 35, male. Patient had all the characteristic symptoms of believing that he possessed great wealth and delusions of grandeur. Death occurred about three years from beginning of the disease. His brother died in another institution of the same disease, just preceding the time of his death.

A. B. (Fig. 26), female, æt. 44. In this case very few mental symptoms except dementia were present, and the diagnosis remained some time in doubt. The physical signs were, however, well defined as the case progressed. Marked tremor of the face and tongue and loss of facial expression. The speech was slow and clumsy. Epileptic seizures were frequent, one passing into the other, and were chronic in character. Death followed one of these seizures.

FIG. 26.—General Paralysis.

SYPHILITIC INSANITY is cerebral syphilis with predominating mental symptoms.

It depends on disease of the cerebral vessels, which may be partially or completely occluded. We find gummatous infiltrations in the walls of the vessels and usually an affection of the membranes of the brain. The usual situation of the meningitis is at the base of the brain, extending into the cord, so that we have a diffuse cerebro-spinal meningitis, which usually involves some of the cranial nerves, especially the third nerve. The meningitis may affect the convex portion of the brain, especially the frontal lobes. Again there may be gummata, single or multiple, which, by their special situation, may cause epileptic seizures.

The disease presents many symptoms resembling those found in general paresis. Again the acute psychoses, as melancholia and mania, may arise. The general tendency of the disease is toward dementia, usually progressive in its character. Not rarely, however, dementia, acute in character, may arise, in which the individual may become unable to recollect his own personality, or recognize his surroundings. This is probably due to anæmia of the brain dependent upon the circulation, and is more apt to precede any localizing symptom such as paralysis or convulsions. This was well illustrated in the following history:

C., æt. 42, a traveller for a New York house, while in Chicago became suddenly demented and was arrested in the street, being unable to give his name or address. He was taken to his home by friends and remained in a stupid, half-maniacal state for some weeks. Under special treatment for syphilis his mental state entirely cleared up. Spinal symptoms developed later, which were without doubt due to syphilis, from which he died.

The special symptoms of cerebral syphilis are headache, usually nocturnal, paralysis, usually hemiplegic in type and accompanied by aphasia, and not infrequently epileptic seizures either unilateral or general. The paralysis may be entirely recovered from, according as the artery has been the seat of a complete thrombosis or a partial one. The paralytic attack is not infrequently followed by a second one, or a third, and may be on the same side as the previous one, or on the other side of the brain. Associated with this we may have a paralysis of the

third nerve, causing a paralysis of the upper eyelid or ptosis, and inequality of the pupils, which are usually very slow in reaction to light, and often irregular in outline.

There may be marked tremor, especially of the tongue and hands or even of the face. The speech is often affected, but differs from the clumsy, slurring speech of general paralysis, being that resulting from paralysis, and usually accompanied by some loss of the names of articles. The reflexes of the paralyzed limbs are always exaggerated. The mental state is one usually of dementia, the memory is impaired, and at times there may be attacks of coma lasting for hours or even days. The prognosis is not altogether unfavorable. The mental disturbance may entirely disappear, and even the paralysis if the lesion has not been too severe. There is often considerable difficulty in making a differential diagnosis in some of these cases from general paresis. However, delusions are rare, and it is unusual to find ideas of grandeur and wealth. The apoplectic seizures with paralysis are more quickly recovered from in general paresis, and the localized symptoms are rarely as well defined in the latter. Such cases, however, in general paresis, in which the physical signs of the disease are alone present or only accompanied by a slight dementia, may make it almost impossible for the time being to make a diagnosis positively. The general course of general paresis is, however, as we have seen, comparatively rapid and always ends fatally.

In a legal sense these cases are often of great importance, especially in regard to testamentary capacity. Improvement, which would only imply a remission in general paresis, and no actual abatement of the delusions or of the dementia, would mean in cerebral syphilis a return or restoration to complete mental power, and, therefore, the right to resume control of the person's own affairs or property.

ALCOHOLIC INSANITY.—As an etiological factor alcohol enters largely into the production of various forms of insanity. We find it frequently associated with other causes in producing general paresis, mania, etc.

We have two conditions, however, to consider in alcoholism which by their course or class of symptoms mark themselves out as peculiar to alcohol, viz., acute and chronic alcoholism. In the first condition we have symptoms which are especially

characteristic of mania. It is usually due either to the excessive ingestion of alcohol or may occur after its withdrawal. This may be involuntary on the part of the individual, as the stomach may no longer be able to retain it. There is also much exhaustion associated with the withdrawal of the alcohol, as usually during these alcoholic excesses very little food is taken.

A neuropathic disposition inclines especially to the production of this excitable state, or a previous injury of the head. In the latter cases a small amount of alcohol may be sufficient to induce mania. The course is, however, brief in these cases, and is not associated with many of the physical signs of the disease, as tremor, etc. We make a distinction here between delirium tremens and acute alcoholism in our description, which may indeed be partly artificial, but at the same time seems important.

The patient is excitable and often violent, desirous of shouting and singing. In the majority of the cases we find a condition of great mental excitement continuing for days or weeks after the withdrawal of the alcohol, in which the patient is very loquacious, and subject to hallucinations, illusions, and delusions. He wanders from one subject to another, speaking rapidly but incoherently. The hallucinations affect both sight and hearing; he converses with friends as if they were present and he saw and heard them.

There is considerable confusional dementia present, all idea of time and place being lost at times; any recollection of how he was brought into his present place being absent. There are many subjective sensory disturbances leading to illusions, as of creeping insects or animals being present. This may have its cause in a neuritis, commonly present in these cases. In extreme instances there may be an absolute paralysis involving the lower and secondarily the upper extremities, dependent upon disease of the peripheral nerves. This latter condition is often present in alcoholics without the presence of mental symptoms, but the association of the two conditions is not rare.

There is associated with these acute conditions a marked tremor affecting the extremities, especially the hands, and also the muscles of the face and tongue. This may resemble very closely the tremor of general paralysis, and if the excitement is associated with delusions of a boastful character,

which is not rare, may make the diagnosis for a time difficult. The physical condition, however, shows much more vasomotor disturbance, and there is usually a tendency to marked perspiration. There may be also epileptic seizures, which makes the diagnosis still more confusing. The comparatively rapid improvement, however, after the withdrawal of the alcohol soon removes all doubt in these cases.

In an article entitled "Mental Symptoms in Alcoholic Multiple Neuritis" I called attention especially to the mental symptoms of these cases. The symptoms differ somewhat from those found in so-called chronic alcoholism or alcoholic dementia. The following case illustrates it, and also shows the possibility of complete recovery:

A. B., female, æt. 30. Subject to periodical alcoholic excesses, not, however, of the form of dipsomania. Was brought to the hospital with complete paralysis of the upper and lower extremities and suffering from exquisite pain on pressure over the nerves and muscles of the extremities. Patient was unable to state how she had been brought to the hospital or by whom, although not at the time under the influence of alcohol in any degree. Was unable to state the day of the week, nor did she have any idea of time. Patient answered ordinary questions rationally, but would forget the next hour or day that she had spoken of the subject. There was no other delusion or hallucination of any kind. This condition continued for a year, a complete recovery of the paralysis occurring and a gradual but absolute mental restoration. The intervening year, however, always remained a complete blank.

This latter class of cases is much rarer than the former, with mania and delusion.

The pathological changes are often distinct and well defined. We find a multiple neuritis involving the peripheral nerves, and the brain shows evidence of degeneration of the cortex cells and the associative fibres. There is usually also a considerable increase of the cerebro-spinal fluid.

These conditions may be completely recovered from or may pass on to the chronic changes which come under the head of alcoholic dementia.

CHRONIC ALCOHOLISM OR ALCOHOLIC DEMENTIA is a condition characterized by a progressive dementia associated with special delusions, especially those of suspicion.

The etiology of these cases is usually the constant and exces-

sive use of alcohol, with periods of more or less prolonged debauches. We have, therefore, some of the symptoms of acute alcoholism just described associated at times. The chronic alcoholic becomes incapable of carrying on business, in fact loses all desire to do so; his memory is defective, and he loses all the higher qualities of his ethical nature. He is subject to delusions of persecution and believes that people are conspiring against him. Delusions of hearing are common; he hears the voices of his enemies talking against him, threatening to kill him, etc. Visual hallucinations are also present. Circumstantial accounts of assaults and often robbery, with details founded on delusions, may be given which have absolutely no foundation in fact. On the other hand the individual may accuse himself of acts homicidal or otherwise, which were clearly not committed.

One of the commonest delusions of suspicion is that of the infidelity of the wife or husband, as the case may be.

These delusions may lead to acts of violence, homicidal in character. As the dementia progresses there is often a fixed delusion in regard to these acts. It is not rare to find a patient assert, with full belief in his statement, that he has been at a certain place and met certain persons and transacted business, when it is known that he has not left the house for weeks.

He may be unable to recognize his surroundings, not knowing that he is in his own house, or may be unable to state the time of the year or week. There are, however, marked changes in the course of the symptoms, depending on the amount of alcohol consumed. The physical signs show tremor and much muscular weakness, and at times epileptic seizures, which may be followed by mania or melancholia.

The course followed by the law is that alcohol is no excuse for crime except where a distinct mental disease is induced as the result of the alcohol. In commitments care must be observed, as recovery from the delusions is often rapid when the alcohol is removed, and litigation for damages may result. There are laws at present regulating the confinement of women in certain institutions for a year, which relieves the physician and friends of the responsibility.

The dementia in chronic cases has a tendency to remain permanent, even after the removal of all opportunities of obtaining alcohol. The pathological changes in these cases are definite

and well defined. We find a chronic pachymeningitis, often associated with meningeal hemorrhage and a degeneration of the cortex cells and association fibres. There is also cerebral atrophy with increase of the cerebro-spinal fluid.

The following cases will illustrate the condition described:

A. B., male, æt. 43. Family history negative. Always of a neurotic disposition. For the past ten years has been an excessive drinker, especially at night, when he would take large quantities of gin. B. has had several attacks of delirium tremens, and also gives history of several epileptic seizures. On examination found patient fairly well nourished, but there was marked tremor of the muscles of the face, tongue, and hands, so that his writing was scarcely intelligible. B. had an epileptic attack at the time, remaining more or less confused mentally for two hours. Memory was very defective—could not play a game of whist intelligently, although thoroughly well acquainted with the game. The question which arose in this case was his ability to transact business and his responsibility for his contracts. The partnership was annulled on these grounds. There were at no time any delusions, simply a dementia being present. Under care and the withdrawal of the alcohol, marked improvement followed.

A second case, in which the question of the ability to manage her own property arose, is as follows: Mrs. B., æt. 65, has been addicted to excessive drinking for years, for which cause she is separated from her husband.

The patient is naturally a very shrewd person and capable of transacting business of extensive proportions, when not under the influence of alcohol.

After excesses she becomes maniacal and has delusions of being assaulted and robbed. She constantly hears voices speaking against her, calling her indecent names, and threatening to kill her. Has illusions of persons around her saying they assaulted her. After an unusually prolonged debauch, in which she had fallen and injured herself, she ascribed her injuries to an attack by these persons.

Her story was that they had entered her house, seized her by the hair, and robbed her of a large sum of money, which they knew she carried about her. This delusion, which she held after she was no longer under the influence of alcohol, was described with full details of the assault. Even during her relation of it, however, she would call attention to the voices in the room above, talking against her. Any sound was interpreted as evidence of a conspiracy. Under care, however, all these delusions disappeared.

Many cases similar in character can be recorded, in which the delusion of suspicion and conspiracy is associated with that

of the fear of being poisoned or of losing their property. This may lead to certain acts to avoid the impending ruin as seen in the case reported by Simon:

A well-to-do business man, addicted to excessive alcoholism, imagined that he was becoming poorer every day, and that his neighbors reproached him for the most necessary living expenses. He set fire to his house, to avoid the complete financial ruin. This patient ultimately recovered.

This writer states that an irresistible impulse may often exist in these cases and that homicides most often committed by chronic cases, are the result of these impulses. In my opinion these acts are usually the result of the hallucinations or delusions.

The question of responsibility is often a difficult one. Rossi, Ortolan, Helie are in favor of allowing extenuating circumstances in all cases of intoxication. As Cullere says, "a distinction must be made between the individual who resorts to alcohol for the courage to carry out an act or crime, and he who in unforeseen intoxication or in alcoholic delirium commits an illegal act. In case of drunkenness the expert must study exactly the habitual mental state of the individual, his hereditary tendencies, the moral or emotional shocks which may have shaken the stability of his nervous system."

"Although drunkenness in itself is no palliation or excuse for crime,[1] yet mental unsoundness, superinduced by excessive intoxication, and continuing after the intoxication has subsided, may excuse; or when the mind is destroyed by long-continued habit of drunkenness, or where the habit of intoxication caused an habitual madness; and where a person is insane at the time he commits the crime, he is not punishable, although such insanity be remotely occasioned by undue indulgence in spirituous liquors, or from what, in a moral sense, is a criminal neglect of duty. For if the reason be perverted or destroyed by a fixed disease, though brought on by his own vices, the law holds him not accountable. But temporary insanity, resulting immediately from voluntary intoxication, does not destroy legal responsibility, or constitute a defence for crime; but when the question is, whether a murder is of the first or of

[1] "American and English Encyclopedia of Law."

the second degree, the fact of drunkenness may be proved to show the mental status of the accused at the time of the act, and thereby enable the jury to determine whether or not the killing resulted from a deliberate and premeditated purpose."

SENILE DEMENTIA.—This condition is one associated with old age, and is perhaps more frequently simply a sign of the gradual decay of the body as well as the brain; in fact, as a rule, it depends upon arterial changes of a degenerative type. It manifests itself by loss of memory, inability to fix the attention on the subject of the moment, and a tendency to recur to scenes and acts of a period long past. As has been said, "man is as old as his arteries," and consequently as a result of any cause, such as worry, emotional excitement or overwork, or disease due to alcoholism and syphilis, we often find true senility present at a comparatively early age. It follows, therefore, that the peculiar symptoms of this condition may occur at the age of forty-five as well as at fifty or seventy-five years of age.

The most common symptoms associated with it are suspicion of those nearest and most dear, hallucinations of hearing and of sight, and delusions which are often of a persecutory character. There is frequently a great fear of impending poverty or ruin. The habits change to those of extreme miserlyness, so that even the ordinary expenses of living may be grudged, and even starvation may take place, although the money may be in their actual possession. We have alluded to a similar set of delusions occurring in alcoholic dementia. While this condition is more common, we may find just the reverse take place. There may be special antipathies toward certain members of the family arising from a delusion of suspicion, leading to great injustice in making a will, or for such reason all the property may be left to institutions. This necessarily leads to litigation either on that ground or that of undue influences. Old age alone, even with decay of the natural powers, is not sufficient to render such a will invalid.

Loss of memory of recent events leads to the development of a more or less marked confusion of thought, so that these patients even forget where they are, though they may be in their own homes which they have coccupied for years. They may even assert they are being confined by force in some disagreeable place, whereas as a matter of fact they are perhaps

sitting in their own chair or room. On being convinced of their mistake, they will acknowledge it, but will almost immediately relapse again into the same or a similar error. Apoplectiform attacks are not infrequent, and probably explicable by some temporary occlusion of the cerebral vessels which has not been complete enough to cause a permanent lesion. This condition, therefore, represents the whole state of the circulation of the brain, and it is evident that not enough blood is carried to the various parts of the brain. The bodily condition often corresponds to the mental condition. Where the mental processes are more or less active, though impaired, there is usually loss of flesh and interference with the vegetative functions; where, however, the dementia is more advanced, so that hallucinations and illusions have a less permanent character, the physical condition will improve, or at least bodily weight will increase, and the general appearance of the patient will improve. This is, however, only the beginning of the end, and does not indicate recovery. There is also very commonly a condition of atheroma affecting the vessels of the heart, leading to fatty degeneration.

This condition may be expected usually between the ages of sixty and eighty. The symptoms are generally mild, but they vary within rather wide limits. There may be a revival of the sexual desires which have long remained dormant, or there may be a tendency to alcoholism which may not have existed previously, so that a person hitherto sober and orderly may become dissipated, and be given to sexual excesses and extravagance. These individuals naturally fall an easy prey to designing persons, and it is important to recognize the true nature of this condition in the early stage, for otherwise fortunes may be dissipated. Certainly it would seem that after years of correct living and business probity, acts contrary to the generally accepted character of the person should be considered as evidence of mental derangement rather than as evidence of previous hypocrisy on the part of the individual.

The final stages of the disease are not dissimilar from those of general paresis. There may be considerable excitement, and even maniacal attacks sufficiently severe to require restraint, or the removal of the person to an asylum. Depression is not so common as excitement; still in many of these cases there is

a tendency to suicide as a result of such a profound depression as to almost simulate acute melancholia.

This disease resembles at times the condition observed in women at the menopause, where it is not uncommon to see marked depression with more or less failure of the mental powers, loss of memory, and a series of illusions and delusions. However, this latter condition is often followed by recovery.

The post-mortem changes observed would indicate rather a condition of atrophy and degeneration than any active process. The walls of the vessels are thickened and their lumen narrowed. The membranes are frequently thickened, with here and there evidence of a pachymeningitis. The fluid in the subarachnoid cavity and ventricles is increased. The volume of the brain is decreased. The convolutions are pale, anæmic, and flattened. The sulci are not so deep as in the normal brain. There is also an apparent increase in the Pacchionian bodies, and they are attached to the dura and pia along the longitudinal sinus. They may increase to such an extent as to lead to the formation of areas of softening in the cortex of the brain, not dissimilar to that found in general paresis. Microscopically, the cells of the cortex show signs of degeneration and loss of the processes. The walls of the vessels are seen to be considerably degenerated, and there may be evidences of aneurismal dilatations of the miliary type.

These changes are all of a general rather than of a local character, pointing, as we have said, to a condition of atrophy and degeneration rather than to any active process. We would note that the association fibres connecting one area of the brain with another are also involved, explaining perhaps the loss of association of ideas and the impairment of memory, thus leading to impaired judgment. This is perhaps not peculiar to the disease under consideration, but is explanatory of similar mental states found in various other mental disorders. In conclusion I shall describe under this heading apoplexy.

Cerebral Apoplexy—by which we mean a destructive lesion of the brain caused by hemorrhage into the brain, or softening from the plugging of the vessels by an embolism or thrombosis—may involve legal questions of much importance. We do not, as a rule, have what can be defined as insanity, but often there is dementia, with or without various delusions

and hallucinations, and conditions of impaired speech or aphasia, which makes it difficult for the individual to clearly express his wishes. This may render the testamentary capacity doubtful.

The usual condition found in apoplexy is a paralysis of one-half of the body and aphasia, which may be permanent. Aphasia may be simply motor, in which there is difficulty to express the ideas desired, by reason of impaired articulation, or there may also be a loss of the names of things, *i.e.*, amnesic aphasia, so that communication has to be carried on by gesture. This condition does not, as a rule, or at least does not necessarily, imply that there is any lack of understanding of what is spoken or what is read, so that full intelligence may be maintained. In sensory aphasia, which may be of two varieties, there is what is understood as word blindness, that is, the patient is no longer able to understand written language, or again there may be word deafness, *i.e.*, loss of understanding of spoken language. Mind blindness may be present, but this always implies an extreme degree of dementia, for the individual no longer comprehends the use of things, or their object; this has been called apraxia. The whole character of the individual may be changed—he may become filthy and obscene in his habits, or lewd and addicted to alcohol. The essential point is really a matter of fact as to what the mental condition is at the time of examination. The mere fact of having had an apoplectic seizure does not necessarily imply such mental impairment as to incapacitate one from responsibility for his acts. The question arises most frequently in regard to the testamentary capacity of the individual and whether undue influence has been used at the time of the making of the will.

The rulings as brought out in the celebrated Parish will case have not materially changed to the present time. In this case the will made while the testator was in the full possession of all his faculties was sustained, but the codicils made after his apoplectic seizure were not. The surrogate of New York found and decided as a matter of fact that the testator had not testamentary capacity on the 15th of September, 1853, or on the 15th of June, 1854, to make the two codicils, and that they were not his will or any part thereof, and he refused to admit the same to probate.

The weight of the testimony in the trial brought out that his

whole moral nature was changed, and that he was not morally responsible for the unbecoming and ungentlemanly conduct he so frequently exhibited. It was also shown that after his attack he never was able to utter an intelligible word, and the gestures made by him with the left hand were unmeaning and contradictory. "If Mr. Parish had no power to express a wish to destroy a will, it follows he had none to create one, and the manifestation of his wishes depended entirely upon the interpreter, and the integrity of the interpretation."[1]

However, the will of a paralytic will be sustained, when, though unable to talk at the time of its execution, the mind is unimpaired and he is able to signify his assent to each item by an affirmative nod of the head as it is read to him.[2]

I would also refer to a case where the question of senile dementia following an apoplectic seizure arose in regard to probating the will of the testator,[3] and a similar case in which the probate of the will was objected to, as the maker had had two apoplectic seizures, after which his observation became impaired and he also failed to recognize acquaintances.[4]

ARRESTED CEREBRAL DEVELOPMENT, OR DISEASE OF THE UNDEVELOPED BRAIN.

IDIOCY is a mental condition due to maldevelopment of the brain, which may be congenital, due to absence of parts of the brain structure, or to disease consequent upon inflammatory changes, or to defects in the blood supply to certain brain areas. The degree of actual brain defect will represent the degree of mental impairment. There can, therefore, be no actual subdivisions of idiocy, although for the sake of convenience we may speak of several grades.

In a medico-legal sense there is some importance in these cases both in civil and criminal relations.

[1] Delafield *v.* Parish. "Report of Cases Argued and Determined in the Court of Appeals of the State of New York," vol. xi. (by E. Peschine Smith).

[2] Rothrock *v.* Rothrock (Ore.), 30 Pac., 453.

[3] Swenarton *v.* Hancock (Abbott, vol. ix., Rockland County Surrogate's Court, December, 1879; Supreme Court, second department; General Term, September, 1880; Court of Appeals, 1881; Austin Abbott's New Cases).

[4] The New York State Reporter, by R. M. Stover of New York (Leroy Randall *v.* George H. Downing).

Etiology of Idiocy.—There may be absence of almost the whole of the cerebral hemisphere, only the basal ganglia remaining. The brain may be the seat of meningeal inflammation, with hemorrhage either meningeal or, more rarely, in the brain substance. We find paralysis and usually epilepsy associated in these cases. They may be congenital or follow the diseases of childhood, as the exanthemata.

Porencephalus, usually a congenital condition in which we have a loss of certain portions of the brain substance, usually resulting in a cyst or cavity connecting the cortex of the brain with one of the lateral ventricles, is associated with idiocy or imbecility. We also have in these cases paralysis and epilepsy. In this relation we must also consider traumatism, which may, of course, be productive of extensive destruction of the brain. Among other causes, not associated with brain defect, we must before all consider hereditary influences, as insanity, the various neuroses, syphilis, alcoholism, and consanguinity, etc.; also microcephalus, hydrocephalus, hypertrophy, and cretinism.

The changes observed in the brain depend largely on the cause. The absence of the hemispheres explains the mental condition in such cases. In the second class referred to, in which we find idiocy or imbecility associated with hemiplegia and epilepsy, there is usually considerable atrophy of one of the hemispheres of the brain; the nerve cells and fibres also show degeneration, and there may be descending degeneration of the nerve tract into the spinal cord. In the cases dependent on hereditary syphilis and alcoholism, there is evidence of impairment of the cells of the cortex and a tendency to the formation of connective tissue, resulting in sclerosis of the cerebral substance.

In microcephalic cases we find a decrease in the cranial measurements, which may be symmetrical. Most cases show evidence of dolichocephaly, and there is shortening of the antero-posterior diameter. There may be variations in the deformity, as scaphocephaly, plagiocephaly, etc.

In so-called cretinoid idiocy, which is dependent on some defect in the functional activity of the thyroid gland, or due to its absence, the conformation of the skull is flatter and gives the appearance of being square, the condition being brachycephalic. The bones of the face, especially the malar processes, are also

prominent; this with the infiltration and thickening of the skin gives the face a peculiar expression. The mental state corresponds, however, to idiocy, and should be properly included in this place.

In hydrocephalus, which is a chronic condition resulting in dilatation of the ventricles, we may find the skull very much thinned, and the cranial measurements largely increased. The brain is, however, the seat of atrophy, the cortex being much reduced in thickness and the cell element showing impairment or destruction. The face appears much smaller than normal by the contrast with the increased size of the skull. In hypertrophy of the brain we find an increase especially of the white substance of the brain, and probably an increase of the neuroglia tissue. There is considerable increase in the weight of the brain. The skull measurements are not increased to the extent found in hydrocephalus.[1] "Bourneville distinguishes, from an anatomico-pathological point of view, the following forms in idiocy: (1) Idiocy symptomatic of hydrocephalus (hydrocephalic idiocy); (2) idiocy symptomatic of microcephaly (microcephalic idiocy); (3) idiocy symptomatic of the arrest of development of the convolutions; (4) idiocy symptomatic of a congenital malformation of the brain (porencephaly, absence of corpus callosum, etc.); (5) idiocy symptomatic of hypertrophic or tuberculous sclerosis; (6) idiocy symptomatic of atrophic sclerosis—(*a*) sclerosis of one or both hemispheres; (*b*) sclerosis of one lobe of the brain; (*c*) sclerosis of isolated convolutions; (*d*) sclerosis *chagrinée* (like shagreen) of the brain (?); (7) idiocy symptomatic of chronic meningitis or meningo-encephalitis (meningitic idiocy); (8) idiocy with pachydermic cachexia, or myxœdematous idiocy connected with absence of the thyroid gland. This latter form is called cretinoid idiocy."[2]

The idiot manifests, according to the degree of his mental impairment, a more or less complete loss of mental activity. There is usually great restlessness, and inability to fix the attention on any one thing; there is often understanding sufficient to comprehend what is said to them, but no idea of the necessity of doing what is requested—in fact, all sense of responsibility is absent. Speech is usually involved. The vo-

[1] Tuke's "Dictionary of Psychological Medicine."

[2] Régis, "Practical Manual of Mental Medicine."

cabulary may be limited to but few words, or language may never be acquired, certain sounds intelligible only to those in charge being used to indicate their wishes, a language of their own being thus formed. The higher ethical nature is absent, so that the passions and desires are carried out unrestrainedly. The sexual propensities may be increased, masturbation being openly carried on, or assaults may be made on women and children. Such patients may be violent and homicidal, opposition usually exciting them to anger. There are, however,

FIG. 27.—Typical Face of Idiot.

cases where affection seems to be exceedingly strong. We find in almost all instances a tendency to destroy articles, to appropriate anything within reach. When the intelligence is partially preserved, acts of assault and thieving may be carried out with some degree of cunning, and attempts at concealment may be made.

There is not infrequently a marked appreciation of music, and in some few instances a decided aptitude for certain things, as drawing, figures, or music.

The general appearance of the idiot is indicative of his mental state. Physically he is usually small; the head is, in

the majority of the cases, as we have said, microcephalic. The face lacks any fixity of expression, but is continually changing; the mouth is open, the saliva passing unconsciously away; the teeth are irregular, and the palate often narrow and highly arched. The hands and, in fact, the whole body are subject to choreiform movements, and there are frequently present epileptic seizures. Various other asymmetries of the face are often present, as deformity of the ears and eyes.

IMBECILITY is a congenital or acquired state of mental weakness, differing in degree rather than kind from idiocy. The same causes exist here as in idiocy. It not infrequently follows in the course of the neuroses, especially epilepsy and chorea. It may manifest itself especially in the moral or intellectual fields. We find the same inability to apply the attention to the acquisition of learning.

Imbeciles frequently give evidence of moral perversion, in the absence of ordinary affection, and by acts of cruelty. They are frequently impulsive, and we not rarely find them committing acts such as we have described under the head of pyromania, kleptomania, etc. The motive often is very slight, perhaps a desire of revenge for some fancied wrong. There is rarely any feeling of remorse for what is done. Many such cases fill our reformatories, and are often among the most incorrigible and mischievous of the inmates. In the milder forms the condition may not have been observed in very early life, or until the restraints of school show an almost complete inability to progress with others in the course of study. Again the exhibition of a sort of moral perversion may not manifest itself until later; the higher ethical nature seems to be absent. They may also be inclined to venereal and alcoholic excesses. Perhaps in these cases there is a greater tendency to some special talents, such as we have referred to, in music or mathematics, etc., than in the class defined as idiots. There is, however, observed through all their acts a seeming absence of the proper appreciation of the relations of ordinary life and its responsibilities.

MENTAL UNSOUNDNESS

IN ITS

LEGAL RELATIONS.

BY

TRACY C. BECKER, A.B., LL.B.,

Counsellor-at-Law; Professor of Criminal Law and Medical Jurisprudence in the Law Department of the University of Buffalo; Chairman Executive Committee New York State Bar Association, etc.

MENTAL UNSOUNDNESS IN ITS LEGAL RELATIONS.

ENGLISH law recognizes two states of mental diseases.

(1) DEMENTIA NATURALIS and (2) DEMENTIA ADVENTITIA, under which general insanity is included. To this term "lunacy" is usually applied. In New York, Massachusetts, and several of the American States, statutes have been passed defining the term "insane person," "lunatic," "*non compos mentis*," and "insane," so as to embrace all forms of insanity except idiocy, making these terms synonymous. There is no distinction between the terms insanity and unsoundness of mind.

Definitions.—An insane person is one whose mind is affected by general imbecility, or is subject to one or more specific delusions.

A Lunatic.—At common law, a lunatic was one who hath had understanding, but by disease, grief, or other accident hath lost the use of his reason.

An Idiot.—An idiot was one who hath had no understanding from his nativity.

Non Compos Mentis.—The words *non compos mentis* seem to have been used as a generic term including both idiocy and lunacy. They had, in the earlier cases, both in England and in the United States, a more restricted meaning than they bear at present, and were held to import a total deprivation of sense, and not to include mere imbecility or weakness of mind. In the more modern cases they are held to include not only cases of idiocy and lunacy, as strictly defined at common law, but also cases of imbecility where the subject is incapable of conducting the ordinary affairs of life, and liable to become the victim of his own weakness.[1]

Definition and Classification.—Dr. Beck[2] uses the term "mental alienation" to cover all cases of unsoundness of mind,

[1] "Am. and Eng. Cyclopædia of Law," vol. ii., title insanity.

[2] 12th ed. Beck's "Med. Jour.," vol. i., p. 721.

and divides these into: *First.* Those states of mental *infirmity* depending upon congenital defects of the brain, or on the imperfect development of its faculties during infancy, *viz.*, idiocy and imbecility. *Second.* All those forms of mental derangement which arise from disease of the brain subsequent to its full development, and which may be said to constitute insanity proper. This class comprises those conditions of perverted mind commonly recognized by the terms mania, melancholia, monomania, and dementia. *The legal definition* of a state of mental alienation, and the adjudications under it, are briefly treated at page 765 (Vol. I.) *et seq.* of Dr. Beck's treatise.

Dr. Ray[1] says, "in the *Roman law*, the insane or *demented* are divided into two classes: those whose understanding is weak or null, *menti capti*, and those who are restless and furious, *furioci*. The French and Prussian codes make use of the terms *dimenci*, *fureur*, *imbicilliti*, without pretending to define them. The English common law originally recognized but two kinds of insanity, *idiocy* and *lunacy*, the subjects of which were designated by the term *non compos mentis*, which was used in a generic sense, and meant to embrace all who, from defect of understanding, require the protection of the law. An occasional attempt has been made by jurists to attach some definite ideas to these terms, and to point out the various descriptions of persons to whom they may be applied. Lord Coke says there are four kinds of men who may be said to be *non compos mentis:* 1. An idiot who, from his nativity, by perpetual infirmity is *non compos;* 2. He that by sickness, grief, or other accident wholly loseth his memory and understanding; 3. A lunatic that hath sometimes his understanding and sometimes not, *aliquando gaudet lucidis intervallis;* 4. He that by his own vicious act for a time depriveth himself of his memory and understanding, as he that is drunken."[2]

"Nothing can show more plainly how imperfect were the notions of the early law writers concerning insanity than this classification of insane persons, and their attempts to define the several classes. An idiot is defined to be a person who cannot count or number twenty pence, or tell who was his father or mother, or how old he is, so as it may appear that he hath no understanding of reason, what shall be for his profit and what

[1] "Med. Juris. of Insanity" (4th ed.), p. 4. [2] Coke's Littleton, 247 c.

shall be for his loss; but if he have sufficient understanding to know and understand his letters and to read by teaching or information, he is not an idiot."[1]

Bucknill on Criminal Lunacy[2] describes *insanity* as "a condition of the mind in which a false action or conception, or judgment, a defective power of the will or an uncontrollable violence of the emotions and instincts have separately or conjointly been produced by disease."[3]

RELATIONS TO CIVIL LAW.

CONTRACTS.

At common law a party could not avoid his contract on the plea of lunacy, in accordance with an ancient maxim that no man of full age shall be allowed to disable or stultify himself; though, at the same time, it allowed his heirs or other persons interested to avail themselves of this privilege.[4] "Within a few years, however (1838), English courts have almost entirely disregarded the ancient maxim,[5] and in this country it has long since lost its authority altogether."[6]

As a general rule insane persons are incapable of entering into valid contracts, and any agreements that they make are either void or voidable. In order, however, to invalidate such an agreement it must be shown that it was the direct result of the insanity alleged. The mere fact of delusion or insanity, if unconnected with the act under judicial consideration, is not sufficient to relieve the person who attempts to set it up as a ground of disability. With the exception of certain cases hereafter mentioned, an agreement of an insane person immediately connected with, and growing out of, his insanity is voidable, and not void. In States where it is provided by statute that, after a finding of an inquisition of insanity, the insane person shall be incapable of making a contract or performing any civil

[1] 1 Fitzherbert, "Natura Brevium," 583, ed. 1652.

[2] Pp. 27, 28.

[3] See also Taylor, "Med. Jur.," 6th Am. ed., p. 631; Wharton and Stillé, "Med. Jur.," vol. iii. p. 118.

[4] 2 Blackstone, 295.

[5] Baxter *v.* Earl Portsmouth, 7 D. & R., 614; 9 Alb. L. J., 30; Chitty on Contracts, 256; Gates *v.* Bain, 2 Strick., 1104.

[6] Webster *v.* Woodward, 3 Day, 90; Rice *v.* Peel, 15 Johns, 503; Mitchell *v.* Kingman, 5 Pickering, 431. Ray's "Med. Jur.," pp. 10 and 11.

act, an agreement entered into by such a person is absolutely void.

In Carter *v.* Beckwith,[1] the New York Court of Appeals, per Andrews, J., said: "It is well settled that a lunatic whose lunacy has been judicially determined, and for whom a committee has been appointed, is incapable of entering into any contract, and that any contract which he may assume to make while in that situation is absolutely void." Citing: Wadsworth *v.* Sharpsteen, 8 N. Y., 388; Lamoureaux *v.* Crosby, 2 Paige, 422; Hughes *v.* Jones, 116 N. Y., 67. The courts will not inquire whether the lunacy in fact continued and existed when the contract was made. The presumption of its continuance is conclusive as to all dealings after the inquisition until it has been superseded.[2]

A deed or mortgage executed by one who, *thereafter*, by inquisition in proceedings *de lunatico*, is found to be a lunatic, although made within the period during which he is declared by the finding to have been a lunatic, is not absolutely void; the proceedings are presumptive, not conclusive, evidence of want of capacity and may be overcome by satisfactory evidence of sanity.[3]

An exception to the general rule, that the contracts of insane persons are either void or voidable, is found in the case on contracts for necessaries supplied in good faith to an insane person, and suitable to his rank in life. Another exception to the general rule is found in those cases where a person in good faith enters into a contract with another apparently sane, and the contract is executed, and an adequate consideration paid, where the consideration cannot be restored by the lunatic or those who represent him, so as to put the parties *in statu quo*. In such a case the contract cannot be set aside by the lunatic or his committee.[4]

[1] 128 N. Y., 312, 316.

[2] People *ex rel.* Smith *v.* Comrs., etc., 100 N. Y., 215; *In re* Otis, 101 N. Y., 580; Brown *v.* Miles, 61 Hun, 453. But see Reese *v.* Reese, 89 Ga., 645, s. c., 15 S. E., 846; McCleary *v.* Barcelon, 6 Ohio Cir. Ct. Rep., 481.

[3] Hughes *v.* Jones, 116 N. Y., 67–73, citing Van Deusen *v.* Sweet, 51 N. Y., 378; Banker *v.* Banker, 63 N. Y., 409; Hart *v.* Deamer, 6 Wend, 497; Osterhout *v.* Shoemaker, 3 Hill, 513; 1 Greenleaf on Evidence, sec. 556. And see also Mott *v.* Mott, 49 N. J. Eq., 192, citing Rice *v.* Peet, 15 Johns, 503; Hicks *v.* Marshall, 3 Hun, 327; Matter of Beckwith, 3 Hun, 443; Mutual Life Ins. Co. *v.* Hunt, 79 N. Y., 541; Matter of Morgan, 7 Paige, 236; Supr. Ct., 1886, Westerfield *v.* Jackson, 3 N. Y. State Rep., 353.

[4] Ibid.

Taxation of Lunatic's Property.

Where a person who has not been adjudged insane, even though he be insane, owns property subject to taxation, and due notice is given him, and the property is assessed by a proper officer, the assessment is *prima facie* valid.[1]

Statutes of Limitation.

The statutes of most of the States contain express provisions by which the effect of the statutes of limitation is suspended during the time that a party is insane. And it has been *held* that adverse possession does not ripen into title while the person out of possession is insane.[2]

In North Carolina it was held that a plaintiff's claim by adverse possession was not affected by the insanity of defendant's ancestor occurring *after the statute had begun to run.*[3]

As to judgments rendered against an insane party see Thomas *v.* Hunsucker, 108 N. C., 720; Weaver *v.* Brennar, 146 Pa. St., 299; Redmond *v.* Peterson, 102 Cal., 595; Bond *v.* Neuschwander, 86 Wis., 391.

Assent.—An instrument procured by fraud, trick, or artifice, or executed by a party in such a state of intoxication as to be incapable of consenting or contracting, is invalid as between the parties to the transaction; but these facts do not always constitute a defence as against an innocent person who is himself free from any fraud or negligence, and who has advanced money or property to another upon the faith of such an instrument.[4]

Liability for Necessaries.—A man, notwithstanding he has been found to be an idiot from birth, is liable for necessaries for himself, his wife, and children, unless some unfair advantage has been taken of him.[5]

The appointment of a committee does not deprive a creditor who has advanced toward the support of the idiot, lunatic, or

[1] Hennel *v.* Board of Comrs., 132 Ind., 32; s. c., 31 N. E. Rep., 462. And see also People *v.* Barker (N. Y. Sup. Ct.), 67 Hun, 649; s. c., 33 N. E. Rep., 745.

[2] Clarity *v.* Sheridan (Iowa), 59 N. W., 52.

[3] Asbury *v.* Fair, 111 N. C., 251.

[4] Page *v.* Kreky, 137 N. Y., 307.

[5] 1 Story Eq. Jur., 307; Barnes *v.* Hathaway, 66 Barb., 452; Stannart *v.* Barns, 63 Vt., 244.

his family, of recovery for necessary clothing or provisions, unless the committee has himself furnished what he deemed necessary and proper. When advances are made without the approval of the committee, the good faith of the transaction must be clearly established. But the man or his family must not suffer because his committee does not or cannot provide.[1]

In England, and in some of the United States, it has been held that in order to invalidate a contract because of the insanity of the maker before he is interdicted, in addition to showing his incapacity, it must appear that he was known by those who saw and conversed with him to be in a state of mental derangement, or that the person who contracted with him knew his incapacity.[2]

In Imperial Loan Co. *v.* Stone[3] (1892) it was *held* that a party to a contract cannot avoid it on the ground of his insanity at the time he entered into it, unless his insanity was at the time known to the other contracting party. The burden of proving both the insanity and the knowledge of it by the other contracting party lies upon the party seeking to avoid the contract.

In Schaps *v.* Lehner, Schaps *v.* Kulzer, Schaps *v.* Diedrich, 54 Minn., 208; 44 N. W., 911, it was held that the mere fact that one of the parties to a contract was insane (he not having been so adjudged by judicial proceedings) does not render the contract void, but at most only voidable, and constitutes no ground for setting it aside where the other party had no notice of the insanity and derived no inequitable advantage from it, and where the parties cannot be placed *in statu quo*.[4]

Mere Physical and Mental Weakness does not Incapacitate.—In an action against the maker of a promissory note, given to settle a debt he had incurred, the defence was that he was *non compos mentis*. The evidence showed that he had been a man of great physical and mental strength, but at the time of signing the note was physically very weak, and had lost much of his intellectual vigor, but was competent to attend to his ordinary business affairs. His letters concerning the note

[1] 1 Story Eq. Jur., 307; Barnes *v.* Hathaway, 66 Barb., 452; Stannart *v.* Barns, 63 Vt., 244.

[2] Stockmeyer *v.* Tobin, 139 U. S., 176 (in Louisiana this is the statutory rule); Martinez *v.* Moll, 46 Fed. Rep., 724, U. S. Cir. Ct. La., construing Art. 1788, Louisiana Civil Code.

[3] 1 Q. B., 599.

[4] See Myers *v.* Knabe, 51 Kans., 720.

transaction were clear, and showed a good memory, and his conduct and language after the transaction showed that he fully understood what he had done. *Held*, that he was competent to make the contract.[1]

Undue Influence.—Contracts claimed to have been made with aged or infirm persons to be enforced after death, disinheriting their lawful heirs, are properly subject to suspicion, and must be established by the strongest evidence.[2]

While a court can grant no relief against the consequences of mistaken judgment or mere imprudence on the part of the one making the contract, yet where the nature of the act by a person mentally enfeebled is such as to justify the conclusion that the party has been imposed upon by artifice or undue influence, a court of equity will intervene.

When a contract is impeached on the ground of mental incapacity of the party, the true inquiry is, whether the party had the ability to comprehend in a reasonable manner the nature of the affair in which he participated. If fraud has been practised on a person of weak or impaired intellect, other principles apply; but where mental incapacity is alleged, there must be inability to know what the act is to which the contract relates. So long as one possesses requisite mental faculties to transact rationally the ordinary affairs of life, his contracts will be valid. He must have sufficient intellectual capacity to know what he is doing, but sufficient discernment to transact business with prudence and discretion is not required.[3]

The following recent decisions will serve to illustrate the varying views of the courts in this class of cases:[4]

The fact that the mind of one party to a written contract had become impaired by age renders the contract none the less operative against the other party, if the latter was in full possession of his faculties.[5]

A deed of land from one who, at the time of its alleged execution was mentally incapable of executing the same, is void (Ellicott, J., dissenting).[6]

[1] Des Moines, etc., *v.* Chisholm, 71 Iowa, 675.

[2] Shakespeare *v.* Markham, 72 N. Y., 400.

[3] Bishop on Contracts, §§ 972, 973, 974.

[4] Harmon *v.* Harmon (U. S. Circ. Ct.), 51 Fed. Rep., 113 (1893).

[5] Elder *v.* Schumacher, 18 Colo., 433; 33 Pac., 175 (1893).

[6] Sullivan *v.* Flynn, 20 D. C., 396 (1893).

The fact that the grantee in a deed by an insane person was not aware of such insanity does not validate the deed.[1]

In an action for an accounting and to set aside a gift as made when the donor was insane, it appeared that he was very close in money matters, and uncleanly in habits and dress; that he shrank from the use of water and objected to changing his soiled clothes; that he talked of women in an obscene way, and when angry swore badly; that he played on the piano without extracting any music and then walked around the room in a quaint, unnatural manner. These were his characteristics for months before his death in August, 1890. *Held*, that a finding that deceased was sane until July 1st, two days before he made the gift, and insane from that time until the date of his death, was against the evidence.[2]

Deed of aged, infirm, fretful grantor.[3]

Evidence that a father, at the time of deeding his property to those of his children who remained at home, was somewhat infirm by reason of old age, and was conscious of not possessing enough vigor to manage a large farm, is not sufficient to show mental incapacity, where there is evidence of his transacting business affairs properly at and after that time.[4]

In an action to set aside certain deeds on the ground that the grantor was imbecile, it appeared that he was over eighty years of age, and that the grantee was his favorite grandson. Some of the witnesses swore that at the time he was in a state of senile dementia, but this was contradicted by many witnesses. The scrivener who drew the deeds, and who had no interest in the suit, testified at the time he was perfectly capable of understanding what he was doing. *Held*, that the evidence was not sufficient to support a decree setting aside the deeds.[5]

In an action to set aside a deed, the petition alleged that plaintiff, "who was a man over eighty years old, in feeble condition and unable to read and write," was induced by fraud to execute the deed. The court found that no fraud was practised. *Held*, that it was error to set aside such deed because plaintiff

[1] Field *v.* Shorb, 99 Cal., 661; 34 Pac., 504 (1894).

[2] Argo *v.* Coffin, 142 Ill., 368; 32 N. E., 679 (1893).

[3] *Upheld.* (See case in Am. Dig., 1893, p. 1767, sec. 166.) Francis *v.* Wilkinson (Ill. Sup.), 147 Ill., 370; 35 N. E., 150 (1894).

[4] Guild *v.* Warne, 149 Ill., 105; 36 N. E., 635 (1894).

[5] Hines *v.* Horner, Iowa, 53 N. W., 317 (1893).

"at the time had not sufficient mental capacity to enter into said contract or make said deed," since the question of plaintiff's mental capacity was not in issue.[1]

Evidence that a grantor at the time he executed a conveyance to his daughter was advanced in years and had feeble health and impaired eyesight, and that his mind is not as vigorous as it has been, is not sufficient to justify a finding that he was of unsound mind, where a large number of his neighbors testify that he was capable of transacting ordinary business.[2]

Case of assignment to plaintiff of land, held under a bond for price with plaintiff as surety. Assignee's mental competency attacked. Conflicting evidence as to sanity of assignor. *Held*, that assignment was not invalid and should have been sustained.[3]

Contract for sale of valuable lands at one-sixth their value, seller aged, infirm, etc.; contract set aside.[4]

In an action to set aside a deed made by an alleged incompetent person, brought by his curator fourteen years after the deed was made, it appeared that the deed was first made as security for a loan and afterward the grantor acknowledged receipt of the full amount of the purchase price, and renounced the right to redeem; that between the dates of the two acts the grantor was for several months confined in an insane asylum. Several witnesses testified that after leaving the asylum the grantor appeared sane and supported his family, and other acquaintances testified that they knew of no acts indicating insanity. One witness testified that she told the defendant before the deed was made that the grantor was a "man very little sane," that "he was idiotic;" but this was denied by defendant. The evidence showed that the amount paid by defendant was a fair price for the land. *Held*, that plaintiff could not recover.[5]

The fact that the witness' aged father sometimes addressed her by the name of another child; that on three occasions he lost his way in the city; that he sometimes cried, seemed low-spirited, and sat all day without talking except some one spoke

[1] Peabody *v.* Kendall, 145 Ill., 519; 32 N. E., 674 (1893).

[2] Duncan *v.* Mason (Ky.), 20 S. W., 252 (1893).

[3] See case, or Am. Dig., p. 1767 (for 1893), sec. 163. Horsley *v.* Asher's Heirs, 94 Ky., 314; 22 S. W., 434 (1893).

[4] See case, or Am. Dig., p. 1770, sec. 167. Vanosdel *v.* Hyce (La.), 46 La. Ann., 387; 15 So., 19 (1894).

[5] Lynch *v.* Doran, 95 Mich., 395; 54 N. W., 882 (1893).

to him, when he answered intelligently, is not sufficient evidence of mental unsoundness to support witness' opinion that her father was incompetent to execute a deed.[1]

The burden of proof that a mortgagor was of unsound mind when he executed the mortgage is on the person disputing its validity. To set aside a mortgage because of the maker's intoxication, it must appear that undue advantage was taken of his condition or that such intoxication was caused by the mortgagee, or that he knew of it at the time of the execution of the mortgage.[2]

On an issue as to plaintiff's sanity at the time of executing a deed, it appeared that for some weeks before and after the deed plaintiff had imagined spirits around her; that she had done some great wrong, etc. Her physician stated that the disease was of a nervous character, affecting her mental condition.

Several weeks after executing the deed plaintiff went into an insane asylum. The asylum physician testified that she was not in a condition to transact business. Other witnesses testified to her mental unsoundness previously and at the date of the deed. Plaintiff had placed the property with real estate agents a year before for $3,500. The agents, however, had been unable to sell and the price had been reduced to $3,000 and then to $2,500, the price for which it finally sold. Plaintiff talked of the sale rationally, and the other parties all testified that they saw nothing during the negotiations to indicate that she was of unsound mind. After remaining a few weeks in the asylum plaintiff became cured. *Held*, that her condition was not such as to invalidate the deed.[3]

Action to set aside deed. Evidence showed grantor to have been old, feeble, paralyzed, deceived, and practically coerced into making transfer. *Held*, deed should be set aside.[4]

Weakness of mind in a grantor will not in the absence of fraud avoid his deed.[5]

Suit to cancel a deed of land, paid for by plaintiff, but made to one of defendants, on the ground of plaintiff's intoxication at

[1] Youn *v.* Lamont, 56 Minn., 216; 57 N. W., 478 (1894).
[2] Cutler *v.* Zollinger, 117 Mo., 92; 22 S. W., 895 (1893).
[3] Kroenung *v.* Goehri, 112 Mo., 641, 20 S. W., 661.
[4] Dewy *v.* Allgire, 37 Neb., 6; 55 N. W., 276 (1893).
[5] Rottenburg *v.* Fowl (N. J. Ch.), 26 Atl., 338 (1893).

the time, etc., conflicting evidence as to *intoxication*, on evidence, *held*, that plaintiff had failed to sustain the allegations of the complaint.[1]

Where a deed was delivered several days after its execution and the grantor was found to be mentally incompetent on the day of the execution, it is a question of fact whether he was in the same mental condition at the time of the delivery of the deed.[2]

In an action attacking a deed of gift for want of mental capacity in the grantor, the court properly instructed the jury that it was only necessary that the grantor should have had a disposing mind at the time of its execution—that is, mental capacity to comprehend the nature and quality of his act, the nature and extent of his property, and of the claims of the grantee on his bounty; and that the question was not whether the grantor was sane or insane at the time of the execution of the deed.[3]

Evidence that seven months after the execution of a mortgage the mortgagor was adjudged insane, and that at the time of executing the mortgage he was in the habit of becoming intoxicated and had acted indiscreetly and improperly, is not sufficient to sustain the defence of mental incapacity where his signature to the mortgage is firm and steady and the notary who took the acknowledgment testifies that at the time of the transfer the mortgagor was sober and apparently intelligent.[4]

Meagre and inconclusive testimony as to sayings and doings of an alleged insane person, which might be attributed to intoxication, there being evidence of his excessive use of alcoholic stimulants, will not justify the submission to a jury of the questions of the mental capacity of such person to make and deliver promissory notes.[5]

In an action against an administrator on a note given by deceased, where mental incapacity was set up, the court charged that the burden was on plaintiff to prove the execution of the note, which done, she had made a *prima facie* case; that if the jury

[1] Baxter *v.* Baxter (N. Y.), 76 Hun, 98; 27 N. Y. S., 834 (1894).
[2] Jones *v.* Jones (N. Y.), 63 Hun, 630; 17 N. Y. S., 905 (1892).
[3] O'Neill *v.* Nolan (N. Y.), 66 Hun, 631; 21 N. Y. S., 222.
[4] White *v.* Davis (N. Y.), 62 Hun, 622; 17 N. Y. S., 548 (1892).
[5] Ducker *v.* Whitson, 112 N. C., 44; 16 S. E., 854 (1893).

instruct the jury that if the plaintiff proves that she was insane at a time prior to the assignment, and that such insanity was not temporary, they must find for the plaintiff, unless the defendant proves by a preponderance of evidence that the assignment was made during a lucid interval. In such a suit the burden of proof is not on defendant to show that the trade was made during a lucid interval.

Delusions or hallucinations do not necessarily incapacitate.

Partial insanity or an hallucination will not avoid a contract unless it exists with reference to the subject of it, although it may be considered in determining whether the party has been imposed upon.[1]

Insanity as Affecting the Contract of Marriage.—In the "American and English Cyclopædia of Law," Vol. XI., p. 142, the rule is well stated that "a person who is so insane as to be incapable of entering into a valid contract concerning property cannot enter into a valid contract of marriage. Mere weakness of understanding will not invalidate a marriage, nor will insanity which does not affect the subject-matter of the contract. The authorities are in conflict as to whether the marriage of an insane person is void *ab initio*, so that it may be impeached collaterally." In New York the marriage is valid until directly impeached (Stuckey *v.* Mathes, 24 Hun, 461). "A violation of the marriage contract by an insane husband or wife does not furnish ground for a dissolution of the marriage. Thus extreme cruelty, if caused by insanity, is not a cause for divorce, and the same rule applies to acts of sexual intercourse between an insane husband or wife and a stranger. Insane delusions on the part of a wife who has committed adultery are no defence to a suit for divorce, where, when committing adultery, she was capable of appreciating the nature of the act and its probable consequences."

The Supreme Court of Vermont, in Nichols *v.* Nichols,[2] held that a decree of divorce on the ground of adultery cannot be granted against an insane person; and see also Wray *v.* Wray,[3] Broadstreet *v.* Broadstreet.[4]

[1] Bishop on Contracts, sec. 974; Hughes *v.* Jones, 116 N. Y., 67. Note 11, G. P.

[2] 31 Vt., 328.

[3] 19 Ala., 522.

[4] 7 Mass., 474.

weight in considering the grantor's capacity. Though the grantor in a deed be extremely old, his understanding, memory, and mind enfeebled by age, and his actions occasionally strange and eccentric, and though he be unable to transact many affairs of life, yet if age has not rendered him imbecile so that he does not know the nature and effect of the deed, the deed is not invalid. Old age is not of itself evidence of incapacity to make a deed. The presumption is that the grantor in a deed was sane and competent to execute it at the time of its execution.[1]

In an action to cancel a note and mortgage on the ground of mental incapacity of the mortgagor, there was evidence that six years prior to executing such instruments the mortgagor had a stroke of paralysis, and an attack every year thereafter; that he gradually failed, and four years afterward was very much affected, forgot everything and acted like a child; that three months before signing the note and mortgage he had his severest attack and became helpless in body and mind, so that he knew nothing; that he could not talk and had to be cared for as a child in every way; that he imagined himself two men and wanted to bury one, ordered a grave dug and his son sent for to attend the funeral; and that he did not know his own name or that of his sons. *Held*, that the maker was incompetent to execute the note and mortgage. (See Brothers *v.* Bank of Kaukauna, *supra*.)

Lucid Intervals.—A contract made during a lucid interval is valid. By a lucid interval "is not meant a perfect restoration to reason, but a restoration so far as to be able beyond doubt to comprehend and to do the act with such perception, memory, and judgment as to make it a legal act."[2]

The court charged, if one was at times insane but had lucid intervals, during such an interval he could contract. Held, not error for failure to qualify with the presumption that insanity is continuous and that even in a lucid interval a person may not have enough mind to contract.[3]

In Wright *v.* Wright[4] it was held that in a suit by an insane person to recover the proceeds of a note assigned by her at a time when she was alleged to be insane, it is proper to refuse to

[1] Brothers *v.* Bank of Kaukauna, 84 Wis., 381; 54 N. W., 786.

[2] Wharton and Stillé, "Med. Jur.," sec. 2.

[3] Norman *v.* Georgia Lock Co., 18 S. E., 27.

[4] 139 Mass, 177; 29 N. E., 380 (1892).

Something more than this is needed, and the burden of proof is on him who alleges it.[1]

DEEDS.

A deed executed by a person of unsound mind is absolutely void at law, and will not stand in equity if it is shown that it was obtained without consideration, even in favor of the mortgagee of the grantee who took the mortgage in good faith without notice of the invalid deed.[2]

Competency.—Though a deed executed by an insane person be not merely voidable, but absolutely void, it must appear that the person executing it was at the time so deprived of his mental faculty as to be held absolutely and completely unable to understand or comprehend the nature of the transaction.[3]

INTOXICATION AS A DEFENCE TO CONTRACTS.—An habitual drunkard is not incompetent to execute a deed. There must be proof that at the time of execution his understanding was clouded or reason dethroned by actual intoxication, or of general unsoundness of mind, insanity, or of undue influence, or fraud on the part of the grantee.[4]

In the "Am. and Eng. Encyclopædia of Law," Vol. XI., p. 773, it is said that "an express contract entered into when the obligor is in a state of intoxication so as to deprive him of the exercise of his understanding is voidable, and the party may for that cause avoid it, although the intoxication was voluntary and not procured through the circumvention of the other party. According to this rule, the maker of a promissory note as between himself and the payee may avoid it if he can show total intoxication at the time of its execution. The defence may also be set up against those taking the note with a knowledge of the circumstances under which it was made, but on the grounds of public policy and the necessities of commerce, the defence of drunkenness of the maker cannot be set up against the innocent

[1] Shelford on Lunatics 275; 1 Greenleaf on Evidence, sec. 42; People *ex rel.* Norton *v.* N. Y. Hospital, 3 Abb. (N. C.), 229.

[2] A deed made by one who is *non compos mentis* is absolutely void, and ejectment will lie against the grantee. Van Deuser *v.* Sweet, 51 N. Y., 378; Riggs *v.* Society, 84 id., 330; s. c., 2d appeal, 95 N. Y., 503.

[3] See cases cited in previous note, and Johnson *v.* Stone, 35 Hun, 380; Brown *v.* Miles, 61 Hun, 453; Valentine *v.* Lunt, 115 N. Y., 496; Carter *v.* Beckwith, 128 N. Y., 312.

[4] Van Wyck *v.* Brasher, 81 N. Y., 260.

holder of a negotiable note. If the party made himself drunk for the purpose of entering into agreements, and then avoiding them, fraudulent intent antedating his drunkenness would render it incompetent for him to avail of the defence."[1]

Partnership.—In England the insanity of a partner will not work a dissolution of the partnership. It is a ground for dissolution only, and if the continuing partner does not avail himself of it, it will be presumed that he is willing to wait to see whether the incapacity of his partner may not prove merely temporary. In some of the United States it has been decided that the insanity of the partner works a dissolution of the partnership. Insanity does not dissolve a partnership. The prevailing opinion is that it only gives a good and sufficient cause for a court of equity to decree a dissolution. If it does dissolve the partnership, it cannot give the right to the partner not affected with it to dissolve it arbitrarily or at will. Nor will it dispense with the necessity of a partner joining in the execution of an instrument which must be executed by all the partners.

In the case of Friedberger *v.* Jaberg, N. Y. Sup. Ct., First District, S. Term, December, 1887; Patterson, Judge, said: "It is claimed by the defendant that under the peculiar circumstances of this case, the actual participation or assent of Stadelman, one of the partners, was not necessary; that he was insane at the time the assignment was made, and could neither join in its execution nor sanction it. Assuming that the evidence of Dr. Wildman and Dr. Nichols, medical experts, and that of the witnesses who were called to testify to peculiar conduct of the non-assenting partner at or about the time the assignment was made, established the fact that he was *non compos mentis* at that time, did that of itself confer the power upon, and authorize one member of the firm alone to convey the partnership property to a trustee? I am not aware of any case in which this precise question has been presented; but as one of first impression, it seems to me that insanity not declared by inquisition can no more be urged as a reason for dispensing with the assent of the partner than can his incapacity to concur, arising from any other cause, such as absence or serious illness. Insanity does not dissolve partnership. The prevailing opinion is that it only gives a good and sufficient cause for the court of equity to decree a dis-

[1] And see cases there cited.

solution. If it does not dissolve the partnership, it cannot give the right to the partner not affected with it to dissolve it arbitrarily at will. But the execution of a general assignment operates practically a dissolution of a firm. But whatever the courts might decide in a case of insanity on inquest and office found, I am not disposed in this case to hold that the insanity authorized one partner to execute the assignment. The disability here seems to have been an acute mania of short duration, for the sufferer was discharged from the asylum within four weeks from the first day of his confinement, and shortly after his release he began to set aside his partner's act. It can scarcely be held under this state of affairs that during this period of incapacity all the power and authority of both parties inhered in Jaberg, and that, by reason of the temporary disability, Jaberg became vested by law with the authority to create a trust which placed beyond reach all the assets of the concern and virtually extinguish all the interest of the disabled partner in the business."[1]

Delusions do not incapacitate where the subject-matter of the deed is not affected. Suspicions founded on facts which grantor believed do not constitute insane delusions. In Jones *v.* Hughes,[2] Daniels, Judge, said: "This action has been prosecuted to set aside and annul a deed executed by Richard Hughes, under the name of David Jones, to the defendant, Joseph Jones, because of mental incapacity of the grantor. The deed was executed on the 7th of October, 1870, and recorded on the second day of the succeeding month. It in terms conveyed the property called Buckhorn Island, situated near the foot of Grand Island in the Niagara River. It has been owned and occupied by the grantor from the year 1853. The grantee in the deed is the son of the grantor by a second marriage alleged to have been, as it probably was, unlawfully contracted. The plaintiff is a son by a preceding marriage, and entitled to inherit the property in case the deed should be set aside. The grantee had nothing whatsoever to do with the transaction and in no measure influenced the conduct of the grantor in making it. The grantor was desirous of having the grantee and his wife occupy the

[1] And see Smith *v.* Ottman, 15 So. (La.), 310.

[2] Abbott, N. C., p. 141, vol. xv. (Supreme Court, 8th district, Special Term, 1883).

property and be taken care of and supported by them during his natural life. His additional object was to secure a like support for his second wife.

"Before the deed was made the grantor consulted an acquaintance, with whom he had dealt many years, concerning the execution of the deed, and went with him to a reputable attorney to have the business done. These and other witnesses agree that in what he said and did on these occcasions he appeared to act rationally and intelligently, and the evidence of all these persons tends very directly to establish the fact that he fully understood the business which was transacted and the object designed to be accomplished by it, as well as the property to be conveyed; and that it was his deliberate purpose to make the disposition of it which he in form made by the execution of this deed. In the preceding month of March he made a twelve years' lease of the same property upon the same consideration to the plaintiff, who went into possession but surrendered it afterward because of disagreement between himself and his father. Testimony was given in behalf of the plaintiff, as well as by himself as a witness in the case, showing that his father, who was a man of very advanced age, was irritable in his disposition, boisterous in his speech, suspicious of those who dealt with him or were employed by him in the management of his property, and indulged in the relation of marvellous and exaggerated stories. This appears to have been his character and his habits for many years preceding the time when the deed was made, and while no one suspected his sanity or his ability properly to manage his own affairs, the suspicions entertained by him appeared to have arisen from observations he had made, leading him to believe that the persons employed by him, or managing his property, dealt dishonestly with him; and the relations he repeated of marvellous occurrences, in which he had been a party, referred to transactions which had taken place in his early life. The statements he made and the suspicions he entertained appeared to have been exaggerated and in many cases extremely absurd in their character; but as long as they were founded upon the facts from which he was satisfied to deduce them, they were not indications of insanity or unsoundness of mind, although extended very much beyond what was justified by the circumstances. They were, therefore, distinguishable

from mere delusions, and do not establish that unsoundness of mind which would legally disable him from making a binding disposition of his property. While he indulged in these statements and suspicions he still continued to manage and conduct his affairs, and the persons having dealings with him apparently found no reason for suspecting his inability to do that business with accuracy and judgment. Toward the latter portions of his life, and before or about the time when the deed was made, he was impressed with the delusion that British ships lay in the vicinity of the island, manned by early acquaintances, for the purpose of protecting it; but *this delusion was in no form or manner connected with the execution and delivery of this deed.* His mind still in other respects and on other subjects, although impaired by age, in its strength was active and intelligent. Between the delusion and the transaction of his business there seems to have been no connection whatever. Upon other occasions he became violent and vindictive in his conduct, but there was always a ground of offence calculated to produce resentment as well as irritation on his part. His conduct, though extreme, was not unnatural for a person of his disposition, education, and temperament. He believed in witchcraft and feats which may be accomplished by the power of persons affecting it, but this was rather a matter of superstition than evidence of mental incapacity or delusion. While he was boisterous, vindictive, revengeful, easily provoked and aroused, he still appears to have understood the business transactions to which he was a party, and to manage them with intelligence and judgment. Upon all the evidence elicited from the witnesses in the case upon these subjects, it cannot be concluded that he was, by reason of mental infirmity, incapable of making and executing this deed. On the contrary, this evidence sustains the conclusion that it resulted from intelligent consideration and reflection upon his part, and that it was understandingly made to carry into effect a fixed design which he himself alone had previously formed. Evidence was given showing that proceedings were taken under the statute in September, 1871, on the application of the grantee in this deed to procure an adjudication determining his father, the grantor, to be a lunatic or person of unsound mind. Previous to that time he had been imprisoned in the county jail at the suit of the

plaintiff, and evidence has been given tending to indicate that such an imprisonment would aggravate the tendency of his health in the direction of a state of insanity. This theory is entirely natural, for the imprisonment of an old man at the instance of his son would ordinarily be attended by some effect on his character and mental condition. The fact that his conduct and speech impressed the jurors as well as the jailer with the conviction that he was a person of unsound mind at the time can, for this reason, have no very decided influence upon the inquiry, whether that was or not his condition at the time of the execution of the deed. To determine that, the important evidence was that which related to the contemporaneous occurrences and the previous conditions in which this man appeared to have been. The application upon which the proceedings were instituted and carried on was based on the petition of Joseph H. Jones, the grantee of the deed. In this petition it was alleged, 'Davis Jones, the grantor, eighty-five years of age, had been a lunatic for the space of five years preceding that time and so far deprived of his reason as to be wholly unfit and unable to govern himself or to manage his own affairs'; and upon the hearing under the authority of the writ which was issued, the jury in form found that to be his condition. But neither these allegations nor the conclusions of the jury presented the inquiry—whether as a matter of fact he was competent to execute this deed at the time when it was made. That was not a subject presented for trial by the petition, or the investigation made by the jury; it was not a matter alleged in the petition or in any manner drawn in question. No evidence could properly have been given upon it, and it was not the province of the jury to make a determination which would or would not sustain this particular transaction. The purpose of the proceeding was to determine whether from his age and imbecility he required a guardianship of a more competent person for the protection of himself and his affairs. The legal prosecution of such an inquiry did not include the question now presented in this case—whether or not the grantor of this deed was competent to execute it. Therefore the finding of that jury is not in any way prejudicial to the present question.[1] It has been held accordingly that an inquisition of this nature,

[1] Am. Seamen's Soc. *v.* Hopper, 33 N. Y., 619.

finding the party to have been of unsound mind for a preceding period of time, is not conclusive as to his incapacity to make a will during that time,[1] and a similar view of such a proceeding was taken in Banker *v.* Banker.[2] Judgment will, therefore, be ordered in favor of the defendant." This decision was affirmed by the N. Y. Court of Appeals, Hughes *v.* Jones.[3]

Burden of Proof.—He who asserts the lack of ability on the part of a grantor to execute a deed, the due execution of which is *prima facie* shown, must prove that lack of ability by preponderance of evidence. Where interest and opportunity are shown, and testimony adduced to show disposition to use undue influence, the burden is cast upon the person charged with exercising it to show freedom therefrom in the dispositions of property made in will or deed. The burden of proof of undue influence is on the party alleging it.[4]

EVIDENCE IN ACTIONS TO SET ASIDE DEEDS OR CONTRACTS on the ground of mental incapacity.

In White *v.* Davis[5] it was held that witnesses, not experts, can only testify to particular facts tending to show the mental condition of a person whose sanity is in question and their opinions as to whether the particular words or acts were rational; they should not be allowed to give their general opinion.

In McKillop *v.* Duluth St. Ry. Co. (Minn.)[6] the Minnesota Supreme Court held that one who has witnessed a person's acts, appearance, and speech may express an opinion as to whether he was intoxicated.[7]

In Paine *v.* Aldrich[8] it was held that a lay witness may state conversations had by him with the grantor, and the acts of the grantor in the presence of the witness, and then say whether in his judgment such acts and conversation were "those of a rational or irrational man."

On an issue as to the mental capacity of a grantor a lay witness cannot testify whether in his opinion, based on conversations with the grantor, he was rational or irrational. And see also Carpenter *v.* Bailey.[9]

[1] Campbell *v.* Consalus, 25 N. Y., 613.
[2] 63 N. Y., 409.
[3] 116 N. Y., 67; see also Lewis *v.* Arbuckle, 52 N. W., 237.
[4] Jones *v.* Jones, 137 N. Y., 610, citing Jackson *v.* King, 4 Cow., 207.
[5] 17 N. Y. Supp., 548; 62 Hun, 622 (1892).
[6] 53 Minn., 532; 55 N. W., 739 (1893).
[7] And see Scalf *v.* Collin, 80 Tex., 514.
[8] 133 N. Y., 544; 30 N. E., 725 (1892).
[9] 94 Cal., 406.

TORTS OF INSANE PERSONS.

An insane person is liable in damages for any torts that he may commit. The damages are limited to an amount sufficient to compensate the injured party for the actual injury suffered, and punitive damages cannot be recovered in such cases.[1] Although a lunatic is not punished criminally, he is liable in a civil action for any tort he may commit.[2]

In Jewell *v.* Colby (N. H.)[3] it was held that an insane person is liable for causing the death of another by an act which would be felonious except for his insanity, and that in an action against an insane person for his torts the damages are limited to the actual loss sustained.

Meyer *v.* St. Louis I. M. & S. Ry. Co. (C. C. B.).[4] This was an action against the railroad company for the killing of plaintiff's intestate by an insane passenger. There was proof that the insane passenger was recognized by the officials of the car as having been transported over the line nineteen days before, at which time he was in chains and violent, and in charge of police officials. He was unattended at the time of the killing and had made various remarks, etc., indicative of his insanity. The company was held bound to exercise a high degree of care.

In Williams *v.* Hays[5] the court said that an insane person is liable for his torts the same as a sane person, except for those torts in which malice, and therefore intention, is a necessary ingredient. In respect to this liability there is no distinction between torts of non-feasance and mal-feasance, and so an insane person is liable for injuries caused by his tortious negligence, and so far as this liability is concerned, is held to the same degree of care and diligence as a person of sound mind.

Presumption—as to Skill of Attendants.—The principle that a presumption of negligence arises when injury to one person results to him from the conduct of another who is under engagement to render skilled services to him, is subject to qualification in the case of the custodians of the insane; and inasmuch as the insane are not responsible to co-operate with their medical attendants, as the sane are, the law imposes no un-

[1] Krom *v.* Schoonmaker, 3 Barb., 647.
[2] McIntire *v.* Sholty, 121 Ill., 660.
[3] 24 Atl., 902 (1893).
[4] 54 Fed. Rep., 116.
[5] 143 N. Y., 442 (1894).

reasonable obligation, and does not presume the attendant to have been guilty of negligence in the absence of adequate evidence.[1]

INSANITY VACATES AN OFFICE.

It has been a mooted question whether the insanity of the incumbent of a public office renders such office vacant so that his successor could be appointed. This question has recently been fully considered by the Supreme Court of the State of Kentucky, under a statute providing that the term "vacancy in office" means such as exists "when there is an unexpired term without a lawful incumbent." The court held that an adjudication that one holding the office of assessor was a lunatic and that he should be confined in an asylum created a vacancy in his office.[2]

INSANE PERSONS AS WITNESSES.

Insane persons during a lucid interval are competent witnesses. The question of their competency is for the court to determine when the witness is produced to be sworn. See People *ex rel.* Norton *v.* N. Y. Hospital *supra*, and authorities cited in opinion and in note, in which the proper practice in such cases is fully described and explained.

WILLS.

Testamentary Capacity—General Principle.—"In order to make a valid will, a testator must have sufficient capacity to comprehend the nature of the act he is performing; he must understand the extent of the property of which he is disposing; he must comprehend the relation which he holds to those who have claims upon him and be capable of making a rational selection among them."[3]

Idiots.—"An idiot, it is agreed on all sides, has no testamentary capacity; though as to what constitutes idiocy there is as much doubt in testamentary as in contractual issues." Wharton and Stillé, Vol. I., p. 20.

[1] People *ex rel.* Norton *v.* N. Y. Hospital, 3 Abb. N. C., 229.
[2] Long *v.* Bowen, 94 Ky., 540; 23 S. W. Rep., 343.
[3] "The Am. and Eng. Encycl. of Law," vol. xi., p. 151.

Statutory Rule in New York.—All persons, except idiots, persons of unsound mind, married women and infants, may devise their real estate by a last will and testament.[1]

Every male person of the age of eighteen years or upward, and every female not being a married woman of the age of sixteen and upward, of sound mind and memory, and no other, may give and bequeath his or her personal estate by will, in writing.[2] Similar statutes have been adopted in other States.

Degree of Intellect.—Former Rule.—In the State of New York a person of weak mind, "if not an idiot or a lunatic or of unsound mind,"[3] is competent to make a will. Mere imbecility does not incapacitate. The exception in the statute designates persons totally wanting in reason and understanding. An imbecile, of however low degree of mental capacity, has the power of legal assent or will; and the question in each such case is, whether that power was duly exercised.[4]

"In law, the only standard as to mental capacity, in all who are not idiots or lunatics, is found in the fact whether the testator was '*compos mentis*' or '*non compos mentis*' as these terms are used in their fixed legal meaning. Such being the rule, the question in every case of probate is, Had the testator, as *compos mentis*, capacity to make a will? not, Had he capacity to make the will produced? If *compos mentis* he can make any will, however complicated; if *non compos mentis* he can make no will—not the simplest."[5]

Present Rule.—1. IN THE STATE OF NEW YORK.—In general the principle is that a testator must be of sound and disposing mind and memory so as to be capable of making a testamentary disposition of his property with sense and judgment, in reference to the situation and amount of such property, and to

[1] 2 R. S., p. 57, sec. 1.
[2] 2 R. S., p. 60, sec. 21.
[3] 2 R. S., p. 57, sec. 1.
[4] Ct. of Err., 1841, Stewart *v.* Lispenard, 26 Wend., 255 (see dissenting opinion of Clerke, J., in Thompson *v.* Thompson, 21 Barb., 107). Supr. Ct., 1846, Blanchard *v.* Nestle, 3 Den., 37, note; 1852, Person *v.* Warren, 14 Barb., 488. S. P. Gen. T. 1853, Newhouse *v.* Godwin, 17 id., 236. Osterhout *v.* Shoemaker, 3 Hill, 513; and see Petrie *v.* Shoemaker, 24 Wend., 85; Burger *v.* Hill, 1 Bradf., 360. Compare Clark *v.* Sawyer, 2 N. Y. (2 Comst.), 498.
[5] Ct. of App., 1862, Delafield *v.* Parish, 25 N. Y., 997, affirming 5 N. Y. Surr. (1 Redf.), 130; 42 Barb., 24; and see Ean *v.* Snyder, 46 Barb., 230. Cayuga Surr. Ct., 1888, Matter of Soule, 22 Abb. N. C., 236; s. c. 19 State Rep., 532; 3 N. Y. Supp., 259. N. Y. Sup. Ct., 1892, White *v.* Ross, 48 State Rep., 599; s. c., 20 N. Y. Supp., 521, citing Delafield *v.* Parish, *supra*.

the relative claims of the different persons who are or might be the objects of his bounty. It is essential that the testator should have sufficient capacity to comprehend perfectly the condition of his property, his relations to the persons who were or might have been the objects of his bounty, and the scopes and bearings of the provisions of his will, and sufficient active memory to collect in his mind, without prompting, the particulars or elements of the business to be transacted, and to hold them in his mind a sufficient length of time to perceive, at least, their obvious relation to each other, and to be able to form some rational judgment with relation to them.[1]

If he has this degree of capacity, he is, within the meaning of the statute of wills, a person of sound mind and memory and is competent.[2]

The true test of testamentary capacity is the competency of the testator to understand and comprehend the act, in relation to his property and to the objects of his bounty.[3]

2. IN ENGLAND.—Sir James Hannen said, "The testator must have a memory to recall the several persons who may be fitting objects of his bounty, and understanding to comprehend their relationship to himself and their claim upon him. . . . Whatever degree of mental soundness is required for . . . responsibility for crime, capacity to marry, capacity to contract, capacity to give evidence as a witness—the highest degree of all, if degrees there be, is required in order to constitute capacity to make a testamentary disposition . . . because it involves a larger and wider survey of facts and things than any one of those matters."[4]

And in another case in charging the jury he explained this as follows:

"I never said that it requires a greater degree of soundness of mind to make a will than to do any other act . . . What I have said . . . is, that if you are at liberty to draw distinc-

[1] Delafield *v.* Parish, *supra*, as explained in 5 N. Y. Surr. (1 Redf.), 204, note.

[2] N. Y. Surr. Ct., 1879, La Bau *v.* Vanderbilt, 3 Redf., 384, 436, citing 25 N. Y., 9, 35 id., 70; id., 559; 60 Barb., 69; 75 Ill., 260. S. P. Supr. Ct., 1880, Snyder *v.* Sherman, 23 Hun, 139, citing also 72 Ill., 269.

[3] Ct. of App., 1881, Swenarton *v.* Hancock, 9 Abb. N. C., 326; Abstr. s. c., 84 N. Y., 653, reversing 22 Hun, 38. *In re* Blair's Will, 16 Daly (N. Y. Com. Pl.), 540; *in re* Wheeler's Will, 56 N. Y. State Rep., 709; *in re* Brommer's Will, 60 id., 234.

[4] Boughton *v.* Knight, L. R. 3 P. and D., 64, 72.

tions between various degrees of soundness of mind, then whatever is the highest degree of soundness is required to make a will. That is very different. . . . From the character of the act, it requires the consideration of a larger variety of circumstances than is required in other acts, for it involves the reflection upon the claims of the several persons, who, by nature or through other circumstances, may be supposed to have claims on the testator's bounty, and the power of considering these several claims and of determining in what proportions the property shall be divided amongst the claimants." [1]

3. In the United States Outside of New York.— The testator must undoubtedly retain sufficient active memory to collect in his mind, without prompting, particulars or elements of the business to be transacted, and to hold them in his mind a sufficient length of time to perceive at least their obvious relations to each other, and be able to form some rational judgment in relation to them. The elements of such a judgment should be the number of his children, their deserts, with reference to conduct and capacity, as well as need, and what he had done before for them, relatively to each other, and the amount and condition of his property, with some other things, perhaps.[2]

The testator ought to be capable of making his will with an understanding of the business in which he is engaged; a recollection of the property he means to dispose of, of the persons who are the objects of his bounty, and the manner in which it is to be distributed between them. It is not necessary that the testator should view his will with the eye of a lawyer and comprehend its provisions in the legal form. It is sufficient if he has such mind and memory as will enable him to understand the elements of which it is composed—the disposition of his property in the simplest form.[3]

The test of testamentary capacity is whether the testator could comprehend perfectly the condition of his property, his relations to the objects of his bounty, and the scope and bearing of his will, and whether he had sufficient active memory to collect in his mind, without prompting, the particulars or elements

[1] Sir James Hannen in Burdett *v.* Thompson, L. R. 3 P. and D., 72, note. And see Banks *v.* Goodfellow, L. R. 5 Q. B., 549.

[2] Converse *v.* Converse, 21 Vt., 168.

[3] Harrison *v.* Rowan, 3 Wash., C. C., 580.

of the business to be transacted, and hold them a sufficien length of time to perceive at least their obvious relations t each other and form a rational judgment concerning them.[1]

A person capable of comprehending his property, the natura objects of his bounty, and the disposition he has determined t make of his property, may make a valid will, although he i of very moderate capacity.[2]

A testator able to comprehend his property, the natur objects of his bounty, the meaning of the business in which h is engaged, and the relation of each of these factors to th other, and the disposition made by his will, possesses testamen tary capacity although he is infirm of body and there is son abatement of his intellectual vigor.[3]

Thus the decisions in the various States maintain substa tially what has long been established as the test of capacity n England and New York, varying, it may be, in detail, but no in principle.

NATURE AND CHARACTER OF THE WILL IRRELEVANT—THE CHARACTER OF THE WILL DOES NOT AFFECT ITS VALIDITY EVEN IF UNREASONABLE OR UNJUST.—Where a testator has mind and memory to understand his property and his relations to other persons, his will must stand for the reason of the act, and it is not sufficient to impeach his competency that the will is not such in all respects as might have been expected.[4]

The fact that the will is unreasonable or unjust on its face, when taken in connection with the amount of property and situation of relatives, is not alone sufficient to avoid the will.[5]

[1] 1892, *in re* Pitt's Estate (Wis.), 55 N. W., 149. Martin *v.* Thayer, 37 W. Va., 38, 16 S. E., 489. Couch *v.* Gentry, 113 Mo., 248; 20 S. W., 890. Bulger *v.* Ross, 98 Ala., 267; 12 So., 803. Whitney *v.* Twombly, 136 Mass., 145. Cline *v.* Lindsay, 110 Ind., 337.

[2] 1892, Howell *v.* Taylor (N. J. Prerog. Ct.), 50 N. J. Eq. (5 Dick.), 428; 26 Atl., 566. Bennett *v.* Bennett (N. J. Prerog. Ct.), 50 N. J. Eq. (5 Dick.), 439; 26 Atl., 573.

[3] Westcott *v.* Sheppard, 51 N. J. Eq. (6 Dick.), 315. To same effect, Green *v.* Green, 145 Ill., 264; 33 N. E., 941. Taylor *v.* Pegram, 151 Ill., 106. Francis *v.* Wilkinson, 147 Ill., 370. Prentiss *v.* Bates, 88 Mich., 567. O'Connor *v.* Madison, 98 Mich., 183. *In re* Douglass Est., 162 Pa., 567. Maddox *v.* Maddox, 114 Mo., 35; 21 S. W., 499. Norton *v.* Paxton 110 Mo., 456. *In re* Hoover, 19 D. C. 495. Potter *v.* Jones, 20 Or., 23 Wallis *v.* Luhring, 134 Ind., 447; N. E., 231. Carpenter *v.* Bailey, Cal., 406. Trezevant *v.* Rains, Tex., 329; 19 S. W., 567.

[4] N. Y. Supr. Ct., 1859, Watso Donnelly, 28 Barb., 653.

[5] Chan., 1828, Clark *v.* Fish Paige, 171. N. Y. Supr. Ct., Gamble *v.* Gamble, 39 Barb., N. Y. Ct. of App., 1868, Jack Jackson, 39 N. Y., 153, rever Tuck., 259.

A codicil made by an old man disinheriting a child, is valid when it was the voluntary act of a competent mind. The fact of disinheritance is not of itself sufficient to prove the deceased incompetent.[1]

As we have stated, although the injustice or unreasonableness of a will may not establish its invalidity, it may, as the decisions in the above cases show, give grounds for suggesting unsoundness of mind in the testator. If this can be proven, the general principle of capacity then applies.

Unreasonable or Unnatural Provisions in a Will may Establish Evidence of Mental Defect.—Where a will is in fact contrary to the dictates of the natural affections and is in all circumstances unnatural in its dispositions, its provisions are evidence of mental defect, obliquity, or perversity of mind which may require explanations.[2]

Unequal partition of property, or leaving the same to strangers on whom the testator has depended, does not necessarily show incapacity. The fact that the testatrix was a woman of advanced age, somewhat enfeebled in body and mind, and that she gave her property to strangers instead of collateral relatives from motives of gratitude or personal attachment, does not show want of testamentary capacity or undue influence, so long as her mental powers enabled her to understand and appreciate the amount and condition of her property and to comprehend the nature and consequences of her act in executing the will.[3]

Where testatrix executed two wills within ten days of her death, and when she was in feeble condition and very sick, and by the first she made her husband the sole beneficiary, but by the last he was given only some furniture and the residue of the estate was left to one upon whom she had been accustomed to rely in the management of her affairs, she having had trouble with her husband—held that she, being of testamentary

[1] Jefferson Surr. Ct., 1863, Clarke *v.* Davis, 5 N. Y. Surr. (1 Redf.), 249, citing 30 Barb., 134. Nor is mere singularity of the provisions. Ct. of App., 1881, Coffin *v.* Coffin, 23 N. Y., 9. Matter of Finn, 54 N. Y. State Rep., 301. McLaughlin Will, 2 Redf., 504.

[2] 1891, Matter of Budlong, 126 N. Y., 423; s. c., 38 State Rep., 436 Lamb *v.* Lamb, 105 Ind., 456; Caldwell *v.* Anderson, 104 Pa. St., 199.

[3] 1893, Matter of Snelling, 136 N. Y., 515; s. c., 49 State Rep., 695, citing Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 N. Y., 276; Clapp *v.* Fullerton, 34 id., 190; Hollis *v.* Drew Theological Seminary, 95 id., 166; Marx *v.* McGlynn, 88 id., 370.

capacity and free from undue influence, the second will should stand.[1]

DEGREE OF SOUNDNESS—PARTIAL LOSS OF MEMORY OR EXISTENCE OF NERVOUS DISEASE DOES NOT INCAPACITATE—HIGHEST DEGREE OF MENTAL SOUNDNESS NOT REQUIRED.—"The highest degree of mental soundness is not required in order to constitute capacity to make a testamentary disposition. A person's mind may be impaired by grief, disease, melancholy, or old age, yet if he has sufficient ability to weigh and consider intelligently the act of making the will, and its surrounding circumstances, the will will be valid."[2]

Defect of memory, unless it is total or appertains to things very essential, is not sufficient to create incompetency; nor is old age, however extreme.[3] Impairment of faculties by age or injury, to a considerable degree, does not necessarily affect testamentary capacity.[4]

In testimony given as to the eccentric mental condition of a school teacher, who was in the habit of making wills in favor of school-girls, it was shown that he was subject to changes in political opinion, was childish in his tastes, and of defective memory, but that he could make clever addresses, and successfully managed his large property. Held not sufficient to justify setting aside a will disinheriting his next of kin.[5]

Mental incapacity to make a will is not shown by the facts that testator was fidgety and excited, and suffered from paroxysms and that these were aggravated by despondency over the loss of moneys.[6] Feeble and weak-minded people are not necessarily precluded from making valid wills.[7]

Mere imbecility or weakness of mind of a testator does not incapacitate, if there be sufficient understanding to comprehend the condition of his property and his relations toward the per-

[1] Rensselaer Surr. Ct., 1893, Matter of Clark, 5 Misc., 68, citing Matter of Green, 67 Hun, 527; Matter of Williams, 46 State Rep., 775.

[2] "The Am. and Eng. Encycl. of Law," vol. xi., p. 153.

[3] N. Y. Surr. Ct., 1851, Bleecker *v.* Lynch, 1 Bradf., 458.

[4] Reynolds *v.* Root, 62 Barb., 250.

[5] N. Y. Supr. Ct., 1891, Matter of Merriam, 42 State Rep., 619; s.c., 16 N. Y. Supp., 738, citing Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 N. Y., 270; Delafield *v.* Parish, 25 id., 9.

[6] 1892-93, *in re* Speller's Estate (Pa. O. Ct.), 2 Pa. Dist. R., 513.

[7] Rensselaer Surr. Ct., 1891, Matter of Williams, 40 State Rep., 356; s. c., 2 Connolly, 579; 15 N. Y. Supp., 828; aff'd 46 State Rep., 791; s. c., 19 N. Y. Supp., 778; citing *re* Gray, 5 N. Y. Supp., 464; *re* Gross, 14 State Rep., 429.

sons who are or might be the objects of his bounty, and the scope and bearing of the provisions of his will.[1]

ACTUAL DISEASE OF THE BRAIN DOES NOT NECESSARILY INCAPACITATE.—A will giving all testator's real and personal property to his wife, who had been dutiful and faithful, to the exclusion of his only heirs-at-law, his sister and brother, the latter of whom had been in the habit of vilifying the wife, was sustained where the testator was competent to transact business up to a very short time before his death. The will was made eight months prior thereto, and the question of incompetency was not raised until after the autopsy on his body, which showed tumors on his brain, which it did not appear affected testator's mind.[2]

PARALYSIS WITH APHASIA DOES NOT NECESSARILY INCAPACITATE, AS SEEN IN THE FOLLOWING CASE.—The will of a paralytic will be sustained when, though unable to talk at the time of its execution, his mind was unimpaired, and the scrivener ascertained his wishes by asking him questions as to the provisions for his wife and children which could be answered by yes or no, and he signified his assent to each item of the will by an affirmative nod of the head as it was read to him and he was asked if it suited him.[3]

In a case where softening of testator's brain had gone on several years before the making of the will, but had not yet brought him to the state of idiocy, although his disease caused serious nervous disturbances and at intervals he suffered from nervous prostration, continuing two or three days, and in common conversation he would frequently lose the train of idea, but between the attacks his mind was reasonably clear—held that testator had sufficient capacity to make a will.[4]

Testator was confined to an insane asylum in 1886 as being afflicted with general paresis. In 1887 he was taken out, and in 1888 married the proponent. It was not objected that he was incompetent to marry, and the will was executed shortly after. In 1889 he was again confined to the asylum, where he

[1] 1876, Wade *v.* Holbrook, 2 Redf., 378.

[2] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1892, Matter of Frick, 47 State Rep., 10; s. c., 19 N. Y. Supp., 315, citing Cudney *v.* Cudney, 68 N. Y., 148; Brick *v.* Brick, 66 id., 149; Matter of Smith, 95 id., 516; Matter of Martin, 98 id., 193; Clapp *v.* Fullerton, 34 id., 190; Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 id., 269.

[3] 1892, Rothrock *v.* Rothrock, 22 Or., 551; 30 Pac., 453.

[4] 1887, *in re* Silverthorn, 68 Wis., 372; s. c., 32 N. W. Rep., 287.

died in 1890. During the time he was not confined to the asylum he transacted business. The testimony of experts was conflicting. Held that the testator was competent to make a will.[1]

Testator for some years before making his will had had syphilis and had become a physical wreck, losing his hair, teeth, eyesight partially, and the use of his lower limbs. To relieve his pain he used a large quantity of morphine, and while suffering was extremely profane. He was able, however, to conduct business transactions, dictated the will himself, and left his property to a sister who took care of him. Held that the evidence did not show want of testamentary capacity or undue influence.[2]

From the above cases it is seen that although a well-defined mental disease such as general paralysis is present, or the existence of cerebral hemorrhage is shown by paralysis and loss of speech, these conditions are insufficient to invalidate a will, provided it can be proved that the testator possessed a disposing mind, etc.

EXTREME WEAKNESS OR APPROACHING DEATH DOES NOT INCAPACITATE WHERE EVIDENCE SHOWS THAT TESTATOR WAS RATIONAL.—A testator is not to be regarded as incapable of executing his will, because at the time of its execution he was approaching his end, and was so physically weak that he was unable to make his mark without assistance, where there is evidence to show that he was entirely rational.[3]

Where testatrix could understand and dispose of ordinary business matters and remember the particulars of a transaction and give a rational judgment upon it, although she was forgetful about household affairs and failed to recognize acquaintances, it was held that she had sufficient testamentary capacity.[4]

In the following case the will was sustained notwithstanding

[1] Will of Kiedaisch, 12 N. Y. Supp., 255.

[2] 1889, Bush *v.* Lisle, 89 Ky., 393; s. c., 12 S. W. Rep., 762.

[3] Supm. Ct., Matter of Patterson, 26 Abb. N. C., 395; s. c., 36 State Rep., 813; 13 N. Y. Supp., 463.

[4] Rockland Surr. Ct., 1893, Matter of Mabie, 5 Misc., 179; s. c., 24 N. Y. Supp., 855, citing Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 N. Y., 269; Van Guysling *v.* Can Kuren, 35 id., 70; Cornwell *v.* Riker, 2 Dem., 354; Matter of Williams, 19 N. Y. Supp., 778; Matter of Snelling, 136 N. Y., 515; Matter of Stewart, 15 N. Y. Supp., 601; Matter of Fricke, 19 id., 315; *in re* Gray, 5 id., 464; *in re* Bartholick, id., 842; *in re* Darling, 6 id., 191; *in re* Bennett, id., 199; *in re* Berrien, 5 id., 37; 12 id., 385; Matter of Merriam, 16 id., 738.

an extreme degree of physical and mental weakness: For some months before executing the codicil testator began to drink, after having abstained for ten years. On several occasions he was a voluntary inmate of an inebriate asylum, but did not overcome the habit. For some time before making the codicil he was confined to his room by an illness resulting from the use of liquor. The attending physician was unable to say whether he was drunk or sober when he executed the codicil, but testified that he was so incoherent as to be unable to alter a will, and was troubled with delusions, thinking he saw figures and heard voices. The nurse, attorney, and others testified as to his capacity. Held that an issue to a jury as to the validity of the will was properly denied.[1]

In another case a verdict that testatrix was of unsound mind when she made a will disinheriting an only child who was in straitened circumstances, was disturbed when the evidence showed that after her husband's death she lived for the greater part of her life by herself, occasionally staying with friends; that at various times she named as heir different persons, strangers and relatives, including her son, that a few hours before her death, and while in a very exhausted condition, she made her will in favor of her nephew, whose father had persistently and for a long time pressed her to do so.[2]

EXTREME PHYSICAL AND MENTAL WEAKNESS INCAPACITATES, IF TESTATOR IS NOT RATIONAL—ILLUSTRATIVE CASES. —Testatrix was very sick and so weak that she was unable to make her mark without assistance. Her physician, who saw her shortly after she made the will, stated that she did not recognize him; that she spoke to no one unless aroused and showed no interest in anything around her. Other witnesses testified that she was in a dazed and stupefied condition, and that during the day her mind wandered. She died four days after the will was executed. Held that the deceased did not have testamentary competency.[3]

There was evidence that the testator was bedridden, subsisting mostly on morphine and whiskey. That the day before making the will disinheriting a daughter if she should marry

[1] Appeal of Harmony Lodge, etc., 127 Pa. St., 269; 18 Atlantic Rep., 10.

[2] 1893, Garley *v.* Park (Ind. Sup.), 35 N. E., 279.

[3] 1889, *in re* Coop's Will, 6 N. Y. Supp., 664.

a certain person, as well as on the day of making the will, he had taken sufficient morphine to make him drowsy. There was also evidence in support of testator's capacity. Held that a finding against the will would not be disturbed.[1]

A decision by the surrogate that the testator was *non compos mentis*, based on evidence that he was eighty-two years old, ill of incurable disease of which his physician informed him he could never recover, was helpless, of feeble mind, and unable to carry on conversation at the time he executed the will—sustained.[2]

A decree admitting to probate a will made by a paralytic who was unable to write or speak, where a draughtsman who attempted to draw a previous will had failed to understand testator's wishes—reversed and a trial by jury ordered.[3]

In a case where testatrix was paralyzed, though she afterward regained the use of some of her limbs, but was bedridden and speechless, except that she could say "Yes," "No," and "Well." Some of her neighbors testified that they believed her competent to make a will. Her physician testified, "I am satisfied that she understood in a measure what was said to her in regard to the will," and "I think she had an idea of the drift of it—a vague idea." The draughtsman, by a series of speculative questions suggested by her children, succeeded in producing the will. All her property was left to her children, except a small sum, with which she cut off an absent grandchild, a daughter of a deceased son. Held that testatrix was not competent to make a will.[4]

Where testator at the time he executed the will was in an intermittent stage of mental disorder, and afterward died in an insane asylum—held that a verdict finding him incapacitated to make a will should not be disturbed.[5]

DELIRIUM OF FEVER MAY ALSO INCAPACITATE, IF TESTATOR IS NOT RATIONAL—ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.—Testator had a high fever the day he executed the will and was deliri-

[1] 1890, Carlin *v.* Baird (Ky.), 13 S. W. Rep., 434.

[2] Supm. Ct., 1892, Matter of McCarthy, 48 State Rep., 315; s. c., 20 N. Y. Supp., 581.

[3] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1892, Matter of Raynor, 44 State Rep., 468; s. c., 18 N. Y. Supp., 426; distinguishing Rollwagen *v.* Rollwagen, 3 Hun, 132; 63 N. Y., 518.

[4] 1894, Mendenhall *v.* Tungate, 95 Ky., 208; 24 S. W., 431.

[5] N. Y. Com. Pl., 1893, Matter of Loewenstein, 2 Misc., 323; s. c., 51 State Rep., 423; 21 N. Y. Supp., 931.

ous, sometimes getting out of bed, and refusing cider he had asked for, on the ground that it was something else. One witness testified that before the will was drawn he seemed bewildered, and did not know what was said to him, and talked incoherently to himself. Held that the jury's finding against the will would not be disturbed.[1]

DEAFNESS OR DEAF-MUTISM NOT CAUSING IDIOCY DOES NOT INCAPACITATE.—No presumption of testamentary incapacity arises from deafness.[2] A deaf and dumb person is not necessarily an idiot.[3]

A deaf and dumb person may make a will if all the statutory requirements are carried out in their spirit and intent in such manner as is practicable under the conditions existing.[4]

NO PRESUMPTION OF TESTAMENTARY INCAPACITY ARISES FROM OLD AGE OR DISEASE—ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.—The following cases illustrate the tendency of the courts to find capacity even where the testator's mind has been affected by age and other unfavorable conditions:

Where testator, eighty-four years old, without direct descendants, left his entire estate to his second wife a year after he married her in 1887, the will was contested by his nephew for lack of testamentary capacity, and the evidence showed that testator was addicted to the use of intoxicating liquors, but was sober when he executed the will, and was of good business ability. Held that the will should be admitted to probate.[5]

The will of a man who died at the age of eighty-six, six months after he had executed it, when he was in feeble health, contested on the ground of incapacity. Held on the evidence entitled to probate.[6]

[1] 1868, Keithley *v.* Stafford, 126 Ill., 507; s. c., 18 N. E. Rep., 740. But see Green *v.* Green, 145 Ill., 264; 33 N. E., 941.

[2] Rensselaer Surr. Ct., 1891, Matter of Williams, 40 State Rep., 356; s. c., 2 Connolly, 579; 15 N. Y. Supp., 828, aff'd. 46 State Rep., 791; s. c., 19 N. Y. Supp., 778, citing Gombault *v.* Public Administrator, 4 Bradf., 226.

[3] Brower *v.* Fisher, 4 Johns N. Y. Ch., 441.

[4] 1892, Matter of Perego, 65 Hun, 478; s. c., 48 State Rep., 496; 20 N. Y. Supp., 394, citing Matter of Becket, 103 N. Y., 167; Matter of Stillman, 29 State Rep., 213.

[5] Cattaraugus Surr. Ct., 1893, Matter of Jones, 5 Misc., 199, citing Delafield *v.* Parish, 25 N. Y., 9; Van Guysling *v.* Kuren, 35 id., 70; Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 id., 269; Matter of Tracy, 11 State Rep., 103; *in re* Stewart, 59 Hun, 618; Peck *v.* Cary, 27 N. Y., 9; Matter of Schreiber, 22 State Rep., 892; Matter of Watson, 39 id., 42.

[6] Rensselaer Surr. Ct., 1893, Matter of Wheeler, 5 Misc., 279, citing Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 N. Y., 269; Van Guysling *v.* Van Kuren, 35 id., 70;

That testatrix was ninety-eight years of age at the time she made her will is insufficient to appeal against the admission of the will to probate.[1]

There is no presumption against a will because made by a person of advanced age, and incapacity to make a will cannot be inferred merely from an enfeebled condition of mind or body.[2]

DELUSIONS—INSANE DELUSIONS OR HALLUCINATIONS MAY INCAPACITATE.—In respect to testamentary capacity, setting aside cases of dementia or loss of mind and intellect, the true test of insanity is mental delusion[3] or hallucination.[4]

OPINIONS AND MENTAL PECULIARITIES AS DISTINGUISHED FROM INCAPACITATING DELUSIONS—QUESTIONS OF RELIGIOUS BELIEF ARE IRRELEVANT.—Belief on a question which is entirely within the domain of opinion or faith, and not of knowledge, such as the opinion as to a future state, cannot in any respect be deemed evidence of insanity. On such a question, there is, in a logical sense, no major premise of knowledge.[5]

Bleecker *v.* Lynch, 1 Bradf., 458; Van Alst *v.* Hunter, 5 Johns Ch., 148; Delafield *v.* Parish, 25 N. Y., 10; Tunison *v.* Tunison, 4 Bradf., 138; Cornwell *v.* Riker, 2 Dem., 354.

[1] N. J. Prerog. Ct., 1871, Collins *v.* Townley and Johnson, 21 N. J. Eq., 353.

[2] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1880, Snyder *v.* Sherman, 23 Hun, 139, citing 72 N. Y., 269.

[3] N. Y. Ct. of App., 1865, Seamen's Friend Society *v.* Hopper, 33 N. Y., 619, affirming 4 Barb., 625, citing 3 Add. Ecc. R., 79.

[4] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1869, Matter of Forman, 54 Barb., 274, affirming 1 Tuck., 205.

[5] N. Y. Surr. Ct., 1872, Bonard's Will, 16 Abb. Pr., N. S., 128; explained in Brown *v.* Ward, 36 Am. R., 422, 426.

An Englishman who had lived many years in India, and had at different times expressed himself a believer in the Hindoo and Mohammedan faiths, and who had to a great degree adopted the habits of life of the latter, provided by his will for the erection of a cenotaph at Constantinople, with a light burning, and a description of the testator engraved thereon. This will was sustained as being rational in view of the history and opinions of the testator. Austen *v.* Graham, 8 Moore P. C., 493; 1 Spinks, 357.

In the Bonard will case the testator, it was alleged, believed that the souls of men after death passed into animals, and he having no family nor known relations, devised and bequeathed his property to the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. But it did not appear that he made any declaration of his peculiar opinions, in connection with his intended testamentary disposition. *Held* that these opinions were not evidence of insanity or insane delusions even though the testamentary intention might not, otherwise than for the alleged delusion, have been entertained. Bonard's Will, 16 Abb. Pr., N. S., 128, *supra*.

In another will contest, it appeared that more than twenty years before making his will, and nearly thirty years before his death, testator was confined to an insane asylum for a few months for religious insanity; that he was a great reader of the Bible and of a religious paper; that before making his will he prayed much at night, and professed to have seen three lights typifying different religious denominations -

BELIEF IN SPIRITUALISM, UNLESS AFFECTING SUBJECT-MATTER OF THE WILL, DOES NOT INCAPACITATE.—The belief in spiritualism is at this time so common that the law must regard its followers, when their testamentary capacity is in question, the same as those who have a different religious belief.[1]

Belief in spiritualism does not incapacitate, especially where it has nothing to do with the making of the will,[2] and this is so even if the belief in supernatural spiritual manifestations is founded on delusive appearances.[3]

The mind of John Banks, the testator, had long been disturbed by two delusions, the one that he was pursued by spirits, the other that a certain Featherstone Alexander, a man long since dead, came personally to molest him. Neither of these delusions—the dead man not having been in any way connected with him—had or could have any influence upon him in making the will in question. Held that the existence of a delusion, compatible with the retention of the general powers and faculties of the mind, will not be sufficient to overthrow the will, unless it is such as was calculated to influence the testator in making it.[4]

The following case may also be regarded as typical:

Eliza Ann Vedder died January 19th, 1887, at the age of seventy-seven years, leaving a will by which nearly all the property of the decedent was devised and bequeathed to her

that in the heat of discussion he talked of religion in an excited manner; that he sometimes had a wild look, and lost much sleep. *Held*, that these facts did not support a verdict of insanity, rendering void the will which devised his property to a religious society, where it further appeared that he amassed a considerable fortune after his release from the asylum; that his relatives, the contestants of the will, often procured him to go on their bond as surety; and that they joined him in business transactions, and allowed him to look after their interests; and where many witnesses, who had known testator intimately for years, testified that he was perfectly rational on all subjects, and that he had perfect health, slept well, and was a fine business man. 1893, Williams *v.* Williams (Ky.), 23 S. W., 789.

[1] Supm. Ct., 1889, Keeler *v.* Keeler, 20 State Rep., 439; s. c. as *in re* Keeler's Will, 3 N. Y. Supp., 629, citing Brown *v.* Ward, 53 Md., 377; Robinson *v.* Adams, 62 Me., 369; Smith's Will, 52 Wis., 544; Addington *v.* Wilson, 5 Ind., 137; Vedder's Will, 14 State Rep., 470; Foreman's Will, 54 Barb., 274; Bonard's Will, 16 Abb. Pr., N. S., 128.

[2] 1892, *re* Spencer's Estate, 96 Cal., 448; 31 Pac., 453.

[3] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1871, Fowler *v.* Ramsdell, 4 Alb. L. J., 94.

[4] Banks *v.* Goodfellow (1870), L. R., 5 Q. B., 548.

husband, the proponent. The nephews and nieces of dece[illegible]dent opposed the probate on the ground, among others, that she was not of sound mind, memory, and understanding. There was issue of the marriage. The will in question was exec[illegible]uted August, 1883, at the house of decedent and proponent. At the same place, Mr. Vedder, the proponent, made and exec[illegible]uted will whereby he gave all his property to his wife, the te[illegible]sta-trix. Among the principal facts proved by the contestants w[illegible]ere the following: That the testatrix was in gradually fail[illegible]ing physical condition; that she believed in witches and witchcr[illegible]ft; that she told a neighbor that she had seen a headless horsem[illegible]an riding across her field; that she said she could not keep her horses fat because the witches rode them at night; that she put pins in the cream and marked the bottom of the churn with the sign of the cross, to make the butter come, etc., etc. On the other hand, the proponent proved that, in the performance of her household duties and farm business, the testatrix was a prudent, sensible woman. The subscribing witnesses were clear in their belief that the testatrix was of sound mind and memory when she executed the w[illegible]

Woods, surrogate, expressed the following opinion: "There was no evidence whatever to show that any or all of these beliefs, delusions, eccentricities, or peculiarities had the slightest connection with, or influence upon, her testamentary act here in question. Scarcely two centuries ago the great body of Christians believed in witchcraft. Profound theologians contended that a disbelief in it was rank heresy, and they cited Scripture to their purpose. The Bible was the book of books to the testatrix. It is not strange that the ancient belief in witchcraft survived in her. Her belief did not disqualify her from disposing of her proprety by will, and I hold that she was '*compos mentis.*'"[1]

HABITS OF INEBRIETY MAY EXCITE DOUBTS OF MENTAL SOUNDNESS AND DISPOSING CAPACITY.—Mere habits of insobriety on the part of the testator are alone not sufficient to invalidate a will, though to be considered as affecting mental capacity.[2]

[1] Sur. Ct. Albany County, 1888, Matter of Vedder, 6 Dem., 92. See Stewart Chaplin, "Principles of the Law on Wills," New York, 1892.

[2] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1891, Matter of Peck, 42 State Rep., 898; s. c., 17 N. Y. Supp., 248, citing Peck *v.* Cary, 27 N. Y., 9.

BUT INTOXICATION NOT RESULTING IN MENTAL UNSOUNDNESS DOES NOT INCAPACITATE.—A will made by one who is at the time under the influence of intoxicating liquor is not for that reason void. To avoid such a will it must be proved that the testator was so excited by liquor, or that he so conducted himself during the particular act, as to be, at the moment, legally disqualified from giving effect to it.[1]

The mere fact that a man is an habitual drunkard, and "*non compos*" in his drunken fits, is not enough to invalidate any particular act—*e.g.*, the execution by him of a will.[2]

An habitual drunkard, while in the charge of committee, is not incompetent to make a will.[3]

An habitual drunkard, even if at the time under the influence of liquor, may make a will if he comprehends the nature, extent, and disposition of his property, his relation to those who have or might have a claim on his bounty, and is free from undue influence, fraud, or coercion.[4]

If it does not appear but that the habitual drunkard was always able to talk coherently and understand what he was about, and it appears that he was entirely rational when the will, drafted by himself, was executed, it should not be rejected.[5]

A slight degree of intoxication and of mental disease induced by habitual indulgence in intoxicants will not necessarily destroy testamentary capacity.[6]

That testator was a drunkard does not prove his incapacity to make a will.[7]

UNDUE INFLUENCE.—On the one side the comfort of the weak, the dependent, and the aged depends largely on their testamentary capacity being maintained. If they cannot leave property to persons kind to them, they may often be left to suffer from want of kindness. On the other side, if a person of feeble

[1] Ct. of App., 1863, Peck *v.* Cary, 27 N. Y., 9; affirming 38 Barb., 77; *in re* Johnson's Will, 57 N. Y. State Rep., 846.

[2] Ct. of Error, 1839, Gardner *v.* Gardner, 22 Wend., 526, rev'g 7 Paige, 112. But compare Burritt *v.* Silliman, 16 Barb., 198; s. c., rev. 13 N. Y., 93

[3] N. Y. Supm. Ct., 1868, Lewis *v.* Jones, 50 Barb., 645.

[4] Matter of Reed, 20 N. Y. Supp. 91; s. c., 2 Connolly, 403.

[5] N. Y. Surr. Ct., 1877, McLaughlin's Will, 2 Redf., 504. S. P., 1888, Estate of Monneypenny, 1 Month. L. Bul., 7. Julke *v.* Adam, 1 Redf., 454.

[6] Fluck *v.* Rea, 51 N. J. Eq. (6 Dick.), 233; 1891, Bannister *v.* Jackson, 46 N. J. Eq. (1 Dick.), 593; affirming 45 N. J. Eq. (18 Stew.), 702, 17 Atl., 692.

[7] 1891, *re* Levis' Estate, 140 Pa., 179, 21 Atl., 242

intellect is so far exposed to coercion or fraud of others as to validate testamentary provisions made by him under the pressure of such coercion or fraud, then not only may his life be made miserable, but he may become instrumental in perpetrating great wrongs. Hence it is that to constitute a disposing mind there must be capacity as well to resist undue influence as to take a general view of the estate to be bestowed and the objects among whom it is to be distributed.[1]

UNDUE INFLUENCE TO PRECLUDE THE ADMISSION OF THE WILL TO PROBATE.—It must be made to appear that the importunity or influence was such as to deprive the testator, at the time, of the free exercise of his will. Influence exerted only to give effect to the testator's previously declared intention of producing equality between brothers or their families in the distribution of the estate is not undue.[2]

Undue influence combined with mental weakness may incapacitate. Where there is, on the part of the testator, not only age, infirmity, and disease, but such advantage has been taken of his condition that the execution of codicils may well be ascribed to necessity and compulsion rather than a voluntary disposition, they cannot stand, and must be refused probate.[3]

While courts should see that the testamentary act is freely exercised by the aged, weak, and infirm without restraint, force, or fraud, so as to promote their own comfort and enjoyment, and should guard and protect them with the greatest care and circumspection from imposition and improper influence, they should hesitate to find that undue influence has been practised when the will is fair and reasonable, according to the common instincts of mankind, and such as might, with propriety and justice, be made by a decedent.[4]

[1] Wharton and Stillé's "Med. Jurisp.," 4th ed., vol. i., Phil., 1882, p. 20. The term "a disposing mind" is ambiguous and misleading. For it is applied to issues of insanity in the sense of perverted (diseased) intellect, where the real question is, not whether the decedent had capacity to make a will, but whether he did (normally) will, whereas it is applicable properly only to issues of decay or want of mind; the true question in such cases being whether the supposed testator had sufficient mental ability at the time to exercise will. Id. 1 Jarm. Wills, 5th Am. ed., note to *38.

[2] N. Y. Ct. of App., 1865, Gardiner *v.* Gardiner, 34 N. Y., 155.

[3] N. Y. Ct. of App., 1881, Swenarton *v.* Hancock, 9 Abb. N. C., 326; mem. s. c., 84 N. Y., 653, affirming 22 Hun, 38.

[4] N. Y. Ct. of App., 1877, Children's Aid Society of N. Y. *v.* Loveridge, 70 N. Y., 387.

Illustrative Cases.—The testatrix was ninety-eight years of age at the time she made the will in question. The caveator was a son of the testatrix; he resided not far from his mother. More than one unsuccessful attempt to procure an inquisition of lunacy against her in the last years of her life had been made and failed. The will gave the bulk of the property of testatrix to one child, and very little to her other children; yet this child was a daughter, with whom she had lived for many years, and who had taken care of her before and after she acquired her property upon the death of another son. No unsoundness or imbecility of mind was shown of a kind that approached to defects of testamentary capacity, nor was there any proof of any fraud, circumvention, or undue influence in procuring the will. The court held that there was no ground to sustain the appeal against the admission of the will to probate.[1]

A woman, ninety-four years of age, suffering with a complaint which caused her intense pain when she was not under narcotics, which made her drowsy and lethargic or put her to sleep; who being so enfeebled that she could not rise in bed or read or write, within four days of her death, and after her physician had pronounced her dying, at the instance of a nephew made a will which gave her entire estate to that nephew, taking it from her husband and only brother, between whom she had divided it by will about a month before. It did not appear that proponent had ever spoken with his aunt about a will, or anything except directions for her burial, which he said he could not follow unless he had some written authority. When deponent and his witnesses entered her room testatrix expressed surprise, and proponent said that there were some "papers to file," and began to speak of the place where she wished to be buried. Proponent and his mother testified that said will had been read to testatrix, but the latter's testimony was inconsistent. Held that testatrix was induced to sign by fraud, and in ignorance of the paper's contents.[2]

A testatrix eighty-one years of age, but of sound disposing mind, having two sons, one of whom had five grandchildren, after going to reside with the other son revoked a previous will

[1] 1871, N. J. Prerog. Ct., Collins v. Townley and Johnson, 21 N. J. Eq., 353.

[2] 1893, N. J. Prerog. Ct., Hildreth v. Marshall, 51 N. J. Eq., 241.

by which she had divided her estate equally between her sons, and executed a new will drawn by the one with whom she was living, and giving her estate to him, to the exclusion of her other son and all her grandchildren. Held that on the question of undue influence in such a case as this it was proper to inquire into the reasons for such a disposition of the property, the probability that it was stimulated by the suggestions of those attending her, and the fact that they refused to allow the disinherited son to have private interviews with the testatrix was pertinent; and that under all the circumstances a verdict annulling the will for undue influence must be sustained.[1]

We conclude this article with a full review of the celebrated leading case of Delafield *v.* Parish.[2]

In that case it appeared that the testator, Henry Parish, who was possessed of a large estate and had been a cultivated and refined gentleman, was in July, 1849, while in the apparent enjoyment of full health, stricken with an attack of paralysis, described by the physicians as 'hemiplegia.' He had made one will in 1842, while in full health by which he practically divided his estate between his wife and her relatives and his own brothers and sisters. After the attack of paralysis in 1849, his wife was hardly ever absent from his presence, and she and her relatives were his constant attendants, to the exclusion almost wholly of his own relatives, with whom up to this period he had always lived on terms of intimacy and cordiality. In August, 1849, in September, 1853, and in June, 1854, codicils were prepared and executed by which the provisions of the original will of 1842 were changed so as to revoke the legacies and devises to his brothers and sisters and left the bulk of the estate to his wife. It was claimed that during all the period after his attack of paralysis down to his death in March, 1856, he was unable to speak intelligibly or coherently, or to read or write, and that he frequently indecently exposed his person and was guilty of ungentlemanly and violent conduct, and could only indicate his wishes by gestures and peculiar sounds.

The court in the prevailing opinion by Davies, J., reviewed the evidence at length and laid great stress upon the significance of the entire change in the personal habits and character of the

[1] 1868, Ct. of App., Marvin *v.* Marvin, 3 Abb. Ct. of App., Dec., 192.

[2] 25 N. Y., 9.

testator. It said: "The conviction on our mind is clear that these facts and circumstances show unerringly that the attack of July 19th obliterated the mental powers, the moral perceptions, the refined and gentle susceptibilities of Henry Parish; that after that period he ceased to be the mild, intelligent, and unruffled man he had been theretofore, and that thereafter he was not morally responsible for the unbecoming and ungentlemanly conduct he so frequently exhibited. He then ceased to be Henry Parish, and was no longer an accountable being.

"We find much less difficulty in reconciling our minds to this view of the case than to adopt the theory of the proponents, that Mr. Parish, up to the period of his death, possessed an unclouded intellect, retaining its pristine vigor and activity, was conscious of all that was transpiring around him, and understood all that was said to him; comprehended the minute details of the complicated and important business transacted for seven years in his name, and often in his presence, and was capable of communicating and did communicate his thoughts and wishes to others. It is much easier for us to believe that those who, we doubt not honestly, think that Mr. Parish understood what was said to him, and that they comprehended the operations of his mind, and the expression of his wishes, are mistaken in their suppositions, than to reconcile his actions after his attack with the fact that he was still in possession of all his mental faculties.

"When the means of arriving at the knowledge whether Mr. Parish was understood or not are examined, it will be found that they were very imperfect and very liable to misapprehension. It is observed also, that all who speak on this subject applied no test to determine the accuracy of their impressions. They saw Mr. Parish mainly when in apparent good physical health, and visited him under the impression and with the preconceived idea that he understood what was said to him, and they naturally construed the signs and gestures made by him as indications of intelligence and responsive to suggestions made by them. But the accustomed mode of conveying thought by speech was denied to Mr. Parish. Some of the witnesses think he made use of the words 'yes' and 'no,' and one or two other words; but the weight of the testimony greatly preponderates in favor of the position that, after his attack, he never

uttered an intelligible word. This is the testimony of Mr. Kernochan, who saw him more frequently than any other person other than members of the family. Mr. John Ward, whose intercourse with him was very frequent, says distinctly that he never heard him utter a distinct and intelligible word after his attack. He was therefore denied the usual manner of communicating his thoughts and wishes. What remained were signs and gestures, and the expression of his face, to communicate with those around him. Some of the witnesses suppose that they obtained his meaning by the expression of his face. Now, it is to be remembered that the only agents conveying such expressions are the mouth and eyes. Mr. Parish had no use whatever of the former organ for this purpose. His face was always peculiarly unimpressive and undemonstrative, but after his attacks the muscles of his mouth became firm and rigid. His eyes afforded but little aid in this particular. He had nearly lost the sight of one of them, and the other was opaque by the operation of cataract, and both were generally covered by spectacles of great convexity. He could, therefore, neither speak nor use the muscles of his face to give expression to his thoughts, and the gestures made by him with the left hand and its fingers were irregular, unmeaning, and contradictory, and often conceded to be misunderstood. With these imperfect and uncertain media for ascertaining the thoughts of Mr. Parish, it is doing no injustice to any one to assume that they have been mistaken in supposing that they correctly understood him. We more naturally and readily come to this result, because we find that all who had any intercourse with Mr. Parish, on many occasions, found great difficulty in understanding his wishes and thoughts, if they ever understood them at all; and the instances are frequent and clearly established where he often made affirmative and negative motion of his head immediately succeeding each other to the same question, leaving the inquirer in perplexity which he really intended. The testimony is conclusive that Mrs. Parish herself frequently acknowledged that she could not understand him, and there is some testimony tending to show that on some occasions at least she thought he did not at all understand what was said to him, and that, in her opinion, the effort would be useless to make him understand. . . . All the testimony shows that he could only

indicate with his fingers and hands, or by sounds, that he wanted something, or that something was the matter, and which motions or sounds were construed by those around him as evidences of his wish to put a question, whereupon they began to suggest various topics, and when they thought they perceived that they had hit upon the subject in his mind they supposed he wished to inquire about, they put such questions as suggested themselves to them, and to which they supposed they had received affirmative or negative answers. If Mr. Parish had no power to express a wish to destroy a will, it follows he had none to create one, and the manifestations of his wishes depended entirely upon the interpreter and the integrity of the interpretation. . . . It is thus seen that great difficulties and uncertainty, to say the least of it, attended any expression of the thoughts or wishes of Mr. Parish, and that a large number of those having business or intercourse with him utterly failed to attach or obtain any meaning to his signs, sounds, motions, or gestures. The natural and obvious deductions to be made from all these facts and circumstances are, that Mr. Parish had no ideas to communicate, or if he had any, that the means of doing so, with certainty and beyond all cavil or doubt, were denied to him. If some, with the aid of an interpreter, and always the same, indulged the charitable thought that they correctly apprehended his wishes, it is clear that others, equally intelligent, with adequate and equal opportunities of judging, and with the same aids, utterly failed to comprehend him.

"The facts testified to are of such a character, giving full and proper weight to all the evidence, regarding it in the most favorable light to the proponents, as to leave great doubt on the mind that Mr. Parish, after his attack, was anything more than the creature of habit, the reflex of the opinions and wishes of others, the clay in hands of the potter, to be moulded into any shape or form desired. His hearing was good; the sight of one of his eyes, although impaired, was not seriously affected, and he had the perfect use of his left hand and arm. Nothing was more natural, therefore, than that those who entertained the idea that he possessed intellect would resort to the obvious facilities and aids to enable him to give it expression. The power of speech, it is manifest, was denied to him; if he possessed any, it was exercised most imperfectly and with no prac-

tical advantage. This, the obvious and usual method of communicating thought, he had not. None could fail to know that, if Mr. Parish had thoughts, the great and controlling anxiety of his life would be to give them expression and to manifest them to his friends. Independently of the social gratification attendant upon such successful effort, he had great interests to manage, a large property to look after, and the accumulation and management of which had been the absorbing object of his life. A large estate had accumulated and was accumulating, which, if he knew anything, he must have known was taking a direction, as the proponents allege, hostile to his wishes, to those from whom he was alienated, and away from the cherished objects of his regard and affections. Every conceivable motive and consideration pressed upon him, therefore, to keep up intercourse with his family and friends, if the thing was possible. No man having the power thus to communicate, and having thoughts and wishes to express thus circumstanced, would remain in a living grave for several years without making superhuman efforts to be understood by those around him. Those friends rightly assumed as a fact, that Mr. Parish would be most solicitous to maintain intercourse with them, if it were possible to do so. The first attempt, and the most obvious one, was to have Mr. Parish write with his left hand. He had the perfect use of it; could write well; had done it all his life. We all know from experience how simple this process is, and how easy of execution. We can see how effectual it would have been in enabling Mr. Parish to express his wishes and keep up his intercourse with his friends, and retain the management and control of his affairs, and make such disposition of his estate as he then desired. This expedient, though effectually tried and persistently urged upon Mr. Parish, utterly failed of accomplishing any satisfactory result. One of the witnesses thinks that, on one occasion, he succeeded in writing the word 'horse,' and the same witness says he wrote several times the word 'wills.' The latter efforts were preserved, and are produced and made exhibits in the case. An inspection of them will show that there is no propriety in interpreting them as 'wills' or any other word. They are nothing but imperfect, unmeaning scrawls, such as any child might make who had strength to hold a pen. They unmistakably show that there

was no mind to guide the hand, or, if there was any, not of sufficient force to control the will and second its determinations. If Mr. Parish had any mind capable of operation or of forming conclusions, his faculty of hearing remaining unimpaired, it would have been the easiest thing imaginable for him to have written the word 'yes' in response to any question he desired to answer in the affirmative, and the word 'no' to any he desired to answer in the negative. This could have been done with much less effort than was required to write the words 'horse' and 'wills.' This attempt to have Mr. Parish communicate by writing having proved fruitless, resort was had to block letters, a very simple and facile mode of communicating thought by those who are deprived of the natural use of doing so by speech. If he had any thoughts to communicate, he had thus at hand an easy, certain, and effective means of doing so with accuracy and beyond the peradventure of mistake. The slightest exertion only was required—no fatigue could ensue. This attempt also produced no results. Another effort was also made with the letters of the alphabet in another form, and it also was unsuccessful.

"A further and different mode was suggested by some of his friends, which, if the theory of some of the witnesses for the proponents is correct, afforded a safe, sure, and easy method of communication. If was the use of a dictionary by Mr. Parish. This process had two advantages: it would have enabled him to suggest topics of inquiry, and insured intelligent and certain answers to the questions put to him. A moment's reflection will satisfy any mind that no process could have been devised more certain and satisfactory than this for holding intercourse with an intelligent mind, denied to it the power of giving expression to its emotions and thoughts in the form of speech. No results were obtained from this source, and the inference from the testimony is that no efforts were made to afford Mr. Parish the opportunity of trying this method of communicating his thoughts. And this omission greatly strengthens the impression conveyed by the testimony that he did not and could not read at all after his attack. It is true that he was seen to look at newspapers, accounts, ledgers, check books, notes, etc., but that his mind took in and comprehended what his visual organs discerned, the evidence in this case will not warrant us

in assuming. It is natural to suppose that, if Mr. Parish could read, he would have desired himself to peruse these codicils, and they would have been placed before him for that purpose; and on the assumption that he could, the inquiry presses upon us, Why were they not given him for perusal? If it had been established that he could read intelligently, and it had appeared that these codicils had been read over by him, it would have furnished much more satisfactory evidence than any we now have that they expressed his wishes. If he could read, and had intellect to understand what his eyes beheld, why is it that there is an entire absence of evidence that he was ever seen reading, with apparent understanding, a letter? of his ever having been seen, on any one occasion during his long confinement, with a book in his hand perusing it? Is it to be believed that, if Mr. Parish could read, that he would not, during those whole seven years, when he was almost entirely excluded from intercourse with the world, have once resorted to books for amusement and instruction? It is incredible. We all know that no greater solace is available to an invalid, and none more universally sought after. They are companions always at hand, of the most soothing, agreeable, and entertaining character, and it cannot be doubted that, if Mr. Parish could read and had intellectual capacity sufficient to understand what he read, books would have been his daily and constant companions. These views press themselves on us with great force, if we concur in the opinion of Dr. Taylor that Mr. Parish after his attack became a devout and sincere Christian, and was anxiously and inquiringly seeking to make his peace with his Maker, whom he must have expected soon to meet. Where would an intelligent Christian sooner turn for advice, direction, and consolation than to the Bible? This book, we all know, is printed in type, so that all, of any degree of vision, can peruse it. Many of those totally deprived of sight are not precluded from resorting to it for comfort and direction. We have looked in vain through the testimony in this case to find any evidence that Mr. Parish ever read his Bible, that one was ever procured for him, or that any effort was ever made to induce him to peruse it, or that he ever indicated a wish to do so.

"To what result does this view of the facts and circumstances in this case, adverted to and commented on, lead the mind?

On a careful consideration of them all, with a most anxious desire to arrive at a just and correct conclusion, we are clearly of the opinion that the attack of Mr. Parish on the 19th of July, 1849, extinguished his intellectual powers, so obliterated and blotted out his mental faculties that after that period he was not a man of sound mind and memory within the meaning and language of the statutes, and was therefore incompetent to make a will, and that the codicils of September, 1853, and of June, 1854, were not his will, and formed no part thereof."

A majority of the court concurred in the following legal propositions set forth in the opinion of Davies, J.:

"1. That in all cases the party propounding the will is bound to prove to the satisfaction of the court that the paper in question does declare the will of the deceased, and that the supposed testator was, at the time of making and publishing the document propounded as his will, of sound and disposing mind and memory.

"2. That this burden is not shifted during the progress of the trial, and is not removed by proof of the factum of the will, and of the testamentary competency, by the attesting witnesses, but remains with the party setting up the will.

"3. That if, upon a careful and accurate consideration of all the evidence on both sides, the conscience of the court is not judicially satisfied that the paper in question does contain the last will of the deceased, the court is bound to pronounce its opinion that the instrument is not entitled to probate.

"4. That when it is sought to establish a posterior will, to overthrow a prior one made by the testator in health, and under circumstances of deliberation and care, and which is free from all suspicion, and when the subsequent will was made in enfeebled health and in hostility to the provisions of the first one; in such case the prior will is to prevail, unless he who sets up the subsequent one can satisfy the conscience of the Court of Probate that he has established a will. And also the prior will is to prevail unless the subsequent one is so proven to speak the testator's intentions as to leave no doubt that it does so speak them.

"5. That it is not the duty of the court to strain after probate nor in any case to grant it, where grave doubts remain unremoved, and great difficulties oppose themselves to so doing.

"6. That the heirs of a deceased person can rest securely upon the statutes of descents and distributions, and that the rights thus secured to them can only be divested by those claiming under the will and in hostility to them, by showing that the will was executed with the formalities required by law, and by a testator possessing a sound and disposing mind and memory."

The court also said:

"The maxim, *qui se scripsit hæredem*, has imposed by law an additional burden on those claiming to establish a will under circumstances which call for the application of that rule, and the court in such a case justly requires proof of a more clear and satisfactory character. Such a condition is exhibited by the testimony in the present case. The two codicils under consideration were exclusively for the benefit of Mrs. Parish, with the exception of the charitable gifts, and although they were not actually written by her, yet they were drawn up at her suggestion, upon her procurement, and by counsel employed by her. She prepared and gave the instructions for them, and in judgment of law they must be regarded as written by herself—*Facit per alium, facit per se.*"

It is, however, held that the proponent may rest with slight evidence; for example, the evidence of the subscribing witnesses, that the testator was of sound mind, and that the proponent may safely rely upon the presumption of sanity.[1]

The declarations of the testator are received to show the condition of his mind at the time the will was made.[2]

As to evidence in insanity cases, see pages 392, 399.

[1] Perkins *v.* Perkins, 39 N. H., 163; Elliot *v.* Welby, 13 Mo. App., 19; Taff *v.* Hosmer, 14 Mich., 309; McGinnis *v.* Kempsey, 27 id., 363; Dean *v.* Dean, 27 Vt., 746; Turner *v.* Cook, 36 Ind., 129; Trish *v.* Newell, 62 Ill., 196; Carpenter *v.* Calvert, 83 id., 62; Hawkins *v.* Grimes, 13 B. Monroe (Ky.), 257; Brooks *v.* Barrett, 7 Pick (Mass.), 94; Mayo *v.* Jones, 78 N. C., 402; Kingsley *v.* Blanchard, 66 Barb., 317; Banker *v.* Banker, 63 N. Y., 409. And so is the English rule: Smee *v.* Smee, L. R., 5 P. D., 84, and cases cited.

[2] 1 Redf. on Wills, 3d ed., 538. Waterman *v.* Whitney, 11 N. Y., 157. And see cases collated in Note 7, vol. xi., "Am. and Eng. Encyclopedia of Law," p. 156.

CRIMINAL RESPONSIBILITY.[1]

INTRODUCTORY.

Insanity as a Defence to Crime.

The theory of the law in this country and in England is that knowledge of right and wrong is the only test as to responsibility for crime, the common law holding every man as sane until proof to the contrary is shown by the party pleading insanity as a defence. The doctrine that a reasonable doubt in the minds of the jury of the sanity of the accused requires an acquittal is accepted in various States. But evidence of loss of control of the will, or of morbid impulse, does not constitute a defence except when it demonstrates mental unsoundness of such a character as to destroy the power of distinguishing between right and wrong as to the particular act. The theory that loss of will power, or morbid impulse, is an excuse for crime, though generally repudiated by our decisions and never recognized by our statutes, in practice often dominates juries in rendering their verdicts; and, of late, courts and statutes have declared that intoxication may eliminate the element of premeditation or intent in homicide cases, and may be taken into consideration in fixing the degree of crime, and hence the amount of punishment to be inflicted, in all cases requiring proof of criminal intent. This principle of partial responsibility regulating the grade of punishment has been thoroughly discussed in Casper-Liman and other text-book writers. Many years ago, in Dr. E. J. Munro's testimony in the classical McNaghten case,[2] the opinion was expressed that monomania may coexist with general sanity, or even with a high degree of intellect, or with a

[1] Most of the medico-legal definitions of the various forms of insanity, given in this article, have been furnished or approved by Prof. Edward D. Fisher, to whose article on the "Medical Aspects of Insanity" reference may be made for more full discussion and information concerning them. Professor Fisher has also assisted in collating the numerous cases, which have been digested or quoted from, as illustrative of the principles set forth in the texts. The author also acknowledges his indebtedness to W. B. Eastabrook, Esq., of Tompkins County, N. Y., bar, and to Frederick O. Bissell, Esq., and C. Howard Williams, Esq., of the Buffalo, N. Y., bar, for valuable assistance in digesting cases and verifying citations.

[2] 10 Clark and Finnerty, H. L. Cases, 200.

normal perception of right and wrong, with a knowledge of murder to be a crime. The doctor testified that "he had not the slightest doubt that the prisoner's usual perception was impaired in consequence of his delusion, and that his mind was so absorbed by the contemplation of his fancied wrongs that he did not distinguish between right and wrong." This seems to be the present status of medical opinion on this subject, but an important distinction must be drawn between the fact of insanity and the question of legal responsibility. Moved by the desire of protecting society, the courts almost invariably hold that unless the mental unsoundness is of such character or degree as to deprive the mind of the ability of knowing the quality and consequences of the act done, there must be legal responsibility. This rule is the legal essence of the whole matter, and it avoids much of the confusion which the German jurists and metaphysicians have infused into this subject. The New York Court of Appeals, in the case of Flanagan *v.* The People,[1] said: "We are asked in this case to introduce a new element into the rule of criminal responsibility in cases of alleged insanity, and to hold that the power of choosing right from wrong is as essential to legal responsibility as the capacity of distinguishing between them; and that the absence of the former is consistent with the presence of the latter. The argument proceeds upon the theory that there is a form of insanity in which the faculties are so disordered and deranged that a man, though he perceives the moral quality of his acts, is unable to control them, and is urged by some mysterious pressure to the commission of acts, the consequences of which he anticipates but cannot avoid. Whatever medical or scientific authority there may be for this view, it has not been accepted by courts of law. The vagueness and uncertainty of the inquiry which would be opened, and the manifest danger of introducing the limitation claimed into the rule of responsibility, in cases of crime, may well cause courts to pause before assenting to it. Indulgence in evil passions weakens the restraining power of the will and conscience; and the rule suggested would be the cover for the commission of crime and its justification. The doctrine that a criminal act may be excused upon the notion of an irresistible impulse to commit it, where the offender has the ability to discover his

[1] 52 N. Y., 467–469, 470.

legal and moral duty in respect to it, has no place in the law. Rolfe, B., in Rogers *v.* Allunt, where, on the trial of an indictment for poisoning, the defendant was alleged to have acted under some moral influence which he could not resist, said: 'Every crime was committed under an influence of such a description; and the object of the law was to compel people to control these influences.' "

And again the same court, in People *v.* Carpenter,[1] said: "The only exception remaining which is deemed of sufficient importance to merit particular notice, is that taken to the refusal of the court to charge according to the request of the prisoner's counsel, 'If some controlling disease was in truth the acting power within him [the prisoner], which he could not resist, or if he had not a sufficient use of his reason to control the passion which prompted the act complained of, he is not responsible.' The principle of this request is not only impliedly condemned by sections 21 and 23 of the Penal Code, but has been held to be untenable by the express decision of this court. Flanagan *v.* People." [2]

After considering the general principles of law which control the decisions of our courts, in passing upon the defence of insanity in criminal cases, this subject will be more fully discussed in this article.

GENERAL PRINCIPLES.

A Statement of the Leading Authorities and Cases.

To be responsible for crime, the party committing the act must be of sane mind, as the act does not constitute guilt unless the mind is guilty; hence sanity is an essential element in crime.[3]

The Penal Code of the State of New York (section 20) provides that:

"An act done by a person who is an idiot, lunatic, or insane, is not a crime." And in section 21: "A person is not excused from criminal liability as an idiot, imbecile, lunatic, or insane person, except upon proof that at the time of committing the alleged criminal act he was laboring under such a defect of reason as either (1) not to know the nature and quality of the act he

[1] 102 N. Y., 238.
[2] 52 N. Y., 467.
[3] "The Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 693.

was doing; or (2) not to know that the act was wrong." This statute preserves essentially the rule of the common law.

Wharton and Stillé state in regard to the latter, citing a great number of English and American cases: "It is certain that wherever such incapacity, viz., of distinguishing right from wrong in reference to the particular act, is shown to exist, the court will direct an acquittal; or if a jury should convict in the teeth of such instructions, the court will set the verdict aside. The authorities to this effect are so numerous that a general reference to them is all that is here necessary; it being observed at the same time that while the earlier cases lean to the position that such deprivation of understanding must be general, it is now conceded that it is enough, if it is shown to have existed in reference to the particular act." [1]

Some of the decisions on this point are here collated. A man is not criminally responsible for an act when, by reason of involuntary insanity or delusion, he is at the time incapable of perceiving that the act is either wrong or unlawful.[2] To establish the defence of insanity in a criminal case, it must be shown that the insanity was such as to destroy, for the time at least, the consciousness of the distinction between right and wrong in reference to the act charged.[3] There must, to raise the defence of insanity, be a defect of reason from disease of the mind, so that the person did not know the nature and quality of the act he committed, or did not know whether it was right or wrong.[4]

Where a person at the time of the commission of an alleged crime has sufficient mental capacity to understand the nature and quality of the acts constituting the crime, and the mental capacity to know whether they are morally or legally right or wrong, he is generally responsible if he commits such acts, whatever may be his capacity in other particulars; but if he does not possess this degree of capacity, then he is not so responsible.[5]

[1] Wharton and Stillé, "Med. Jur.," vol. i., p. 118.

[2] People *v.* Pine, 2 Barb., 566; People *v.* Sprague, 2 Park. Cr., 43.

[3] People *v.* Montgomery, 13 Abb. Pr. N. S., 207, citing 4 Den., 9; People *v.* O'Connell, 62 How. Pr., 436; abstr. s. c., 13 N. Y. Weekly Dig., 95, affirmed in id., 536.

[4] Regina *v.* Burton, 3 F. & F., 772, citing McNaghten's case.

[5] Flanagan *v.* People, 52 N. Y., 467; s. c., 11 Am. R., 731; Kearney *v.* State, 68 Miss., 233; s. c., 8 So., 292; State *v.* O'Neil, 51 Kan., 651; s. c., 33 Pac., 287; Bolling *v.* State, 54 Ark., 588; s. c., 16 S. W., 658; Hornish *v.* People, 142 Ill., 620; s. c., 18 L. R. A., 237, 32 N. E., 677; State *v.* McIntosh, 40 S. C., 349; s. c., 17 S. E., 446; State *v.* Davis, 109 N. C., 780; s. c., 14 S. E., 55; Revoir *v.* State, 82 Wis., 295; s. c., 52 N. W., 84; Smith *v.* Com., 93 Ky., 318; s.

A conviction of murder may be had if the accused at the time of the killing had sufficient power of mind to distinguish between the right and wrong of the act, although he suffered from mental aberration as to other matters.[1]

While it is true that discrimination between right and wrong is not required in general, but only in regard to the act in question, it is on the other hand not sufficient—for the defence in a given case—to rely simply on a general state of idiocy or unsoundness of mind. The mere fact that a person is an idiot or insane does not relieve him from criminal responsibility. The idiocy or insanity must have been such as to prevent the accused from distinguishing between right and wrong in the particular act.[2]

The provision of 2 New York Revised Statutes, 697, section 2, that "no act done by a person in a state of insanity can be punished as an offence" means, "no act done by a person in a state of insanity in respect to such act can be punished as an offence." The act must be an insane act, and not merely the act of an insane person.[3]

GENERAL RULES IN CASES OF FIXED OR COMPLETE INSANITY.

Having referred to the leading cases, it now remains to point out the following general rules as to irresponsibility in cases of fixed or complete insanity.

Mental States of Absolute Irresponsibility.

These states are called complete idiocy, general mania, general, permanent, and fixed insanity. The first attempt to point out precisely three conditions of insanity in which the civil and criminal responsibilities are unequally affected was made by Lord Hale. He divided insanity into partial insanity as to certain subjects, partial as to degree, and total insanity. The latter, he held, excused crime, partial insanity did not.[4]

c., 17 S. W., 868; Com. v. Gerade, 145 Pa. St., 289; s. c., 22 Atl., 464; People v. Clendennin, 91 Cal., 35; s. c., 27 Pac., 418; State v. Schafer, 116 Mo., 96; s. c., 22 S. W., 447; State v. Zorn, 22 Ore., 591; s. c., 30 Pac., 317; Lovegrove v. State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 491.

[1] State v. Maier, 36 W. Va., 757; s. c., 15 S. E., 991.

[2] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 696, and cases cited in note.

[3] Freeman v. People, 4 Den. (N. Y.), 9.

[4] Pleas of the Crown, 30.

1. Complete idiocy creates exemption from crime and criminal responsibility under all circumstances. For "an idiot is a person without understanding, and who is legally presumed never likely to have any;"[1] and where there is no reasoning power at all, there cannot be capacity for responsible discrimination in any particular case. Therefore idiots—in the proper meaning of this term—have always been considered at law incapable of crime.[2]

2. A similar conclusion may be drawn as to general or fixed insanity. Wharton and Stillé define general mania as a state of general or absolute irresponsibility.[3] A person cannot be lawfully punished for an act which was committed by him while in a state of insanity.[4]

The causes producing unsoundness of mind are irrelevant to the question of irresponsibility. Whenever general or fixed insanity is proved, the cause by which it has been produced in a given case is wholly irrelevant as to the question of irresponsibility. This rule goes so far that "where a person is insane at the time he commits the crime he is not punishable, although such insanity be remotely occasioned by undue indulgence in spirituous liquors, or from what, in a moral sense, is a criminal neglect of duty."[5]

STATES OF MENTAL INSUFFICIENCY OR ABNORMITY CONSISTENT WITH CRIMINAL RESPONSIBILITY.

General Views.

Leaving these last-mentioned states of palpable irresponsibility as indicated by complete idiocy or fixed and complete mania, we may conclude that each case, to be one of irresponsibility, must contain in itself the following elements: (1) The mental defect—insufficiency or abnormity—of the individual who committed the act in question must appertain, at the time of its commission, to the proper categories of idiocy, imbecility,

[1] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 694.

[2] See Wharton and Stillé, "Med. Jur.," vol. i., p. 118.

[3] Wharton and Stillé, vol. i., p. 118.

[4] People *v.* McElvaine, 125 N. Y., 600; s. c., 36 N. Y. St. Rep., 181; People *v.* Coleman, 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 2; Autremont *v.* Fire Assn., 48 N. Y. St. Rep., 43; s. c., 65 Hun. 477, 20 N. Y. Supp., 345.

[5] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 694.

lunacy, or insanity; or (2) it must, at the same time, causally refer to the act itself—that is, be such as to deprive him of the capacity of knowing either its nature and quality or that it was wrong and unlawful. These elements are strictly indispensable; for, "no person shall be excused from punishment unless he be expressly defined and exempted by the law itself."[1] The inference from this is that irresponsibility as recognized by law is limited so that not every kind and degree, be it even morbid, of mental infirmity or abnormity, whether congenital or acquired, permanent or temporary, renders the individual irresponsible in a given case, even though it influences actually and seriously (1) his judgment in regard to right and wrong, or (2) affects (3) his power of will.

Weak-Mindedness.

"If one is of sound mind he is responsible for his criminal act, even though his mental capacity be weak or his intellect of inferior order; the law recognizes no exemption from crime less than some degree of insanity or mental unsoundness."[2] "Where idiocy exists in reference to the particular act, the court will direct an acquittal. And mere weakness of mind is not insanity, as the memory may be impaired and still the mind be sound."[3] The jury must be satisfied that the prisoner's mind is in such a state of unsoundness or disease as to exempt him from responsibility; and not merely that it is so infirm as to render him incapable of managing his own affairs.[4]

Illustrative Case.—In matter of Staudermann[5] the defendant was convicted of murder and sentenced to death. It appeared that he had been regarded by his neighbors as weak-minded, and the murder was the shooting of a young lady to whom he had been paying his addresses, and who had treated him with contempt. The defence of insanity was raised at the trial, but, his counsel being unable to establish it by evidence of his past history, he was convicted of murder in the first degree. Thereafter new evidence was brought before a lunacy commission appointed by the governor, showing that he was at the

[1] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 693.
[2] Id., p. 693.
[3] Id., People *v.* Osmond, 138 N. Y., 80; Taylor *v.* Com., 90 Va., 109; s. c., 19 S. E., 739.
[4] People *v.* Kleim, 1 Edm. (N.Y.), 13.
[5] 3 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 187.

time partially insane, and his sentence was commuted. A full résumé of this case is given below (page 459).

Abnormality of Character; Eccentricity, etc.

The law requires something more than occasional oddity or hypochondria to exempt the perpetrator of an offence from its punishment.[1] The theory that eccentricities of character and inordinate passion can render a sane man incapable of committing an offence which involves deliberation is wholly untenable.[2] Where the acts of the accused were such as to satisfy the jury that the killing was the result of premeditation and deliberation, his bad temper and eccentricities of character, not amounting to insanity, cannot detract from the effect of his acts or shield him from responsibility therefor.[3]

The following case illustrates this last principle:

In Regina *v.* Burton,[4] a youth of eighteen was indicted for the murder of a boy. At the trial, Wightman, J., delivered the following charge to the jury: "As there was no doubt about the act, the only question was whether the prisoner at the time he committed it was in such a state of mind as not to be responsible for it. The prisoner's account of it was that he had done it from a morbid feeling; that he was tired of life and wished to be rid of it. No doubt prisoners had been acquitted of murder on the ground of insanity; but the question was what were the cases in which men were to be absolved on that ground. Hatfield's case differed from the present, for there wounds had been received on the head which were proved to have injured the brain. In the case of McNaghten the judges had laid down the rule to be that there must, to raise the defence, be a defect of reason from disease of the mind, so as that the person did not know the nature and quality of the act he committed, or did not know whether it was right or wrong. Now to apply this rule to the present case would be the duty of the jury. It was not mere eccentricity of conduct which made a man irresponsible for his acts. The medical man called for the defence

[1] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 695; Hawe *v.* State, 11 Neb., 537; s. c., 38 Am. Rep., 375; Anderson *v.* State, 43 Conn., 514; s. c., 21 Am. Rep., 669.

[2] Sindram *v.* People, 1 N. Y. Crim. Rep., 448, affirmed 88 N. Y., 196.

[3] Id.

[4] 3 F. and F., 772.

defined homicidal mania to be a propensity to kill, and described moral insanity as a state of mind under which a man, perfectly aware that it was wrong to do so, killed another under an uncontrollable impulse. This would appear a most dangerous doctrine and fatal to the interests of society and security of life. The question is whether such a theory is in accordance with law. The rule as laid down by the judges is quite inconsistent with such a view, for it is held that a man was responsible for his actions if he knew the difference between right and wrong. It was urged that the prisoner did the act to be hanged, and so was under an insane delusion; but what delusion was he under? So far from it, it showed that he was quite conscious of the nature of the act and its consequences. He was supposed to desire to be hanged, and in order to attain the object committed murder. That might show a morbid state, but not delusion. Homicidal mania, as described by the witnesses for the defence, showed no delusion. It merely showed a morbid desire for blood. Delusion meant the belief in what did not exist. The question for the jury was whether the prisoner at the time he committed the act was laboring under such a species of insanity as to be unaware of the nature, the character, or the consequences of the act he committed—in other words, whether he was incapable of knowing that what he did was wrong. If so, they should acquit him; if otherwise, they should find a verdict of guilty." The jury found him guilty.[1]

Neither melancholia nor uncontrollable passion excuses the prisoner, if notwithstanding such state of mind, he had sufficient comprehension of the nature of the act in which he was engaged to understand whether it was right or wrong.[2]

A desire for self-destruction, and the adoption of means to secure it, do not of themselves indicate a mental impairment, which has advanced to the stage of irresponsibility, otherwise the law would not make the attempt to kill one's self a crime.[3]

An irritable temper and an excitable disposition of mind do not constitute insanity; a person possessing such

[1] Stewart Chaplin, "Cases on Criminal Law," Boston, 1891, p. 75.

[2] Cole's Trial, 7 Abb. Pr. N. S., 321. Compare People *v.* Montgomery, 13 Abb. Pr. N. S., 207 (N. Y.).

[3] People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 408; see 1 N. Y. St. Repr., 648; People *v.* Carpenter, 102 N. Y., 250; 4 N. Y. Cr. R., 187; People *v.* Haight, 3 id., 61; 13 Abb N. C., 198; People *v.* Rhinelander, 2 N. Y. Cr. R., 340.

mental peculiarities is more predisposed to an attack of insanity than men in general, but is not on that account actually insane; such peculiarities are not of themselves evidences of insanity. If the prisoner, when he killed the deceased, was in such a state of mind as to know that the deed was unlawful and morally wrong, he was responsible, and otherwise he was not.[1]

Belief in spirits in itself is no defence, provided the accused knew and realized that the act was wrong.[2]

In People *v.* Wood,[3] the defendant, a farmer, 35 years of age, killed Leander Pasco, also a farmer, near Stony Creek, in the county of Warren, on the 10th of May, 1890. A couple of months before that event the defendant had married a daughter of Pasco. The latter was annoyed by this marriage, which had taken place without his knowledge, and had ceased to be on friendly terms with Wood. The defendant was very fond of his wife. In a quarrel, in which each accused the other of misconduct, the defendant shot Pasco, instantly killing him. On the trial insanity was pleaded as a defence. As a young boy the defendant had been severely cut in the head by a blow from an axe and was unconscious for two or three hours. He was for some time quite ill from the immediate effects of the blow. A few years thereafter he fell from a barn and struck on his head on a stony surface, and was again rendered unconscious for some hours. After these injuries he frequently acted in a strange manner, complained often of violent headaches, committed odd and irrational acts, dressed in woman's clothes over his trousers, although then grown up; was subject to some kind of discharge from his eyes, which difficulty would suddenly come upon him after he had complained of his head. He was also subject to sudden attacks of a kind of dizziness in the head and temporary blindness. He was eccentric, vehement, and subject to great excitement on slight provocation.

After his arrest he was examined by a physician who found traces of the wound on his head, also a fracture of the rock near the base of the skull. The spine from the base of the skull down to a tumor between the shoulders was quite sensitive to the touch. The eyes were not properly responsive to light

[1] Wilson *v.* People, 94 N. Y., 715. [2] People *v.* Waltz, 50 How. Pr., 214. Fleming *v.* People, 27 N. Y., 329. Compare Boyle *v.* State, 57 Miss., 267; 34 Am. Rep., 454. Hadley *v.* People, 67 N. Y., 362; 7 Hun, 137; 34 N. Y. S., 321. [3] 126 N. Y., 249. Flanagan *v.* People, 52 N. Y., 467.

The physician was of the opinion that defendant suffered from a diseased brain. The defendant's wife was called as a witness for him, and offer was made to prove by her that a short time before the day of the homicide she had told the defendant that the deceased had stolen his potatoes; also that the deceased had, on several occasions before her marriage, criminally assaulted and forced her against her will, and since her marriage, within a very short time, had come to their house, in defendant's absence, and similarly assaulted her and threatened to kill her if she told any one.

The counsel stated that he offered the evidence, not as proof of the truth of the statement, but he would show that the defendant believed it and that it operated on his mind to such an extent as to render him insane at the time he committed the offence. This evidence was excluded. The defendant was convicted of murder in the first degree, and appealed.

In the Court of Appeals, Judge Peckham, writing the opinion for the court, held that the exclusion of that evidence was an error, and that the evidence offered was competent, in connection with proof of subsequent conduct and appearances as showing the effect on defendant's brain which the evidence tended to show was weakened and diseased; it was material as the fact offered to be proved might account for or tend to produce insanity; and the competency of the evidence was not affected by the fact that it appeared that the offence charged was committed with deliberation.* Where in a criminal action the defence is insanity, the defendant has a right to prove upon this issue not only irrational acts and conduct, but also facts which may account for such acts and appearances, and which may reveal an adequate cause for the mental aberrations testified to. The judgment was reversed.

Unless disease is proven to have caused mental unsoundness, it does not affect the question of irresponsibility. The accused is responsible even though some controlling disease was, in truth, the acting power within him, which he could not resist, or if he had not a sufficient reason to control the passion which prompted the act.[1] In an early New York case it was

[1] People *v.* Carpenter, 102 N. Y., 250; s. c., 1 N. Y. St. R., 648, 4 N. Y. Cr. R., 187; People *v.* Walworth, 4 id., 395; Willis *v.* People, 32 N Y., 717.

said that if some controlling disease was in truth the acting power within the accused, or if he had not a sufficient use of his reason to control the passions which prompted the act complained of, he is not responsible. The power of distinguishing between right and wrong, in reference to the act, is not alone decisive.[1]

Insanity as a defence to a criminal prosecution implies that the man did not know the act he was committing to be unlawful and morally wrong, and had not reason sufficient to apply such knowledge and to be controlled by it.[2]

Temporary Excitement or Passion.

The heat of passion or feeling produced by anger, hatred, jealousy, or revenge is not insanity. The law holds the doer of the act under such conditions responsible for the crime.[3]

In People *v.* Foy[4] the defendant murdered Henrietta Wilson in one of the streets of Saratoga on the 13th of May, 1892. He had known her for some time. A short time before the murder, he had said to her in a conversation in Saratoga that he intended to go away. She remonstrated, saying, as long as she had a dollar he could have it, but he replied that she had ruined him, that he was broke and she was throwing him out, that she had another mash, and that he was going away. He then went to New York, where he pawned his overcoat to get a pistol, returned soon after and shot her. He said that he had had the intent to kill himself also. On the trial temporary insanity was pleaded as a defence. It was proved that he was laboring under the passion of jealousy and was very angry with the woman. The trial court, on being requested to charge the jury that insanity produced by anger or jealousy, if it incapacitated the subject from knowing right from wrong, would be a defence, instructed the jury that "if there is such a thing as genuine insanity produced by jealousy, or revenge, or wrath—I do not mean turbulence of passion produced by a desire for revenge—but if there is any genuine insanity produced by any cause, then so far as affecting the prisoner, it is the same as any

[1] People *v.* Klein, 1 Edm. 13, 26, and see also People *v.* Divine, id., 594, 606; McFarland's Trial, 8 Abb. Pr. N. S., 57. To the contrary, People *v.* Montgomery, 13 Abb. Pr. N. S., 207, and cases cited.

[2] McFarland's Trial, 8 Abb. Pr. N. S., 57; Revoir *v.* State, 82 Wis., 295; Smith *v.* Com. 93 Ky., 318.

[3] People *v.* Foy, 138 N. Y., 664; s. c., 53 N. Y. St. Repr., 265; People *v.* Nolan, 7 N. Y. Cr. R., 134.

[4] 138 N. Y., 664.

other kind of insanity. The heat of passion and feeling produced by motives of anger, hatred, or revenge is not insanity. The law holds the doer of the act under such conditions responsible for the crime." The prisoner was convicted of murder in the first degree and sentenced to death. On appeal the charge was held proper and the judgment was affirmed.

In People *v.* Nolan[1] the defendant was indicted for murder in the first degree. He had been living with a prostitute who supported him to a certain extent. One day she refused to do so any longer. A short time before the crime he found another man in her room, went away, purchased a pistol, returned to the house, called her to come down-stairs, and, when she came, shot her five times, from which she died. He fled and, when subsequently arrested, stated that he had shot the deceased because "she had shook" him, he was angry and did not know what he did. The defence was insanity. On the trial it appeared that when a small boy he fell from a banister and hit his head, remaining unconscious a couple of hours; that shortly after his mother's death, he then being twelve years of age, he woke up in the night and told his brother that he had seen his mother; and this occurred somewhat frequently since, especially two weeks before the shooting; that when he was seventeen years old he was overcome by the heat; whether he became unconscious or not, could not be remembered by his brother, who gave these statements as witness, but he remembered that defendant was then sick about a week. The latter, at the time of the trial, was about twenty-three years of age, and had been a hard drinker. Defendant was convicted of murder in the first degree. On appeal it was held that the evidence in chief was sufficient to justify the verdict, and that the evidence above quoted was entirely insufficient to prove insanity, and the judgment was affirmed.[2]

Frenzy, induced by violent passion, unless settled down into a state of total derangement, will not excuse the commission of an offence.[3] Uncontrollable frenzy does not excuse, unless it be that of madness or mental alienation.[4] Passion and malice do not show insanity.[5]

[1] 7 N. Y. Cr. R., 134.
[2] 115 N. Y., 660.
[3] Pienovi's Case, 3 City H. Rec. (N. Y.), 123.
[4] Cole's Trial, 7 Abb. Pr. N. S., 321.
[5] Deas *v.* Wandell, 3 Supm. Ct. (T. and C.), 128.

Adultery will not justify a homicide, though it is a provocation of the gravest character. Whether it is murder or manslaughter for a husband to kill his wife, when taken in the act of adultery, depends on whether the act was done with intent to kill or in the heat of passion engendered by the sudden discovery, and without intent to kill.[1] The overwhelming conviction of domestic dishonor, although not such as to prevent him from discriminating between right and wrong, may nevertheless deprive the slayer's act of premeditation and thus reduce the crime to manslaughter in the third degree.[2]

In People *v.* Osmond[3] the defendant was indicted for the murder of his wife. The defence was insanity. His wife had entertained for a long time improper relations with one Burchell. After defendant discovered these relations, he failed for months to make even an attempt to punish Burchell or his wife, but continued his intimate and daily association with both, although constantly complaining of this discovery. The rooms where he lived were a part of the house occupied and owned by Burchell. The defendant, his wife, and Burchell went together on excursions, and Burchell paid the expenses with defendant's acquiescence. One day he shot and killed his wife and Burchell, who was with her. Defendant testified that he remembered with distinctness all that took place at the interview in which the killing occurred up to the moment when he saw Burchell "nudge his wife's knee," but that from that time during several hours and at intervals his mind was a blank, except that he heard a shot before Burchell struck him, and that the pistol went off toward the corner where the latter was shot. Defendant's father, stepmother, and brother testified that he was somewhat nervous, irritable, and excited over the behavior of his wife.

The defence set up was the insanity of the defendant at the very moment of the killing, or, if not insane, that his mind was then in such a weak condition as to have been overcome, and that he was incapable of forming an intent to commit murder, and therefore his crime, if anything, was a lesser offence.

The district attorney asked a medical witness called by him

[1] Shufflin *v.* People, 62 N.Y., 229; s. c., 20 Am. R., 483, affirming 4 Hun, 16; s. c., 6 Supm. Ct. (T. and C.), 215. See also 3 Hun, 515; s. c., 5 Supm. Ct. (T. and C.), 572.

[2] Cole's Trial, 7 Abb. Pr. N. S., 321.

[3] 138 N. Y., 80.

whether there was any form of insanity known to the medical profession where the mind temporarily comes and goes, leaving in the middle a blank. The question was objected to and admitted on the ground that it was a hypothetical question. The answer was given in the negative. The defendant was convicted of murder in the first degree.

On appeal the judgment was affirmed. Judge Peckham, writing the opinion for the court, stated that here was no such case as a husband suddenly confronted with proofs of his wife's infidelity, but a full and clear knowledge of it for months before the killing and an intimate and daily association with both the guilty parties.

The court also held that when the defence is temporary insanity, or, if not insane, that defendant's mind was so weak that he was incapable of forming an intent to commit murder, evidence on cross-examination of defendant's brother as to whether he would regard defendant's actions as irrational if he were nervous or irritable after divorce papers had been served on him, was proper though unimportant; and also that evidence of acts of infidelity on the part of the wife were not admissible to show the state of defendant's mind unless such acts were known to him.

INTERMEDIATE STATES BETWEEN SANITY AND INSANITY.

Judge Cox, in charging the jury in the celebrated trial of Guiteau for murdering President Garfield, said that there is a debatable border line between the sane and the insane, and there is often great difficulty in determining on which side of it a party is to be placed. It is in these cases that the difficulty arises of determining whether the patient has passed the line of moral or legal accountability for his actions.[1] Some cases on this point may here be given. The Court of Appeals of New York has held that incipient insanity is not a sufficient excuse from criminal liability under the New York Penal Code, section 21, if the accused has still the ability to form a correct perception of the legal quality of his act and to know that it is wrong.[2]

[1] 10 Fed. Rep., 161.

[2] People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398; s. c., 52 N. Y. St. R., 914.

In a recent New York case, one Brush was indicted upon the charge of attempted murder. On the trial evidence was given that he imagined that some waiters in a restaurant in New York City, which he frequented, had drugged his food. He therefore complained to the proprietor, who remonstrated, and he then became violent and aggressive. On being removed by force from the premises he drew a pistol and attempted to shoot those about him. Examined by the physicians of the Tombs, he was pronounced insane and sent to the State Homœopathic Asylum for the Insane. After a detention of a few weeks he petitioned for his release on the ground of recovery of sanity. The Commissioners of Lunacy, by Hon. John Ordronaux, expressed the opinion that his case belonged to the borderland of insanity, that his condition showed physical paradoxes which indicated weakness and instability of the brain. He had led a roving life, exhibiting unsteadiness of purpose. An uncle and an aunt were insane. He was oscillating between insanity and imperfect soundness; any disturbance of health might cause him to cross the boundary. Nevertheless, in a quiet, disciplined mode of life, he would undoubtedly possess the legal competency necessary for the exercise of all his civil rights. The petitioner had been not strictly speaking, insane as laboring under a [illegible] which led him to irrepressible violence [illegible] because of the existing state of mental weakness [illegible] symptoms of hypochondriasis. No other symptoms had [illegible] his actions in the asylum and his natural condition [illegible] The Commissioners recommended that [illegible] further observed during a few weeks, and then dismissed. He was accordingly later discharged. 1877.[1]

It was held in Connecticut that a person may be responsible [illegible] is mentally incapable of a careful weighing [illegible] in order to reach a decision."[2]

And it was held in Illinois that evidence that defendant, indicted for [illegible] his wife, was in trouble with his family and was [illegible] in mind and perhaps somewhat excited, is not sufficient to raise a reasonable doubt as to his sanity.[3]

In Williams v. State Williams was indicted for the murder

[illegible] A. Brush, 8 Abb. N. [illegible]

[2] Montague v. People, 141 Ill., 75.

[3] 50 Ark., 511.

[illegible] 77 Iowa, 466; s. [illegible]

of a woman. His defence was insanity. He had, when a child, received a wound on the head followed by a fever, which rendered him liable to attacks of insanity, according to expert testimony, in case of exciting causes. He was quiet, religious, and chaste up to the time of his acquaintance with deceased who led him astray. He was nervous, had personal pride, extreme vanity, with great regard for the opinions of others. On the day of the shooting he was greatly excited by being arrested with deceased on a charge of larceny, and exhibited peculiar facial expressions. He went to deceased's room, locked the door, and shot both her and himself. Being besieged, he again tried to shoot himself and exhibited extraordinary strength. On his person was found a telegram announcing his death, and another paper in his handwriting, stating that he had lost all and the respect of all, this being the cause of his "rash act," and he determined to end his life with the one he loved. Experts testified that he was completely deprived of the control of his mental faculties. The plea of insanity was rejected. He was found guilty of murder in the second degree, and sentenced accordingly.

EPILEPSY AND KINDRED DISEASES.

It has frequently been held that epilepsy alone does not establish insanity which will excuse from crime.[1] In Commonwealth *v.* Buccieri[2] the defendant was indicted upon a charge of murder. The defence was epileptic insanity. He had been injured by an explosion and taken to a hospital. He asked there a fellow-patient to lend him his knife and requested him to open it as his left hand was disabled. About this time a sister of charity who had been nursing him came in with a glass of milk which she left by his bedside and went out again. Defendant got up, followed her into an adjoining room and stabbed her. She attempted to escape and ran into the sick-ward. He pursued her and stabbed her again, causing her death. The patient who lent him the knife raised a chair to strike him; then he stopped and gave the knife back.

[1] Lovegrove *v.* State, 31 Tex. Crim. Rep., 491; s. c., 21 S. W. Rep., 191. Compare Walsh *v.* People, 88 N. Y., 458; Hall *v.* Com. (Pa.), 12 Atl. Rep., 163; Fogarty *v.* State, 80 Ga., 450; s. c., 5 S. E. Rep., 782; Com. *v.* Buccieri, 153 Pa. St., 535; s. c., 32 W. N. C., 113, 26 Atl. Rep., 228; State *v.* Alexander, 30 S. C., 74.

[2] 153 Pa. St., 535.

It was proved that defendant was an epileptic, and it was proved that the tendency of the disease was to weaken the intellect. The evidence, however, did not show that his intellect had been impaired or that he had been affected on the day of the murder. He had had one attack of epilepsy at the hospital five weeks before. A witness who knew the prisoner intimately for five years had only on two occasions seen him act maniacally and had never seen him have an epileptic attack. No motive for the crime was shown except that two or three days before the occurrence defendant had stated he did not like the sister.

Defendant having offered evidence that he was subject to epileptic fits, from which he frequently fell and lay in a stupor and that on recovery his mind was disordered, it was held proper for the Commonwealth to call witnesses who lived near and saw him often, to prove that they never saw him have an epileptic attack, but often saw him drunk and in a drunken stupor, and that it was for the jury to determine whether or not the alleged symptoms of epileptic insanity were only drunken prostration. It was also held that a reputable physician of over twenty years' experience, who saw defendant about an hour after the homicide [illegible] and treated his arm, which had been injured, was competent to testify that there were no indications of a recent epileptic convulsion, and that, if there had been one within twenty or three hours, he did not think it possible that he would not then have seen some evidence of it. A witness called by defendant to give an opinion as to his sanity who was a native of the same town in Italy as defendant and had known him there knew he there had epileptic attacks, frequently, and knew that he was discharged from the army on account of them. Witness came to this country about four years after defendant and lived twelve miles distant from him; saw him sometimes [illegible] him. He knew that at times defendant was attacked with epilepsy, the last attack he knew of being seven or eight months before the homicide, and the last time he had seen defendant was four months previous thereto. Held that witness's information was not sufficient to render him competent to testify as to defendant's mental condition at the time of the homicide.

The court further held that the general charge was not unfair to defendant, when his defence, insanity, as well as the

alleged cause of it, epilepsy, were prominently brought to the attention of the jury, though it was assumed that the evidence did not show a motive for the crime; but the jury were told that in considering the other evidence of insanity they might consider the enormity of the crime and the absence of motive, and this, though the trial court charged that the enormity of the crime was of itself not evidence of insanity.

The defence being epileptic insanity, a combination of physical and mental infirmities, and defendant having been on the stand to testify to his own insanity, the court said it was proper, in referring to the evidence on this question, to direct the jury to consider the appearance and conduct of defendant along with the other evidence. The conviction was affirmed.

PARTIAL INSANITY.

General Principle.

"There are cases in which a man's mental faculties generally seem to be in full vigor, but on some one subject he seems to be deranged. He is possessed, perhaps, with a belief which every one recognizes as absurd, which he has reasoned himself into, and cannot be reasoned out of, which we call an insane delusion; or he has, in addition, some morbid propensity, seemingly in harsh discord with the rest of his intellectual and moral nature. This class of cases, for want of a better term, is called 'partial insanity.'"[1]

"Until quite recently, the course of practice in the English criminal courts has been in strict conformity to the doctrines laid down by Lord Hale, that partial insanity is no excuse for the commission of illegal acts. For instance, in the trial of Arnold, in 1723, for shooting at Lord Onslow, Mr. Justice Tracey observed 'that it is not every kind of a frantic humor, or something uncontrollable in a man's actions, that points him out to be such a madman as is exempted from punishment; it must be a man that is totally deprived of his understanding and memory, and doth not know what he is doing, no more than an infant, than a brute or a wild beast, such a one is never the object of punishment.'"[2]

[1] Judge Cox in Guiteau's case, 10 Fed. Rep., 161.

[2] 8 Hargrave's State Trials, sec. 322, quoted in Ray, "Med. Jur.," p. 14.

Dr. Ray then proceeds: "It appears, then, that the law at that time did not consider an insane person irresponsible for crime in whom there remained the slightest vestige of rationality, though it did then, and has ever since, deprived him of the management of himself and his affairs, and vitiates his civil acts even when they have no relation to the delusions that spring from his madness. That the progress of science and general enlightenment has produced no improvement of the law on this subject is abundantly shown in the strong declarations of Sir Vicary Gibbs, when Attorney-General of England, in the trial of Bollingham, in 1812. 'A man,' says he, 'may be deranged in his mind; his intellect may be insufficient for enabling him to conduct the common affairs of life, such as disposing of his property, or judging of the claims which his respective relations have upon him; and if he be so, the administration of the country will take his affairs into their management, and appoint to him trustees; but, at the same time, such a man is not discharged from responsibility for criminal acts' (Collinson on Lunacy, 657). Lord Erskine had previously given the same doctrine the sanction of his authority, in his celebrated speech in defence of Hatfield. 'I am bound,' he says, 'to admit that there is a wide distinction between civil and criminal cases. If, in the former, a man appears upon the evidence to be *non compos mentis*, the law avoids his act, though it cannot be traced or connected with the morbid imagination which constitutes his disease, and which may be extremely partial in its influence upon his conduct; but to deliver a man from responsibility for crime, above all for crimes of great atrocity and wickedness, I am by no means prepared to apply this rule, however well established, where property only is concerned.'"[1]

Some of the more recent authorities on this subject holding that partial insanity is not sufficient to exempt a person from criminal responsibility are as follows: "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law,"[2] People *v.* Taylor,[3] State *v.* Schaefer,[4] and State *v.* Harrison.[5]

[1] Ray, "Med. Jur.," vol. i., p. 16.
[2] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., pp. 695, 696.
[3] 138 N. Y., 398; s. c., 52 N. Y. St. R., 919.
[4] 116 Mo., 96; s. c., 22 S. W. R., 447.
[5] 36 W. Va., 729; s. c., 18 L. R. A., 224, 15 S. E. R., 982.

To establish an excuse for crime, the (partial) insanity must refer to the particular act committed, and the insane person must have lost the consciousness of right and wrong.[1] While mental unsoundness, to render one irresponsible, need not be furious nor manifested alike on all subjects, it must be such on the particular subject out of which the acts charged as an offence are claimed to have sprung, as to render him incapable, by reason thereof, of discerning the wrong committed, and it must be shown that the acts resulted from such unsoundness.[2]

In State *v.* Harrison[3] it was held that an instruction that to convict, the jury must find that the accused "was capable of knowing the nature and consequences of his act, and if he did know, then that he knew that he was doing wrong, and that so knowing," he shot decedent, "with the wilful, deliberate, and premeditated purpose of killing her," is not erroneous as showing that sanity is shown by capacity to distinguish right from wrong, regardless of the power to choose between right and wrong.

The court also held that an instruction that, in order to constitute crime, a man must have capacity and intelligence enough to have a criminal intent and purpose, and if his reason and mental powers are either so deficient that he has no will, no conscience, or controlling mental power; or if, through the overwhelming effect of mental disease, his intellectual power is for the time obliterated, he is not a responsible moral agent, and is not punishable for criminal acts, is obscure in meaning, and its refusal and the giving of an instruction that insanity is a full legal defence is proper.

Moral Insanity.

Partial insanity is also sometimes denominated "moral insanity." The species of insanity called by some moral or emotional insanity has no foundation in law, and constitutes no defence for the commission of crime.[4]

[1] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 696; Flanagan *v.* People, 52 N. Y., 467; s. c., 11 Am. R., 731.

[2] U. S. *v.* Faulkner, 35 Fed. Rep., 730; Anderson *v.* State, 25 Neb., 550; s. c., 41 N. W. Rep., 357; State *v.* Harrison, 36 W. Va., 729; s. c., 18 L. R. A., 224, 15 S. E., 982; State *v.* Schaefer, 116 Mo., 96; s. c., 22 S. W. Rep., 447; State *v.* Leehman, 2 S. D., 171; s. c., 49 N. W. Rep., 3.

[3] 36 W. Va., 729.

[4] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., *supra*. See N. Y. Penal Code, sec. 20; Flanagan *v.* People, 52 N. Y., 467; s. c., 11 Am. Rep., 731. Compare 13 Alb. L. J., 219, 225; People *v.* Wood, 126 N. Y., 269; s. c., 36 N. Y. St. R., 963.

ILLUSTRATIVE CASES.—Some illustrative cases relating to this alleged form of insanity are as follows: Moral insanity, as distinguished from mental derangement, is no excuse for crime, nor exemption from punishment therefor.[1]

In the New York case of Flanagan *v.* People[2] the defendant was convicted of murder in the first degree for killing his wife. The defence was insanity. In the Court of Appeals, Judge Andrews, in delivering the opinion of the court affirming the conviction said (as heretofore quoted): "We are asked in this case to introduce a new element into the rule of criminal responsibility in cases of alleged insanity, and to hold that the power of *choosing right from wrong* is as essential to legal responsibility as the capacity of *distinguishing between* them; and that the absence of the former is consistent with the presence of the latter. The argument proceeds upon the theory that there is a form of insanity in which the faculties are so disordered and deranged that a man, though he perceives the moral quality of his acts, is unable to control them, and is urged by some mysterious pressure to the commission of acts the consequences of which he anticipates but cannot avoid. Whatever medical or scientific authority there may be for this view, it has not been accepted by courts of law."

In Maryland, in Spencer *v.* State,[3] Spencer was indicted for the crime of murder. The defence was emotional insanity. Deceased had assaulted the prisoner's wife before her marriage. After her death the defendant called upon him, induced him to take a walk with him, accused him then of the assault and shot him. Evidence was offered on behalf of the defence to show that the prisoner's wife attributed her illness to the assault, that her dead body with scars inflicted by the deceased would appear to the prisoner in his dreams; that he was haunted with the idea that he would have no peace of mind until he had killed her assailant, the deceased, and that since the killing he had found rest and quiet. The court refused to admit this evidence, and the prisoner was found guilty and sentenced.

On appeal it was held no error to exclude such evidence without other proof of insanity, and the judgment was sustained.

[1] People *v.* Kerrigan, 73 Cal., 222; s. c., 14 Pac. R., 349; State *v.* Levelle, 34 S. C., 120; s. c., 13 S. E. R., 319.

[2] 52 N. Y., 469.

[3] 69 Md., 28; s. c., 13 Atl. R., 809.

In England, Christina Edmunds, aged forty-three, was charged with the wilful murder of a little boy named Barker. The boy ate some chocolate-creams, which were bought at a respectable confectioner's shop; half an hour after, he died with the symptoms of poisoning with strychnine. The presence of the alkaloid was subsequently detected in the contents of his stomach. It was proved that the prisoner had obtained a considerable amount of strychnine under false pretenses, had got possession of the druggist's poison-book, and had torn out leaves which recorded the purchase. It appeared that she incorporated part of the poison with some chocolate-creams, and then asked a small boy to purchase some more creams for her; when he brought them she said they were too large, and sent them back to be changed. Unknown to the boy she substituted poison creams, which, when returned to the confectioner, were placed with his ordinary stock *to be sold in due course*. One or more of these poisoned sweets caused the death of the boy Barker, who was totally unknown to the prisoner. She also distributed poisoned sweets to many children who became ill. At the inquest, which was held on the body of the deceased (before being suspected of the crime), she volunteered evidence in order to implicate the confectioner who had sold the sweets; she also wrote anonymous letters to the father of the deceased, inciting him to take legal proceedings against the confectioner. This was not done through malice toward the man, but to divert suspicion from herself. She had previously been accused of endeavoring to poison a lady, for whose husband she had conceived a regard, and the whole of this elaborately carried out public poisoning was apparently the result of a scheme to make it evident that the lady's indisposition was also due to poisoned sweets, owing to carelessness of the confectioner. It was proved in evidence that the prisoner's father on two occasions had been under restraint and that he died in an asylum; that one brother had epilepsy and died in Earlswood Asylum; that a sister was hysterical and had tried to throw herself out of a window, and that other members of the family had suffered from various psychoses. Expert physicians were called to prove that the prisoner was morally insane: she was without intellectual defect and was free from delusions, but she was indifferent to her position and to the enormity of her crime. She was found

guilty and was sentenced to death, but the sentence was subsequently changed to detention in Broadmoor Asylum.[1]

Another case, related in Mann's "Forensic Medicine," is the following: A man, who in his youth was sullen, uncommunicative, idle, sly, and treacherous, at an early age evinced a disposition to torture domestic animals and to treat cruelly younger members of the family. On one occasion he took a younger brother into the fields, undressed him, beat him with long lithe willows, and bit and scratched him about the arms and upper part of the body, threatening to kill him with a table knife if he cried out. Shortly after he was apprehended for cutting the throat of a horse belonging to a neighbor, and confessed that he had maimed several other animals, and had twisted the necks of fowls and then concealed them in wood piles; he was sentenced to twelve months' imprisonment. On his discharge from prison he attempted to suffocate a little child by piling clothing, etc., on the top of it; he then stole some money from his father's desk, for which act he was sentenced to seven years in a penitentiary. After his liberation, being again at home, he saw his father accidentally cut his hand so that it bled profusely; this seemed to excite him, and he went to a neighboring farmyard and cut the throat of a horse, killing it. He escaped, and, whilst hiding in a wood, saw a young girl, seized her and committed a criminal assault on her. After being about ten years in prison for this offence he was set free, and on his way home from prison he caught a horse, tied it to a telegraph pole and mutilated it in a shocking manner, cutting a terrible gash in the neck, another in the abdomen, and taking a piece off the end of its tongue. For this he was tried and acquitted on the ground of insanity, and was transferred to an asylum. After being there for five years he made his escape, and was only absent from the asylum about an hour when he overtook and attempted to outrage a young girl almost in sight of the pursuing attendants. Besides all this he was guilty of innumerable acts of cruelty to fellow-patients in the asylum, and also to dogs, cats, fowls, etc.; he was a great coward and was never known to attack any person that would be likely to offer resistance. The sight of blood had a strange effect on this man; his face

[1] Regina *v.* Edmunds, C. C. C. 1872, quoted in J. Dixon Mann, "Forensic Medicine," etc., Philadelphia, 1893.

grew pallid, he became nervous and restless, and, unless watched, lost control over himself and indulged in the proclivities for which he was notorious. If so situated that he could not indulge his evil propensities he was quiet and a useful man; he had had a fair education and enjoyed reading the newspapers and letters sent to him.[1]

In Walker *v.* People[2] Walker was indicted for the crime of abduction of Katie Hennessy. The defence was insanity. The defendant had enticed the girl, aged about eight years, from the street in front of her parents' house in New York, and had taken her to the upper part of the city. The attention of a passer-by having been attracted to Walker and the girl, he questioned the child, who said the man was not her father, that he was taking her away, and that she wanted to go home. Walker was then arrested. Katie Hennessy testified that while she and the prisoner were together on the street railroad, he had put his hands under her clothes. The prison physicians Hardy and Jackson testified that they believed from examinations of, and conversations with, the prisoner, that he was insane; that he did not recognize the gravity of his offence, was afraid of the people in the prison, was wandering and disconnected in his conversation, was subject to delusions as to an imaginary conspiracy of chemists against him, on account of valuable discoveries he had made; that his manner was nervous and uneasy, and that he was suffering from chronic mania. Dr. Spitzka, as witness, declared that the prisoner was perfectly sane and was shamming insanity. Defendant had been previously sentenced for rape to a term of ten years in the state prison at Trenton, N. J., where it was thought he feigned insanity—and had also been confined in the New York City prison on a charge of assault on a young woman.

In the abduction case, the prisoner was convicted and sentenced to the State prison for the term of ten years. On appeal to the New York General Term, Justice Davis expressed the following opinion: "Where the defence of insanity is interposed to an indictment, the true test of criminal responsibility is whether the accused had sufficient reason to know right from

[1] Hack Tuke, Journal of Mental Science, 1886; J. Dixon Mann, "Forensic Medicine," Phila., 1893.

[2] 26 Hun, 67; s. c., 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 7.

wrong. If he had sufficient intelligence to know it, whether he had sufficient power to control or govern his actions is a matter of no moment whatever."

In the Court of Appeals, the opinion of Justice Davis was approved and the judgment of conviction was again affirmed.[1]

In United States *v.* Faulkner[2] the defendant was indicted for mailing obscene matter. Insanity was interposed as a defence, and it was claimed that by reason of masturbation he had become mentally irresponsible. The court charged the jury to the effect that the unsoundness, to relieve from crime, must refer positively to the offense charged and deprive the accused of the capacity of discerning that the act committed was wrong.

Impulsive Insanity.

The circumstance of a person having acted under an irresistible influence in the commission of a crime is no defence, if at the time he committed the act he knew he was doing wrong.[3]

The Penal Code of the State of New York (section 23) provides that a morbid propensity to commit prohibited acts, existing in the mind of a person who is not shown to have been incapable of knowing the wrongfulness of such acts, forms no defence to a prosecution therefor.[4]

In People *v.* Coleman[5] the defendant was indicted for murder. On the trial insanity was pleaded, and Justice Davis charged the jury as follows: "In this State the test of responsibility for criminal acts, where insanity is asserted, is whether at the time of doing the act which is the subject of inquiry the accused knew what he was doing, and whether at the time and with respect to that act he had the capacity to distinguish between right and wrong. A criminal act cannot be excused upon the theory of irresistible impulse where the offender knew

[1] 88 N. Y., 81.

[2] 35 Fed. Rep., 730.

[3] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., *supra.*

[4] Flanagan *v.* People, 52 N. Y., 467; People *v.* Walworth, 4 N. Y. Cr. Rep., 355; People *v.* Coleman, 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 1; People *v.* Waltz, 50 How. Pr., 214; People *v.* Carpenter, 1 N. Y. St. R., 648; s. c., 102 N. Y., 250, 4 N. Y. Cr. R., 187; Willis *v.* People, 32 N. Y., 715; People *v.* Otto, 38 Hun, 99; s. c., 4 N. Y. Cr. R., 154; Moett *v.* People, 85 N. Y., 379; People *v.* Casey, 31 Hun, 158, reversed on other grounds in 96 N. Y., 115; People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398.

[5] 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 1

what he was doing and had the ability to discover his legal and moral duty in respect to it."

In People *v.* Walworth,[1] the defendant was indicted for the killing of his father, the well-known novelist, Mansfield Tracy Walworth. The latter had been estranged from the defendant, as well as all his family, for a series of years. He had shown a bad and violent conduct toward them, and, living separated from his family, used to write outrageous letters and to utter violent threats to them. In the last week of May, 1873, the defendant was invited by his uncle to accompany him to Europe. On the 31st of the same month he learned by a letter written to his mother by the deceased that the latter interposed an obstacle to the visit to Europe then contemplated by him. He then decided to see his father personally, for the purpose of removing the obstacle and at the same time to relieve, if possible, himself and his mother from the danger which he feared from his father, especially as to her safety during his absence. On Monday, the 3d of June, 1873, he went from Saratoga, where he lived with his mother, to New York. Here he had an interview with his father at the Sturtevant House, being then alone with him in a room, and, when he felt the result not a satisfactory one, killed him, firing four shots at him. After the deed he told the hotel clerk that he had killed his father by four shots, and asked him to send for the police. Then he dictated to the officer who arrested him a telegram to his uncle: "I have shot father. Look after mother."

The defendant asserted on the trial that he had had no intention of killing the deceased. At the hotel, he said, he requested his father to promise that he would neither shoot his mother nor insult her, nor any of the family any further. The father answered "I promise," but with a look which implied contempt and the reverse of intent to keep the promise, after having just put his hand up to his breast as if to pull out a pistol. Then the defendant fired. He said he remembered only that he fired three times. The question of insanity was raised, by the claim that he acted under an uncontrollable impulse, and especially by pointing out that he did not recollect the number of his shots. The charge delivered by Justice Davis to the jury contained the following: "If it be satisfactorily shown that the

[1] 4 N. Y. Cr. Rep., 355.

accused at the time of committing the act had not the capacity to understand what he was doing, and to know the consequences of his act, and to know that it was wrong, then he is excused. But if he had capacity sufficient to know the legal and moral character of the act he was doing, the fact that he alleges that he had not the control of his will in respect to it, but that his will was controlled by irresistible impulse, is no defence."

The jury found the defendant guilty of murder in the second degree, and he was sentenced to imprisonment in the State prison at hard labor for the term of his natural life. His sentence was after several years' imprisonment commuted by the governor and he was discharged.

In People v. Taylor[1] the defendant had been sentenced to Dannemora prison upon a conviction for burglary, for a term of three years, which expired in the summer of 1888, having received the usual commutation for good behavior. Very soon after his discharge and in the same year, he was returned to the prison to serve out two sentences for burglary, aggregating about eleven years. From the time of his readmission his conduct was exemplary, with a single exception, when, on April 25th, 1890, without provocation or warning, he assaulted his keeper with a hatchet and felled him to the floor. The prison physician stated that he had melancholia, with suicidal and homicidal impulses. On September 24th, 1890, he was transferred to the asylum for insane criminals at Auburn. On September 7th, 1891, he was, as "not insane," returned to the prison. The medical superintendent of the asylum stated that during this year he was sane, while his assistant was of the opinion that during all the time there was doubt as to his sanity. From the readmission his record was good. He had friendly relations with Solomon Johnson, a fellow-convict, but in the month of April, 1892, he exhibited, without any apparent cause, a feeling of great hostility to him, and during the summer he threatened frequently to kill him. On September 19th, 1892, he effected a reconciliation with Johnson, and the next afternoon he lured him into a shed under the shop where they used to work, upon the pretense that he had some contraband articles to show him, and there killed him with a knife which he had concealed upon his person. Without any emotion he confessed

[1] 135 N. Y., 398.

his deed, stating that he had had to do one of three things, either starve to death or kill the deceased or himself, and he did it in order "to be electrocuted."

He was indicted for murder in the first degree. At his trial he was subjected to medical examination. Three physicians stated his case as melancholia, with homicidal and suicidal delusions; five physicians declared him sane. The defence was insanity. It appeared he had suspected that the deceased was a spy to watch him, and that he had denounced to the prison officers a plan which the defendant had made to escape from the prison. The jury found him guilty. He was sentenced to death and appealed. Judge Maynard, in delivering the opinion for the Court of Appeals affirming the judgment of conviction, said: "Proof on the trial of an indictment for murder that there existed in the mind of the defendant an insane delusion with reference to the conduct and attitude of the deceased will not excuse the homicide, unless the delusion was of such a character that if it had been true it would have rendered the act excusable or justifiable." Accordingly it was held that proof on trial of such an indictment of the existence of a delusion in the mind of the defendant that the deceased was acting as a spy upon the defendant and had betrayed a plan of escape, did not affect the criminal nature of the act. Under the provision of the Penal Code (section 21) proof of partial or incipient insanity is not sufficient to require an acquittal, if there was still the ability to form a correct perception of the quality of the act, and to know that it was wrong.

Under the Michigan Penal Code (sections 19, 20), uncontrollable and insane impulse to commit a crime, in the mind of one who is conscious of the nature and quality of the act, or that it was wrong, is not allowed as a defence.[1]

Irresistible impulse is no defence if defendant could distinguish between right and wrong.[2]

[1] State *v.* Scott, 41 Minn., 365; s. c., 43 N. W. R., 62.

[2] State *v.* Miller, 111 Mo., 542; s. c., 20 S. W. R., 243. To the same effect: State *v.* Pagels, 92 Mo., 300; s. c., 4 S. W. R., 931; Leache *v.* State (Tex.), 3 S. W. R., 539; State *v.* Harrison, 36 W. Va., 729; s. c., 18 L. R. A., 224, 15 S. E. R., 982; State *v.* Mowry (Kan.), 15 Pac. Rep., 282; State *v.* McIntosh, 40 S. C., 349; s. c., 17 S. E. R., 446; People *v.* Clendennin, 91 Cal., 35; s.c., 27 Pac. R., 418; State *v.* Levelle, 34 S. C., 120; 13 S. E. R., 319; Bolling *v.* State, 54 Ark., 588; s. c., 16 S. W. R., 658; Thomas *v.* State, 71 Miss., 345; s. c., 15 So. R., 287; Patterson *v.* State, 86 Ga., 70; s. c., 12 S. E. R., 174.

In Thomas *v.* State[1] it was held that though defendant, a[illegible] apparently without motive and without provocation, shot d[illegible] deceased while the latter was disputing with a third person, t[illegible] the fact that he was subject to temporary, uncontrollable impuls[illegible]ulses to injure any one in front of him is not available as a defen[illegible]nce, his condition at the time not being shown.

In State *v.* Harrison[2] the defendant was indicted for m[illegible]nur-der. The defence was insanity, viz., irresistible impulse. [illegible] He was a homeless wanderer and was taken in by a family to [illegible]o do odd jobs. He fell in love with his employer's daughter, a ch[illegible]child of the age of fifteen. She refused to have anything to do w[illegible]with him, and he became very jealous of her other male acquaintanc[illegible]nces. He secretly procured a pistol, went to a shop and purchased c[illegible] car-tridges and laudanum, and then returned to the house of [illegible] his employer and shot the girl. He was subsequently found in [illegible]n the woods suffering from the effects of laudanum. On being qu[illegible]ques-tioned he claimed that he did not know why he did the [illegible] act. Convicted and sentenced, he appealed. On the appeal, Just[illegible]stice Brannon, in sustaining the conviction, expressed the follow[illegible]ving opinion: "This irresistible-impulse theory test has been o[illegible]only recently presented, and while it is supported by plausible ar[illegible]rgu-ments, it is rather refined, and introduces what seems to m[illegible]ne a useless element of distinction for a test, and is misleading[illegible]g to juries, and fraught with great danger to human life, so mu[illegible]uch so that even its advocates have warningly said it should [illegible]l be very cautiously applied and only in the clearest cases. W[illegible]What is this irresistible impulse? How shall we of the courts [illegible] and juries know it? Does it exist when manifested in one single [illegible]e in-stance, as in the present case, or must it be shown to be hal[illegible]abit-ual, or at least to have evinced itself in more than a single [illegible]e in-stance? . . . I admit the existence of irresistible impulse a[illegible]s and its efficacy to exonerate from responsibility, but not as consi[illegible]sist-ent with an adequate realization of the wrong of the act. It [illegible] It is that uncontrollable impulse produced by the disease of [illegible] the mind, when that disease is sufficient to override judgment a[illegible] and obliterate the sense of right as to the acts done, and depriv[illegible]rives the accused of power to choose between them."

In South Carolina,[3] on a trial for murder where the [illegible] *de-*fence was irresistible impulse, it was shown that the defend[illegible]*ant*

[1] 71 Miss., 345. [2] 36 W. Va., 729. [3] State *v.* Alexander, 30 S. C., *74.*

suffered from St. Vitus' dance (chronic chorea), which affected his physical condition; how far it affected his mind the witnesses were not agreed. The defence requested the court to charge the jury that if by reason of mental derangement the prisoner had not power to control the disposition or impulse to commit the deed, he should be acquitted. The court refusing to do so, charged that mere *mental weakness was not sufficient to exempt* one from responsibility; that it required insanity, and insanity to the extent of destroying a knowledge of the moral and legal wrongfulness of the act, to have that effect. The prisoner was found guilty, and on appeal the charge was approved and the judgment was affirmed.

In Nebraska,[1] on a trial for assault with intent to murder, where the defendant pleaded as insanity, uncontrollable impulse, the court delivered the following charge to the jury: "In order to acquit, it is not sufficient that you find the prisoner insane. If you find from the evidence . . . that at the time he did the cutting he had a sufficient degree of reason to discern the difference between moral good and evil, then he is responsible for his acts, and you should so find by your verdict. If, however, you find from the evidence that at the time the prisoner committed the offence charged he acted under an irresistible impulse and at the time was unable to distinguish between right and wrong, then you should acquit." The defendant was convicted and sentenced. On appeal, this charge was held proper and the judgment sustained.

In Georgia[2] one Fogarty was indicted for assault with intent to kill. The defence was irresistible impulse, and it was proved that he was subject to epileptic attacks. The court refused to charge that: "If defendant committed the assault, knowing it to be wrong, when driven to it by an uncontrollable and irresistible impulse, not from natural passion, but from an unsound condition of mind, he is not criminally responsible." The verdict was guilty, and on appeal the conviction and ruling of the trial court were sustained.

In an English case (Regina *v.* Cooper, Norwich Assizes, 1887) the prisoner (one Cooper) was a curate who, without any reason whatever, murdered his vicar, who was paralyzed,

[1] Burgo *v.* State, 26 Neb., 639; s. c., 42 N. W. R., 701.

[2] Fogarty *v.* State, 80 Ga., 450; s. c., 5 S. E. R., 782.

him how to use this knowledge. We have cited above these decisions in question in another connection, and it was said that "insanity, as a defence to a criminal prosecution, implies that the man did not know the act he was committing to be unlawful and morally wrong, and had not sufficient reason to apply such knowledge, and be controlled by it." [1] And again that "if some controlling disease was in truth the acting power within him, or if he had not a sufficient use of his reason to control his passions which prompted the act complained of, he is not responsible. The power of distinguishing between right and wrong, in reference to the act, is not alone decisive." [2] These decisions, however, being, as was said above, exceptional at their time, have been since overruled,[3] and are now precluded from being followed by the text of the Penal Code, and the decisions of the highest court.

In some of the other States the courts have admitted evidence of irresistible impulse as an excuse from crime. They preserve the general rule that to be irresponsible a man must be incapable of distinguishing right from wrong, but argue that this test is satisfied if he acted under an irresistible impulse;[4] or they eliminate the right and wrong test, recognizing such impulses as a defence, although existing with a knowledge of right and wrong. This view is shown by a quotation from the opinion, in Plake *v.* State,[5] given in reference to a conviction of assault with intent to kill. The court said: "Though accused had sufficient mental capacity to know right from wrong and to comprehend the nature and consequence of his acts, he is not criminally responsible, if in consequence of the diseased state of his mind he lack the will power to resist an impulse to commit crime." [6]

In South Carolina a similar principle, although not extended practically to its full consequences, is stated in the opinion given out in the following case, in reference to the special

[1] McFarland's Trial, 8 Abb. Pr. N. S., 57.

[2] People *v.* Kleim, 1 Edm., 13, 26; People *v.* Divine, id., 594, 606.

[3] See People *v.* Montgomery, 13 Abb. Pr. N. S., 207, etc.

[4] Com. *v.* Rogers, 7 Metc., 500; Bovard *v.* State, 30 Miss., 600; Brown *v.* Com., 78 Pa. St., 122.

[5] 121 Ind., 433; s. c., 23 N. E. Rep., 273.

[6] To the same effect: State *v.* Windsor, 5 Harr., 512; Dacey *v.* People, 116 Ill., 555; State *v.* Felter, 25 Iowa, 67; Smith *v.* Com., 1 Duv., 224; Blackburn *v.* State, 23 Ohio St., 146; Dejarnette *v.* Com., 75 Va., 867.

form of dipsomania. On an indictment for murder the defendant, one Potts, pleaded insanity, viz., irresistible impulse. The court charged: "If the jury believe the prisoner was a dipsomaniac, and by reason of the influence of such disease became so drunk as to be unconscious of his acts, and the act was done while in this condition, then the presumption of malice would be rebutted and the prisoner was guilty of manslaughter." The defendant was convicted. On appeal, this charge was held to be proper.[1]

Courts in other jurisdictions go still further. They not only eliminate entirely the right-and-wrong test, but assume that there is no legal test of insanity at all, and they consequently allow as a defence moral as well as impulsive insanity to its full extent. Such is the ruling of the New Hampshire and Alabama courts, established first by the former in State *v.* Pike,[2] which the latter followed, giving expression to the theory in an opinion which we cite here as far as it concerns the present subject:

"The capacity to distinguish between right and wrong either abstractly or as applied to the particular act, as a legal test of responsibility for crime, is repudiated by the modern and more advanced authorities, legal and medical, who lay down the following rules, which the court now adopts: (1) Where there is no such capacity to distinguish between right and wrong as applied to the particular act, there is no legal responsibility. (2) When there is such capacity, a defendant is nevertheless not legally responsible if, by reason of the 'duress' of mental disease, he has so far lost the 'power to choose' between right and wrong as not to avoid doing the act in question, so that his free agency was at the time destroyed; *and*, at the same time, the alleged crime was so connected with such mental disease, in the relation of cause and effect, as to have been the product or offspring of it solely."[3]

In a Kentucky case, which, although not directly bearing on the question of moral or impulsive insanity, is yet interesting, on an indictment for murder the court charged the jury: "That

[1] State *v.* Potts, 100 N. C., 457; s. c., 6 S. E. Rep., 657.

[2] 49 N. H., 399, overruled 56 N. H., 227. See "Selection of Cases," etc., by J. H. Beale, Cambridge, 1893, notes to Parson's case, 7 Am. Cr. Rep., 254.

[3] Parsons *v.* State, 81 Ala., 577; 7 Am. Cr. Rep., 254; 2 So. Rep., 854.

if defendant's mind was so feeble as not to enable him to distinguish between right and wrong, *or* if he had not sufficient power to control and govern his actions by reason of mental weakness, they should acquit." The prisoner was convicted of manslaughter. On appeal this charge was held correct.[1]

Melancholia and Mania.

The general principle above stated and illustrated was that partial insanity, as such, will not afford a legal excuse for crime unless the intellect of the accused is at the same time deprived of the knowledge of right and wrong in regard to the act in question. This principle applies equally to all varieties of partial insanity, and thus shows how far mania and melancholia are considered at law as causes of irresponsibility. In other words, their existence is by itself without any importance as to the question of guilt or innocence.

1. As to what concerns melancholia, we may be allowed instead of further explanation to refer to the most significant case of Taylor, cited above, who was convicted and sentenced, because he knew that his deed was contrary to social or legal commands. In the face of this fact, his being melancholic could not save him from the ordinary consequences which the law applies to the crime of murder. Besides being melancholic, he was subject to impulses manifesting themselves in morbid tendencies, both to homicide and suicide. When he killed his fellow-prisoner, he adopted this way of action as a certain though indirect way of getting rid of his own life. Yet the fact that his melancholia resulted in such powerful impulses could not add any strength to the arguments of the defence, as we have just seen.[2] Besides we may refer to the English case of Burton, where melancholia was also presented in unquestionable distinctness.[3] In this case the defendant also chose murder as the means of causing his own death, which he had not the personal courage to carry out himself.

The case of Reidell in Delaware is interesting on account of the conviction found by the jury, although the court was seem-

[1] Farris *v.* Com. Ky., 1886, 1 S. W. Rep., 729.

[2] People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398.

[3] Regina *v.* Burton, 3 F. and F., 772, see above.

ingly inclined to appreciate more fully the plea of melancholia made by the prisoner and testified to by the medical experts One Reidell was indicted for the murder of his wife. The defence of insanity was sustained by expert opinion as melancholia. The court charged to the effect that the jury should acquit if they believed the testimony as to the harmonious relations existing previously between the prisoner and his wife, together with the testimony of experts that the prisoner had at the time of the homicide the disease of melancholia that impaired his will power and rendered him likely at any time to commit such an act as he was charged with. The fact that he exhibited no remorse, but rather calm satisfaction following its commission, raised a reasonable doubt of the prisoner's sanity, which the testimony of witnesses as to his appearance and conduct did not remove. The jury, however, found him guilty, as stated above.[1]

2. In regard to mania the law requires, as before stated, that the same rule be applied as to melancholia: that to be excused from crime the accused must be unconscious of the wrongfulness of his act. The question of mania often arises in the courts in connection with temporary insanity, either as a single and isolated phenomenon or in the form of recurrent insanity. Again, in such cases, mania frequently presents the type of irresistible impulse. In this regard we have nothing further to note by addition to former statements of the law, except that it will easily be understood that transitory mania generally meets with no favorable consideration on the part of the courts. For it presents special difficulties even to medical science, and the danger of the abuse of such a plea is obvious. Of course, speaking of transitory mania, we do so in its proper sense, leaving apart those cases where any doubt could exist as to whether the abnormal state of mind might not be rather an excessive heat of passion or anger. Thus limited, such mania, as a defence, when occurring as a single phenomenon, will be much more difficult to establish in our courts than when a series of previous maniacal attacks can be shown. Yet it is a fact that transitory mania is acknowledged in principle as a full excuse for crime, though this has not always been the case. The practical difficulties of proof in a concrete case often paralyze the practical

[1] State *v.* Reidell, 9 Del., 470; s. c., 14 Atl. Rep., 550.

value of that principle. On the other hand, the existence of such a form of insanity was looked upon with great suspicion in the case of People *v.* Osmond.[1]

In People *v.* Casey[2] the defendant was indicted for murder in the first degree. He and his victim, one Comisky, had both been members of the police force of Long Island City. On the morning of the homicide, the former came to the station house from his duty and went into the back room. There he called another officer, and requested him to fix a revolver which he had in hand. There was then one ball cartridge in the chamber. After it was put in order, it was returned to the defendant, who inserted two more balls in the chambers. Then he returned to the front room where the deceased was sitting, and asked him why he was following him around nights. The deceased answered: "To make you do your duty." The defendant replied: "I will kill you dead," and immediately discharged the pistol once. The ball passed through the brain of the deceased, instantly killing him. When asked why he did it, the defendant said he could not help it, that the deceased had been following him around, and "Well, it can't be helped now, it is done." Insanity was interposed on the trial for a defence and many witnesses were examined on the subject. The jury rejected the plea. The defendant was convicted and sentenced.

The opinion given by Justice Dykman, on appeal, contained the following: "The test of responsibility for an act constituting a criminal offence is the capacity to distinguish between right and wrong at the time the act was committed, and in respect thereto; and a person cannot be held irresponsible upon the theory that capacity to distinguish right from wrong exists, without the power to choose between them." The judgment was affirmed.

In the following Texas case the plea of sudden aberration was rejected on the trial, but on the appeal held good. The defendant, one Massengale, indicted for having murdered his employer, interposed as a defence sudden mental aberration. The evidence shows that while sowing cotton, it was remarked by his employer that he was making too many skips. In half

[1] People *v.* Osmond, 138 N. Y., 80; s. c., 33 N. E. Rep., 739.

[2] 2 N. Y. Cr. R., 187.

an hour he left work, procured a pistol, came back muttering and swearing, and shot the deceased. There was also evidence to show that he had acted strangely for some time and was thought to be going crazy. He was convicted. On appeal his defence of insanity was later sustained and the conviction reversed.[1]

Here the defence was sustained by the earlier appearance of change of conduct. Proof of hereditary insanity is often of great importance in establishing a defence of this character.

In a Kentucky case the defendant was accused of murdering his father. The act was done without any apparent motive. The prisoner pleaded insanity but was unable to furnish direct proof as to his unsoundness. He offered to show that his mother, grandfather, and several near relatives were insane. This evidence was rejected and he was convicted. On appeal it was held that the proof offered by him was competent without other evidence than the act itself, to show that he was himself insane. Accordingly the conviction was reversed.[2]

Special attention should be given to such forms of transitory mania as occur in conditions of epilepsy and chorea, remembering what was stated above in connection with the mental states intermediate between defective sanity and unsoundness, viz.: that while no one will be excused from crime for the mere fact of being epileptic or afflicted with chronic chorea, this fact will nevertheless greatly avail the defence when temporary mania comes in question. For there is a close relation between epilepsy and insanity. In doubtful cases of this kind, great or even decisive weight is sometimes given by the courts to the apparent absence of a palpable motive.

In People *v.* Barber[3] the defendant was indicted for murder. The defence was insanity. While at the home of an aged farmer and in friendly conversation with the latter's wife, he suddenly and without warning struck him over the head, knocking him down, and when the old man got up, again knocked him down. He then went in the adjoining room and beat the wife to death. After that he set fire to the house by piling rugs on the old man, pouring the oil upon them from a lamp and then lighting them. Up to the time of the homicide, the

[1] Massengale *v.* State Tex., 1887, 6 S. W. Rep., 35.
[2] Murphy *v.* Com., 92 Ky., 485; s. c., 8 S. W. Rep., 163.
[3] 115 N. Y., 475; s. c., 26 N. Y. St. R., 184.

old couple and the accused were on the most friendly terms, and there was no evidence to show any motive for the crime. The family physician of the murderer testified that his brothers and sisters were all epileptics; that one of his aunts became insane on account of this disease; a great-uncle was drowned while in an epileptic seizure, and another relative committed suicide by hanging. The accused suffered from epileptic attacks up to the age of nine, but there was no evidence that he had suffered from them for eighteen years. There was, however, some evidence indicating nocturnal epilepsy, incontinence of urine, skin disease, and a nervous and haggard appearance, etc., for a year before the commission of the act. The court refused to charge the jury "that if no motive had been established for the crime it should be regarded as important on the question of epilepsy." The verdict was guilty, and he was sentenced. On appeal, it was held incorrect to refuse to so charge. Accordingly the judgment was reversed and a new trial granted. On the retrial he was convicted of murder in the second degree and sentenced to Auburn prison for life.

In a Pennsylvania case a reputable physician of over twenty years' experience, who saw defendant about an hour after the homicide at the station house and treated his arm which had been injured, was held to be competent to testify that there were no indications of a recent epileptic convulsion, and that if there had been one within two or three hours he did not think it possible that he would not then have seen some evidence of it. It was also held that where a physician was called as an expert as to the effect of epilepsy on the memory, and to show that there had not been such an impairment of defendant's mind as indicated epileptic insanity, it was proper to allow him to illustrate the soundness of defendant's memory by speaking of the quickness with which he understood and answered questions put to him on the stand.[1]

In a New York case, Jacob Staudermann had been convicted and sentenced to death for the murder of a woman, the plea of insanity having been rejected. His brother subsequently learning of the conviction, communicated facts which led his counsel to petition the governor for the issue of a commission of lunacy under the statute, and for a respite of execution meanwhile.

[1] Com. v. Buccieri, 153 Pa. St., 535; 26 Atl., 228.

Application was then made to the governor for executive clemency upon the ground that only two witnesses testified in behalf of the prisoner as to facts occurring previous to his arrest; and that, subsequent to his conviction, new evidence was discovered relating to his early life and family history, and bearing more particularly upon the question of his mental sanity. Pursuant to the New York statute (Laws of 1874, chapter 446) the governor issued a special commission in lunacy to the Hon. John Ordronaux, New York State Commissioner in Lunacy, and James R. Wood, M.D. These commissioners examined twenty-four witnesses, twenty-two of whom had never before testified in the case, and also examined the prisoner both physically and by oral interrogation.

The commissioners, in their report, which is published in full in volume III. of Abbott's New Cases, Supra (p. 427), review the evidence adduced before them and state as follows:

"The evidence further shows, that he was never really engaged to Miss Siedenwalt, that he imagined himself to be so, and that, through the influence of his epileptic constitution and the grossest practice of self-abuse, his brain was in a state of continuous erethism, and his mind as constantly revolving about the idea of marriage with her. Wherever he went, he spoke of nothing else, and he became so unreasonably excited when doing so, as to speak openly of shooting her if she did not consent to marry him, and even exhibited a pistol, while so speaking, to one or more witnesses. His account of the homicide is imperfect as to details, but tallies logically with the action of an unbalanced mind, thoroughly infected by inheritance dwarfed by the progress of brain disease, and inflamed by the chronic irritation of sexual organs never permitted to rest.

"The act of shooting was simply the phenomenal expression of an epileptic vertigo. He correctly describes the invasion of the attack, and properly localizes it—then all was gone; he saw nothing, remembers nothing, and when he came to and '*felt right*' the act was done. He says he felt sorry afterward—says so now—but exhibits none of that grief or deep conviction of its fearful character which is akin to penitence. His mind has not enough intensity of power to localize itself upon any one idea or to perform acts of self-introspection. Disease has degraded him too far for that.

"The medical examination of the prisoner shows that he is a man of low organization and arrested physical development. He is undersized, with unsymmetrical trunk and limbs; and has the epileptic complexion with the characteristic expression of the eyes. His intelligence, measured by the ordinary incidents of a shoemaker's life, reveals nothing striking in itself. It is possibly neither higher than many nor lower than some. But his memory has that defective character which belongs to a grade of imbecility not purely congenital, but acquired through and added to by a life-long heritage of degeneration. He is in habits extremely loathsome and disgusting; publicly practises self-abuse, and admits it without either shame or penitence. This is collateral testimony to his mental weakness and moral abasement. His head exhibits the scar left by the fracture of his skull in youth, and he also has hallucinations of sight at times. He has an unsteady gait, and otherwise reveals obscure symptoms of that form of paralysis known as *locomotor ataxia*. He is in every sense a being degraded by disease, and uncontrolled by sufficient power of mind to appreciate duty, either to himself or others, as a moral obligation entailing responsibility.

"From all these facts and findings we are of the opinion that the prisoner, Jacob Staudermann, when he shot Miss Siedenwalt, was without legal capacity to commit felonious homicide, that he did not know the nature or consequences of the act he was committing, and was impelled to it by a diseased state of body wholly subjugating his mind. We are further of opinion that he is an imbecile, the result of such disease, and when moved to any efforts involving the exercise of his moral affections is swayed alone by instinctive impulses.

"We find him accordingly to be insane and irresponsible within the letter and intent of the statute under which we are acting."

The reported case further proceeds: "After reading this report to the governor, the question arose as to the final disposition of the prisoner. It was conceded at the outset that he was not amenable to the highest penalty of the law, and his sentence of death was accordingly remitted. But a more difficult problem was that of determining what should be his future place of detention. Under then existing laws, the governor

could not commit a prisoner under sentence of death to any State lunatic asylum without rendering such commitment equivalent to a pardon in case the person should afterward recover. So that although the insanity should only supervene after the sentence, and last but a few months at longest, there was no provision by which the prisoner could be remanded to the county whence he came, to be resentenced."

This was rectified by section 1 of chapter 267 of the laws of 1876, page 265, which provides that "the governor shall possess the same powers conferred upon Courts of Oyer and Terminer in the case of persons confined under conviction for offences for which the punishment is death. And whenever any person under sentence of death shall be declared insane and irresponsible, by a commission duly appointed for that purpose, the governor may, in his discretion, order his removal to the State Lunatic Asylum for Insane Criminals, there to remain until restored to his right mind, and it shall be the duty of the medical superintendent of such asylum, whenever, in his opinion, said convict is cured of his insanity, to report the fact to the State commissioner in lunacy and a justice of the Supreme Court of the district in which said asylum is situated, who shall [illegible] inquire into the truth of such fact, and if the [illegible] their satisfaction, they shall so certify [illegible] warrants and seals to the clerk of the county [illegible] was sentenced, and cause him, the said [illegible] to the custody of the sheriff of the [illegible] and at the expense thereof, there to be [illegible] by law."

[illegible] insanity preceded in fact but [illegible] as shown by the commissioners [illegible] authorized to commit [illegible] order to which, if the [illegible] the [illegible] of said [illegible] offered themselves by [illegible] these [illegible] state of health, ability and [illegible]

[illegible] the testimony of all persons [illegible] the commissioners [illegible] that [illegible] the [illegible] was [illegible]

improvement under a proper system of occupation, diet, and removal from all sources of excitement.

"To the second they replied in the negative. While it was true that he was an epileptic, yet he did not exhibit the spinal form of that disease. He had never been known since his advent to the United States to have such a convulsion, and although the marked manifestations of epilepsy were never absent from his daily life, he was not irrational or without general self-control. He could not, therefore, be said to have arrived at that condition of diathetic permanency necessary to constitute complete insanity at law. His was a case of what courts have always termed partial insanity, and his status was akin to that of the habitual drunkard who kills while in the delirium of *mania a potu*. He was doubtless without legal capacity to commit murder when he killed Miss Siedenwalt, but his health was no better and no worse immediately before or after the act, and no commission of experts previous to his arrest would have certified him as a fit subject for a lunatic asylum. He simply exhibited a form of imbecility based upon an epileptic diathesis, in which strong animal propensities might bring on at any moment a convulsion, both mental as well as bodily. While leading a quiet, mechanical life he might never show any disposition to do harm to others or himself, if kept free from passional excitement, and had there been an asylum for epileptics in this State the commissioners would have recommended his removal to it. As it was, they did not undertake to decide for the executive, but left the final disposition of the case solely to his judgment.

"Upon this statement of facts, and under the necessities of the legal conditions surrounding the prisoner, the governor commuted his sentence to imprisonment for life.

"In less than a month it became necessary to remove him to the asylum for insane criminals, where he continues in confinement."

In another New York case, Isabella Jenisch was indicted for the murder of her infant child. The defence being insanity, the court appointed a commission of lunacy, which reported (by Hon. John Ordronaux, State Commissioner) as follows: The prisoner, thirty-five years old, married, admitted that she indulged freely at times in liquor, although never to the point

of intoxication. Her face appeared congested. She was suffering for nine years at irregular intervals from attacks of spinal epilepsy, caused by hard work and poor living. There was no original neurosis, nor did she belong to an insane family. On the morning of the homicide, she was attacked by an epileptic fit, and about one hour after, placed her child upon a fire kindled in the stove, holding her there some time and causing the injuries of which the child died within thirty-six hours. She had always been an affectionate mother. The commissioners were of the opinion that she had acted under the influence of the epileptic attack, not knowing the nature nor intending the consequences of her act, and was therefore insane and irresponsible. The court approved these findings, and the prisoner was removed to the State Lunatic Asylum at Utica.[1]

Somnabulism, if Established, may be a Defence.

In conclusion, we may add to the subject of epilepsy a few notes on somnambulism as creating a state of temporary insanity. It is said that the legal consequences of somnambulism should be the same as those of insanity.[2] The cases, however, on this subject, as dealt with in the courts, are not frequent. Yet there cannot be any doubt that the influences of somnambulism, when proved, will be fully appreciated.

In a Kentucky case, one Fain, accused of crime, offered evidence of having been affected from infancy with somnolentia or somnambulism. This evidence was refused by the court, which was held upon appeal to be error, and the conviction which followed, was reversed for this and other errors.[3]

Mesmerism and Hypnotism.

Mesmerism is so called from Frederick Anton Mesmer, who first propounded the theory that one individual could influence and control the will of another by the use of animal magnetism, at Paris in 1778.

The phenomena of mesmerism are now explained by mo

[1] Case of Isabella Jenisch, 3 Abb. N. C., 200.

[2] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," xxii., 838.

[3] Fain v. Com., 78 Ky., 183. Austin Abbott, a brief for the trial of criminal cases, N. Y., 1889, p. 334.

ern hypnotism or artificial somnambulism, which has been of late extensively studied. "Hypnotism is also occasionally called *Braidism* (after the English surgeon Braid who first studied the phenomena of mesmerism scientifically) and *neurophynology*."[1]

The important and controlling fact as to all forms of alleged mesmeric or hypnotic control is, that it can seldom or never be exercised by one person over another, unless that other in the beginning of the attempt to exercise it consents in some degree to its exercise and thus becomes a party to it.

Hypnotism was set up as a defence in the case of Eyraud the Parisian strangler, jointly indicted with a woman named Bompard, who turned state's evidence and claimed that she had been hypnotized by Eyraud, and while under his influence was induced to take part in the crime of murder. In that case testimony to establish her claim was rejected.

In this country there has not yet been any reported case in which the legal aspect of hypnotism has been considered. The newspaper reports of such cases are too uncertain and sensational to be gravely regarded.

In a recent article in the Albany *Law Journal*[2] the following pertinent observations are made: "From the legal standpoint it is certain that in the minds of jurors, at least, a practical demonstration of the power of hypnotism will raise a reasonable doubt, such as would entitle the defendants to an acquittal at the hands of the jury. Hypnotism has had many private trials, and has given the public ground for believing that there is some force which may be exerted by one individual to control the actions of another against his will and without any physical contact. The proof of such a force as hypnotism, if publicly demonstrated during a trial, would open up a new defence, which undoubtedly could be used in many cases to defeat the ends of justice, though it must be recognized that no person under the influence of such a force should be convicted to suffer the penalty for a crime which he did not intend to commit and which at the time he did not know he was committing."[3]

[1] Century Dictionary, title "Mesmerism," and see "Hypnotism" in Prof. Fisher's article on "Medical Aspects of Insanity," in this volume.

[2] Vol. 50, p. 217.

[3] See also 50 Alb. L. J., 377; 47 id., 262.

Delirium from Fever or Overdose of Medicine.

As it is recognized by the courts that epileptic seizures for a time suspend the mental capacity necessary for criminal responsibility, so the same may be stated of delirium even of a lower degree,[1] resulting from intermittent fever, and of frenzy from an overdose of medicine.

In a North Carolina case[2] the defendant was convicted of murder, after the court, on a plea of temporary insanity, had refused to charge the jury that he was not responsible if he was incapable of comprehending the nature of his act, and this incapacity was the result of an overdose of morphine. On appeal this refusal was held to be incorrect, and a new trial was granted.

In a New York case[3] the defendant was indicted upon a charge of arson in the first degree for setting a dwelling-house in New York City on fire. The defence was insanity. A commission of lunacy was appointed, to make inquisition into the mental sanity of the accused, and reported (by Hon. John Ordronaux, State Commissioner) as follows: "The defendant suffered at various times from malarial fever (congestive chills) in such a degree that his mental power became diminished and he was thought to be insane by his wife and his sister. On October 20th, 1876, he was admitted to Bellevue Hospital, New York City. He subsequently showed delirium and was considered by the physicians to be temporarily insane from the fever delirium. On the 25th of the same month he was discharged from the hospital. In the night of the 26th to the 27th, he entered the basement of a house, which he had previously rented, lay down and went to sleep. Then he committed the deed. When arrested he denied it, stating that he had witnessed another person who in the said night entered the same basement, slept there with him, and then set the house on fire. These statements seemed to be the result of insane delusion. Since his arrest he suffered continuously from intermittent fever. There was not any evidence of criminal motive on the part of the accused. His good character was testified to by an acquaintance of ten

[1] People v. Slack, 90 Mich., 448; 51 N. W. R., 533.
[2] State v. Rippy, 104 N. C., 752; s. c., 10 S. E. Rep., 259.
[3] People v. Beno Ville, 3 Abb. N. C., 195.

years' standing, and the same witness stated that, for several months preceding the arrest, he had noticed a sensible change for the worse in his habits of cleanliness, of eating, and of general deportment. The commissioners were of the opinion that the prisoner was at the time of the deed laboring under fever delirium, and seeking relief in the artificial heat of a fire, committed the deed without being able to judge correctly of his actions. They recommended that he be committed to the New York City Asylum for the Insane on Ward's Island, there to remain for observation and treatment until recovered and discharged according to law." It was ordered accordingly by the court.

Kleptomania not Favored as a Defence.

In a Pennslyvania case it was held that the court will not disturb a verdict, rejecting the defence of kleptomania in a trial for larceny, as contrary to the weight of evidence unless the defence is overwhelmingly sustained by the quantity and quality of the evidence.[1]

DELUSIONAL INSANITY.

We have seen that partial insanity constitutes an excuse from criminal responsibility only when it obliterates the capacity to discriminate between right and wrong. The same rule applies to delusions. Delusions occur in all forms of insanity, general as well as partial. They are, as matter of fact, mere symptoms of the illness itself, but they are in a medical sense not essential elements of unsoundness. Yet it is a fact that "delusional insanity appeals more cogently to the legal mind than other varieties. Lawyers attach much importance to the presence of delusions as a sign of insanity, and admit that they may be so dominant as to disturb the judgment to a degree inconsistent with sane conduct." [2]

"The test of responsibility where insanity is asserted, is the capacity to distinguish between right and wrong with respect to the act, and the absence of insane delusions respecting the same." [3]

[1] Com. v. Fritsch (Pa. O. and T.), 9 Pa. Co. Ct. R., 164.
[2] J. Dixon Mann, "For. Med.," p. 356.
[3] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 696.

The existence of delusions in any single case, whenever proved, strengthens the evidence of insanity otherwise established, and alone often affords in some cases the possibility of sustaining the plea of unsoundness; and while this is so in regard to general as well as partial insanity, its importance is most obvious when the latter comes in question, for we have seen how careful courts generally are in dealing with such a plea.

Insane Delusion Defined.

In considering the part which delusions take in irresponsibility, being aware that many different meanings of this term are used in common life and in different branches of science, we have first to define delusions. Using the term "insane delusions" will not avail us essentially. For delusions themselves never being insane, we should have to understand it as meaning "delusions of insane persons," and so we should, dialectically speaking, become guilty of a *petitio principii*. In an English case already referred to, Justice Wightman said: "Delusion means the belief in what did not exist."[1] This statement is apparently not a sufficient definition, as it comprehends only one logical element of the term to be defined.

In the Guiteau case, Judge Cox charged the jury as follows on this subject: "An insane delusion is never the result of reasoning and reflection. It is not generated by them and it cannot be dispelled by them. . . . Whenever convictions are founded on evidence, on comparison of facts and opinions and arguments, they are not insane delusions. The insane delusion does not relate to mere sentiments or theories, or abstract questions of law, politics, or religion. All these are the subject of opinions, which are beliefs founded on reasoning and reflection. These opinions are often absurd in the extreme, and result from naturally weak or ill-trained reasoning powers, hasty conclusions from insufficient data, ignorance of men and things, credulous dispositions, fraudulent imposture, and often from perverted moral sentiments. But still, they are opinions, found upon some kind of evidence, and liable to be changed by better external evidence or sounder reasoning. But they are not insane delusions."[2]

[1] Regina v. Burton, 3 F. and F., 772. [2] 10 Fed. Rep., 161.

Citing and approving the last-mentioned opinion, it was said by a Nevada judge that "an insane delusion is an incorrigible belief, not the result of reasoning in the existence of facts which are either impossible absolutely, or are impossible under the circumstances of the individual."[1] And essentially to the same effect is the following definition: "The delusions which indicate a defect of sanity, such as will relieve a person from criminal responsibility, are delusions of the senses, or such as relate to facts or objects, not mere wrong notions or impressions, or of a moral nature; and the aberration must be mental, not moral, to affect the intellect of the individual."[2]

By adopting this definition, we may reach the conclusion that no other delusions except those thus defined will afford sufficient ground on which a crime may be excused because of the insane delusions of the alleged criminal.

The view held by the New York courts under the Penal Code, and by the courts of most of the other States, as well as those of England, as to what is required to create irresponsibility, is that the person in question, idiot, imbecile, lunatic, or insane person, is laboring under such a defect of reason as either not to know the nature and quality, or the wrongfulness of the act. Applying this rule to cases of delusions, there is but one conclusion to be reached, which is: That to constitute a legal excuse from crime, the delusion must result from a morbid state of mind, and coincidentally be such as to deprive the person of the knowledge of the nature and quality or wrongfulness of the act. Such are the limits within which the law recognizes delusional insanity.

The legal sequence of this abstract principle, when it is applied to concrete cases, is that an insane delusion is not a defence unless it would excuse the crime, if the facts about which it exists were true.[3]

In Arkansas, on a trial for murder, where the defence was temporary insanity, the defendant asked for the following instruction: "If the jury find from the evidence that the defendant, at

[1] State *v.* Lewis, 20 Nev., 333; s. c., 22 Pac. R., 241.

[2] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," vol. iv., p. 695.

[3] State *v.* Lewis, 20 Nev., 333; s. c., 22 Pac. R., 241; People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398; s. c., 52 N. Y. St. R., 914; Thurman *v.* State, 32 Neb., 224; s. c., 49 N. W. R., 338; Bolling *v.* State, 54 Ark., 588; s. c., 16 S. W., 658; Smith *v.* State, 55 Ark., 259; s. c., 18 S. W., 237.

the time he fired the fatal shot, was acting under a delusion, although able to distinguish right from wrong, and believed that the deceased and others had formed a plot to take away his life or do him some great bodily injury, and that the deceased had an immediate design to do so, and that it was necessary for him to fire the shot to protect his life or prevent his receiving great bodily injury, they must acquit." There being evidence in the case on which to found such instruction, it was held on appeal that the refusal to give it was error, and that it was not cured by an instruction that "an insane delusion relieves a person from responsibility when, and only when, the facts or state of facts believed in, under the insane delusion, would, if actually existing, have justified the act."[1]

In Nebraska, on the trial of an indictment for shooting with intent to kill, where the defence was insanity, it was held that an instruction that a delusion must be of such a character that if things were as the defendant imagined them to be they would justify the act springing from the delusion, is not erroneous.[2] The court closed its instruction by saying: "It may throw some light on the application of the subject to this case to consider whether a conviction in this case would have a tendency to prevent a repetition of such acts."

In another case in Arkansas it was held that an instruction that "defendant would not be responsible if he killed deceased under an insane delusion, that deceased was trying to marry defendant's mother, and that this delusion caused the killing," was properly refused, as such delusions, if true, would not excuse the act, and also that an instruction asked by the defendant that a delusion would only absolve from guilt where the facts, if real, would excuse it, is incomplete, in that it fails to state what facts would excuse homicide; and it was held that, while the court should have supplied the omission and given the charge, a failure to do so was not reversible error.[3]

It would seem that the last-mentioned legal test refers to partial rather than to general insanity. For otherwise the test might lead to absurd practical consequences. For instance, suppose that a man who is generally and absolutely insane, by

[1] Smith v. State, 55 Ark., 259, s. c., 18 S. W. R., 237.
[2] Thurman v. State, 32 Neb., 294; s. c., 49 N. W., 338.
[3] Bolling v. State, 54 Ark., 588; s. c., 16 S. W. Rep., 658.

suffers from delusions only on some single subjects, commits an act which happens not to be directly connected with one of these subjects. In such a case the application of the above test necessitates his conviction, the act not being the offspring of the delusion. Or suppose that he commits an act somewhat connected with the delusion, but the delusion is not of such character as, if true, would justify the act. He must also be convicted. It seems, therefore, to be impossible, and contrary to the law otherwise established, strictly to apply the delusional test as limited in the decisions cited to cases of general and absolute insanity.

This delusional test was formally and expressly recognized in the often quoted English McNaghten case. Daniel McNaghten was tried at the Central Criminal Court, London, in March, 1843, for the murder of Mr. Edward Drummond, the private secretary of Sir Robert Peel. The judges sitting were Lord Chief-Justice Tindal, Justices Williams and Coleridge. Sir William Follett, the solicitor-general, represented the prosecution, Mr. Cockburn (afterward Lord Chief-Justice) was leading counsel for the defendant. The evidence established that the premeditated intention of the prisoner had been to shoot Sir Robert Peel. On the 20th of January, 1843, he watched his house with that intention, and seeing Mr. Drummond come out from the house, he followed him and shot him without any previous altercation or provocation, in the mistaken belief that he was shooting Sir Robert Peel.

The defence was insanity. The counsel for the defendant stated expressly that he did not bring forward this as a case of complete, but of partial insanity. The prisoner's father testified that two years before the trial the prisoner asked him to put a stop to a persecution that was being raised against him. Two weeks after, he told him that he was followed constantly by spies, night and day; they did not speak to him, but laughed in his face frequently, and when he turned round they shook their heads at him, raised their arms, and shook their fists or sticks in his face; especially a man who had a few straws in his hand shook these in his face, probably meaning therewith that he was to be reduced to a state of beggary. They followed him only when he was alone. Three or four weeks after, he asked his father if he had applied to Sheriff Bell to stop these perse-

[illegible] application to the Procurator-Fiscal to [illegible] He said that he [illegible] last night or day in con- [illegible] and two of the spies, that he had left Glas- [illegible] them: that he [illegible] Priests for that purpose: that he [illegible] saw the spies following [illegible] go anywhere. The witness stated, the prisoner [illegible] people. Several other wit- [illegible] the county of Lanark. [illegible] parish of Go- [illegible] The protest of [illegible] in May, 1849, testified that the Jesuits had been treated as [illegible] and that this question was [illegible] The commissioner of police [illegible] about eighteen months [illegible] which preceded [illegible] the Catholic priests [illegible] Times. Three or four [illegible] saying they [illegible] this witness saw him in [illegible]

out of the court-house he had seen a man frowning at him with a bundle of straws under his arm; he knew well enough that this denoted that he should lie upon straw in an asylum, etc. Everything was done by signs. He was represented to be under a delusion. He imagined that the person at whom he fired to be one of the crew that was destroying his health. When he saw this person, every feeling of suffering which he had endured for months and years rose up at once in his mind, and he conceived that he could obtain peace by killing him. Such were the statements made by the prisoner to the witness. The latter had no doubt of the presence of insanity sufficient to deprive the defendant of all self-control. Dr. Monroe, cross-examined, expressed the opinion that monomania may exist with general sanity, even with a high degree of intellect, with a moral perception of right and wrong; even with the knowledge of murder to be a crime. He had not the slightest doubt that the prisoner's moral perceptions were impaired; that in consequence of his delusions his mind was so absorbed by the contemplation of this fancied wrong that he did not distinguish between right and wrong. Another medical expert, Dr. W. Hutchinson, said that an act which flowed from the prisoner's delusions was an irresistible one. The impulse was so strong that nothing short of a physical impossibility would prevent him from committing any act to which his delusion might impel him. It was stated that Sir A. Morrison, Mr. McClure, Dr. Crawfurd, Mr. McMurdo (the surgeon of Newgate jail), Mr. Aston Key, and Dr. Forbes Winslow were all prepared to testify to the insanity of the prisoner. The Lord Chief-Justice, as quoted by Lord Lyndhurst in his speech, summed up the case as follows in his address to the jury:[1] "The point which at last will be submitted to you will be, whether or not on the whole of the evidence you have heard, you are satisfied that at the time the act was committed, for the commission of which the prisoner stands charged, he had not that competent use of his understanding as not to know what he was doing with respect to the act itself—a wicked and a wrong thing; whether he knew it was a wicked or a wrong thing he had done, or that he was sensible at the time he committed this act that it was contrary to the laws of God and man. Undoubtedly if he was not so sensible, he is not a

[1] Hansard, vol. 67, p. 724.

person so responsible. If upon balancing the evidence in your minds you should think the prisoner a person capable of distinguishing right from wrong with respect to the act with which he stands charged, he is then a responsible agent, and liable to the penalties imposed upon those who commit the crime of which he is accused."

Clark and Finnelly, Vol. X., page 202, give a report of the summing up, in which in one passage a very material difference occurs. "The question," said Lord Chief-Justice Tindal, in charging the jury, "to be determined is whether at the time the act in question was committed the prisoner had or had not the use of his understanding so as to know that he was doing a wrong or wicked act. If the jurors should be of the opinion that the prisoner was not sensible at the time he committed it, that he was violating the laws both of God and man, then he would be entitled to a verdict in his favor; but if they are of the opinion that when he committed the act he was in a sound state of mind, then their verdict must be against him." Verdict, not guilty on the ground of insanity.[1]

This verdict and the question of the nature and extent of the unsoundness of mind which would excuse the commission of a felony of this sort having been made the subject of debate in the House of Lords,[2] it was determined to take the opinion of

[1] Hack Tuke, "Dictionary of Psychological Medicine," Phila., 1892, vol. i., p. 304; C. Clark and W. Finnelly, "Reports of Cases decided in the House of Lords," London, 1845, vol. x., p. 200.

[2] See Hansard's "Debates," vol. 67, pp. 228, 714.

The following are the questions submitted to the judges:

(1) What is the law respecting alleged crimes committed by persons afflicted with insane delusion, in respect of one or more particular subjects or persons; as, for instance, where at the time of the commission of the alleged crime the accused knew he was acting contrary to the law, but did the act complained of with a view, under the influence of insane delusion, of redressing or revenging some supposed grievance or injury or of producing some supposed public benefit?

(2) What are the proper questions to be submitted to the jury, when a person alleged to be afflicted with insane delusion respecting one or more particular subjects or persons, is charged with the commission of a crime (murder, for example), and insanity is set up as a defence?

(3) In what terms ought the question to be left to the jury, as to the prisoner's state of mind at the time when the act was committed?

(4) If a person under an insane delusion as to existing facts commits an offence in consequence thereof, is he thereby excused?

(5) Can a medical man conversant with the disease of insanity, who never saw the prisoner previously to the trial, but who was present during the whole trial and the examination of all the witnesses, be asked his opinion as to the state of the prisoner's mind at the time of the commission of the alleged crime, or his opinion whether the

the judges on the law governing such cases. Several questions were propounded without arguments to the judges; with others the question: "What is the law respecting the alleged crime, when, at the time of the commission of it, the accused knew he was acting contrary to the law, but did the act with a view, under the influence of insane delusion, of redressing or revenging some supposed grievance or injury, or of producing some supposed public benefit? Mr. Justice Maule and Lord Chief-Justice Tindal answered this question that there was no law that makes persons in the state described in the opinion not responsible for their criminal acts. Lord Chief Justice Tindal said: "He is, nevertheless, punishable according to the nature of the crime committed, if he knew at the time of committing such crime that he was acting contrary to law."

In comparing these rules laid down by the judges with the verdict of the jury in the McNaghten case itself, we come to the conclusion that the verdict was relatively more favorable to the accused than the law would warrant. This will be shown by the following consideration: (1) McNaghten imagined Sir Robert Peel to be culpable of neglect of duty in not protecting him from that "system." In this case the defendant might appeal to the competent authorities for protection. (2) Suppose he imagined Sir Robert Peel to be a member of the system

prisoner was conscious at the time of doing the act, that he was acting contrary to law, or whether he was laboring under any and what delusion at the time?

On June 19, the following answers were returned by the judges (with exception of Justice Maule, who stated his opinion separately):

(1) Assuming that your lordships' inquiries are confined to those persons who labor under such partial delusions only, and are not in other respects insane, we are of opinion that, notwithstanding the party accused did the act complained of with a view, under the influence of insane delusion, of redressing or revenging some supposed grievance or injury, or of producing some public benefit, he is nevertheless punishable, according to the nature of the crime committed, if he knew, at the time of committing such crime, that he was acting contrary to law, by which expression we understand your lordships to mean the law of the land.

(2 and 3) As these two questions appear to us to be more conveniently answered together, we have to submit our opinion to be that the jurors ought to be told, in all cases, that every man is to be presumed to be sane, and to possess a sufficient degree of reason to be responsible for his crimes, until the contrary be proved to their satisfaction; and that, to establish a defence on the ground of insanity, it must be clearly proved that at the time of the committing of the act the accused party was laboring under such a defect of reason, from disease of the mind, as not to know the nature and quality of the act he was doing; or, if he did know it, that he did not know he was doing what was wrong. The mode

himself. In this case the same thing may be said, or that they ought to prosecute him by means of criminal procedure. But he did not so act in self-defence according to law as would justify homicide. (3) Suppose even that he was for any reason justified in killing Sir Robert, he was not so in killing his secretary. The latter act was nothing but a mistake caused by neglect of due attention, such attention not being incompatible with his delusion. He could at least be expected to properly select his victim, instead of shooting the next best coming out of the house of the victim.

Thus it might not be improper to say that McNaghten should have been convicted if his guilt had been determined in accordance with the rules which the judges established in his case.

We are led to similar conclusions by the following English case. The prisoner, Dodwell, was a clergyman who became involved in legal proceedings, and, after quarrelling with his legal adviser, conducted his own case in such an irregular manner that he did not obtain what he desired. On the strength of this he conceived that he had a grievance against the Master of the Rolls. One morning he awaited the arrival of his Lordship and fired a pistol at him; no injury was inflicted, as the pistol was only loaded with powder and wadding, the prisoner declaring that his sole object was to direct public attention to his

of putting the latter part of the question to the jury on these occasions has generally been whether the accused, at the time of doing the act, knew the difference between right and wrong; which mode, though rarely, if ever, leading to any mistake with the jury, is not, we conceive, so accurate when put generally and in the abstract, as when put with reference to the party's knowledge of right and wrong in respect to the very act with which he is charged. If the question were to be put as to the knowledge of the accused solely and exclusively with reference to the law of the land, it might tend to confound the jury by inducing them to believe that an actual knowledge of the law of the land was essential in order to lead to a conviction; whereas the law is administered upon the principle that every one must be taken conclusively to know it, without proof that he does not. If the accused was conscious that the act was one which he ought not to do, and if that act was at the same time contrary to the law of the land, he is punishable; and the usual course, therefore, has been to leave the question to the jury whether the accused had a sufficient degree of reason to know he was doing an act that was wrong; and this course, we think, is correct, accompanied with such observations and explanations as the circumstances of each particular case may require.

(4) The answer must of course depend on the nature of the delusion; but, making the same assumption as we did before—namely, that he labors under such particular delusion only, and is not in other respects insane—we think he must be considered in the same situation as to responsibility as if the facts with respect to which the delusion

wrongs. At the trial the Master of the Rolls stated that the prisoner was incoherent and irritable, and that he appeared to be under a delusion; no medical evidence was called on either side, and the jury returned a verdict of "not guilty on the ground of insanity."[1]

The foregoing case is reported by the author cited as "illustrative of the loss of self-control caused by a delusion." He adds the following commentaries: "In this case there was no legal evidence of insanity; the prisoner's action might have been due to irascibility and culpable neglect to curb a violent temper; all the evidence went to prove that he knew perfectly well the quality of the act and that he was doing wrong. Possibly the heinousness of the offence—firing at a high legal functionary—was regarded as sufficient in itself to constitute proof of insanity. Dodwell's subsequent history is not without interest in relation to the recurrence of insane impulses, for, although he did not come up to the legal test of insanity, he was none the less a victim of delusional insanity judged from the medical standpoint. After the trial he was transferred to Broadmoor, and in 1882 he committed a murderous assault on the chief physician of the asylum by dealing him a heavy blow on the crown of the head with a stone slung in a handkerchief. The motive which instigated him was identical with that which prompted him to fire the pistol at the Master of the Rolls; he stated that

exists were real. For example, if under the influence of his delusion he supposes another man to be in the act of attempting to take away his life, and he kills that man, as he supposes in self-defence, he would be exempt from punishment. If his delusion was that the deceased had inflicted a serious injury to his character and fortune, and he killed him in revenge for such supposed injury, he would be liable to punishment.

(5) We think the medical man, under the circumstances supposed, cannot in strictness be asked his opinion in the terms stated, because each of those questions involves the determination of the truth of the facts deposed to, which it is for the jury to decide; and the questions are not mere questions upon a matter of science, in which case such evidence is admissible. But where facts are admitted or not disputed, and the question becomes substantially one of science only, it may be convenient to allow the question to be put in that general form, though the same cannot be insisted as a matter of right.

Justice Maule said in his separate answers, that he would have been glad if his brethren had joined him in praying to be excused from answering these questions, and he feared that the answers might embarrass the administration of justice when they were cited in criminal trials; and in his answer to the third question he said: "There are no terms which the judge is by law required to use."

[1] Regina *v.* Dodwell, C. C. C., 1878, J. Dixon Mann, "For. Med.," etc., Phila., 1893, p. 357.

as the previous act had not proved sufficient to redress his wrongs, he made up his mind to commit some still more serious act, and had come to the conclusion that nothing less than murder would be sufficient to deliver him from the conspiracy of which he imagined himself the victim."[1]

Such cases, however, are to be regarded as exceptions, the rules established by the English judges being generally adopted and strictly observed. This is true especially in the State of New York, as shown by the Taylor case heretofore quoted. In that case an insane delusion that the deceased, a fellow-prisoner, was acting as a spy upon the defendant who had devised a way of escape from prison, was held not sufficient ground for relieving him from responsibility for his acts, since, if true, the fact would have afforded him no justification for the commission of a crime.[2]

The delusion must have a bearing on the act committed; it must also be of such a character that the person cannot be reasoned out of it. In a Nebraska case the defendant, one Thurman, was indicted for shooting with intent to kill. Insanity was pleaded as a defence. The court charged the jury: "It is not every delusion that can be considered an insane delusion. The delusion must be of such a character that if things were as the delusion pictured them to be, they would justify the act springing from the delusion. To illustrate: If a person be under the insane delusion that he is the Almighty Himself, or is directly commissioned or commanded by the Almighty Himself to shoot a particular person that the Almighty has decided must be shot, and is moved by such delusion alone to do the shooting, that would be an insane delusion, because if true it would justify the shooting. But if a person is under a delusion that a man has done him a mean trick and that he ought to be shot for it, and the delusion moves the person to shoot the man, that is no excuse on the ground of insane delusion; because if the person had really done the man a mean trick, and he had not just imagined it, it would not have justified the shooting. An insane delusion is like a waking dream: the subject cannot neither be reasoned into nor out of it. It may throw some

[1] Regina *v.* Dodwell, C. C. C., 1878, J. Dixon Mann, "For. Med.," etc., Phila., 1893, p. 357.

[2] People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y. 398; s. c., 52 N. Y. St. R., 914.

light on the application of the subject to this case to consider whether a conviction in this case would have a tendency to prevent a repetition of such acts." The verdict was guilty. On appeal the charge was held correct and the conviction was affirmed.[1]

The celebrated case of Charles Julius Guiteau, who was tried at Washington, D. C., under an indictment for murder for shooting President Garfield on the 2d of July, 1881, will help to illustrate these principles. The defence was insanity and other points which have no bearing here. The defendant was in his youth a bright boy, enjoyed an ordinary school education, and worked then as clerk in commercial houses in Freeport, Ill., and Chicago. His real name was Julius Cæsar Guiteau, which he changed because, he said, it reminded him too much of negro names. When twenty years of age he joined the so-called Oneida Community, in Oneida County, N. Y., founded on communistic principles. Entering this community in 1860, he gave to it, according to its rules, his estate ($900), which was left him by his mother. In April, 1865, he withdrew from this order, because, as he said, he did not agree with it in its opinions as to the labor question, although harmonizing otherwise with its principles and religious theories. The money he received back from the order. He then went to New York to found a religious paper, expecting by it considerable improvement for religion as well as splendid success for himself. After a few months, his means being reduced to a small sum, he reentered the order, but left it again in November, 1866, studied law at Chicago, and was there admitted to the bar. As his first case he brought a lawsuit against the Oneida Community for $9,000 as compensation for the work done by him for the order, asking $1,500 for each year of his membership. By threatening that he would bring to light the "free love" practised by the order, he tried to induce the latter to a compromise; but its chief, Mr. J. H. Noyes, answered by publishing in its official paper that Guiteau had confessed to them to having stolen large sums from his former employers in Freeport and Chicago and to have visited houses of prostitution. On the trial in October 29th, 1881, Mr. Noyes said that he did not remember any action or other symptom on the part of the murderer indicating

[1] Thurman v. State, 32 Neb., 224; s. c., 49 N. W. Rep., 338.

insanity, but that he had been born with, and possessed during his whole life, a special inclination to evil. The evidence showed that sometimes he practised as a lawyer, defrauding his clients; again he wandered about as political agitator or religious orator. Very often he let himself be served in hotels as a grand seigneur and then absconded without having paid his bills. In his law practice he used to undertake the collection of doubtful claims under the stipulation of one-half of them as a fee. In one instance, the debt being $100, and $40 collected, he retained this sum as payment for himself. For such offences he was repeatedly sentenced and imprisoned in New York and Chicago. At one time when the New York *Herald* published an account of such a case, he sued that paper for $100,000 on the ground of calumny, but afterward withdrew the action. He intended to reform religion and to become apostle; when he failed therein, he tried to play a political part. So he concluded to buy the *Inter Ocean*, a leading Chicago paper, and worked out, in fact, a very practical plan, which he submitted to a rich politician of Chicago, whom he knew to be ambitious and liberal for political purposes. He asked of him a loan of $200,000, promising to make him President of the United States by means of this paper, but he failed to succeed. In the latter part of the summer and in the fall of 1880, during the presidential election-struggle, he was employed as speaker by the Republican committees, meeting at that time in New York. He had been engaged after he had shown them a speech he had made and had had printed, entitled "Garfield *versus* Hancock," which speech he was afterward permitted to deliver at a meeting. He became then personally acquainted with the chiefs of the Republican party, and being courteously treated by them, he imagined himself to be a very important political personality. He belonged to that class of political workers whose compensation consisted, in case of victory, in the expectation of a public office. The result of the election—James A. Garfield as President, with Vice-President Chester A. Arthur—was claimed by many to be due to a compromise arranged between the two Republican factions existing at that time, the "Half-Breeds" and the "Stalwarts," the President belonging to the former, the Vice-President to the latter. After the election the "Stalwarts," according to the public reports, felt disappointed

as to the proportion in which their members were bestowed with public offices. The defendant repeatedly asked of the President and of James G. Blaine, Secretary of State, that he be nominated to Vienna or consul to Paris, ostensibly relying on his supposed political merits during the election, and insisting on his request in an exceedingly important manner. After having realized that he never would be successful, he shot the President after a long and mature premeditation. When arrested, he said to the officer escorting him to the prison, that he was a Stalwart, and Arthur now President. In the following night he told James J. Brooks, chief of the secret service of the Treasury, that he had prayed to God for six weeks concerning the matter, that his resolution to remove the deceased had only become firmer by these prayers, and that his motive was patriotism. In prison he was repeatedly visited by ex-Judge Reynolds, of Chicago, to whom he stated that he committed the murder for love of the nation. A few weeks after, when he realized that his deed was condemned by all parties, he began in conversation with Reynolds to protest against the use of the term "murder" or "assassination" in reference to his act, which meant only to "remove" the President, and he then wrote a proclamation to the people, stating that his action was a patriotic one, accomplished for the interest and welfare of the nation, and inspired of God; that he could not resist the impulse to do it which paralyzed the power of his own will; but that immediately after he had yielded to the inspiration he had regained his will power and mental health. This was and remained the whole of his defence. In the court he again and again used to interrupt judge, counsel for the prosecution and defence, witnesses and experts, by jokes and insults. He often expressed his persuasion that God would let perish court and jury, if necessary, to stop the trial, etc. On the other hand, when in prison, he behaved there generally in a quiet, modest, and courteous manner. One day he promised one of his guards in the court-room that he would abstain further from disturbing the proceedings, and when on breaking this promise he was rebuked by the guard, he answered that he was influencing the public opinion in his favor, and that none of those having been present on that day in the court would doubt his insanity. The evidence showed that his father, a descendant of a Huguenot

family, who was an honest man, formerly court clerk and afterward cashier in a banking house, had been of a peculiar character, entertaining especially peculiar opinions on religion. He believed that he was able by means of his faith to cure like Jesus Christ any disease, and he seemed to prefer the promise of eternal life which Chirst made to his believers to the earthly life. A brother of the accused's father was a drunkard during his later life. The mother of the defendant had become sickly a short time before his birth and remained so until her death which followed a few years afterward. Besides, there was evidence offered by the defence tending to show insanity of more distant collaterals, as of his cousin, a girl who, it was said, was brought into an asylum at St. Louis for mental disease.

According to the statement of the then family physician, the accused showed in 1876 traces of emotional insanity. It was further shown by the evidence that he imagined himself a great politician, although usually failing in success with his lectures, which he used to advertise in an eccentric way; that he had great projects in mind and was of enormous self-opinion and vanity. As the defendant testified in his own behalf, he conceived one day the idea that everything could become straight again in case Garfield was removed, and later on, after incessant prayers, that it might be done otherwise, his persuasion of divine inspiration was confirmed, and he realized himself to be the tool of God, who always chooses the most perfect material for effectuating His designs. In this way, there was given at the same time the opportunity to make known to the public a book written by him on religious matters.

On behalf of the defence, Dr. Kiernan, of Chicago, and Dr. Spitzka, of New York, were called as medical witnesses, and both testified to his insanity. The former said that the prisoner suffered from inherited organic disease of the brain and exhibited a debilitated power of judgment. The latter thought him a moral monstrosity, but would not say that his unsoundness deprived him of the capacity of discriminating right from wrong.

On the part of the prosecution, thirteen experts were called to the stand, who declared unanimously that he was sane when he committed the act. Among them Dr. Walter Kempter, of Wisconsin, stated that the head form of the defendant was in fact abnormal, which had been urged by the defence, exhibiting

a very noticeable depression on one side, but he denied that such anomalies could furnish a certain proof of insanity. He said, too, that he had never seen an insane person pleading his own insanity. Dr. Noble-Young, prison physician of Washington, testified that the defendant after his arrest was seized by a few attacks of malarial fever, but showed otherwise always a normal state of health.[1] The verdict was guilty. The prisoner was sentenced to death (on the 4th of February, 1882) after a motion for a new trial had been denied. An appeal was taken, especially on the ground that Judge Cox had erroneously excluded some evidence offered for the purpose of proving the insanity of the defendant. The Court of Appeals of the District of Columbia affirmed the judgment, and Guiteau was executed.[2] There is a striking similarity between Guiteau's

[1] "Der Neue Pitaval," edited by Dr. A. Vollert, Neue Serie, vol. xvii., Leipsic, 1882, preface and p. 1; 10 Fed. Rep., 161.

[2] Judge Cox, in his admirable charge to the jury in this case, said:

"In order to constitute the crime of murder the assassin must have a responsibly sane mind. The technical term, 'sound memory and discretion,' in the old common law definition of murder, means this. An irresponsibly insane man can no more commit murder than a sane man can do so without killing. His condition of mind cannot be separated from the act. If he is laboring under disease of the mental faculties, if this is a proper expression, to such an extent that he does not know what he is doing or does not know that it is wrong, then he is wanting in that sound memory and discretion which make part of the definition of murder. In the next place, every defendant is presumed innocent until the accusation against him is established by proof. Again, notwithstanding this presumption of innocence, it is equally true that the defendant is presumed to be sane and to have been so at the time when the crime charged against him was committed; that is to say, the Government is not bound as a part of its proofs to show affirmatively that the defendant was sane. As insanity is the exception, and most men are sane, the law presumes the latter condition to be the condition of everybody until some reason is shown to believe the contrary. The burden is therefore on the defendant who sets up insanity as an excuse for crime, to bring forward his proofs, in the first instance to show that the presumption is a mistake as far as it relates to him. But after all the evidence is in, if the jury, while bearing in mind both these presumptions and considering the whole evidence in the case, still entertain what is called 'a reasonable doubt' on any ground, (either as to the killing or the responsible condition of mind), whether he is guilty of the crime of murder as it has been explained and defined, then the rule is that the defendant is entitled to the benefit of that doubt and to an acquittal.

"As to questions relating to human affairs, a knowledge of which is derived from testimony, it is impossible to have the same kind of certainty which is created by scientific demonstration. The only certainty you can have is a moral one, which depends upon the confidence you have in the integrity of witnesses and their capacity to know the truth. If, for example, facts not improbable are attested by numerous witnesses who are credible,

case and that of Prendergast, the murderer of Mayor Harrison of Chicago. Whatever be the views of medical authority, judges and lawyers almost universally maintain that both these

and sustained and uncontradicted, and who had every opportunity of knowing the truth, a reasonable or moral certainty would be inspired by their testimony. In such a case doubt would be unreasonable; and it is not a doubt whether the party may not be possibly innocent in the face of strong proof of his guilt, but a sincere doubt as to whether he has been proved guilty that is called reasonable; and even where the testimony is contradictory, so much more credit may be due to one side or the other that the same result may be produced. On the other hand, the opposing proofs may be so nearly balanced that the jury may justly doubt on which side lies the truth, and in such a case the accused party is entitled to the benefit of the doubt. All that a jury can be expected to do is to be reasonably or morally certain of the fact which they declare by their verdict. As Chief-Justice Shaw says, in Com. *v.* Webster, 5 Cush., 320: 'For it is not sufficient to establish a probability, though a strong one arising from the doctrine of chances, that the fact charged is more likely to be true than the contrary; but the evidence must establish the truth of the fact to a reasonable and a moral certainty—a certainty that convinces and directs the understanding, and satisfies the reason and judgment of those who are bound to act conscientiously upon it.' The defence of insanity has been so abused as to be brought into great discredit. It has been a last resort in cases of unquestionable guilt, and has been the excuse to juries for acquittal when their own and the public sympathy have been with the accused, and especially when the provocation to homicide has excused it according to public sentiment, but not according to law. For these reasons it is viewed with suspicion and disfavor whenever public sentiment is hostile to the accused; nevertheless if insanity be established to the degree that has been already in part, and will hereafter further be explained, it is a perfect defence to an indictment for murder and must be allowed full weight.' Now, it is first to be observed that we are not troubled in this case with any question about what may be called total insanity, such as raving mania or absolute imbecility, in which all exercise of reason is wanting, and there is no recognition of persons or things or their relations; but there is a debatable border line between the sane and the insane, and there is often great difficulty in determining on which side of it the party is to be placed. There are cases in which a man's mental faculties generally seem to be in full vigor, but on some one subject he seems to be deranged; he is possessed perhaps with a belief which every one recognizes as absurd, which he has not reasoned himself into, and cannot be reasoned out of, which we call an *insane delusion;* or he has in addition some morbid propensity seemingly in harsh discord with the rest of his intellectual and moral nature. These are cases of what, for want of a better term, are called 'partial insanity.' Sometimes its existence, and at other times its limits are doubtful and undefinable, and it is in these cases that the difficulty arises of determining whether the patient has passed the line of moral or legal accountability for his actions. A man does not become irresponsible by the mere fact of being partially insane. Such a man does not take leave of his passions by becoming insane, and he retains as much control over them as in health. He may commit offences too, with which his infirmity has nothing to do; he may be sane as to his crime, understand its nature, and be governed by the same methods in regard to it as other people, while on some other subject having no relation to it whatever he may be sub-

men were under the application of well-settled legal principles justly and properly executed.

A different decision has been made in the State of Alabama,

ject to some delusion. In a reported case a defendant was convicted of cheating by false pretences, but was not saved from punishment by his insane delusion that he was the lawful son of a well-known prince. The first thing, therefore, to be impressed upon you is, that whenever this partial insanity is relied on as a defence it must appear that the crime charged was the product of the delusion or other morbid condition, and connected with it as cause and effect, and not the result of sane reasoning or natural motives, which the party may be capable of notwithstanding his circumscribed disorder. But assuming that the infirmity of mind has had a direct influence in the direction of crime, the difficulty is to fix the degree and character of disorder which in such cases will correct irresponsibility in law. The out-givings of the judicial mind on this subject have not always been entirely satisfactory or in harmony with the conclusions of medical science. Courts have in former times undertaken to lay down a law of insanity without reference to, and in ignorance of, the medical aspects of the subject, when it could only properly be dealt with through a concurrent and harmonious treatment by the two sciences of law and medicine. They have, therefore, adopted, and again discarded one theory after another in the effort to find some common ground where the due regard for the security of society and humanity for the afflicted may meet. The mind can only be known by its outward manifestations, and they are found in the language and conduct of the man. For this reason, evidence is admissible to show conduct and language at different times and on different occasions which indicate to the general mind some morbid condition of the intellectual powers, and the more extended the view of the person's life the safer is the judgment formed of him. Everything relating to his physical and mental history is relevant, because any conclusion as to his sanity must often rest upon a large number of facts.

"Evidence as to insanity in the parents and immediate relatives is also pertinent. It is never allowed to infer insanity in a case from the mere fact of its existence in the ancestors, but when testimony is given directly tending to prove insane conduct on the part of the accused, this kind of proof is admissible as corroborative of the other. The reliance of the defence is on the existence of an insane delusion in the prisoner's mind, which so perverted his reason as to incapacitate him from perceiving the difference between right and wrong as to this particular act."

As a part of the history of judicial sentiment on this subject, and by way of illustrating the relation between insane delusions and responsibility, the judge referred to the McNaghten case in England, and the rules laid down by the judges of the Superior Court of England, and stated that these rules, with some qualifications, had been approved in the United States, as in the case of Com. v. Rogers, 7 Metc., 500, where Chief-Justice Shaw, of Massachusetts, said: "Monomania may operate as an excuse for a criminal act when the delusion is such that the person under its influence has a real and firm belief of some fact, not true in itself, but which if it were true would excuse his act—as when the belief is that the party killed had an immediate design upon his life, and under that belief the insane man kills in supposed self-defence. A common instance is where he believes that the act he is doing is done by the immediate command of God, and he acts under the delusive but sincere belief that what he is doing is by the command of a superior power which supersedes all human laws and the laws of nature."

Judge Cox, in his charge, also

which is also the rule in all courts where the right-and-wrong test is not accepted as the sole one. As heretofore stated, the Supreme Court of Alabama has repudiated, in Parsons *v.*

explained the term "insane delusion" as follows: "An insane delusion is never the result of reasoning and reflection. It is not generated by them, and it cannot be dispelled by them. Whenever convictions are founded on evidence, on comparison of facts and opinions, and arguments, they are not insane delusions. The insane delusion does not relate to mere sentiments or theories, or abstract questions in law, politics, or religion—all these are the subject of opinions which are beliefs founded on reasoning and reflection. These opinions are often absurd in the extreme, and result from naturally weak or ill-trained reasoning powers—hasty conclusions from insufficient data, ignorance of men and things, credulous disposition, fraudulent imposture, and often from perverted moral sentiments—but still they are opinions founded on some kind of evidence and liable to be changed by other external evidence or sounder reasoning, but they are not insane delusions. The Mormon prophets profess to be inspired and to believe in the duty of plural marriages, although it was forbidden by a law of the United States. One of the sect violated the law and was indicted for it. The judge who tried him instructed the jury as follows: That if the defendant, under the influence of a religious belief that it was right under an inspiration, if he believed that it was right, deliberately married a second time, having a first wife living, the want of consciousness of evil intent, the want of understanding that he was committing a crime, did not excuse him. Approved by the Supreme Court of the United States (Reynolds *v.* U. S., 98 U. S., 145). And so in like manner a man may reason himself into a conviction of the expediency and patriotic character of political assassination, but to allow him to find shelter from punishment behind that belief as an insane delusion would be simply monstrous. There is undoubtedly a form of insane delusion consisting of the belief by a person that he is inspired by the Almighty to do something—to kill another, for example—and this delusion may be so strong as to impel him to the commission of a crime. The defendant in this case claims that he labors under such a delusion, an impulse, or 'pressure,' as he called it, at the time of the assassination. The prisoner's unsworn declarations since the assassination on this subject, in his own favor, are of course not evidence. A man's language, when sincere, may be evidence of the condition of his mind when it is uttered, but it is not evidence in his favor of the facts declared by him, or as to his previous acts or condition. It is true that the law allows a prisoner to testify in his own behalf, and thereby makes his sworn testimony on the witness-stand legal evidence, to be received and considered by you, but it leaves the weight of that evidence to be determined by you also. Whether it is true or not that insanity is a disease of the physical organ, the brain, it is clearly in one sense a disease when it attacks a man in his maturity. It involves a departure from his normal and natural condition, and this is the reason why the inquiry into the man's previous condition is so pertinent, because it tends to show whether what is called 'an act of insanity' is a natural outgrowth of his disposition, or is utterly at war with it, and therefore indicates an unnatural change. That evidence on this subject is proper was held by the Supreme Judicial Court of New Hampshire in State *v.* Jones, 50 N. H., 369, Judge Ladd.

"From the materials that have been presented to you, two pictures have been drawn by counsel—the one represents a youth of more than the average of mental endowments, surrounded by certain demoralizing

State,[1] capacity to distinguish between right and wrong as an exclusive test of responsibility for crime, and has adopted the test that defendant is not responsible if he has, by reason of the "duress" of mental disease, so far lost the "power to choose" between right and wrong as not to avoid doing the act in question so that his free agency was at the time destroyed, *and*, at the same time, the alleged crime was so connected with such mental disease, in the relation of cause and effect, as to have been the product or offspring of it solely.

The court in the same case added: "The same rule applies to delusional insanity, and necessarily conflicts with the old rule laid down by the English judges in McNaghten's case, that in cases of delusion the defendant must be considered in the same situation, as to responsibility, as if the facts with respect to which the delusion exists were real."

At a trial for murder in Arkansas, where the defence was insanity, the evidence showed that the defendant, one Bolling, had killed the deceased under the delusion that the latter was attempting to marry defendant's mother against her will. The court charged the jury that "insanity will only excuse the com-

influences at a time when his character was being developed; starting in life without resources, but developing a vicious sharpness and cunning, conceiving evidences of great pith and moment that indicated unusual forecast, though beyond his resources; consumed all the while by insatiate vanity and craving for notoriety; violent in temper and selfish in disposition; immoral and dishonest in every direction; leading a life for years of swindling and fraud, and finally, as the culmination of a depraved career, working himself up to the resolution to startle the country with a crime which would secure for him a bad eminence, and perhaps a future reward. The other represents a youth, born, as it were, under malign influences; the child of a diseased mother, and a father subject to religious delusions; deprived of his mother at an early age; reared in retirement and under the influence of fanatical religious views; subsequently this man, filled with fanatical theories, launched upon the world with no guidance save his own impulses, and then evincing an incapacity for any continuous occupation; changing from one pursuit to another—now a lawyer, now a religionist, now a politician—unsuccessful in law; full of wildly impracticable schemes for which he had neither resources nor ability; subject to delusions about his abilities and prospects of success, and his relations to others; his mind incoherent and incapable of reasoning on any subject, withal amiable, gentle, and not aggressive, but the victim of surrounding influences; with a mind so weak and a temperament so impressible that under the excitement of a political campaign he became frenzied and insanely deluded, and thereby impelled to the commission of a crime, the guilt of which he could not at the moment understand." This case will be found fully reported in 10 Fed. Rep., p. 161.

[1] 81 Ala., 577, 7 Am. Crim. Rep., 1,889.

mission of a criminal act when it is made to appear affirmatively by evidence fairly preponderating that the person committing it was at the time insane to such an extent as not to know right from wrong." After conviction the defendant appealed, and this charge was held to be erroneous, "since by such a test if defendant knew or could distinguish right from wrong in general affairs he would be guilty, though upon the one matter pertinent to his case his knowledge and power to distinguish between right and wrong are wholly deficient." Accordingly the conviction was reversed.[1]

In this connection it may be stated that the New York decisions do not at all deny the importance of the will power as an essential element of crime. They only take this practical view, viz.: If there is still, despite of the delusion, the ability to form a correct perception of the legal quality of the act and to know that it is wrong, the law presumes in such a case that the person has also the power to choose between the right and wrong course of action, and will not permit their courts or juries to speculate as to its possible non-existence.[2]

INTOXICATION.

Two leading principles are well settled on the subject of intoxication in its relation to criminal responsibility: (1) That drunkenness of itself does not relieve from crime; and (2) that, on the other hand, settled insanity caused by alcoholic excesses may create criminal irresponsibility.

PERMANENT INSANITY AS THE RESULT OF THE USE OF ALCOHOL.

Under the decisions of the courts of the different States of this country, there cannot be any doubt that the properly so-called *delirium tremens* and similar states are treated as to criminal responsibility in the same way as insanity produced by any other cause and the same legal test is applicable. "A fixed frenzy or insanity, as *delirium tremens* or '*mania a potu*,' destroys all legal responsibility, and although induced by volun-

[1] Bolling *v.* State, 54 Ark., 588; s.c., 16 S. W. Rep., 658.

[2] People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 407; Silvernail's Penal Code, note to § 21.

tary intoxication, is a good defence. It annuls responsibility, provided the mental condition can stand the tests applied in other forms of insanity. The insane person is no more punishable for his acts than if the delirium had proceeded from causes not under his control." [1]

"Permanent insanity produced by habitual intoxication excuses a criminal act," and "when the mind is destroyed by long-continued habit of drunkenness, or where the habit of intoxication caused an habitual madness; and where a person is insane at the time he commits the crime, he is not punishable, although such insanity be remotely occasioned by undue indulgence in spirituous liquors, or from what in a moral sense is a criminal neglect of duty. For if the reason be perverted or destroyed by a fixed delusion, though brought on by his own vices, the law holds him not accountable." [2]

To the same effect is the following ruling of a New York court: "Simple drunkenness does not in itself constitute insanity, but if a person is in a state of *delirium tremens* at the time of doing an act, and is therefore unable to distinguish the quality of the act as right or wrong, he is relieved from criminal responsibility." [3] Rulings in other States show a similar tendency. To constitute insanity caused by intoxication a defence to murder, it must be "settled insanity," and not a mere temporary mental condition.[4]

Under the Texas Penal Code, art. 40*a*, providing that temporary insanity produced by the recent use of intoxicating liquors does not destroy the responsibility for crime when defendant voluntarily makes himself intoxicated, does not apply to delirium tremens, the immediate cause of which is abstinence from liquor after a prolonged intoxication and which is always an involuntary result thereof.[5]

In Wisconsin it was held error to charge the jury, in effect, that intoxication resulting in total or partial suspension of brain function was voluntary madness; and if the person who while sober is sane, this condition does not relieve him from responsi-

[1] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," iv., 714, and cases there cited.
[2] Ibid., 713.
[3] People *v.* O'Connell, 62 How. Pr., 436; abstr. s. c. in 13 Weekly Dig., 95, affirmed in id., 536.
[4] People *v.* Travers, 88 Cal., 233; s. c., 26 Pac. Rep., 88.
[5] Kelly *v.* State, 31 Tex. Crim. R., 216; s. c., 20 S. W. Rep., 357.

bility for the commission of a crime; and to refuse to charge that if drunkenness brings on a disease which causes such a degree of madness even for a time that it would relieve from criminal responsibility if caused in any other way, defendant was not responsible.[1]

Delirium Tremens Must Exist at the Time of the Commission of the Act.

Where delirium tremens is set up as a defence, the delirium must exist at the time the act was committed, as there is no presumption of its existence from antecedent fits from which the party recovered; for this is a mere transient derangement of the mind, and there is no presumption of its recurrence or continuance.[2] Insanity as a secondary effect of long-continued excessive drinking, if it so deprived a man of his reason that he could not perceive the mental qualities of actions or tell right from wrong, is a complete excuse.[3] Intoxication before and at the time of a homicide is insufficient to prevent a conviction of murder, in the absence of a prolonged debauch or fixed insanity produced by drink.[4]

Alcoholic Insanity Must be of Permanent Form, that is, Evidence of Disease as a Result of Alcohol Must be Shown.

The general opinion as enunciated by the courts seems to be that alcoholic insanity, to exempt from crime, must be of a relatively permanent character; while, on the other hand, mere temporary though decided alcoholic insanity is not deemed sufficient to cause that effect. "Temporary insanity, or unconsciousness of what one is doing, occasioned by intoxication, is no excuse for crime," and "temporary insanity resulting immediately from voluntary intoxication does not destroy legal responsibility or constitute a defence for crime."[5]

There are, however, decisions to be found in some States

[1] Terrill *v.* State, 74 Wis., 278; s. c., 42 N. W. Rep., 243. And see State *v.* Zorn, 22 Ore., 591.

[2] Wagner *v.* State, 116 Ind., 181.

[3] State *v.* Wilson, 104 N. C., 868; s. c., 10 S. E. Rep., 315.

[4] Com. v. McMillan, 144 Pa. St., 610; s. c., 22 Atl., 1,029.

[5] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," iv., pp. 714, 716.

which hold a different view on this matter. As, for instance, the following Texas ruling: To raise the question of temporary insanity from the voluntary recent use of liquor on a trial for murder, the drinking must precede the homicide, and the effect must be operative on the mind at the time of the killing to the extent of rendering the accused temporarily insane.[1]

The English courts have held generally on this subject the principles which are regarded as dominating in the United States. A state of disease brought about by a person's own act, as delirium tremens, caused by excessive drinking, is no excuse for committing a crime unless the disease so produced is permanent.[2] On the other hand, we meet with some rulings in the English courts which allow alcoholic insanity even of a mere temporary character as a defence to crime, as we have seen it to be allowed in some States in this country. These rulings state that the question is whether there is insanity or not; it is immaterial whether it was caused by the person himself or by the vices of his ancestors, and it is immaterial whether the insanity is permanent or temporary. If a man was in such a state of intoxication that he did not know the nature of his act or that his act was wrongful, his act would be excusable.

According to J. Dixon Mann the "permanency" required by a great number of courts refers presumably "rather to a continuance of the symptoms for a definite time after the individual has ceased to indulge in alcohol, than to an absolutely permanent condition."[3]

Volutary Intoxication not Permanent.

While habitual intoxication resulting in a positive state of insanity affords absolute exemption from criminal responsibility, other states of mental disturbance caused by alcohol are generally regarded in a wholly different light. The New York Penal Code provides in section 22 that "No act committed by a person while in a state of voluntary intoxication shall be deemed less criminal by reason of his having been in such condition. But whenever the actual existence of any particular purpose, motive, or intent is a necessary element to constitute a

[1] Gonzales v. State, 31 Tex. Crim. Rep., 508; s. c., 21 S. W. Rep., 253.
[2] 1 Hale P. C., 32; 4 Blacks., 26.
[3] J. Dixon Mann, "For. Med.," etc., Phila., 1892, p. 360.

r degree of crime, the jury may take into ... fact that the accused was intoxicated at the ... time ... determining the purpose, motive, or intent with which ... did the act." The principle involved in the first sentence was derived from the common law and is ... generally accepted as the rule in the United States. "A state ... crime because the person perpetrating it ... state of intoxication at the time. ... is no excuse for crime, even when the ... extreme that the person is insensible of his ... and unconscious of his acts." "As a matter ... neither excuses nor justifies crime, therefore intoxication ... time of committing an offence cannot be set up as ... Drunkenness is no excuse for crime, neither is ... mind resulting from drunkenness, unless it be a ... and continuous result."

This principle was established by many earlier decisions of ... in relation to different crimes, as, for instance, bigamy, perjury, homicide, and it is maintained by a great ... of later cases in all parts of the United States, most ...

When we consider the question as to proof of intoxication being allowed to enable the jury to determine whether the accused could form any specific motive, purpose, or intent, we find some diversity of opinion in courts in States where this matter is not regulated by statute as it is in New York and in a few States where it is so regulated.

In Oregon, under Hill's Code, section 1,358, permitting the jury in a cause involving actual "motive, purpose, or intent" to consider the fact that the accused was intoxicated at the time, the defence being an insane impulse induced by intoxication, the court properly waived the question of "motive and purpose" and directed the jury to consider the intent.[1]

In South Carolina it was held that drunkenness of defendant at the time of committing a homicide cannot be considered in determining intent as bearing on malice.[2]

In Connecticut, on a trial for assault with intent to murder, the court charged that intoxication was no defence, but should be considered where a specific intent was necessary, and that defendant was not guilty if he was so intoxicated as to have lost his intelligence, so that there was a reasonable doubt whether he was able to form a purpose to kill or to know what he was doing, and it was held that this charge was not prejudicial to defendant.[3]

In Louisiana it was held that a charge which assumes that drunkenness is so inconsistent with malice that when it is shown to exist at the time of the killing, the State must show affirmatively that the drinking was for the purpose of committing the deed, is palpably wrong.[4]

In Pennsylvania, on a trial for murder, evidence that defendant had liquor in his house and might have drunk it, is not sufficient to show that he was intoxicated when the crime was committed; and evidence that defendant was drunk at some other time and as to the effect it had on him, was properly excluded.[5]

In California, under the Penal Code, section 22, providing that whenever the actual existence of any particular purpose,

c., 15 S. W. Rep., 889; State *v.* O'Neil 51 Kan., 631; s. c., 33 Pac. Rep., 287.

[1] State *v.* Hansen, 25 Ore., 391; s. c., 35 Pac. Rep., 976.

[2] State *v.* Morgan, 42 S. C.; s. c., 18 S. E. Rep., 937.

[3] State *v.* Fiske, 63 Conn., 388; s. c., 28 Atl., 572.

[4] State *v.* Ashley, 45 La. Ann., 1,036; s. c., 13 So. Rep., 738.

[5] Com. *v.* Cloonen, 151 Pa. St., 605; s. c., 25 Atl., 145.

motive, or intent is a necessary element to constitute any species or degree of crime, the fact of intoxication may be considered. It was held that there is no error in charging in a homicide case that intoxication can only be considered for the purpose of determining the degree of crime, the degree of murder being based on intent.[1]

In a Texas case the evidence showed that defendant was drunk at the time of the homicide, and there was strong testimony of temporary insanity. The statute as to drunkenness (Texas Penal Code, article 40a) provides that neither intoxication nor temporary insanity, produced by the voluntary recent use of ardent spirits, shall constitute any excuse for the commission of crime, nor shall intoxication mitigate either the degree or penalty of crime; but temporary insanity caused by liquor may be shown by defendant in mitigation of the penalty, and in cases of murder to determine the degree of murder of which the defendant may be found guilty. The court charged that "the law just quoted places a person charged with crime before the law to be tried without reference to his drunkenness, unless said drunkenness goes to the extent of producing temporary insanity. It is, therefore, your duty, as a preliminary inquiry, to discover the mental state of the defendant at the time of the homicide." It was held that, conceding the charge to be correct so far as it went, it was error to fail to define "temporary insanity" and to charge that the jury could consider it in mitigation of the penalty after they had determined the degree of murder.[2]

In an Illinois case, where it was shown that the defendant said that he was drunk when he committed the homicide, and another witness testified that he acted as though he had been drinking, it was held proper to instruct the jury as to the law in regard to homicide committed during intoxication, although most of the witnesses testified that defendant was sober.[3]

History of the Subject in New York State.

The history of this subject in New York State is interesting. The principle that mere intoxication, even when amounting

[1] People v. Vincent, 95 Cal., 425; s. c., 30 Pac., 581.
[2] Enere v. State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 318; s. c., 20 S. W. Rep., 744.
[3] Jamison v. People, 145 Ill., 357; s. c. 34 N. E. Rep., 486.

to absolute unconsciousness, does not relieve from responsibility, was followed throughout by the earlier rulings, and no exception was made even in regard to crimes in which the principal elements were deliberation or intent. These cases all held that voluntary intoxication of the prisoner at the time of the killing did not affect the legal character of the crime, and was not material in determining whether the offence was murder or only manslaughter, where the act of killing was unequivocal and unprovoked.[1] So in other early cases it was held that voluntary intoxication furnished no excuse for crime. Even where intent was a necessary ingredient, so long as the offender was capable of conceiving a design, he would be presumed, in the absence of proof to the contrary, to have intended the natural consequences of his own act.[2] In a later case it was said that an essential yet limited modification of the law in regard to intent had been occasioned by a change of the law on murder which took place in 1873. "Since the law of 1873 in New York, in order to convict of the crime of murder in the first degree, to the element of intent must be added that of deliberation, and when this is wanting, the highest grade of this crime has not been attained. Where the intent to slay is present, but the 'deliberated and premeditated design' is absent, the crime is only murder in the second degree. Therefore, while evidence of drunkenness cannot be received to excuse the crime or make it less than murder in the second degree, yet it can be received for the purpose of showing that the party did not deliberately premeditate."[3]

Yet in 1881 it was held by the Court of Appeals that the rule was well settled that voluntary intoxication of one who without provocation commits a homicide, although amounting to a frenzy, did not exempt him from the same construction of his conduct, and the same legal inferences, upon the question of intent as affecting the grade of his crime, as were applicable to a person entirely sober.[4]

[1] Kenny *v.* People, 31 N. Y., 330, affirming 18 Abb. Pr., 91; s. c., 27 How. Pr., 202, citing 18 N. Y., 20; Lew. Cr. C., 75; 7 Carr. and P., 145; 2 Park. Cr. R., 223; People *v.* Fuller, 2 Park. Cr. Rep., 16.

[2] People *v.* Rogers, 18 N. Y., 9, reviewing 3 Park. Cr. R., 632; s. c., 15 How. Pr., 557; People *v.* Robinson, 2 Park. Cr. R., 235, affirming 1 id., 649; Friery *v.* People, 54 Barb., 319.

[3] People *v.* Batting, 49 How. Pr., 392.

[4] Flanagan *v.* People, 86 N. Y., 559; see Silvernail, note to Penal Code, § 22.

While this case was pending in appeal, and largely because of the seeming severity of the rule as there applied, the new law in the State of New York was established by its Penal Code, section 22, which we quoted above, as follows:

"Whether the mental condition of any particular purpose, motive, or intent is a necessary element to constitute a particular species or degree of crime, the jury may take into consideration the fact that the accused was intoxicated at the time in determining the purpose, motive, or intent with which he committed the act." Since then the decisions have been uniform in giving a liberal scope to this statute.

It is the error to instruct the jury in a case of burglary that they may take into consideration the intoxication of the defendant in determining the intent with which the defendant entered the building in question.[1] Voluntary intoxication may be considered upon the question of premeditation.[2]

Intoxication may be considered by the jury in determining the motive and intent and thus whether the defendant acted with deliberation and premeditation.[3]

Degree of Intoxication.

A necessary consequence of the new rule was that the degree of intoxication must be taken into account, which difficult question could not arise to such extent under the strict early rule.

[1] People v. Burns, 2 N. Y. Cr. Rep., 415.

[2] People v. Conroy, 2 N. Y. Crim. Rep., 247; s. c., 33 Hun, 119; People v. Cassiano, 1 N. Y. Cr. Rep., 505; s. c., 39 Hun, 388.

[3] People v. Mills, 98 N. Y., 176. And see also People v. Fish, 125 N. Y., 136; People v. Young, 102 Cal., 411; 36 Pac. R., 770; People v. Lane, 100 Cal., 379; s. c., 34 Pac. R., 856; Osborn v. State (Tex. Cr. App.), 26 S. W. R., 625; Crew v. State (Tex. Cr. App.), 23 S. W. R., 14; Jenkins v. State (Ga.), 18 S. E. R., 992; Garner v. State, 28 Fla., 113; s. c., 9 So. R., 835; Bernhardt v. State, 82 Wis., 23; 51 N. W. R., 1,009. In Georgia the code, s. 4,301, declares that drunkenness is no excuse for crime unless occasioned by the fraud or contrivance of another, in order to have a crime perpetrated. So, if persons give whiskey to another, "in a social way and with no view or purpose of the time" to induce him to commit a crime, and afterward, while he is so drunk that he knows not what he does, procure him to commit a crime, he is legally responsible (McCook v. State, 97 Ga., 740; s. c., 17 S. E. R., 1,019). In New Jersey it was held that where defendant, though intoxicated, had the capacity to form an intent and did form and execute the intent to take the life of deceased, the intoxication does not reduce the crime to murder in the second degree (Warner v. State, 56 N. J. L., 63; s. c., 29 Atl. R., 505).

For the question whether the accused, in a given case, was able to form the intent, deliberation, or premeditation required for the particular crime depends entirely on the previous question as to the degree of intoxication.[1]

In Florida, on the trial of an indictment for murder in the first degree, it was held error to charge that voluntary intoxication is no excuse for crime committed under its influence, and that if a person is sober enough to form the intention to shoot another and does shoot and kill him, the law presumes that he is sober enough to form a premeditated design to kill him, and he is criminally liable for the act; since, in such case, the fact that defendant was voluntarily intoxicated is to be considered in determining whether he was in such condition of mind capable of forming a premeditated design.[2]

In Wisconsin the court charged that: "If you shall find that defendant at the time he struck the blow was in such a condition from the use of spirituous liquor that he was incapable of forming an intent to kill, then you may consider the question of intoxication; . . . in short, was he at the time in such a condition mentally as to be incapable of forming this premeditated design to effect death?" it was held to be no error to refuse to charge: "If you have a reasonable doubt whether, at the time of the killing, defendant had sufficient capacity to deliberately think upon and rationally to determine so to kill, you cannot find him guilty of murder in the first degree, although such inability was the result of intemperance.[3]

In Alabama it was held that where defendant voluntarily puts himself under the influence of liquor, and in consequence acts under an exaggerated or unjustifiable belief as to the necessity of taking the life of deceased, such belief will not avail as a defence on a prosecution for murder.[4]

In Oregon it was held that an instruction, that while voluntary drunkenness of itself cannot avail as a defence to a charge of murder in the first degree, yet it should be considered on the question of whether the defendant committed the act with deliberation and premeditation in connection with all the

[1] Garner *v.* State, 28 Fla., 113; s. c., 9 So. R., 835; Bernhardt *v.* State, 82 Wis., 23; 51 N. W. R., 1,009.

[2] Garner *v.* State, 28 Fla., 113; s. c., 9 So. R., 835.

[3] Bernhardt *v.* State, 82 Wis., 23; 51 N. W., 1,009.

[4] Springfield *v.* State, 96 Ala., 81; s. c., 11 So. R., 250.

her down. She was then permitted to rise, when she left the room and went to another part of the house. He immediately followed her and knocked her down again, and with his knife inflicted on her wounds, one of which proved mortal, and she died soon afterward. At different times previous to the assault the defendant had made threats that he would take his wife's life. He at times indulged in an excessive use of intoxicating liquors. He had been drinking for a number of days before he committed the crime, but he testified that he was not drunk on the day he killed his wife. After the homicide he was confined in jail, and his paroxysms were so violent that it was necessary to iron him and to put him in a padded cell.

There was considerable testimony which tended to show that prior to the commission of the offence, for a number of years, the defendant at times was in a frame of mind which might prevent deliberation and premeditation, and that this might have been produced by blows which he had received upon his head a long time previously or by the effects of intoxicating drinks.

The counsel for the defence requested, which the court refused, to charge: (1) That if the jury are satisfied that at the time the alleged act was committed the defendant was suffering from the effects of delirium tremens, or any other species of insanity, they must acquit, as the defendant would not be capable of distinguishing right from wrong or of deliberating upon or premeditating the act; (2) that if in consequence of some disease the defendant had not sufficient use of his reason to control the passions which prompted the act complained of, the jury must acquit; (3) that if the defendant was at the time of committing the act intoxicated, the jury will consider that fact as an evidence tending to show an absence of premeditation and deliberation.

The jury found the prisoner guilty of murder in the first degree, and he was accordingly sentenced. On appeal Judge Miller delivered the following opinion of the court: In a previous portion of his charge, the judge had laid down the rule as to what constituted insanity; he then cited the statute, and said substantially that if a man is insane under the definition of the statute he is irresponsible, no matter from what his insanity proceeds; and if he is ignorant of the nature and qual-

ity of the act he commits, or does not know that it is wrong, he is irresponsible. The charge thus made covered in substance the proposition contained in the request, and the court could not properly be called upon to repeat what had previously been correctly stated.

The second request was erroneous in excluding the consideration of the question as to the capacity of the defendant to distinguish between right and wrong. The judge had cited the statute, Penal Code, section 22, and laid down the rule correctly in reference to the proposition presented by the request. The request to charge was to the effect that intoxication did absolutely tend to show an absence of premeditation and deliberation. This cannot be the case in all instances. It is the duty of the judge to leave to the jury the consideration of the question of intoxication in determining the motive and intent, and the question whether the defendant acted with deliberation and premeditation. Therefore no error was committed upon the trial, and the judgment should be affirmed.

The New York Rule now Generally Adopted in Other States.

The principle established by the New York Penal Code is to-day recognized generally in most of the United States, as is shown by the reported cases in the different States, especially in cases of homicide.[1]

In Luper v. State (29 Tex. App., 63; s.c., 14 S. W. Rep., 398) it was held that where the evidence plainly shows the commis-

[1] King v. State, 90 Ala., 612; s. c., 8 So. R., 856; Fonville v. State, 91 Ala., 39; s. c., 8 So. R., 688; Chatham v. State, 92 Ala., 47; s. c., 9 So. Rep., 607 (larceny); Walker v. State, 91 Ala., 76; s. c., 9 So. R., 74; Springfield v. State, 96 Ala., 1; s. c., 11 So. R., 350; Chrisman v. State, 34 Ark., 283; s. c., 15 S. W. R., 889; People v. Lane, 100 Cal., 379; s. c., 34 Pac. Rep., 856; People v. Vincent, 95 Cal., 425; s. c., 30 Pac. R., 581; State v. Fiske, 63 Conn., 388; s. c., 28 Atl., 572; Garner v. State, 28 Fla., 113; s. c., 9 So. R., 835; Crosby v. People, 137 Ill., 325; s. c., 27 N. E. R., 49; State v. O'Neil, 37 Kan., 651; s. c., 33 Pac. R., 287; State v. Hill, 46 La. Ann., 27; s. c., 14 So. R., 294; State v. Ashley, 45 La. Ann., s. 1,036; s. c., 13 So. R., 733; O'Grady v. State, 36 Neb., 320; s. c., 54 N. W. R., 556 (forgery); State v. Hansen, 25 Ore., 391; s. c., 35 Pac. Rep., 976; Ayres v. State (Tex.), 26 S. W. R., 396; Crew v. State (Tex.), 23 S. W. R., 14 (rape); Evers v. State, 31 Tex. Crim. Rep., 318; s. c., 20 S. W. R., 744; Davis v. Com., 16 Va. L. J., 464; s. c., 1 S. E. R., 388; 31 Cent. Law J., ... notes and cases collated. Contra, State v. Morgan, 40 S. C., 345; S. E. Rep., 937.

sion of a homicide by persons engaged in a robbery, and in possession of their full mental powers, a charge as to the law of homicide by intoxicated persons is properly refused.

It was also held in Texas that, under Act 17, Laws Tex., c. 14, providing that neither intoxication nor temporary insanity produced by the voluntary recent use of ardent spirits shall constitute any excuse for the commission of crime, nor shall intoxication mitigate either the degree or the penalty of the crime, evidence of temporary insanity produced by such use of ardent spirits may be introduced in mitigation of the penalty, distinguishing Scott *v.* State, 12 Tex., App., 31.[1]

In other cases in that State it was held that temporary insanity caused by the voluntary recent use of intoxicating liquor may reduce the degree of murder under the evidence.[2]

In a Utah case the defendant, one Hopt, was convicted and sentenced for murder in the first degree. The Supreme Court affirmed the judgment. On a writ of error Justice Gray, of the United States Supreme Court, delivered the following opinion: "At common law, indeed, as a general rule, voluntary intoxication affords no excuse, justification, or extenuation of a crime committed under its influence. But when a statute establishing different degrees of murder requires deliberate premeditation in order to constitute murder in the first degree, the question whether the accused is in such a condition of mind, by reason of drunkenness or otherwise, as to be capable of deliberate premeditation, necessarily becomes a material subject of consideration by the jury. The law has been repeatedly so ruled in the supreme judicial court of Massachusetts in cases tried before a full court, and in cases of other States. And the same rule is expressly enacted in the Penal Code of Utah, section 20."[3]

[1] Houston *v.* State, 26 Tex. App., 657; s. c., 14 S. W. R., 352; Crew *v.* State (Tex. Cr. App.), 23 S. W. R., 14; Delgado *v.* State (Tex. Cr. App.), 29 S. W. Rep., 1,070.

[2] Ayers *v.* State (Tex. Cr. App.), 26 S. W. R., 396; Gonzales *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 508; s. c., 21 S. W. R., 253; Enere *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 318; s. c., 20 S. W. R., 744.

[3] 104 U. S., 631; Stewart Chaplin, "Cases on Criminal Law," Boston, 1891, p. 78—citing for the common law: U. S. *v.* Drew, 5 Mas., 28; U. S. *v.* McGlue, 1 Curt., 1; Com. *v.* Hawkins, 3 Gray (Mass.), 463; People *v.* Rogers, 18 N. Y., 9. For the exception by the statute: Com. *v.* Dorsey, 103 Mass., 412; Pirtle *v.* State, 9 Humph. (Tenn.), 663; Kelly *v.* Com., 1 Grant. (Pa.), Cas., 484; People *v.* Belencia, 21 Cal., 544; State *v.* Johnson, 40 Conn., 136; Pigman *v.* State of Ohio, 14 Ohio, 555; Compiled Laws of Utah of 1876, pp. 568, 569.

So in Virginia it was held that a moderate degree of drunkenness will be wholly irrelevant on the question of responsibility. One who had fired several shots at his wife, and at persons who attempted to interfere, and on being arrested by a policeman shot and killed him, is guilty of murder in the first degree, even though he was to some degree drunk at the time.[1]

In Alabama the courts have gone so far as to hold that when the intoxication goes so far as to actually deprive a person of the capacity to form a felonious or malicious intent, this has not only a bearing on the degree or species of the crime, as in case of homicide, but can even excuse him from any guilt at all. Intoxication so great as to render a person incapable of forming a felonious intent is a defence to a prosecution for larceny.[2]

In Dakota on a trial for assault with intent to kill, evidence that the accused was intoxicated is admissible under Penal Code of Dakota, section 17, providing that when any particular purpose, motive, or intent is a necessary element in any species or degree of crime, the jury may consider the facts that the accused was intoxicated.[3]

So in Nebraska it was held that although intoxication does not justify or excuse crime, intoxication so excessive as to deprive a person of reason, when not indulged in for the purpose of committing crime, may relieve him from liability for a crime while so intoxicated.[4]

And so also in Arkansas, in a case of murderous assault the same rule was followed: "Though generally voluntary drunkenness is no defense to a crime, yet where an intent is an essential element of the crime committed it may be shown that the accused was so drunk as to entertain the necessary intent."[5]

Premeditation Necessary in Cases of Intoxication.

In cases of intoxication, a special weight seems to be given by the courts to the question whether the violent act was done

[1] Davis v. Com., 30 Va. L. J. & R. ——; 25 S. E. R. 286.

[2] Cochran v. State, 82 Ala. 67; s. c. 2 So. R. 887.

[3] People v. Robertson, 1 Dak. 287; s. c. 46 N. W. R. 817.

[4] O'Grady v. State, 36 Neb. 830; s. c. 54 N. W. R. 556.

[5] Christman v. State, 54 Ark. 97; s. c. 15 S. W. Rep. 889. And see also Crosby v. People, 15 Ill. 25; s. c. 27 N. E. Rep. 49. Franklin v. State, 97 Ala. 39; s. c. 8 So. Rep. 238; King v. State, 90 Ala. 612; s. c. 8 So. Rep. 856.

on provocation. When there was no previous provocation, courts are less inclined to consider the state of intoxication as disproving malicious intent.[1]

Prior to these mitigatory statutes there were, as we have shown, essential differences among judicial opinions in regard to the question whether intoxication can reduce a homicide from murder in the first degree to manslaughter or only to murder of a lower grade. The latter opinion seems to be sustained generally by the courts of New York and of most of the other States.[2]

The former opinion is followed in Alabama.[3]

It is quite probable that since these statutes these differences of opinion will not obtain.

Intent Formed Before Intoxication.

It should be clearly stated in considering voluntary intoxication as affecting guilt that we assume that the accused when getting drunk did not have any criminal intent in so doing. It is common experience that some criminals drink to engender in themselves the courage or recklessness necessary for the execution of the criminal design previously conceived, and that again others, who are saturated with the idea but not yet decided to commit the crime in this ambiguous state of mind, start to drink hoping they may thus be emboldened to commit the crime. Such intoxication is virtually the beginning of the crime itself. In regard to the first-mentioned category of criminals, the "American and English Encyclopedia of Law" justly observes (Vol. IV., p. 711):

"Where the accused determined upon the act when sober, and fortified himself with liquor to commit the act, it (the intoxication) furnishes no extenuation of the offence."

Intoxication so excessive as to deprive a person of reason, *when not indulged in for the purpose of committing crime*, may relieve him from liability for a crime.[4]

[1] Kenny *v.* People, 31 N. Y., 330, affirming 19 Abb. Pr., 91; s. c., 27 How. Pr., 202; Flanagan *v.* People, 86 N. Y., 559; s. c., 13 Weekly Dig., 242; People *v.* Fish, 125 N. Y., 136, 8 N. Y. Cr. R., 136; 34 N. Y. St. R., 843.

[2] People *v.* Batting, 49 How. Pr., 392; Ayres *v.* State (Tex.), 26 S. W. R., 396; Garner *v.* State, 28 Fla., 113, 9 So. R., 835.

[3] King *v.* State, 90 Ala., 612; s. c., 8 So. R., 856.

[4] O'Grady *v.* State, 36 Neb., 320; s. c., 54 N. W. R., 556.

INVOLUNTARY INTOXICATION.

When speaking of voluntary intoxication, we did not refer exclusively to those cases where the person in question drank for the express purpose of getting drunk, or at least drank while being fully conscious of what would be the final result. We referred to all those cases where he drinks of his own free will without difference as to whether he realized in fact the possibility of the effect or not. So we excluded the circumstance of one forced to drink by others, either by means of physical constraint or of serious threats, and equally the case where the person induced to take the drink did so not under his own but under the authoritative responsibility of another, as of his physician. We also excluded the case of fraud; for instance, where a strong drink was substituted, without knowledge of the person in question, for a harmless one, and he so becomes the victim of malice of others, perhaps even the tool for their felonious designs. We also excluded the states of temporary intolerance to alcohol, provided the individual did not know or could reasonably not be expected to count on this peculiarity. On the other hand, there arises the presumption that the drunkenness is to be regarded as voluntary when the person is aware of, or ought to be cautioned against, such intolerance, especially in case the latter presents an habitual condition. Yet we admit that the question which arises in this connection is a very difficult one. It follows further, that a person who indulged in liquor to greater extent than he sincerely wished, but did so animated and stimulated "in a social way," is to be considered as under voluntary intoxication; for still, he had his own will, although he did not follow his own feeling or inclination.

In regard to the influence which involuntary intoxication has on the question of guilt, the "American and English Encyclopedia of Law" says:

"If a person be made drunk by fraud or stratagem another, or by the unskilfulness of his physician, he is not responsible for his acts; and a man, owing to temporary debility or disease, maddened by the quantity of wine which

usually takes in his normal condition, is not voluntarily insane."[1]

Indeed, considering the fact that the statutes and court decisions in New York and elsewhere are referred to as determining that voluntary drunkenness does not exempt from crime, we are obliged to assume the contrary in case of involuntary intoxication, and so the only difficulty which remains is the exact definition of what is, in a given case, to be regarded at law as voluntary or involuntary intoxication. In some States a definition is given by the statutes themselves.

The Code of Georgia, section 4,301, declares that drunkenness is no excuse for crime unless occasioned by the fraud or contrivance of another, in order to have a crime perpetrated. So, if persons give whiskey to another, "in a social way and with no view or purpose at the time to induce him to commit a crime, and afterward, while he is drunk, that he knows not what he does, procure him to commit a crime," it is held that he is legally responsible.[2]

In North Carolina, on a trial for murder the court instructed the jury that drunkenness was no excuse for crime, but that insanity as a secondary effect of long-continued excessive drinking, if it so deprived a man of his reason that he could not perceive the moral qualities of actions, or tell right from wrong, was a complete excuse; that if defendant was so affected by a blow which he had formerly received that when he drank liquor he lost his reason, etc., and having this he voluntarily drank and became frantic, etc., and slew deceased without justification, he was guilty of murder. The defendant was convicted, and on appeal it was held that the above charge was correct and the judgment was affirmed.[3] In Missouri it was held that voluntary drunkenness cannot be considered on a prosecution for murder, to determine whether defendant acted wilfully, deliberately, and premeditatedly (State *v.* O'Reilly [Mo. Sup.], 29 S. W. Rep., 577).

The responsibility in each case depends on the question

[1] "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," iv., p. 715, citing State *v.* Johnson, 40 Conn., 136; Choice *v.* State, 31 Ga., 424; Rogers *v.* State, 33 Ind., 543; Roberts *v.* People, 19 Mich., 401; People *v.* Robinson, 2 Park. Cr. R., 235.

[2] McCook *v.* State, 91 Ga., 740; s. c., 17 S. E., 1,019.

[3] State *v.* Wilson, 104 N. C., 863; s. c., 10 S. E. R., 315.

whether the drunkenness was voluntarily produced by the free will of the accused. In such case the accused is responsible for the act committed while intoxicated. Of course, he is irresponsible when he is insane, and if while insane and thus deprived of the knowledge of right and wrong, he becomes intoxicated and then commits a crime, he cannot be punished for it, because his insanity perverted or destroyed his will.

DIPSOMANIA.

It has been claimed by some medical authorities and contested by others that there exists a species of insanity called *dipsomania*, which results in an uncontrollable desire for alcohol, paralyzing in this regard the powers of will, although not influencing noticeably the integrity of intellect. This impulse is said often to lead into a state of absolute intoxication. Such mental anomaly has repeatedly been relied on as a defence to criminal acts which had been committed in a drunken state, and this plea has become more and more frequent in later times. We have mentioned this subject above in connection with impulsive insanity, to which it appertains from a medico-psychological point of view, but refer to it here for practical reasons.

First we will consider the condition of alleged dipsomania according to the "right-and-wrong test." The courts which preserve that test as an exclusive one presume conclusively that a corresponding power of will exists wherever there is the faculty of discriminating right from wrong in reference to the particular act. Therefore, when criminal responsibility comes under consideration, they prevent *a limine* any question from being raised other than that of the knowledge of right or wrong. Accordingly, in those States where this test exclusively dominates, there is room only for a plea of such insanity which affects the intellect, but not that which has its apparent effect only on the will, and consequently a plea based on an abnormal condition of mind resulting from dipsomania is irrelevant at law.

Such is the view taken of dipsomania by the New York courts.

An appetite for strong drink so powerful as to overcome the

will of the accused, and to amount to a disease, where he was able to distinguish between right and wrong at the time and in respect to the act committed, will not exonerate him from responsibility for the crime.[1]

In a wholly different way such a plea is dealt with in those States where the right-and-wrong test is not the exclusive one. In those States there exists no particular legal test of responsibility at all, or a test is admitted of the "power to choose." Where, therefore, a person, in regard to a particular act, though knowing right from wrong, has so far lost this power in consequence of a mental disease, however caused, he will be exempt from crime. The courts in those States have consequently admitted a plea based on such an abnormal condition as that caused by dipsomania. The only question submitted to the jury is in each case whether such disease exists, and this preliminary question once settled, they may find whether the accused labored under such an abnormal condition produced by this disease. The judicial authorities even in those States use the greatest possible precaution in every given case to avoid the abuse of such a defence.

As marking this tendency we quote a judicial opinion which admitted the plea of insanity from dipsomania in principle, but would not allow its consequences to be drawn to their full extent, preferring a middle course. On a trial for murder, where defendant pleaded insanity, the court instructed that "if the jury believe the prisoner was a dipsomaniac, and by reason of the influence of such disease became so drunk as to be unconscious of his acts, and the act was done while in this condition, then the presumption of malice would be rebutted and the prisoner was guilty of manslaughter." The prisoner was convicted. On appeal the charge was held correct and the conviction sustained.[2]

Arising from the hypotheses (1) that the crime was committed in a state of unconsciousness caused by intoxication, and (2) that the intoxication was caused by the disease, it seems to us that there should have been left two alternatives for the decision

[1] Flanagan *v.* People, 86 N. Y., 559, 13 Weekly Dig., 242. See People *v.* Otto, 38 Hun, 99, 4 N. Y. Cr. Rep., 154; People *v.* Leary, 105 Cal., 486; s. c., 39 Pac. R., 24.

[2] State *v.* Potts, 100 N. C., 457; s. c., 6 S. E. R., 657; State *v.* McDaniel, 115 N. C., 807; s. c., 20 S. E. Rep., 622.

...he jury, viz.: (1) Either the disease destroyed the will power and was consequently the only cause of the intoxication, in which case they should acquit; (2) or the disease did not wholly destroy the will, but influenced it considerably, in which case they should find the prisoner guilty of a lower grade of homicide, either murder of a lower degree or manslaughter, according to the stronger or lesser influence of the disease. The first alternative has been wholly disregarded by the court in the case just cited.

THE ENGLISH LAW F PORARY INTOXICATION.

Except the cases of delir emens and analogous conditions as treated on above, the lish courts do not recognize in any way intoxication g on the question of guilt. A crime committed dur nness is as much a crime as if it were committed duri ty, and the jury has nothing to do with the fact that was drunk. The prisoner is supposed to know the effect nk, and if he took away his senses by means of drink, i xcuse at all.[1]

The man who chooses to excess, and when drunk from time to time commits acts of brutal violence, must be taught that he is answerable both for being under the influence of alcohol and for the acts such influences induce.[2]

The above principle is usually carried out to its full effect in grave crimes, and is applied even to cases where a person, by reason of his natural constitution, shows a particular intolerance to alcohol, and therefore approaches, when intoxicated, a state of real insanity.

BURDEN OF PROOF AS TO INSANITY.

In criminal cases the burden of proving the accused insane is upon the defendant, for every man is presumed to be sane until he is shown by evidence to be insane.[3]

[1] Regina v. Williams, Old Bailey, 1886.

[2] Sir Henry James in a case reported by The Times newspaper, Jan. 4th, 189.. See on the whole matter J. Dixon Mann, "For. Med.," Phila., 1893, p. 359.

[3] Armstrong v. State, 30 Fla., 170; s. c., 11 So. Rep., 618; Jamison v. People, 145 Ill., 357; s. c., 34 N. E. Rep., 486; People v. Ward, 105 Cal., 335; s. c., 38 Pac. R., 945.

The burden of proving that the offence charged was committed by a person responsible for his acts is upon the prosecution. The law, however, presumes that every individual is sane. Upon this presumption the prosecution may rest without proof, and in case the defense of insanity is interposed, it is for the prisoner to establish it. But in any event, the prosecution must satisfy the jury upon the whole evidence, as the affirmative remains with it until the end of the trial.[1]

In criminal cases where insanity is set up as a defence, the burden of proving it is on the defendant; but if from all the proof there is a reasonable doubt as to defendant's sanity, he is entitled to the benefit of the doubt.[2]

The courts of many States hold that where the evidence shows that defendant was at any time previous to the crime insane, the presumption is that he continued so and had no lucid intervals, and the burden of proof is then upon the State to show that the crime was committed during a lucid interval.[3]

[1] Brotherton *v.* People, 75 N. Y., 159; O'Connell *v.* People, 87 *ibid.*, 377.

[2] Irving Stuart *v.* State, 1 Baxt., 178; King *v.* State, 91 Tenn., 617; s. c., 20 S. W. Rep., 169; Faulner *v.* Territory (N. M.), 30 Pac. Rep., 905; State *v.* Schaefer, 116 Mo., 96; s. c., 22 S. W. Rep., 447; Com. *v.* Gerade, 145 Pa. St., 289 (Pa. O. and T.), 22 Atl. Rep., 464, 23 Pittsb. Ly. J., 117; People *v.* Bemmerly, 98 Cal., 299; s. c., 33 Pac. Rep., 263; Armstrong *v.* State, 30 Fla., 170; s. c., 11 So. Rep., 618; and 27 Fla., 366; s. c., 9 So. Rep., 1; State *v.* Davis, 109 N. C., 780; s. c., 14 S. E. Rep., 55; Moore *v.* Com., 92 Ky., 630; s. c., 18 S. W. Rep., 833; Montag *v.* People, 141 Ill., 75; s. c., 30 N. E. Rep., 887; Fisher *v.* State, 30 Tex. App., 502; s. c., 18 S. W. Rep., 90; Hunt *v.* State (Tex. Cr. App.), 26 S. W. Rep., 206; People *v.* Dillon, 8 Utah, 92; s. c., 30 Pac. Rep., 150; Smith *v.* State, 31 Tex. App., 19 S. W. Rep., 252; Miller *v.* State (Wyo.), 29 Pac. Rep., 186; State *v.* Zorn, 22 Ore., 591; s. c., 30 Pac. Rep., 317; Revoir *v.* State, 82 Wis., 295; s. c., 52 N. W. Rep., 84; Smith *v.* Com., 93 Ky., 318; s. c., 17 S. W. Rep., 868; People *v.* McNulty, 93 Cal., 437; s. c., 36 Pac. Rep., 597; People *v.* Bawden, 90 Cal., 195; s. c., 27 Pac. Rep., 204; People *v.* Eubanks, 86 Cal., 295; s. c., 24 Pac. Rep., 1,014; State *v.* Hill, 46 La. Ann., 27; s. c., 14 So. Rep., 294; State *v.* Hansen, 25 Ore., 391; s. c., 36 Pac. Rep., 296; Kearney *v.* State, 68 Miss., 233; s. c., 9 So. Rep., 292; Hunt *v.* State (Tex. Cr. App.), 28 S. W. Rep., 206; Blummer *v.* State (Ind.), 34 N. E. Rep., 968; Jamison *v.* People, 145 Ill., 357; s. c., 34 N. E. Rep., 486; Bolling *v.* State, 54 Ark., 588; s. c., 16 S. W. Rep., 658; Lovegrove *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 491; s. c., 21 S. W. Rep., 191; People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398; s. c., 34 N. E. Rep., 275.

[3] State *v.* Schaefer, 116 Mo., 96; s. c., 22 S. W. R., 447; Armstrong *v.* State, 30 Fla., 170; s. c., 11 So. Rep., 618; People *v.* Lane, 100 Cal., 379; s. c., 34 Pac. Rep., 856. Contrary, see Hunt *v.* State (Tex. Cr. App.), 26 S. W. Rep., 206; People *v.* Schmitt, 106 Cal., 48; s. c., 39 Pac. R., 204.

EVIDENCE IN CASES OF INSANITY.

EXPERT TESTIMONY.

A definition of expert and non-expert testimony has already been given,[1] so it is not necessary to repeat it here.

Generally, witnesses must testify to facts within their own knowledge and not to opinions, conclusions, or inferences. To draw conclusions or inferences is the province of the court or jury, except in cases where expert testimony is allowed.

Under the Roman law experts were permitted to inform the judex or judge as to physical laws or phenomena.[2] And it was allowed in France from about 1532.[3] In England, on the appeal of Mayhew, the accused prayed that the court would see the wound to ascertain if there had been a maiming. The court, because the wound was new, did not know how to adjudge, and the accused asked that the wound be examined by surgeons, which was done.[4]

In all cases in which insanity, in any of its various forms, comes into question, the courts allow physicians or alienists to give their opinions, before the trial jury, as to the sanity of the alleged insane person, in answer to a hypothetical question embracing substantially all the evidence in the case relating to that subject. They may also give such opinion, not based on a hypothetical question or an assumed statement of facts, but derived from repeated personal examinations of defendant.[5]

[1] Chap. v., p. 49 *et seq.* of vol. i., where will be found general rules relating to expert testimony.

[2] Vol. vii., "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," 492, citing L. 8, § 1, xi.; L. 3, § 4, xi., 6.

[3] *Id.*, citing 2 Beck, "Med. Juris.," 896.

[4] *Id.*, citing 38 Ass. pl., 5; 9 H. 7, 16; 7 H. 6, 11; Buckly *v.* Rice, 1 Plow., 125.

[5] People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398–405; Com. *v.* Buccieri, 153 Pa. St., 535; s. c., 26 Atl., 228; Conn. M. L. Ins. Co. *v.* Lathrop, 111 U. S., 612; Dexter *v.* Hall, 15 Wall (U. S.), 9; Fairchild *v.* Bascomb, 35 Vt., 398–408; Tullis *v.* Kidd, 12 Ala., 648; Grant *v.* Thompson, 4 Conn., 203; s. c., 10 Am. Dec., 119; Rambler *v.* Tryon, 7 S. and R. (Pa.), 90; s. c., 10 Am. Dec., 444; State *v.* Feltes, 51 Iowa, 495; Mc-Leod *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 831; s. c., 20 S. W. R., 749; Dejarn[illegible] *v.* Com., 75 Va., 867; U. S. *v.* Guiteau, 3 Crim. Law Mag., [illegible]; State *v.* Baber, 74 Mo., 292; Jor[illegible] *v.* People, 19 Col., 417; s. c., Pac., 218; People *v.* Hall, 48 Mic[illegible] 482; State *v.* Leehman, 2 S. D., 1; s. c., 49 N. W. R., 3; People Schuyler, 106 N. Y., 298; Quaife Chi., etc., R. Co., 48 Wis., 5[illegible] Matter of Blakely will, 48 Wis 294; Goodwin *v.* State, 96 In[illegible] 550; Coryell *v.* Stone, 62 Ind., 30[illegible] Davis *v.* State, 35 Ind., 496; Boar man *v.* Woodman, 47 N. H., 12[illegible] Buswell on "Insanity," s. 250; Ma[illegible]

These opinions may be considered by the jury in arriving at their verdict. This seems to be the generally adopted rule, except in Massachusetts and Mississippi, where only an expert alienist is permitted to give his opinion, and he need not have seen the defendant.[1] An attending physician may give an opinion as to the sanity of an alleged insane person.[2] Such evidence is subject, however, to being excluded as privileged. See this subject fully discussed in Vol. I., p. 89 *et seq.*, of this work.

RULES OF EVIDENCE AS TO WITNESSES NOT STRICTLY EXPERTS AND PHYSICIANS.

In California it is held that a Roman Catholic priest who is required by his priestly office to pass upon the sanity and mental condition of invalids and dying persons under his charge, to the end that he may administer the sacrament only to those whose minds are in a proper state to reason or act of their own volition, is in this respect an expert, and may answer a hypothetical question touching the sanity of such individual.[3]

In many States a non-expert witness may testify to facts, circumstances, and conversations of an alleged insane person and then state his opinion as to the sanity of such person.[4]

In Kentucky a non-expert witness may give his opinion as

ter of Snelling, 136 N. Y., 515; s. c., 49 N. Y. St. R., 695; Reynolds *v.* Robinson, 64 N. Y., 589; People *v.* McElvaine, 121 N. Y., 250; People *v.* Smiler, 125 N. Y., 717; 26 N. E. R., 812; Link *v.* Sheldon, 136 N. Y., 1; Murphy *v.* Com., 92 Ky., 485; s. c., 18 S. W. Rep., 163; People *v.* Worthington, 105 Cal., 166; s. c., 38 Pac. R., 689; State *v.* Crisp (Mo. Supp.), 29 S. W. Rep., 699.

[1] Com. *v.* Rogers, 7 Met., 500; s. c., 4 Am. Dec., 458; Com. *v.* Rich, 14 Gray, 335; Reed *v.* State, 62 Miss., 405.

[2] Hastings *v.* Rider, 99 Mass., 622; Townsend *v.* Pepperell, 99 Mass., 40; Phelps *v.* Hartwell, 1 Mass., 71; Poole *v.* Richardson, 3 Mass., 330; Needham *v.* Ide, 5 Pick. (Mass.), 510; Com. *v.* Wilson, 1 Gray, 337; Com. *v.* Fairbanks, 2 Allen (Mass.), 511; Cowles *v.* Merchants, 140 Mass., 377; May *v.* Bradlee, 127 Mass., 414; Com. *v.* Brayman, 136 Mass., 438; Baxter *v.* Abbott, 7 Gray (Mass.), 71; Wyman *v.* Gould, 47 Me., 159; Heald *v.* Thing, 45 Me., 392; Kearney *v.* State, 68 Miss., 238; s. c., 8 So. R., 292; Inhabitants of Fayette *v.* Chesterville, 77 Me., 28; s. c., 52 Am. Rep., 741; Gehrke *v.* State, 13 Texas, 568; Hickman *v.* State, 38 Tex., 190; State *v.* Geddis, 42 Iowa, 268; Reed *v.* State, 62 Miss., 405; O'Brien *v.* People, 36 N. Y., 276; Real *v.* People, 42 N. Y., 270; St. Louis, etc., Ry. Co. *v.* Bradley, 13 U. S. App., 68.

[3] 7 "Am. and Eng. Ency. of Law," 504, citing Estate of Toomes, 54 Cal., 509; s. c., 35 Am. Rep., 83.

[4] Clark *v.* State, 12 Ohio, 483; s. c., 40 Am. Dec., 481; State *v.* Newlin, 69 Ind., 108; Doe *v.* Reagan, 5 Blackf. (Ind.), 217; s. c., 33 Am. Dec., 466; Rex *v.* Wright, R. and R. Crim. Cases, 456; Schlencker *v.* State, 9 Neb., 241; State *v.* Hayden,

In the case of People *v.* McElvaine (125 N. Y., 596; s.c., 26 N. E. R., 929) it was held that under the New York Code of Criminal Procedure, section 658, providing that, where insanity is pleaded as prescribed by section 33[illegible], the court "may" appoint a commission to examine defendant as to his sanity "at the time of the commission of the crime," and that, if defendant at any time before or after conviction "appears to be" insane, the court may appoint a similar commission; the appointment of the commission is discretionary with the court. And under the same section, which provides that a defendant may present the plea of insanity at the time of his arraignment as a specification under the plea of not guilty, a defendant who has been arraigned and has pleaded not guilty is not entitled to be rearraigned, that he may plead again on a second trial ordered upon a reversal of the first conviction.

Section 496 provides that: "If, after a defendant has been sentenced to the punishment of death, there is reasonable ground to believe that he has become insane, the sheriff of the county in which the conviction took place, with the concurrence of a justice of the Supreme Court, or the county judge of the county, who may make an order to that effect, must empanel a jury . . . to examine the question of the sanity of the defendant." And under section 658, when a defendant pleads insanity the court may appoint a commission of not more than three disinterested persons, usually two physicians and a lawyer, to examine him and report to the court as to his sanity at the time of the crime or at the time of the examination. And if found insane the trial or judgment must be suspended, and the defendant committed to the State lunatic asylum, if his discharge would be dangerous to the public peace and safety.

Where a juror suddenly became sick and delirious after the jury had agreed upon their verdict and before delivering it to the court; and after having recovered, he took his seat with his associates, and the court advised the jury to again retire and confer, which they did and soon returned with their verdict, it was held to be proper and in the discretion of the court under section 465, subdivision 3, of New York Code of Criminal Procedure.[1]

Rep., 96; Ward *v.* State, 96 Ala., 100; s. c., 11 So. Rep., 217; Walker *v.* State, 136 Ind., 663; s. c., 36 N. E. Rep., 356.

[1] People *v.* Buchanan, 145 N. Y., 1.

In Texas, it is provided under the Code of Criminal Procedure (article 730, subdivisions 1 and 2) that persons who are insane when they are offered as witnesses, or who were insane when the event happened of which they are called to testify, are incompetent as witnesses; an insane woman cannot testify as to rape alleged to have been committed on her.[1]

In West Virginia under the code, chapter 159, sections 9, 10, it is provided that no one while insane shall be tried for crime, and that if the court see reasonable ground to doubt his sanity, the trial shall be suspended until a jury inquire as to his sanity; it is in the discretion of the court to order a jury to inquire into his sanity, and it need not do so where, after examining the accused, reading affidavits and inquiring of physicians, it believes him sane.[2]

In South Dakota, where a witness on a trial for murder has been examined as to acts of defendant after the homicide in support of the defence of insanity, and the testimony of such witness does not indicate an abnormal condition of mind, it is proper to refuse an offer to prove by the same witness that defendant was irrational after the homicide and that the same condition of mind existed before and at the time of the homicide, since it would not be presumed that the witness would testify differently from what he had already done as to the conduct and appearance of defendant, and its repetition could not change the force of the evidence.[3]

In Ohio, upon a trial for homicide, where the defence is a sudden, uncontrollable epileptic homicidal impulse, it is not proper to allow a witness to testify to reputed instances of sickness or peculiarities of individuals of the family of the accused, as matter of family tradition.[4]

In Wisconsin, under laws of 1883, chapter 164, providing that if, upon the preliminary trial of a special issue of insanity, the jury shall be unable to agree, the court shall "discharge them from the further consideration of such issues" and, unless the plea of insanity be withdrawn, "forthwith order the trial upon the plea of not guilty to proceed, and the question of

[1] Lopez v. State, 30 Tex. App., 17 S. W. R. 1068.

[2] State v. Harrison, 36 W. Va., 15 S. E. R. 982; 18 L. R. A., 224.

[3] State v. Leehman, 2 S. D. 171, s. c., 49 S. W. R. 3.

[4] State v. Leuth, 5 Ohio Cir. Ct. R., 94.

insanity involved in such special issue shall be tried and determined by the jury with the plea of not guilty." Where the jury disagrees, it is error to order the trial upon the plea of not guilty and insanity to proceed before the same jury, because such jury is not impartial and defendant is deprived of his right to have the jury specially empanelled to try him for the crime charged, and is denied his right of challenge.[1]

In Pennsylvania, under Act of May 14th, 1874, and May 8th, 1883, permitting an application to the courts, on the part of the authorities of any prison, penitentiary, or hospital for the insane, to inquire into the sanity of any person convicted of a crime, such application must be made by the authorities named in the statute, and not by counsel for the convict or others. Such acts have no application to the case of a person convicted of murder in the first degree, the remedy in such case being by application to the governor.[2] Where the court entertains no doubt as to defendant's sanity when he is called for sentence, it is not error to disregard his plea of insanity, offered at such time.[3]

The Penal Code of California provides that "when an action is called for trial, or when the defendant is brought up for judgment on a conviction, if a doubt arise as to the sanity of the defendant, the court must order the question as to his sanity to be submitted to a jury." The court allowed evidence on the trial of defendant as to his sanity after and before the time of the alleged offence, but refused to instruct that if the jury believed defendant insane at the time of the trial they should acquit him. It was held that it could not be said that the court had doubt as to the defendant's then sanity necessitating its ordering the submission of the question to the jury. The fact that the jailor having charge of the defendant testified that he had observed defendant during his imprisonment, and believes him to be insane, is not sufficient to create such a doubt as to require the court to order the question of defendant's sanity to be submitted to the jury.[4]

Under the Texas Code of Criminal Procedure, article 518,

[1] French v. State, 85 Wis., 400; s. c., 55 N. W. Rep., 566.

[2] Baranoski's Case (Pa. Quart. Sess.), 9 Pa. Co. Ct., 264.

[3] Com. v. Schmous, 162 Pa. St., 326; s. c., 29 Atl. Rep., 644.

[4] People v. Lee Fook, 85 Cal., 300; 24 Pac., 654. And see also People v. Travers, 88 Cal., 233; 26 Pac., 88.

providing that a plea of guilty shall not be received unless defendant is sane, his sanity must be shown before conviction; and a new trial will not be granted on the ground of insanity, where the defendant was convicted on a plea of guilty, when the testimony upon which his counsel rely was known to them at the time of the trial.[1]

In a Pennsylvania case where the homicide was in June and the verdict, rendered in September, found that at the time of the commission of the crime defendant was sane, when called for sentence in December he filed a written averment that since the homicide he had become and was then insane. There was no corroborative affidavit or any specific fact stated which might move the court to further inquiry, and it was held that it must be assumed that in overr ling this plea the trial judge found nothing to raise a d n his mind as to the sanity of the prisoner when called for ence, and therefore an assignment of error based on his a cannot be sustained.[2]

In a Louisiana case where sequent to verdict but prior to sentence, in a criminal case, doubts arise as to the sanity of defendant, it was held that the court may, under Revised Statutes, section 1,761, upon the suggestion of the district attorney, cause an investigation to be made.[3]

[1] Burton v. State, Tex. Cr. App., 25 S. W. Rep., 782, 1894.

[2] Com. v. Buccieri, 153 Pa. St., 535; s. c., 32 W. N. C., 113; 26 Atl., 228.

[3] *In re* Chandler, 45 La. Ann., 696; s. c., 12 So. Rep., 884.

CARE AND CUSTODY

OF

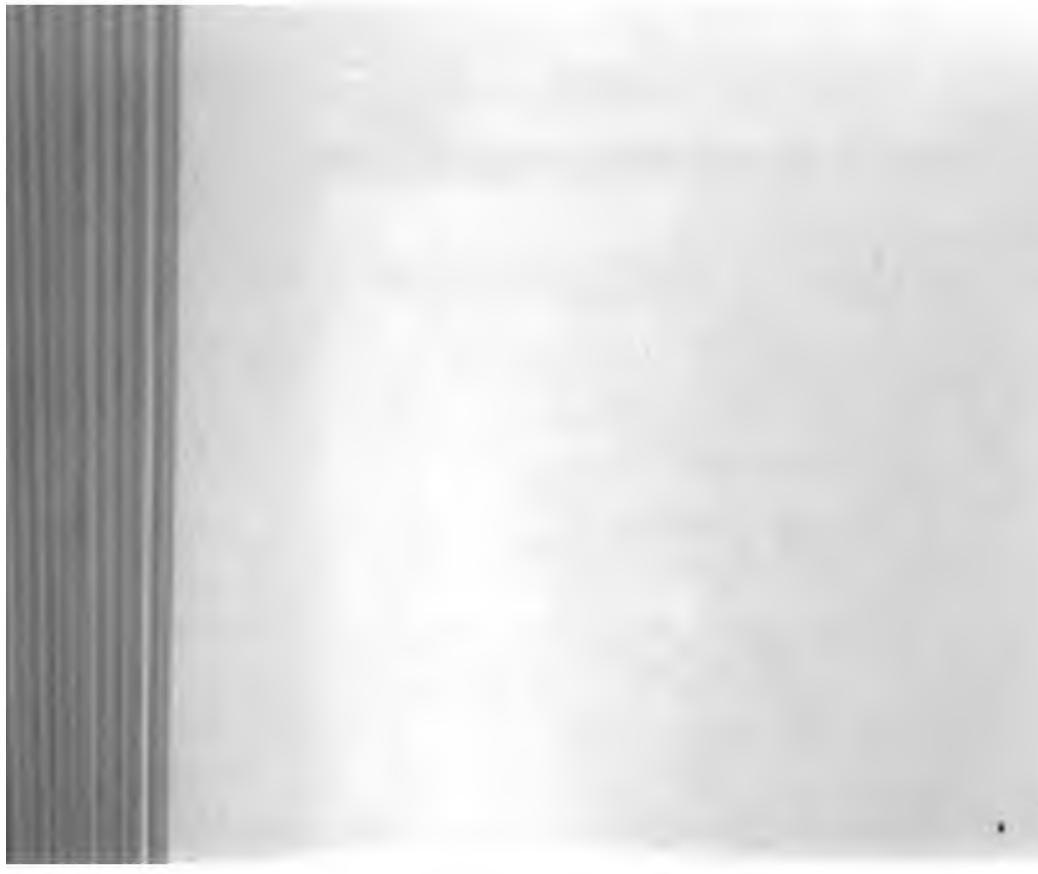
INCOMPETENT PERSONS

AND THEIR ESTATES.

BY

GOODWIN BROWN,

New York State Lunacy Commissioner.



CARE AND CUSTODY OF INCOMPETENT PERSONS AND THEIR ESTATES.

THE common law recognizes four forms of insanity, viz.: lunacy, idiocy, accidental loss of understanding, and deprivation of understanding by the subject's voluntary acts, as habitual drunkenness. Persons suffering from insanity are deemed by the law incapable of managing their own affairs. When a person becomes mentally disabled, from whatever cause the disability may arise, whether from sickness, vice, casualty, or old age, he is a fit and necessary subject of guardianship and protection.[1]

It may safely be assumed that madness subsists in every variety of shape and degree. It subsists in the maniac chained to the floor; in the patient afflicted with mental aberration on certain subjects, or on a certain subject only; and in respect to such even never betraying itself in violence or outrage. The affliction is the same in species in both cases, the difference being only in degree.[2] As to what constitutes such a degree of insanity as to justify the intervention of the law in protecting the property and person of the subject and in restraining his liberty, is to be determined by the statute and the courts in their wise discretion.

The term *non compos mentis* is generic and was regarded as of absolute significance, denoting a total deprivation of sense. The court of chancery in England applying this meaning would not issue commissions *de lunatico inquirendo* unless the subject was insane within the technical definition prescribed by law.[3] This restricted meaning was followed in the earlier cases in the United States.[4] In the more modern cases these words are held to include not only cases of idiocy and lunacy, as de-

[1] *In re* Barker, 2 Johns. Ch. (N. Y.), 232.
[2] Deer *v.* Clark, 3 Add. Ecc., 79.
[3] Case of Barmley, 3 Atk., 173.
[4] Case of Beaumont, 1 Wharton (Pa.), 52.

fined at common law, but all cases of imbecility where the subject is incapable of conducting the ordinary affairs of life and liable to suffer in person and property from his own weaknesses.[1] The legal test is the capacity to understand the nature and effect of the transaction.[2] In McElroy's case[3] the Supreme Court held that the question for the jury on a traverse of an inquisition finding the party *non compos mentis* was whether the mind is deranged to such an extent as to disqualify the traverser from conducting himself with personal safety to himself and others, and from managing his own affairs and discharging his relative duties. This rule has been generally adopted in the more recent cases in the United States.[4]

The jurisdiction over the person and property of insane persons is vested in the State and rests upon its duty to protect the person and property of those who, because of weakness, are unable to care for themselves, and to prevent injury to the community from the acts of those not under the guidance of reason. This jurisdiction has been delegated in most instances by express provision of statute to the courts.

In England the King, as *parens patriæ*, is considered to be invested with the care and control of all his subjects, who by reason of imbecility or want of understanding are incapable of taking care of themselves. This care and custody, as executed by him, falls under the direction of the court of chancery, by virtue of a standing warrant to the Lord Chancellor under the sign manual of the King.[5] In the United States the care and custody of the insane, if not otherwise specially and expressly provided for, is vested in the equity courts. If such care and

[1] Hamrick v. State, 34 N. E. (Ind.), 3.

[2] Cutler v. Zellinger, 22 U. S., 895.

[3] 6 W. and S. (Pa.), 451.

[4] See Carmichael, *in re*, 36 Ala., 514; Rowden v. Rowden, 28 Ala., 565; Hovey v. Chase, 52 Maine, 304; Blanchard v. Nestle, 3 Denio (N. Y.), 47; Stanton v. Wetherwax, 16 Barb. (N. Y.), 259; Rodgers, *in re*, 9 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 141; Greenwade v. Greenwade, 43 Md., 313; Kenworth v. Williams, 5 Ind., 375; Cochran v. Amsden, 104 Md., 282; Snyder v. Snyder (Ill.), 31 N. E., 303; Hamrick v. State, 34 N. E. (Ind.), 3. The fact that a man is seventy-nine years of age and by reason of his feeble condition has not sufficient strength of mind to manage his business with ordinary care and prudence, does not warrant the appointment of a guardian, under Code Iowa, s. 2,227, providing for the appointment of a guardian of the property of a person of unsound mind. Emerick v. Emerick, 49 N. W. (Iowa), 1,017.

[5] Eyre v. Shaftsbury, 2 P. Wms., 118; Burford v. Denthall, 2 Atk., 553.

custody is vested by statute in some other tribunal, it is a much discussed question whether the chancery courts do not possess a concurrent jurisdiction.

In New York the statute gave the care and custody of the person and estates of lunatics, idiots, and habitual drunkards, without any restriction, to the court of chancery. It is now vested absolutely in the Supreme Court. In Pennsylvania the authority of the courts over lunatics is held not to be derived from the statutes conferring equity jurisdiction on the courts, but from the provisions of the constitution of the commonwealth. In South Carolina the care exercised by the courts of chancery over the persons and property of insane persons is considered as a branch of the equity jurisdiction proper, and not as in England, distinct from its functions as a court of equity.[1] In New Jersey the control of insane persons and their estates is committed by statute to an Orphan's Court; and in many States the entire jurisdiction is by statute or constitutional provision entrusted to the courts of probate. However this jurisdiction may be exercised, there is no departure from the rules and principles adopted in like cases by the courts of chancery; and very generally the character of the committee, guardian, and conservator in the American courts is assimilated to that of the committee under the English system.[2] In the determination of matters relating to such care and custody, where rules of law and equity are conflicting, the equitable rules governing the case will control.[3]

A much wider jurisdiction over the property and estates of insane persons obtains in the American courts than in the English courts of chancery; for while the possession vested in the committee appointed by the latter is that of a mere bailiff or agent, so that in the absence of expressed statute authority neither the court nor the committee could alienate the property of the lunatic or satisfy the claims of his creditors, the courts in several of the United States have exclusive jurisdiction both to sell the lunatic's property and to determine and satisfy his just debts. In many States it is held that

[1] Ashley *v.* Holman, 15 S. C., 97.
[2] Hovey *v.* Harmon, 49 Maine, 269; Wheeler *v.* The State, 34 Ohio St., 394.
[3] Richards, *ex parte*, *v.* Brev. Vol. B. (S. C.), 375; Campbell *v.* Campbell, 39 Ala., 312.

the courts of equity have an inherent power to order the sale of the personal and real estate of an insane person.[1]

In the States where the care and custody of the insane are committed by statute to the courts of probate and exercised by committees, guardians, or curators appointed by the court, the power of the court in respect to the property of the insane ward is generally the same as that exercised over the estates of minors, and the court may, upon the petition of the guardian, upon due notice and for good cause shown, order a sale of so much of the insane person's property as may be necessary for the payment of his debts or for the support and maintenance of himself or his family. This may also be done where it is shown to the satisfaction of the court that his real estate or interests therein may profitably be sold and the proceeds invested in productive personal property. This can only be done upon the application to the court of the guardian, committee, or trustee.[2]

Where there is no general jurisdiction conferred upon the court by statute or constitution, the jurisdiction is to be regarded as purely legislative, limited and special, that is, so far as the statute law confers jurisdiction on the court it may go, but no further.[3]

In New York the exclusive care and custody of the estate and persons of lunatics, idiots, and habitual drunkards is vested in the supreme court. Hence there arises a special and exclusive jurisdiction of the court which is charged with the duty of providing for the payment of the insane person's debts out of his estate, and of seeing that the equitable and legal rights of his creditors are protected and enforced. These rights are subject to the prior rights of the maintenance of the subject and his immediate family. In many of the States it is held that the estate of a lunatic cannot be subjected to legal process, either for debts incurred for his support as a lunatic or existing prior to his lunacy, but that his estate is to be administered only by order of the court having lunacy jurisdiction.[4] But in Pennsylvania any creditor of a lunatic may litigate his claim in a court of law, after due notice given to the committee, and ob-

[1] Dodge v. Cole, 97 Ill. 337. See, also, Palmer v. Garland, 8 Ga. 466.

[2] Hamilton v. Dudley, 97 Ill. 416.

[3] Rockwell v. Bishop, 9 Mich. 361. Stone v. Wilcox, 3 Hun, 97. North v. Jacks, 39 Mich. 65.

[4] Smith v. Perkins, 77 N. C. 30. Bailey v. Burgess, Ind. 38.

a suit brought in good faith will be conclusive as to the amount and merit of such claim. But the creditor, having obtained judgment, may not levy execution upon the insane person's property in the hands of the committee, his sole remedy being application to the court, which will order the committee to raise and pay over the funds necessary to satisfy the judgment.[1]

THE INQUISITION.

In England and the United States it is the ordinary practice to issue a commission out of the courts having jurisdiction in the nature of writs *de lunatico inquirendo*, to inquire into cases of alleged insanity. The issuing of the commission is at all times in the discretion of the court. If the procedure is prescribed by statute, it must be strictly followed.[2] Ordinarily the court does not acquire jurisdiction to adjudicate the question of insanity is to until the requirements of the statute preliminary to the granting of the inquest are met.[3] In Delaware a different rule seems to govern. In that State the court of chancery by special legislation assumes jurisdiction of an alleged lunatic from the inception of the proceedings by which his sanity or insanity is to be finally and definitely ascertained, and has power to restrain him from exercising control over his property pending the proceedings. The presumption of sanity which obtains in such proceedings must remain in abeyance so far as it relates to the temporary restraint of the personal liberty of the alleged insane person.[4]

NOTICE.—In most of the States it is generally held that the party alleged to be insane has the right to have notice of, and be present at, the proceedings instituted for determining the issue of insanity.[5] If there are any circumstances in the case which render it improper or unsafe, as in some cases of furious madness, the facts should be stated in the application to the court so that a provision might be inserted in the commission dispensing with the necessity of the notice.[6] A verbal statement to the alleged lunatic, that an application for the appointment

[1] Ecksine's Estate, 1 Clark, 224; Guthrie's Appeal, 16 Penn. St., 321.
[2] State *v.* Beard, 47 Mo., 301.
[3] Hallet *v.* Patrick, 49 Cal., 590.
[4] *Re* Harris (Del.), 28 Atl., 329.
[5] *In re* Tracy, 1 Paige (N. Y.), 580; *in re* Russell, 1 Barb. Ch. (N. Y.), 38.
[6] Hutts *v.* Hutts, 62 Ind., 214; Van Auken's Case, 2 Stock. (N. J.), 186.

of a commission is to be made at a certain time, is not sufficient notice to him.[1] In South Carolina the courts, following the English precedents, held that it was not necessary that the alleged lunatic have notice of the inquisition. But the courts of that State also adopt the English rule that the alleged lunatic has at all times the right to traverse the inquisition.[2] In Pennsylvania the same rules seem to be adopted, the commission and jury not being required to examine the party, although when practicable the jury is required to see him and if possible hear his conversation, and he is permitted to be present and have all the rights of a defendant.[3] In Kentucky the statute requires all inquisitions to be made in open court, and that the idiot or lunatic shall be brought into court for the inspection and examination of the jurors, unless it appears by affidavit that he cannot be controlled or that ill health forbids it. And it is held that when the lunatic is so brought into court and trial had, the necessity of either notice or writ is dispensed with.[4] Notice of an application for a commission *de idiota inquirendo* need not be given the alleged idiot, where notice of the time and place of the execution of the commission is given.[5] But in Morton *v.* Sims, 64 Ga., 298, it was held that a commission issued without a requisite notice and neither preceded nor followed by the appointment of a guardian *ad litem* is not aided by the presence of the imbecile and his representative by counsel, even where the counsel gives his consent to the judgment appointing the guardian, it appearing that the commission was executed on the next day after it was issued and that the judgment followed immediately. The object of the notice is that there may be due warning to make objection for legal cause to the commission or any of the commissioners, as well as to prepare for introducing evidence on the main question. The notice must be served upon the party in person, and it is insufficient for the attorney appointed to defend the party, or a guardian *ad litem*, to accept service of it.[6]

[1] *In re* Blewitt, 131 N. Y., 541.
[2] Medlock *v.* Cogburn, vol. B, Rich. Eq., 477.
[3] *In re* Lincoln, 1 Brewster, 392.
[4] McAfee *v.* Commonwealth, 3 B. Mon., 305; Lackey *v.* Lackey, 8 B. Mon., 107; Nyce *v.* Hamilton, 90 Ind., 417; *in re* Demeet, 27 [illegible] (N. Y.), 480.
[5] Gridley *v.* St. Francis Xa[illegible] College, 137 N. Y., 327.
[6] Morton *v.* Sims, 64 Ga., [illegible]; Chase *v.* Pellerin, 16 La., 63; C[illegible]mon *v.* Dubois, 23 La. Am., [illegible]; *in re* Pettil, 2 Paige (N. Y.), 17[illegible]

In those States in which the jurisdiction over insane persons is committed to the probate court, the statute generally requires a notice to be served upon the order of the court in a manner similar to that provided in the case of a minor.

It is largely within the discretion of the court as to what parties other than the alleged lunatic shall have notice of the commission and be entitled to be present at its execution.[1] Such relatives and friends as favor a finding against the alleged lunatic are not competent to receive such notice.[2]

A failure to give notice of an application for a commission to one of the heirs of the lunatic is at most only an irregularity, as he has no absolute right to notice.[3] In some cases want of notice to the alleged incompetent person has been held to render the proceedings void.[4] A better opinion seems to be that the failure to give notice renders the proceedings voidable by the party himself, but not void.[5]

No advantage can be taken collaterally because of want of notice.[6] In Illinois an inquest of lunacy is held void where the records shows service of summons upon the alleged lunatic for less than the statutory time before the date of hearing and that the service was otherwise irregular.[7]

THE PETITION AND COMMISSION.—The commission *de lunatico inquirendo* is issued out of the court in which the care and custody of incompetent persons is vested, upon a petition made by a person related by blood or marriage to the alleged lunatic or interested in his estate, and must be accompanied by affidavit of the facts upon which the petition is founded.[8]

The commission cannot be issued upon the petition of a mere stranger.[9]

In Alabama the petition cannot be made by the wife of the alleged lunatic but must be by her next friend.[10]

[1] *In re* Nesbitt, 2 Phillips, 245.

[2] *Ex parte* Hinchman, 4 Clark (Pa.), 184.

[3] *In re* Rodgers, 9 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 141.

[4] McCury *v.* Hooper, 12 Ala., 823; Eslara *v.* Leprete, 21 Ala., 514; Molton *v.* Henderson, 62 Ala., 426; Airington *v.* Airington, 32 Ark., 674; Cone *v.* Grah., 10 Pa. Co. Ct., 383; Martin *v.* Mottsinger (Ind.), 30 N. E., 523.

[5] Kimball *v.* Fisk, 39 N. H., 110.

[6] Rodgers *v.* Walker, 6 Penn. St., 371; Willis *v.* Willis, 12 Penn St., 159; Durcher *v.* Hill, 29 Mo., 271; Arington *v.* Short, 3 Hanks (N C.), 71.

[7] Behrensmeyer *v.* Kreitz (Ill.), 26 N. E., 704.

[8] Nailor *v.* Nailor, 4 Dana, 339.

[9] Covinhovin's case, vol. B. Saxton, c. 19; and see Rovback *v.* Van Blarcoom, 20 N. J. Eq., 461.

[10] Campbell *v.* Campbell, 39 Ala., 312.

The issuing of the commission is within the discretion of the court and will not be granted unless it be shown that it is for the well-being of the lunatic.[1] The issuing of the commission being discretionary with the court, it follows that the refusal of the court to issue it cannot be reviewed by a court of appellate jurisdiction.[2]

When the commission is to be executed the commissioners in lunacy issue their precept to the sheriff, requiring him to cause a jury of good and lawful men of his county to come before them at a certain time and a certain place, to inquire into the questions whi[illegible]ne of the commission will be properly given in their [illegible] Where the proceedings upon the commission are com[illegible] before a greater number of jurors than is necessary, it [illegible]gular to continue the proceedings before a part only.[4] [illegible]mmission have the power to subpœna witnesses and to [illegible] their attendance.[5]

They also have the pow[illegible] examine the alleged lunatic personally and to comp[illegible]ving him in charge to produce him.[6] The lunatic has [illegible] to be present at the execution of the commission, but his [illegible]rance may be dispensed with, and the proceedings will [illegible] void because the lunatic was not present. In those States where the proceedings upon the execution of the commission are *ex parte*, the supposed lunatic not being entitled as of right to notice thereof, he has not, strictly speaking, the right to be present. But when the proceedings are in the nature of a full litigation of the question of sanity between the supposed lunatic and the petitioner, the lunatic, having a right to notice, can avail himself of such notice and be present, unless his presence be attended with danger to himself or other persons.[7] The return of the commission should be made within a reasonable time. There should be incorporated in the commission a return day, and in any event the court out of which it was issued should limit the time in which the commission shall be executed.[8]

[1] Overing's Case, 1 Blandf. Ch. (Md.), 290; Colvin's Case, 3 Md. Ch., 206.

[2] *In re* Colvin, 3 Md. Ch., 258.

[3] *In re* Wager, 6 Paige (N. Y.), 11.

[4] Tebout's Case, 9 Abb. Pr., 211.

[5] *Ex parte* Plank, 5 Clark (Pa.), 35.

[6] *Ex parte* Childs, 1 C. E. Green (N. J.), 498.

[7] *In re* Dickie, 7 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 417.

[8] Lincoln's Case, 1 Brewster (Pa.), 392; *in re* Plank, 5 Clark (Pa.), 35.

FINDING OF THE INQUISITION.—The commission, the verdict, and return in lunacy proceedings must be consistent upon the face of the records, and therefore the verdict must be in the words of the commission or in equivalent words. The inquisition must show that the imbecility of the mind is such as to render the imbecile unfit for the government of himself and property; a return that the party is not a lunatic but that his mind is impaired by age and other causes, so that he is incapable of managing his business, is insufficient.[1]

To authorize the court to appoint a committee for the care and custody of an insane person, the jury must find distinctly that he is of unsound mind and mentally incapable of governing himself or managing his affairs.[2] The reason of the rule obviously rests on the principle that it is not every case of mental weakness or imbecility which will authorize the court to exercise the power of appointing a committee of the person and estate; but to justify the exercise of such a power the mind of the individual must be so impaired as to be reduced to a state which as an original incapacity would have constituted a case of idiocy.[3] The court may in its discretion set aside the finding and order the issue of a new commission.[4] In Weaver's appeal, 116 Pa. St., 225, the common Pleas set aside an inquisition finding the facts of lunacy upon the ground that the evidence was insufficient to sustain the finding. In New York the proceedings upon the inquisition not being *ex parte*, and the party, strictlys peaking, not having the right to traverse the inquisition, it is held that the subject of the commission is entitled to a new trial of the writ if it appear that the finding against his sanity was induced by bias or previously formed opinion on the part of the jury.[5] The court may make a personal examination of the lunatic in order to ascertain whether the finding of the inquisition is erroneous.[6] And where there is doubt of the insanity of one declared a lunatic he should be apprised of the fact and of the chancellor's readiness to hear any communication from him or in his behalf.[7] An inquisition

[1] *In re* Lindsey, 44 N. J. Eq., 564; s. c., 15 Atl., 1.

[2] *In re* Morgan, 7 Paige (N. Y.), 236; *in re* Rodgers, 9 Abb. N. Cas. (N. Y.), 141.

[3] *In re* Morgan, 7 Paige (N. Y.), 236.

[4] *In re* Lasher, 2 Barb. Ch., 97.

[5] Tebout's Case, 9 Abb. Pr. (N. Y.), 211.

[6] *In re* Fitzgerald, 3 Stewart, 59.

[7] Morgan's Case, 3 Blands. Ch. (Md.), 332.

will not, however, be set aside for mere irregularity when the subject having been found a lunatic in proper form there is no doubt of his insanity.[1]

TRAVERSE OF THE INQUISITION.—In those of the United States where proceedings upon the writ *de lunatico inquirendo* were *ex parte* and the alleged lunatic was not of right entitled to notice, a right to traverse the inquisition is accorded.[2] But in those States where notice of the time and place of holding the commission is allowed to the alleged lunatic as matter of right, a traverse is only allowed in the discretion of the court. In Christie's case, 5 Paige (N. Y.), 242, Chancellor Walworth declined to grant an application for leave to traverse the inquisition unless satisfied upon a private examination of the lunatic, or by the report of a master that such was the wish of the lunatic or that he was capable of understanding the nature and object of the application.[3] And an alleged lunatic should be allowed to traverse an inquisition, where the jury on a commission *de lunatico inquirendo* find in favor of his incapacity, and upon an examination of the proceedings there appears to be a reasonable doubt as to the propriety of their finding.[4] In Indiana it is held that one being found insane by a jury and a guardian appointed he cannot, under Rev. Sts. 1852, p. 333, sec. 2–10, upon his own application or that of his next friend, have inquiry into the proceedings upon the inquisition, or into the fact of his restoration to sound mind. Such inquiry can only be had upon the application of some other person.[5] A party in interest with the alleged lunatic may be allowed to traverse the inquisition. In New York a purchaser whose conveyance is invalidated by the inquisition will be permitted to traverse it, on stipulating to be bound by the final decision therein.[6] And when such a person has joined in a traverse, and consented to be bound by its results, the other parties cannot abandon it without his consent.[7]

[1] *In re* Rogers, 9 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 141.

[2] Walker *v.* Russell, 10 S. Car., 82; Covenhoven's Case, Saxt. Ch. Cases (N. J.), 19.

[3] See also *ex parte* Tracy, 1 Paige (N. Y.), 580; Clapp's Case, 20 How. Pr. (N. Y.), 385; *in re* Russell, 1 Barb. Ch. (N. Y.), 38.

[4] De Hart *v.* Cowdit, 51 N. J. Eq., 611 S. C., 28 Atl., 607.

[5] Gillespie *v.* Thompson, 7 Ind., 353; Mebany *v.* Mebany, 59 Ind., 257.

[6] *In re* Christie, 5 Paige (N. Y.), 242.

[7] *In re* Giles, 11 Paige (N. Y.), 243; *in re* Folger, 4 Johns. Ch., 169.

In Massachusetts and generally in those States where the care of insane persons and their property is vested in guardians appointed by probate courts, such guardians may be discharged by the courts upon the application of the ward or other one, whenever it appears that the guardianship is no longer necessary for the safety and well-being of the ward or his estate, and as in other probate proceedings, an appeal lies from the decree in any case appointing a guardian for an insane person.[1]

Upon the trial of a traverse the inquisition is *prima-facie* evidence of the insanity of the subject and places upon the traverser the burden of proof.[2] Like a legal presumption the inquisition continues to operate until overpowered; and, standing as full proof till then, it necessarily remains in force until the question of sanity has been finally decided.[3]

SUPERSEDEAS.

Upon the recovery of a lunatic, so found by inquisition, the court upon his petition may grant *supersedeas* of the commission.[4]

Insanity having been judicially ascertained, the law presumes its continuance until a restoration to sanity or lucid intervals is established. A discharge from an insane asylum because the officers adjudged the patient restored would be at least *prima facie* evidence of such restoration.[5]

But a commission in lunacy will not be superseded where the petitioner previously found insane is liable at any moment to become excited beyond control and requires constant supervision, when his property may be squandered, when, in fact, he is an insane man with lucid intervals.[6]

Where one had been duly found a lunatic and committees of his person and estate had been appointed the court declined to discharge the committee of the person upon the lunatic's petition alleging that he was so far restored to reason as to be

[1] Pub. Sts. Mass., c. 139, s. 12, and see M'Donald *v.* Morton, 1 Mass., 543.

[2] McGinnis *v.* Commonwealth, 74 Pa. St., 245.

[3] Rogers *v.* Walker, 66 Pa. St., 371, and see also Ludwick *v.* Commonwealth, 18 Pa. St., 175; Lacky *v.* Cunningham, 56 Pa. St., 373; Hill *v.* Day, 34 N. J. Eq., 150.

[4] *In re* Rogers, I Hulst. N. J., 46; *in re* Hailes, 3 Johns. Ch. (N. Y.), 567.

[5] 2 Lawson's Rem. and Pr., s. 848.

[6] *In re* Humboldt, 12 Phila., 424.

professional services of the attorney who conducted the lunacy proceedings.[1] It would seem generally where a traverse of an inquisition has been had, having been instituted in good faith by parties interested other than the supposed lunatic himself, that costs may be awarded out of the estate both to the committee and the petitioner for the traverse.

COMMITTEES AND GUARDIANS.

Upon the return of an inquisition pronouncing the party insane, the appointment of a committee or guardian is within the discretion of the court. Since such appointment is discretionary with the court, it follows that no order made for such a purpose can be the subject of an appeal.[2] A different rule, however, prevails in those States where the proceedings of lunacy are had upon a petition to a court of probate praying for the appointment of a guardian for an alleged insane person. In such States the subject of the petition may have the benefit of an appeal as in ordinary probate proceedings.[3]

The relatives of lunatics are to be prefered in the appointment of a committee.[4] The heirs and next of kin are entitled as of right to propose themselves for the office; any other person must obtain an order for the purpose, and his petition must state particularly existing objections to the appointment of the heir or next of kin.[5] The father of a lunatic having custody of his estate should be appointed his committee.[6]

In New York it has been held that a stranger cannot be appointed without the consent of the next of kin, except after a reference of which they are entitled to notice.[7] The guardianship of the estate of a lunatic will not in all cases be committed to those who are presumptively entitled to it as his heirs or next of kin. These persons will be appointed only when it appears that they are the ones most likely to preserve the lunatic's estate and promote his personal welfare and happiness.[8]

[1] Weir *v.* Myers, 34 Pa. St., 277; Brownlee *v.* Sweitzer, 49 Ind., 221.

[2] Willis *v.* Lewis, 5 Ired. (N. C.), 14.

[3] M'Donald *v.* Martin, 1 Mass., 543.

[4] Richards *ex parte*, 2 Brev. (S. C.), 375; *in re* Colvin, 3 Md. Ch., 278.

[5] *In re* Livingstone, 1 John. Ch. (N. Y.), 436; *in re* Webb, 2 Phillips, 10.

[6] Coleman *v.* Commissioners, 6 B. Mon. (Ky.), 239.

[7] *In re* Lanvoree, 32 Barb. (N. Y.), 122; *in re* Owens, 47 How. Pr. (N. Y.), 150.

[8] *In re* Taylor, 9 Paige (N. Y.), 611; *in re* Paige, 7 Daly (N. Y.), 155.

In the appointment of a committee of the person the court will regard so far as possible and proper so to do, under the circumstances, the wishes and inclinations of the lunatic himself.[1]

Where a wife is found insane and the husband is a suitable person for the trust, the intimate and confidential nature of the marriage relation renders it proper that he should be preferred in the appointment of a guardian to a third person.[2] But the husband will not be allowed the custody of the person of his insane wife where it appears his friendliness toward her is very questionable, and that his motives for seeking to obtain letters are actuated by self-interest.[3]

A committee appointed by a court of equity in the exercise of ordinary equity powers is a mere officer of the court. He is responsible to the court and acts under its orders and discretion and is removable by the court like an ordinary receiver.[4] Where the guardianship of insane persons is committed by statute to the probate courts the duties and responsibilities of the guardian are the same as those of the guardians of minors.[5]

The committee of the lunatic's estate is generally required to give security for the proper performance of his duties and judicious management of the estate. The bonds are properly made payable to the people of the State.[6]

In the United States the courts of chancery ordinarily allow to the committees of insane persons such reasonable compensation as would be allowed to guardians and trustees in similar circumstances.[7] This same rule obtains in States where the custody of the person and estate of insane persons is vested in guardians appointed by the probate courts.[8]

MANAGEMENT OF ESTATES.

The estate of the insane person is to be so managed as best promote the personal interest and to provide for the care a comfort of the lunatic.

[1] *In re* Lemoocke, Lloyd and Gould, 488.
[2] Drew's Appeal, 37 N. H., 181.
[3] Feegan's Estate, 1 Myrick Prob. Rep. (Cal.), 10.
[4] Bolling v. Turner, 6 Rand. (Va.), 584.
[5] Anilerson v. Anilerson, 42 Va 350.
[6] *In re* White, 1 Barb. Ch., 43.
[7] *In re* Livingston, 9 Paige, 44 *In re* Roberts, 3 Johns. Ch., 43.
[8] May v. May, 109 Mass., 252.

A committee of a lunatic is bound to use such diligence and prudence in the care and management of the lunatic's estate, as, in general, prudent men of intelligence and discretion in such matters employ in their own like affairs; the preservation of the fund and the procurement of a just and proper income therefrom are primary objects of the creation of the trust and are to be primarily regarded.[1]

In May *v.* May, 109 Mass., 256, the court said: The guardian is appointed for the welfare, comfort and security of the ward, and not for the increase of the estate in his hands by accumulation from the income in order to enlarge the wealth of remote or collateral relations who may ultimately succeed to the inheritance. It is no part of his duty to diminish the reasonable comfort of his ward, or to prevent him from enjoying such luxuries or indulging such tastes as would be allowable and proper in the care of a man similarly situated in other respects, but in full possession of his faculties. The preservation of the estate to the advantage and interest of possible heirs is of secondary and subordinate consideration. The lunatic's property should be liberally applied to secure him every comfort his situation will admit of, and the amount is not necessary to be limited to the annual income of the estate.

But in some States it is held that the guardian or committee of an insane person cannot without an order of the court expend an amount exceeding the annual income of the estate for and on account of the ward.[2] But the court will at all times direct to be done whatever appears to the advantage of the lunatic without regard to the interests of the next of kin.[3] In a California case it is held that, it being the husband's duty to provide for the support of his insane wife, that notwithstanding she may have sufficient estate of her own, her separate estate is not to be applied to her support until the husband's estate is exhausted.[4]

The personal property of an insane person must first be exhausted before the real estate can be sold for his support and maintenance.[5] After ample provision is made for the support

[1] Matter of Hathaway, 80 Hun, 186.
[2] Patton *v.* Thompson, 2 Jones Eq. (N. C.), 411; Kennedy *v.* Johnson, 65 Pa. St., 451.
[3] *In re* Colah, 3 Daly (N. Y.), 529.
[4] Myer's Estate, 1 Myrick Prob. Rep. (Cal.), 178.
[5] *In re* Taylor, 9 Paige (N. Y.), 611; *in re* Pettit, 2 Paige, 596; *in re* Hoag, 7 Paige (N. Y.), 312.

of the insane person, the income of his property may be applied for the benefit of those for whom he is under obligation to provide.[1] The court will in all cases act for the lunatic, in the disposition of his property, as it supposes he would act in like cases if sane.[2] But if the statute provide that the sale be made by order of the court upon the application of a guardian, trustee, or committee, the court has no power to make such order upon its own motion or upon the application of any other party.[3]

The real estate of a lunatic may be sold to pay debts, but not where the effect of the sale would be to reduce the lunatic to a condition of want.[4] An excess of a lunatic's property over an amount sufficient for the reasonable support of his wife and children may be sold with the court's sanction, and the assets applied by the guardian in payment of his debts.[5] Such excess, if insufficient to pay all his debts, must be applied ratably among the creditors, and the guardian has no right to exhaust all of such amount by paying certain creditors in full, when he knows of other debts due from his ward on which he pays nothing.[6]

The committee or guardian has no power to convey or lease the lands of the ward without an order of the court.[7] Ordinarily all contracts affecting the estate of a lunatic are to be executed under the direction of the court. All such contracts must appear to be for the interest of the lunatic.[8]

The court may authorize the committee to apply the lunatic's personal property for the improvement of unproductive real estate as by the erection of buildings thereon.[9] The court cannot direct the lease of lands beyond a time when the lunatic shall have been restored to reason.[10]

A committee or guardian cannot relinquish an insane wife's right of dower in the estate of her husband;[11] or make an

[1] Hambleton's Appeal, 102 Pa. St., 5

[2] *In re* Willoughby, 11 Paige (N. Y.), 257.

[3] Hamilton *v.* Traher, 27 Atl., 229 (Md.).

[4] Adams *v.* Thomas, 81 N. C., 296; *in re* Sartam, 14 Eq. (N. C.), 231.

[5] McLean *v.* Breese, 109 (N. C.), 564.

[6] Frost *v.* Redford, 54 Mo. App., 345.

[7] De Treville *v.* Ellis, Bailey Eq. (S. C.), 35; McLean *v.* Breese, 109 (N. C.), 564.

[8] *In re* Salisbury, 3 Johns. Ch. (N. Y.), 347; *in re* Colvin, 4 Md. Ch., 278.

[9] *In re* Livingston, 9 Paige (N. Y.), 440.

[10] De Treville *v.* Ellis, 21 Am. Dec., 519.

[11] Eslava *v.* La Petre, 2 Ala., 504.

election for her of her dower or a provision in her husband's will in lieu thereof.[1] Nor can a committee maintain ejectment against the lunatic's wife to eject her and her children from the home provided for them by him while sane.[2]

CARE AND RESTRAINT OF PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND.

The care and custody of the person of a lunatic being committed by statute to the court, it is its duty to see that he is maintained as comfortably as his unfortunate situation will admit and his pecuniary resources will allow, and that everything is done that can be, by care, skill, and medical treatment, to promote his general health and his restoration to reason.[3]

Most of the States have provided by statute for the proper care and restraint of such persons in public institutions supported and maintained at the expense of the State. As the jurisdiction of the State over persons of unsound mind rests in part upon its duty to protect the community from acts of those who are not under the guidance of reason, the law admits the duty of the State to provide proper means for the restraint of such persons, where their estate is not sufficient to provide such care and restraint, or where there are no persons of sufficient means upon whom such lunatics are a lawful charge. The father of an insane son, whose estate is barely sufficient for the comfortable support of his family, cannot be compelled to pay the cost of the maintenance of such insane son in an insane asylum, when such son is committed as an indigent insane person by a court having jurisdiction under a statute providing therefor.[4]

We have seen that the support and maintenance of insane persons is a primary charge upon their estate, and this is so even if such persons are confined within institutions maintained at a State expense.

Such insane persons as are so violent that their remaining at liberty would be dangerous to themselves and the community may be confined by any person without warrant, and with no other authority than the inherent necessity of the case.

But such confinement can only exist during the time necessary

[1] Kennedy v. Johnson, 65 Pa. St., 451.

[2] Shaffer v. List, 114 Pa. St., 486.

[3] Parsee Merchant's Case, 11 Abb. N. S. (N. Y.), 209.

[4] Trustees of Poor v. Jacobs, 6 Houst. (Del.), 330.

to institute proceedings to inquire into the person's condition and provide for his legal custody.[1] It is as competent for a magistrate to order into custody an insane person who is in the act of committing a breach of the peace as to order the arrest of a sane person under like circumstances, for, although the insane person may be incapable of crime, he may lawfully be prevented from doing harm.[2]

To justify the arrest and restraint of an insane person it is not necessary that he should at the time of his arrest be actually engaged in the commission of a crime. Any insane person may be restrained of his liberty by his family or others to prevent injury to himself or others.[3]

COMMITMENT AND CONFINEMENT OF THE INSANE.—Under a constitutional government no person can be deprived of life, liberty, or property without "due process of law," and therefore no person can be lawfully declared insane and his personal liberty permanently restrained without formal proceedings and an opportunity afforded him to appear personally and with witnesses, to refute the allegations of the persons seeking his confinement. Various forms of procedure are prescribed by statute for the determination of the question of insanity and the consequent commitment of the alleged insane person to an institution. In many States a trial by jury is required in every case, and all the facts are presented and passed upon, and a verdict rendered as in all other cases where the liberty of the person is at stake. The trial is in open court, attended with all the forms of a criminal proceeding. The theory is that the charge of insanity is inimical to the interests of the person sought to be confined, and that he should therefore be given the opportunity of defending the charge and that the truth thereof should be determined by a jury of "his peers." Such a system of commitment exists in the State of Illinois.

It is not satisfactory; justice to the alleged lunatic is not thereby accorded. Under this system sane persons have been declared insane, and persons clearly and undoubtedly of unsound mind have been "acquitted."

[1] Colby v. Jackson, 12 N. H., 526; Davis v. Merrill, 47 N. H., 208; Van Deusen v. Newcomer, 40 Mich., 90; Williams v. Williams, 2 Hun, 111.

[2] Lott v. Sweet, 33 Mich., 308.

[3] *In re* Oakes, 8 Law Rep. (Mass.), 122.

The empanelling of a jury and the complicated form of procedure attendant thereto have caused delays, which often injure the health of patients requiring immediate treatment. The publicity and commotion of such a trial injuriously affect the disordered minds of alleged lunatics and disgust and grieve their friends and relatives.

Lunacy is not a crime, but a disease. A jury of laymen is not required to justly determine the question of whether a person is suffering from this infirmity. It is a question for medical experts, who from their training and experience are qualified to pass upon it. Hence in most of the States the order of commitment is only issued after an examination of the alleged lunatic by medical experts. The experts are required to certify the results of such examination to the judge having jurisdiction, and such judge, if satisfied from the certificate and such other proof as may be presented that the alleged insane person should be confined in an institution, shall make an order to that effect. In some States it is provided that the question of insanity shall in each case be determined by a commission, composed of a medical expert and one or two laymen, associated with the judge to hear the proof and examine the person alleged to be insane. Upon their decision the order is issued.

Other methods of commitment are provided in the several States, more or less complex in form of proceeding and more or less adapted to the welfare and protection of alleged lunatics.

It is evident that the right to confine a person because of alleged insanity is based upon the benefit to be derived by such person and the necessity of protecting the community from his acts. No lunatic should be deprived of his liberty unless restraint is necessary or beneficial.[1] The new theory of "care and treatment" has supplemented and become associated with the common-law right of detention, so that now the confinement of a lunatic in an institution is an incident of his proper medical and scientific care and treatment. While the safety and welfare of the community are subserved by taking therefrom a person suffering mentally in such a manner as to be dangerous to those about him, yet the chief end is the improvement of his unfortunate condition and the alleviating of his physical sufferings.

[1] Com. *ex rel.* v. Kirkbride, 2 Brewster (Pa.), 586.

The commitment should be hedged about by safeguards; the law should be so framed and construed as to reduce to a minimum the likelihood of the improper restraint of those not in need thereof. But the theory that a person afflicted with mental disease should be tried and convicted therefor, that the proceeding to determine the question of his mental condition should be in the form of a criminal proceeding is antiquated, and in view of the advance of medico-legal science with reference to lunacy should have no place in our statute law.

The alleged lunatic should in every case be examined by well qualified and competent medical experts. The judge whose duty it is to pass upon the question, if in doubt as to the motives actuating the petitioner and dissatisfied with the result of the examination by the experts, should be empowered to examine other witnesses and secure further expert testimony. A notice of the time and place set for the hearing should be given not only to the alleged insane person, but to other persons who, because of friendship or kinship, are interested in his welfare. Opportunity should be given for the persons so served to refute the allegations of the petitioner and produce witnesses in aid thereof. If issue be joined, the trial should be had before a commission of not more than three, one or more of whom should be expert in the treatment of mental diseases. The determination of the question of insanity should be based upon testimony of a scientific character. The medical experts should be fit and responsible, they should bring to bear upon the case at hand the best of their professional knowledge. They should carefully examine the person alleged to be insane and in forming their opinion should apply all the best accredited and most recent tests.

Upon the medical profession should properly be placed the responsibility of the proper care and treatment of the insane. To them, more than to all others, should we look for a proper determination of questions of insanity. While it will probably be admitted that there are in this profession men who lack professional integrity, yet the fact that there is scarcely a case reported in this country where a physician has been accused and convicted of falsely certifying to a person's insanity would lead us to believe that they have with fidelity and honor performed the duties imposed upon them by the statutes of the different States.

LIABILITY OF MEDICAL EXAMINER FOR FALSE CERTIFICATE.—In most of the States the executing of a false certificate by a medical examiner is a misdemeanor. A person maliciously and without any reasonable or probable cause having signed a certificate that a person was insane, and in a state requiring confinement, and in consequence thereof a party has been detained in custody as a lunatic, is liable for damages caused; and such a certificate may be considered as libel, in which case an indictment would lie against the person who signed it.[1]

The first duty of a medical examiner professionally called to testify to the mental condition of a person alleged to be insane is to carefully and strictly follow the various requirements of the statute or the rules and regulations prescribed by competent authorities.

If the examiner is a physician of good repute, if the examination is made and the certificate executed in good faith, if he possessed the requisite knowledge and skill to enable him to judge of the mental condition of the patient under examination, and the examination be made with the usual professional care and attention, such a certificate meets every requirement of the law, and if error is committed therein, and if unfortunately, by reason thereof, a person of sound mind is committed to an asylum for the insane, the medical examiners will be relieved of responsibility and liability for unjust restraint of liberty.[2]

A medical examiner is not responsible for an honest mistake of judgment, and particularly in reference to that judgment which is the conclusion of his examination of a person supposed to be insane.

A physician or surgeon is under obligation to possess, and it is his duty in the treatment of a case to employ, such reasonable skill and diligence as is ordinarily exercised in his profession.[3]

A medical expert before signing the certificate of insanity should take due care and make due inquiries; if he does not he is liable in damages for the consequences.

[1] King *v.* Harvey and Chapman, 2 Barn. and Cress., 257.

[2] Penn. Lunacy Laws, p. 191 (Barlow).

[3] McCamllers *v.* McWha, 22 Penn., 261; Holtzman *v.* Hoy, 19 Ill. App., 459; Long *v.* Morrison, 14 Ind., 595; Jones *v.* Angell, 95 Ind., 376; Carpenter *v.* Blake, 75 N. Y., 12; Barton *v.* Goran, 42 Hun (N. Y.), 655.

In Hall *v.* Semple, 3 Fost. and Fin., 337, Crompton, Justice, says: "The true grounds of plaintiff's complaint is the negligence of the defendant and the want of due care in the discharge of the duty thrown upon him, and I think that if a person assumes the duty of a medical man under the statutes and signs a certificate of insanity which is untrue, without making the proper examination and inquiries, which the circumstances of the case would require from a medical man using proper skill in such a matter, if he states that which is untrue and damage ensues to the party thereby, he is liable in an action."

It is the physician's duty to make the examination with ordinary care. This duty must be measured by the trust which the statute reposes in him, and by the consequences flowing from its improper performance. They assume the duty by accepting the trust. They are not judicial officers and as such, therefore, free from the charge of a lack of due and ordinary care and prudence. They are not clothed with judicial immunity and are chargeable with that negligence which attaches to a professional expert who does not use the care and skill which his profession, *per se*, implies that he will bring to his professional work.[1]

Liability for Illegal Detention.—The inherent jurisdiction of the State over persons of unsound mind rests in part upon its duty to protect the community from the acts of those who are not under the guidance of reason, and it therefore follows that if any person is so insane that his remaining at liberty would be dangerous to himself or the community, any other person may, without warrant or other cause than the inherent necessity of the case, confine such dangerous insane person, but only during so long a time as may be necessary to institute and carry to a determination proper proceedings to inquire into the party's condition and provide for his legal custody. And it is not necessary, in order to justify the arrest and restraint of the insane person, that he should at the time of arrest be actually engaged in the commission of violence; for any insane person may be restrained of his liberty, by his family or others, to such an extent and for such a length of time as may be necessary to prevent injury or damage to themselves or to the lunatic.[2] Except in such cases of violent and dangerous

[1] Ayres *v.* Russel, 50 Hun (N. Y.), 282. [2] Buswell on "Insanity," s. 23.

insanity, any person who assumes to illegally arrest, detain, or confine an insane person does so at his peril, and he will become liable for his act as if the person arrested, detained, or confined was sane.

A person harmlessly insane cannot be arrested without a warrant, even though the purpose is to detain him until he could be carried before a proper tribunal and procure warrant of commitment to an insane asylum. The statutes providing for the detention and confinement of an insane person must be strictly followed. Any deviation therefrom is an injury to the person detained and he may recover from all parties involved in such arrest, detention, or confinement for all damages occasioned thereby.[1] The mere fact that a person is insane does not warrant his summary arrest and confinement. The law provides in what way and by what proceedings the liberty of the alleged insane person shall be restrained. There can be no valid excuse for a failure to comply with all the legal requirements. If persons interested in securing the detention and confinement of insane persons would be relieved from liability therefor, they must see to it that the letter of the law is strictly obeyed.

WRIT OF HABEAS CORPUS.—In the statutes of most of the States the right to a writ of habeas corpus is accorded to all persons detained as insane in or out of an institution for the custody, care, and treatment of insane persons. In such cases the statute generally provides that the question of sanity shall be tried, and although no irregularities may have occurred in securing his confinement, and at the time of the commitment, the person was insane, if at the time of the issuance of the writ he is restored to reason he must be discharged from custody.

To detain a person after his restoration to sanity would be like detaining a prisoner after he had served out the period of his sentence. However legal and proper the confinement may have been at the beginning, and while the patient was insane, to restore the patient to his liberty and to society when his sanity is established, is an appropriate office of the writ of habeas corpus.

Judge Potter, in Matter of Dixon, 11 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 118, so held regardless of the fact that the New York statute provides no such remedy for persons confined in asylums who have

[1] Look *v.* Choate, 108 Mass., 116.

been restored to sanity. If a person is detained or confined as a lunatic without authority of law, he may be brought into court upon a writ of habeas corpus and the legality of his detention be determined.

On an application for the writ, it should be made to appear that the applicant was acting under due authority from the alleged lunatic. In most of the States the statutes provide that provision shall be made for the unrestricted communication of inmates of institutions with persons of authority or friends or relatives named by such inmates, and that every means shall be afforded for carrying on such communication. Such letters are required to be mailed without examination by the authorities of the institution. Commissions are established in nearly all the States who have a visitorial power over all institutions for the custody and treatment of the insane. The duty is placed upon them to investigate the conduct of all such institutions, and if, in their judgment, persons are illegally detained therein, they are required to secure their discharge.

STATUTES OF ALL THE STATES, DIGESTED, RELATING TO THE CARE AND CUSTODY OF INCOMPETENT PERSONS AND THEIR ESTATES, AND THE COMMITMENT AND CONFINEMENT OF INSANE PERSONS.

[Compiled by Frank S. Gilbert, Assistant to the Statutory Revision Commissioner of the State of New York, Albany, N. Y.]

ALABAMA.

Courts of Probate have, in the cases defined by law, origi[illegible] jurisdiction of—

6. The appointment and removal of guardians for minors a[illegible] persons of unsound mind.[1]

APPOINTMENT OF A GUARDIAN.—The Court of Probate h[illegible] power to appoint guardians for persons of unsound mind r[illegible] siding in the county having an estate real or personal, and [illegible] such persons without the State, having property within t[illegible] county requiring the care of a guardian.[2]

Such guardian is not to be appointed until an inquisition h[illegible] been had and taken.[3]

[1] Civil Code, title 9, c. 5, s. 693.
[2] *Ibid.*, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,390.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,391.

INQUISITION, PROCEEDING.—Upon the petition of any of the relatives or friends of any person alleged to be of unsound mind setting forth the facts and name, sex, age, and residence of such person, accompanied by an affidavit that the petitioner believes the facts therein stated to be true, the Court of Probate of the county in which such person alleged to be of unsound mind resides must appoint a day not more than ten days from the presentment of such petition for a hearing thereon.[1]

The judge must issue a writ directed to the sheriff commanding him to summon twelve disinterested persons and issue subpœnas for witnesses returnable at the time of trial. He must also direct the sheriff to take the person alleged to be of unsound mind, and, if consistent with health or safety, have him present at the place of trial.[2]

The jury must be impanelled and sworn. If any of the jurors from any cause do not serve, their places must be supplied from the bystanders.[3]

If the jury find the facts alleged in the petition to be true, and that such person is of unsound mind, the court must cause the petition and all the proceedings thereon, to be recorded and appoint a suitable guardian of such person.[4]

If the person alleged to be of unsound mind is a resident of the county and at the time of the application confined in a hospital or asylum within or without the State, the inquisition may be had or taken without notice to him.[5]

NON-RESIDENT PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND.—The Court of Probate may appoint a guardian for a person of unsound mind, having property within the State, if such person has been declared insane by a court having jurisdiction in the State of his residence.[6]

The application must be in writing, verified; must state the name, sex, age, and residence of such person, the court by which he was declared of unsound mind, and describe the property requiring the care of a guardian. A hearing must be given upon notice for three successive weeks by publication.[7]

WHO MAY BE APPOINTED GUARDIAN.—The court must prefer in the appointment of a guardian the person who is of near-

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,392.
[2] *Ibid.*, 2,393.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,394.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,395.
[5] *Ibid.*, 2,396.
[6] *Ibid.*, 2,402.
[7] *Ibid.*, 2,403.

est relationship and will in the judgment of the court best manage the estate of the ward.[1]

The general guardian of the county must be appointed guardian of a person of unsound mind if no other suitable person applies for appointment and qualifies; and if there be no general guardian, the sheriff must be appointed.[2]

THE BOND OF GUARDIAN.—The guardian other than the general guardian for the county or the sheriff, must enter into a bond with sufficient sureties payable to the Judge of Probate in a penalty to be prescribed by the judge, with condition for the faithful performance of all his duties.[3]

Land of the ward cannot be sold until guardian has given a bond for double the supposed or estimated value of such lands, payable to the Judge of Probate, and with condition that he will faithfully account for the proceeds of such sale.[4]

REVOCATION OF GUARDIANSHIP.—The insane person himself, or by next friend, may apply in writing to the Court of Probate for a revocation of the proceedings against him and of the letters of guardianship, the application to be accompanied by the certificate in writing of two physicians or of two other competent persons, stating that after examination of such person they believe him to be of sound mind.[5]

The court must appoint a day for the hearing thereof, not more than ten days thereafter, and the guardian and the person at whose instance the inquisition was had and taken must be cited to appear and show cause.

If the guardian or such person appear and in writing deny the allegations of the application, the court must appoint a day for the trial of such contest, cause a jury to be summoned for the trial thereof, and the like proceedings must be had as upon the original inquisition.

If there be no contest a decree must be entered, revoking the proceedings of the inquisition and the guardianship.[6]

If at any time after his appointment the guardian becomes satisfied that the ward has been restored to sanity and is capable of managing his estate, and the Judge of Probate is of opinion from the proofs and the facts stated that such representation is

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,404.
[2] *Ibid.*, 2,405.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,406.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,407.
[5] *Ibid.*, 2,397.
[6] *Ibid.*, 2,397–2,400.

correct, he must make an order that the guardian be discharged and that the estate of the ward be restored.[1]

THE MEANING OF TERM, PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND.—The term "persons of unsound mind" includes idiots, lunatics, or the insane.

POWER AND DUTY OF GUARDIANS.—Within three months after his appointment the guardian must make an inventory of all the estate of his ward and return it upon oath to the court, which must be filed and recorded.[2]

The guardian must manage the estate of his ward frugally and improve it to the best of his skill and ability.[3]

The guardian may publicly or privately lease the land of the ward for a term not exceeding one year and make a report thereof to the Court of Probate.[4]

The Court of Probate may authorize the guardian to lease the lands of the ward for a term not exceeding ten years, reserving rent payable annually; such lease being subject to revocation or disaffirmance by the ward, upon restoration to sanity.[5]

The guardian must keep in good repair and condition the real estate of the ward, and he can make all such improvements and repairs thereon as are necessary and proper for that purpose; but such improvements or repairs cannot be made from the principal of the funds of the ward without an order of the Court of Probate.[6]

The Court of Probate may authorize a guardian to compromise any claim or debt due to the ward.[7]

The court may authorize the guardian to take real estate in compromise of the debt or claim.[8]

The court may authorize the guardian to sell debts or other choses in action of the ward which are of doubtful collection or recovery. This must be done upon the order of such court, granted upon the application in writing of the guardian verified by affidavit, but a report of the sale must be made to and confirmed by the court.[9]

The court may authorize the guardian to sell any property, real or personal, when necessary for the payment of debts of

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,401.
[2] *Ibid.*, 2,411.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,412.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,414.
[5] *Ibid.*, 2,415.
[6] *Ibid.*, 2,421.
[7] *Ibid.*, 2,426.
[8] *Ibid.*, 2,429.
[9] *Ibid.*, 2,430-2,433.

such insane person incurred for the maintenance of such person or for the maintenance of his family.

If the sale is of personal property, notice thereof must be given by advertisement for twenty days in a newspaper published in the county; and if of lands, such notice must be for thirty days by advertisement for four consecutive weeks in a newspaper published in the county. A report of such sale must be made to and confirmed by the court. The title of the ward is not divested until the purchase money is fully paid.[1]

The property of the ward may be sold for good cause shown, for the purpose of reinvestment. The Court of Probate must direct how the sale shall be made, and such sale is not completed until confirmed by the court and until all the purchase money is paid.[2]

Guardians may invest the money of their wards in real estate, and if acting in good faith shall not be individually responsible for a depreciation in the value of the land purchased with the funds of the ward, if such depreciation results from causes which cannot be prevented by the guardian.[3]

Real estate purchased by the guardian with the funds of the ward must be conveyed to the ward, but managed and controlled by the guardian for the benefit of the ward.[4]

The guardian is liable to the ward for any loss sustained by the failure or defect of title of the land purchased.[5]

The Court of Probate, on the application of the guardian, must direct what portion of the income or of the principal of the estate of the insane person may be appropriated to the support of the family.[6]

SETTLEMENT OF GUARDIAN.—The Court of Probate has jurisdiction of the settlement, partial or final, of the accounts of the guardian.[7]

The guardian must at least once in three years file in the court an account of his guardianship accompanied with the vouchers verified by affidavit. The court must appoint a day for the settlement, of which notice must be given for three successive weeks in the manner directed by the court. On the day of settlement the court must proceed to examine the vouchers

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,434–2,438.
[2] *Ibid.*, 2,439–2,440.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,441.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,442.
[5] *Ibid.*, 2,443.
[6] *Ibid.*, 2,444.
[7] *Ibid.*, 2,453.

and audit and state the account. If any voucher or item be rejected, all costs accruing on the contest or examination thereof must be taxed against the guardian personally. Upon the final settlement, the partial settlement must be presumed to be correct.[1]

On the death, resignation, or removal of the guardian, or on the restoration to sanity of the ward or on his death, the final settlement of the guardianship must be made. Upon such settlement the guardian must file in the Court of Probate a full account of the guardianship, accompanied by the vouchers and verified by affidavit. The court must appoint a day for the settlement with ten days' notice to the ward if restored to sanity, or to his personal representatives, if dead.

On the day appointed, the court must proceed to examine the vouchers and audit and state the account. If any voucher or item be rejected, all costs accruing on the contest or examination thereof must be taxed against the guardian. The court must thereupon render a decree declaring the amount due the ward, which must be entered and recorded and the account and vouchers must also be recorded.[2]

COMPENSATION OF GUARDIAN.—The guardian is entitled to a commission of two and one half per cent. on his disbursements, and two and one half per cent. on his receipts, and on final settlement an allowance must be made for all actual expenses necessarily incurred by him.

Upon the final settlement, the guardian, if he has not been guilty of fraud or gross negligence, must be allowed a reasonable commission, not exceeding two and one half per cent., on the value of all personal property surrendered to the ward or to his representatives. But if the value of such personal property or of such moneys exceed twenty thousand dollars, the commission on the excess must not be more than one per cent.[3]

RESIGNATION AND REMOVAL OF GUARDIAN.—A guardian may resign by writing subscribed by him, filed in the Court of Probate. Such resignation does not affect the liability of the guardian or his sureties.[4]

A guardian may be removed for removal from the State,

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,450–2,458.
[2] *Ibid.*, 2,459–2,463.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,465–2,466.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,427.

wilful failure to file an inventory or wilful disobedience to an order of the court, drunkenness, imbecility of mind, continued sickness rendering him incapable, conviction of felony, waste of the ward's property, neglect of his affairs, or for any other good and sufficient cause.'

An application for removal may be made by the ward or by next friend in writing, verified by affidavit, and must specify the grounds of removal. The court must appoint a day for the hearing, of which notice must be given to the guardian of at least five days.

On the day appointed, the court may proceed to hear the evidence and pass upon the application. If determined against the ward the next friend must be taxed with the costs. If against the guardian he must be taxed with costs. The Court of Probate may, without an application by the ward, for any of the causes specified upon notice, remove a guardian.[2]

PROTECTION OF ESTATE OF INTEMPERATE PERSONS.—When any unmarried man over twenty-one years of age is, by reason of intemperance, unfit to manage his estate, or is wasting or squandering it and is thereby in danger of being reduced to poverty or want, his brothers or sisters or next of kin, or any or either of them, may themselves, or by their next friend if minors or married women, file their bill in chancery to preserve the estate of such intemperate person from further waste and for general relief.[3]

The bill must specify the cause for which relief was prayed and the estate proposed to be secured, and such person with intemperate habits must be made a party defendant. If the allegations of the bill are admitted either expressly or by failure to answer, or it is established by proofs that such person is wasting his estate or is for the causes alleged unfit for its management so that such person will probably be reduced to want, the chancellor must deprive him of all further control over it and provide for its safe-keeping by the appointment of a trustee. The trustee appointed must manage and superintend the affairs of the estate and from the avails thereof, provide for the support of such intemperate person or of his wife and children.

Pending the suit, the chancellor must by injunction or other-

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 4, art. 2, s. 2,478.

[2] *Ibid.*, 2,479–2,482.

[3] *Ibid.*, c. 5, s. 2,502.

wise secure the estate against further waste, but no such decree affects the rights of creditors acquired previous to the institution of a suit.

Upon satisfactory proof of the reformation of such intemperate person and of his fitness to have charge of his estate, the chancellor must order it to be restored to him.[1]

ALABAMA INSANE HOSPITAL.—There is established in the State of Alabama a State hospital for the care and proper treatment of insane persons, which is located in the county of Tuscaloosa and near the city of Tuscaloosa.[2]

The insane patients must be received from the several counties in the State in the ratio of their insane population, and such counties must report annually to the judge of the Probate Court the census of their insane persons.[3]

Persons in indigent circumstances residing in the hospital, whether in their own right or by reason of the State bearing their expenses, must be chargeable with no more than the actual cost for clothing, nursing, board, and medical attendance. Patients whose expenses are payable by themselves or friends must pay according to the care received.[4]

In order of admission the indigent insane must have precedence of the rich, and recent cases of both classes may have preference over those of long standing.[5]

COMMITMENT OF INSANE PERSONS.—When a person in indigent circumstances becomes insane, application must be made by his friends or any other person in his behalf to the judge of the Probate Court in the county where he resides, and such judge must without delay make application to the superintendent of the hospital for his admission, and accompany the application with full and satisfactory answers to certain questions relating to the condition of such person. If the patient can be received, the judge must call one respectable physician and other trustworthy witness to fully investigate the facts in the case, and either with or without the verdict of a jury decide the case as to sanity and indigence. If the judge believes that satisfactory evidence has been advanced showing the patient to be insane, and that his estate is insufficient to sup-

[1] Civil Code, title 5, c. 5, art. 2, s. 2,503–2,509.
[2] *Ibid.*, title 13, c. 1, s. 1,229.
[3] *Ibid.*, 1,235.
[4] *Ibid.*, 1,236.
[5] *Ibid.*, 1,237.

port him and his family, the judge must issue a certificate and send him within thirty days to the hospital to be supported there at the expense of the State. The superintendent of the hospital shall keep the vacancy open for a period of thirty days after the date of his notice that the patient can be received.[1]

No patient must be received or discharged without suitable clothing, and if it cannot be otherwise obtained, the steward must furnish it and charge the same to the county from which he was sent. The patient must also be furnished by the steward, if it is not otherwise to be had, with money sufficient, not to exceed twenty dollars, to pay his expenses until he reaches home.[2]

The word insane, where it occurs in the act incorporating the Alabama Insane Hospital, means any person who by reason of unsoundness of mind, resulting from diseases of the brain, is incapable of managing and caring for his own estate, or is dangerous to himself or others if permitted to go at large, or is in such condition of mind or body as to be a fit subject for care and treatment in a hospital for the insane.

Discharges may be made because the person adjudged to be insane is not insane, or because he has recovered from the attack of insanity, or because he is so far improved as to be capable of caring for himself, or because friends of the patient or the Probate Judge of his county requested his discharge, and in the judgment of the superintendent no evil consequence is likely to follow such discharge. The superintendent of the hospital may grant a furlough for a period not exceeding six months to such of the harmless and convalescent patients who may in his opinion be benefited by the change. The friends of such patients are to pay all travelling expenses to and from the hospital. The persons confined in such hospitals shall be entitled to the benefit of the right of habeas corpus.[3]

ARKANSAS.

Probate courts possess the superintending control over guardians having the care, custody, and management of idiots, lunatics, habitual drunkards, and persons of unsound mind, and may

[1] Civil Code, title 13, c. 1, s. 1,241.
[2] *Ibid.*, 1,249.
[3] Acts of Alabama 1886–87, p. 54.

provide for the safe-keeping of such persons and maintenance of themselves and their families and the education of their children.[1]

INQUISITION.—Upon information in writing that any person in the county is an idiot, lunatic, or of unsound mind, if satisfied that there is good cause for the exercise of its jurisdiction, the probate court shall cause the person to be brought before such court and inquire into the facts by jury.

If any sheriff, coroner, or constable discovers such a person in the county, he shall make application to the court for the exercise of its jurisdiction.

If found by the jury that the person is of unsound mind, the court shall appoint a guardian of the person and estate of such insane person.

The costs of the proceeding shall be a charge on his estate, or if that is insufficient, upon the county. If the person alleged to be insane is discharged, the costs are paid by the person instituting the proceedings, unless such person is an officer, in which case the costs shall be paid by the county.[2]

GUARDIANS, THEIR POWERS AND DUTIES.—Before entering upon his duties, the guardian shall execute a bond for the faithful performance of such duties and the judicious management of the estate of his ward.

Additional bonds may be required, in the discretion of the court.

The guardian shall take charge of the person committed to his charge and provide for his support and maintenance. He shall take into his possession the goods, chattels, moneys, and all evidences of debt and of writing touching the estate of the person under his guardianship.

Within three months he shall make out and file in the office of the clerk of the court an inventory of the estate of his ward. Additional inventories shall be filed whenever other property belonging to the estate shall be discovered.

The court may make orders for the restraint, support, and safe-keeping of such person; for the maintenance of his estate and the support and maintenance of his family and education of his children, out of the proceeds of his estate.[3]

[1] Statutes of Arkansas, s. 3,767.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 3,768–3,773.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 3,774–3,784.

SALE, MORTGAGE, AND LEASE OF REAL ESTATE.—If the personal estate be insufficient for the discharge of the debts and maintenance of the family, or education of the children of the insane ward, the guardian shall petition the court for authority to mortgage, lease, or sell such part of the real estate as is necessary to supply the deficiency.

The courts shall direct the time and terms of the sale, mortgage, or lease, and the manner in which the proceeds shall be secured and the income applied. The court shall direct the manner of making the sale, which shall be at public vendue to the highest bidder, and the guardian shall report the proceedings to the court. If the court approve the proceedings, the guardian shall execute a deed to the purchaser. If the report be disapproved, the court may set aside the sale and order the refunding of all money paid.

When the court shall order a lease or mortgage, no deed or instrument shall be executed until approved by the court.[1]

WHEN WARD MAY BE SUPPORTED BY COUNTY.—If the estate of any ward is insufficient to maintain himself and family, or educate his chidren, his guardian may apply to the county court for an appropriation from the county treasury for the support of his ward.

The petition shall be accompanied by an account of his guardianship, an inventory of the estate of the ward, and a list of the debts due from such ward. If the court is satisfied that the estate is insufficient for such purposes, it may order such sum to be paid to the guardian out of the county treasury as is sufficient to provide for the support of his ward.[2]

RESTORATION OF INSANE PERSON.—If any person allege in writing that the person declared of unsound mind is restored to his right mind, or to correct and sober habits, the court shall cause the facts to be inquired into, and if it be found that such person has been restored, he shall be discharged from care and custody and his property shall be restored to him.[3]

SETTLEMENT OF ACCOUNTS OF GUARDIAN.—All accounts of guardians shall be settled on the termination of the guardianship. The guardianship is terminated by the restoration of the ward, his death, or removal from office.[4]

[1] Statutes of Arkansas, s. 7,385–3,796. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 3,801–3,804. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 3,805–3,806. [4] *Ibid.*, s. 3,807–3,809.

CONFINEMENT OF INSANE PERSON BY GUARDIAN.—If a person be furiously mad, or so far disordered in his mind as to endanger his own person or the person or property of others, it shall be the duty of the guardian, or the person under whose care he may be, and who is bound to provide for his support, to confine him in some suitable place until the probate court shall make an order for his proper restraint, support, and safe-keeping.

If such person is not confined, any judge of a court of record, or any two justices of the peace, may cause such insane person to be apprehended, and may provide for his confinement in some suitable place until the court shall make further order thereon.[1]

LUNATIC ASYLUM.—The Arkansas State lunatic asylum is located at Little Rock. It is governed by a board of trustees, composed of five members appointed by the governor.

The trustees shall appoint a superintendent, who shall be a skilful physician, and hold his office for a term of four years.

They shall maintain an effectual inspection of the asylum, for which purpose, one or more of them shall visit it, at least once in every week, and the whole of such board once in three months.[2]

THE SUPERINTENDENT.—The superintendent appoints all subordinate officers, and is the general superintendent of the buildings, grounds, and farm, with all their fixtures and stock, and has the direction and control of all persons therein, subject to the by-laws and regulations of the trustees. He shall daily ascertain the condition of the patients and prescribe their treatment.[3]

ADMISSION TO ASYLUM.—Any person may be admitted to the asylum as a patient who is a citizen of the State, and who may be insane.

Any reputable citizen may file a written statement with the county and probate judge, that to the best of his belief the alleged insane person ought to be admitted, and that his being at large is dangerous to the community or prejudicial to his chances to recover.

Thereupon a time shall be appointed by the judge for a hearing, and at such time such competent witnesses as are produced

[1] Statutes of Arkansas, s. 3,811, 3,812.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 4,528–4,537.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 4,542.

shall be heard. In addition to the testimony of such witnesses the judge shall cause the alleged insane person to be examined by one or more physicians, who shall present in writing the result of the examination, including the answers to certain questions which are prescribed by statute.

If satisfied that such person is insane, he shall so decide, and without delay transmit to the superintendent of the asylum his decision in writing with copies of the statements taken in the proceeding.

The superintendent shall notify the judge of his readiness to admit the insane person into such asylum, if there be room unoccupied. If there be no room unoccupied he shall notify the judge of the fact and return the papers indorsed accordingly.

On receipt of notice of the superintendent's willingness to receive the patient he shall be transferred to such asylum by the sheriff or any person deputized by the county judge.

Such person shall be supported in such asylum at public expense unless such insane person have more than sufficient estate for the support of his family.[1]

CALIFORNIA.

APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIANS OF INSANE AND OTHER INCOMPETENT PERSONS.—Power of appointment vested in Superior Court.

Appointment made upon petition of relative or friend that such person is insane or for any cause incompetent to manage his property.

Notice to be given such person not less than five days before hearing. If it appears upon the hearing that the person is incapable of taking care of himself and managing his property, guardian must be appointed.[2]

PROCEEDINGS TO DETERMINE RESTORATION OF INSANE.—Insane person or any relative or friend may apply by petition to court to have the fact of his restoration judicially determined.

Court must appoint a day for hearing and upon request order investigation before a jury. Notice of the trial must be given to the guardian of the person, to his or her husband or wife, or to his or her father or mother, if living in the county.

[1] Statutes of Arkansas, s. 4,547–4,556. [2] Code Civil Pro., s. 1,763–1,784.

Guardian or relative of such person may contest the right to the relief demanded.[1]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIANS.—Guardian has the care and custody of the person of his ward and the management of all his estate.[2]

Guardian must pay all the ward's debts out of his personal estate or income of his real estate, if sufficient; if not, then out of real estate upon obtaining order for sale.

Must settle all accounts of the ward, demand, sue for and receive all debts due him.

Manage the estate of his ward frugally and without waste, and apply the income for suitable maintenance of ward and his family; and if insufficient, may sell the real estate upon order of the court and apply the proceeds of such sale for such maintenance.

Guardian to be allowed credits for proper advances for the benefit of the ward upon proper vouchers, etc. Guardian may be compelled to furnish suitable maintenance, etc. The court may direct the guardian to pay the persons supplying ward with suitable maintenance, etc.

Guardian may join in and assent to a partition of the real estate of the ward.

Guardian must return to the court an inventory of the estate of his ward within three months after his appointment and annually thereafter. Inventories must be recorded by the clerk of the court.

Guardian must upon the expiration of a year from the time of his appointment, and as often as required, present to the court his account for a settlement.

Every guardian must be allowed the amount of his reasonable expenses, and have such compenation as the court deems just and reasonable.[3]

SALE OF PROPERTY OF WARD AND DISPOSITION OF PROCEEDS.—When income of estate is insufficient to maintain the ward and his family, guardian may sell real or personal estate upon order of the court. Court may order the sale of the property of the ward for the purpose of reinvestment.

The proceeds of the sale must be applied to the purposes for

[1] Code Civil Pro., 1,766.
[2] *Ibid.*, 1,765.
[3] *Ibid.*, 1,768–1,776.

which made and the residue invested until the capital is wanted for such purposes.

If sold for purposes of investment, investment must be made according to guardian's best judgment or in pursuance of an order of the court.

Order must be made upon petition containing a statement of facts and circumstances showing necessity for the sale.

Notice must be given to the next of kin.

A copy of the order must be served on the next of kin and all persons interested in the estate at least fourteen days before a hearing of the petition.

The order of the court must specify the causes of the sale.

Guardian authorized to sell real estate must give a bond approved by the court.

Such order not to continue for more than one year after being granted.[1]

GENERAL PROVISIONS.—Court may cite persons suspected of having concealed, embezzled, or conveyed any of the property belonging to the ward or to his estate, upon complaint of guardian, ward, creditor, or other person interested in the estate, and may summon him in the same manner as persons suspected of concealing the effects of a decedent.[2]

Guardian may be removed if incapable of discharging his trust, or if he has wasted or mismanaged the estate, or failed for thirty days to render an account as required by the court. A guardian may resign when it appears proper to allow the same.[3]

Guardianship is terminated when it appears that it is no longer necessary.[4]

Court may require a new bond by the guardian when deemed necessary.

Every bond of a guardian must be filed in the office of the clerk of the Superior Court of the county.

No action can be maintained on such bond unless commenced within three years after the discontinuance of the guardianship.

No action can be maintained for the recovery of any estate sold by a guardian unless commenced within three years from the termination of the guardianship.[5]

[1] Code Civ. Pro., s. 1,777–1,792.
[2] *Ibid.*, 1,800.
[3] *Ibid.*, 1,801.
[4] *Ibid.*, 1,802.
[5] *Ibid.*, 1,803–1,805.

CUSTODY OF INSANE PERSONS.—Persons of unsound mind may be placed in an asylum upon the order of the Superior Court of the county in which he resides as follows:

1. The court must be satisfied upon examination in open court and in the presence of the person from the testimony of two reputable physicians that such person is of unsound mind and unfit to be at large.

2. After the order is granted the person alleged insane, his or her husband or wife or relative to the third degree, or any citizen, may demand an investigation before a jury which must be conducted in all respect as under an inquisition of lunacy.[1]

EXAMINATION AND COMMITAL OF INSANE PERSONS.—Whenever it appears by affidavit to the satisfaction of a magistrate of the county that any person within the county is so far disordered in his mind as to endanger health, persons, or property, he must issue and deliver to some peace officer a warrant directing that such person be arrested and taken before any judge of a court of record within the county for examination.[2]

Judge must issue subpœnas to two or more witnesses best acquainted with such insane person to appear and testify before him, and have at least two graduates of medicine to appear and attend such examination. Each person subpœnaed must appear and answer all questions pertinent to the matter. The physicians must hear such testimony and make a personal examination of the alleged insane person.[3]

Physicians after hearing testimony and making examination must make a certificate if they believe such person to be dangerously insane—

1. Showing that such person is so far disordered in his mind as to endanger health, person or property.

2. Premonitory symptoms, apparent cause or class of insanity, and the duration and condition of the disease.

3. The nativity, age, residence, occupation, and previous habits of the person.

4. The place from whence the person came and the length of his residence in this State.

The service must be made in the form prescribed by the medical superintendent of the asylum.[4]

[1] Civil Code, s. 258.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,210.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,211–2,214.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,215–2,216.

The judge, if he believes the person so far disordered in his mind as to endanger health, person, or property, must make an order that he be confined in the insane asylum. A copy of such order shall be filed and recorded by the county clerk.

Clerk shall keep an index book showing data connected with the commitment.[1]

The physicians attending each examination of an insane person are allowed five dollars each, to be paid by the county treasurer of the county where the examination was had, on the order of the board of supervisors.

COLORADO.

The words "insane person" shall be construed to include every idiot, *non compos*, lunatic, or distracted person.[2]

The term lunatic shall be construed to include idiots, insane and distracted persons and every person who, by reason of intemperance or any disorder or unsoundness of mind, shall be incapable of managing and caring for his own estate.[3]

APPOINTMENT OF A CONSERVATOR.—County court may appoint a fit person to be conservator of the estate of a lunatic upon complaint of any reputable person, that a person is a lunatic or insane person, that he has property and is incapable of properly managing the same. The court shall order a jury of six jurors to be summoned to ascertain whether such person is so incompetent of managing his affairs.[4]

BOND; POWERS AND DUTIES.—Conservator shall give his bond with sufficient sureties conditioned for the faithful discharge of his duties. He shall have the entire charge of the estate of such lunatic, and shall make an inventory of such estate in the same manner as administrators are required to inventory the estates of their intestates. He may collect and take possession of all the property of the lunatic. He may collect all debts due such lunatic and maintain necessary actions at law.[5]

Conservator shall apply annual income of estate and proceeds of all sales to the payment of the debts of such lunatic, and

[1] Civil Code, s. 2,217.
[2] Mills' Col. Stat., c. 118, s. 4,185.
[3] *Ibid.*, c. 80, s. 2,968.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 2,935.
[5] *Ibid.*, 2,936–2,938.

the surplus to the maintenance of such lunatic and his or her family and the education of the children.[1]

SETTLEMENT OF CLAIMS.—County court may allow demands against the lunatic to be satisfied out of the estate, upon notice to the conservator.

All claims must be presented in one year.

All judgments enforced against the estate in the manner provided for the collection of judgments against executors and administrators.

The wife of a lunatic may select and take the articles which would be allowed to her as his widow in case of his death, but if lunatic is solvent the court may make further allowance to the wife for her support and the support and education of the minor children.[2]

SALE OF PROPERTY.—Conservator may sell personal property of lunatic and lease lands as directed by the county court, upon an order; no lease shall be for a term exceeding five years.

Order for the sale shall specify the amount thereof which shall be sold.

Property exempt from execution not to be sold except for the support of the lunatic or family.

Real property may be sold or mortgaged for payment of debts and support of family, upon petition of the conservator upon the order of the court granting the same.[3]

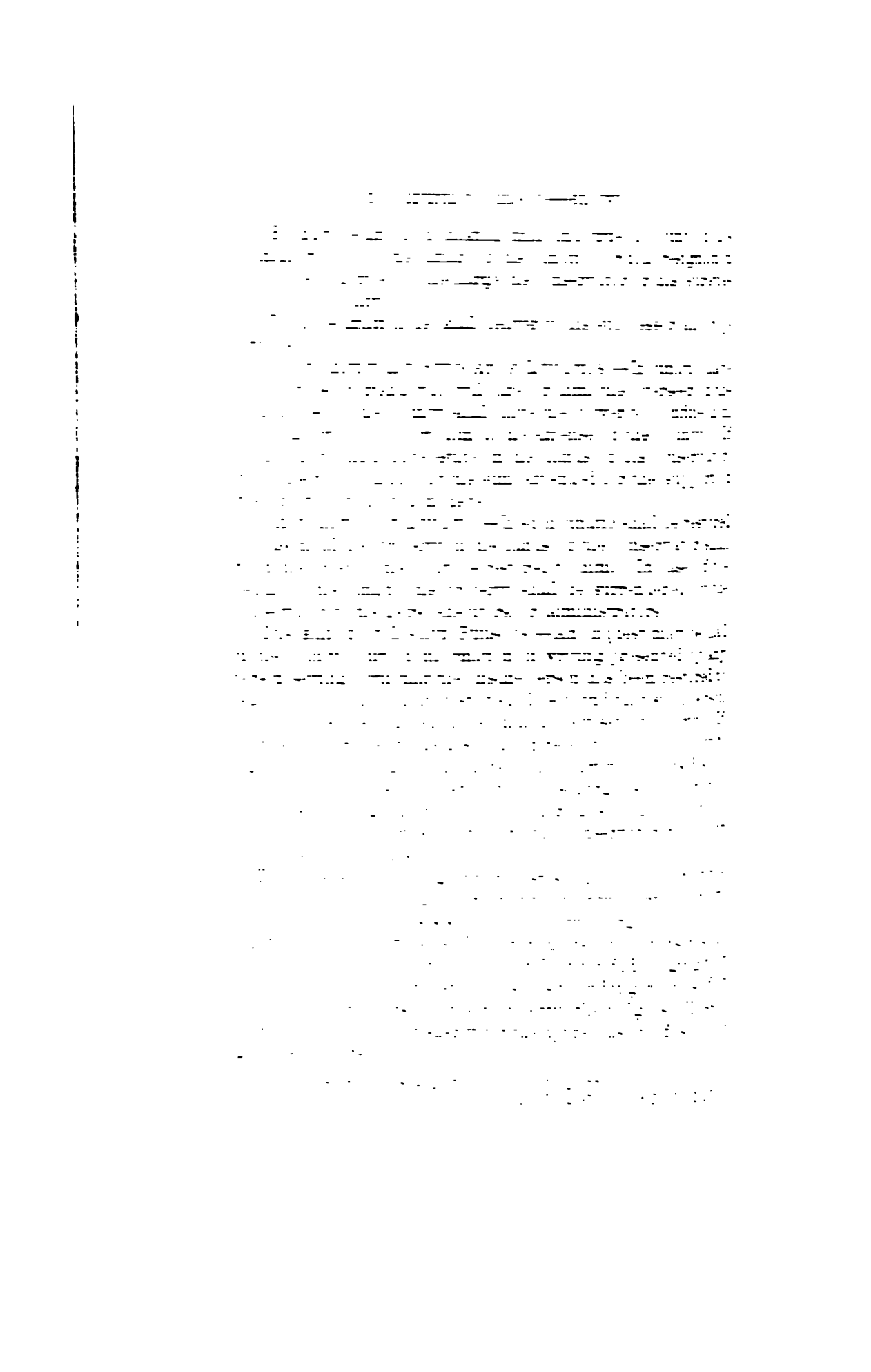
ACCOUNT OF CONSERVATOR.—Conservator shall present to the court an account of his administration of the affairs of the lunatic six months after his appointment, and with every alternate term thereafter, setting forth the amount of money received and the sources from which received, the amount of personal property and choses in action on hand and the several sums of money expended by him, to be accompanied by vouchers.

County court to apportion such money among the creditors of the lunatic. Surplus to be paid by the conservator to the wife.[4]

Conservator to receive reasonable compensation in the discretion of the court for his services.

Conservator may be removed for any default or misconduct in office.

[1] Mills' Col. Stat., c. 118, s. 2,939–2,940.
[2] *Ibid.*, 2,941–2,944.
[3] *Ibid.*, 2,945–2,947.
[4] *Ibid.*, 2,949–2,952.



When any sheriff or constable shall find within his county any insane person at large, he shall apprehend such insane person without an order of the court; and when so arrested, either with or without an order of the court, he shall be taken forthwith before the county court or a judge thereof, and an inquest shall be held without delay; and until the determination of such inquest, such alleged insane person shall be confined in the county jail or other convenient place.

If upon such inquest it be found that such alleged insane person is insane so as to endanger himself or others, it shall be the duty of the court to commit such insane person to the county jail, to be there confined until discharged or otherwise disposed of according to law. Before such inquest upon application of any relative or friend, and upon it satisfactorily appearing that the applicant is a suitable and proper person to have the custody of such alleged insane person, the county court shall order such alleged insane person to be delivered into the custody of such relative or friend.[1]

CONNECTICUT.

Care and custody of insane persons and their property vested in Probate Court.

CONSERVATORS.—Court of Probate may appoint conservator on application of relatives or selectmen, of persons incapable of managing their affairs and who by waste of their estates are likely to be reduced to want.

Upon such application, citation to issue to alleged incompetent person and to relatives.[2]

DUTIES OF CONSERVATORS.—Conservator to return an inventory of the estate of the incapable person, manage his estate, apply the income thereof, or principal if necessary, to his support and to the support of his family, and to pay his debts, and may sue for and collect all debts due to him.

Court of Probate may order the sale of real estate of ward, and conservator shall invest the avails of the estate, if not required for the immediate support of the insane person or the payment of his debts, either in other real estate or in such manner as trust funds may be legally invested.[3]

[1] Mills' Col. Stat., c. 118, s. 2,962.
[2] Conn. General Statutes, c. 45, s. 475–476.
[3] *Ibid.*, 478–480.

RESTORATION OF ESTATE OF WARD.—If Court of Probate shall find ward restored to his capacity, it shall order what remains of his estate to be returned to him, and if such ward shall die, the property in the hands of the conservator shall be turned over to the ward's administrator or executor.[1]

EFFECT OF REMOVAL OF WARD TO ANOTHER PROBATE DISTRICT.—If a ward removes into another probate district the Probate Court of such district may, upon application to the proper parties, appoint some person resident in such district as his conservator. The former conservator shall settle his accounts with the Court of Probate, and transmit to the new conservator all the personal property and other effects in his possession, and shall thereafter cease to be such conservator and shall be superseded in all his rights by the new conservator.[2]

CONFINEMENT OF INSANE.—No person shall be committed or admitted to an asylum without an order signed by a Judge of Probate as hereinafter provided.

Whenever any person in this State shall be insane, or supposed to be insane, any person may make complaint in writing to any Judge of Probate within whose district the person complained of shall reside, alleging that such person is insane and [illegible] be confined in an asylum; but when any insane person [illegible] be confined shall go at large in any town, [illegible] may, and the selectmen thereof shall, make a like complaint to the Judge of Probate within whose district such [illegible] After receiving such complaint the judge [illegible] shall forthwith appoint a time not later than [illegible] days after receipt of said complaint and a place within said [illegible] a hearing upon said complaint, and shall cause reasonable notice thereof to be given to said complainant, to the person complained of, and to such relative or relatives of said person [illegible] any person interested in said person, as said judge shall [illegible] and may adjourn said hearing from time to time for cause. Said judge may issue a warrant for the apprehension and bringing before him of said person complained of. He shall see and examine said person if in his judgment the circumstances of such person renders it necessary and

[1] [illegible] Statutes, c. 45. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 482.

proper so to do; or state in his final order why it was not deemed necessary or advisable so to do.[1]

A certificate signed by two physicians, neither of whom is connected with any asylum nor related to the person complained of, shall be filed with such judge. Each must have personally examined the person within five days of signing the certificate. A copy of said certificate shall be attached to the final order of said judge and delivered with the order to the keeper of the asylum.[2]

If on the hearing the judge shall find the person insane, and that he ought to be confined, he shall make an order in writing demanding some proper officer to convey said insane person to the asylum named in the order.[3]

All insane persons confined in any asylum shall be entitled to the benefits of a writ of habeas corpus, and the question of insanity shall again be determined by the judge issuing the writ. Said writ may be applied for by the insane person or on his behalf by any relative or friend or person interested in his welfare.[4]

An attorney-at-law regularly retained by or on behalf of any patient in an asylum, or any medical practitioner properly designated, may be admitted to visit the patient at all reasonable hours if, in the opinion of the keeper of the asylum, such visit would not be injurious, or if the judge of the Superior Court first orders in writing that such visit be allowed.

Insane persons detained in asylum to be furnished with materials for communicating with any suitable person.[5]

All asylums are subject to the visitation of the State Board of Charities and shall be so visited and inspected once in six months in each year.[6]

Persons wilfully conspiring with any other person to commit to an asylum any person who is not insane, or any person falsely certifying to the insanity of any person, and any person reporting that a person is insane, shall be punished by a fine of not more than one thousand dollars or by imprisonment in a State prison for not longer than five years, or by both.[7]

[1] Act of Connecticut, 1889, c. 162, s. 3–4.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 5.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 6.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 16.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 19–20.
[6] *Ibid.*, s. 22.
[7] *Ibid.*, s. 23.

Delaware.

Care and Custody of the Insane Vested in a Court of Chancery.—Trustees may be appointed to take charge of the person and property of insane persons upon a writ issued by the Chancery to inquire by jury to determine whether the person is insane. Trustee is to give a bond for the faithful discharge of his duty and account before the chancellor once in two years. He shall be allowed necessary expenses and just compensation for trouble.

The trustee shall do what is necessary for the care, preservation, and increase of the ward's estate. Chancellor may order sale of real property. The proceeds of the sale to be paid into court for the benefit of the insane person.

Chancellor to invest the proceeds as he shall deem proper. He may direct the dividends to be paid to the trustee for the support or benefit of the insane person.

In case of the recovery or death of the insane person, the trustees shall deliver and pay to him or his heirs all the balance remaining in his hands.[1]

Care of Indigent Lunatics.—Whenever the relatives or friends of an indigent lunatic or insane person shall apply to the chancellor of this State, either personally or by petition, together with a certificate of two practising physicians of the county wherein such lunatic resides, one of whom shall be a regular physician of the almshouse of said county, setting forth the facts of said lunacy or insanity, the cause if known, and the necessity in their opinion of a better or more efficient mode of medical treatment than can be afforded in the almshouse of the county where such person may reside, the chancellor shall, if satisfied, refer such application to the trustees of the poor of said county for information. If the reports from such trustees be satisfactory, the chancellor shall recommend in writing, to the governor, that such lunatic or insane person be removed to the insane department of the New Castle County Almshouse.[2]

Whenever the principal physician of the insane department of such almshouse shall represent to the trustees of the poor of

[1] Laws of Delaware, c. 49.

[2] *Ibid.*, 1887, c. 92, s. 1.

the county from which such lunatic or insane person may have been rendered that such person has been cured and so improved in condition as to render his further confinement in such department unnecessary, or that the person after full and sufficient opportunity and treatment remains incurable, then such person shall, upon the written request of the trustees of the poor, be discharged from said institution, or if incurable be returned to the almshouse of the county of his residence.[1]

In all cases of application for the commitment of insane persons to the hospital, the evidence and certificate of at least two respectable physicians, based upon due inquiry and personal examination of the person to whom insanity is imputed, shall be required to establish the fact of insanity, and a certified copy of the physician's certificate shall accompany the person to be committed together with a written order of the trustees or chancellor.[2]

FLORIDA.

The terms "insane person" and "lunatic" include every idiot, *non compos*, lunatic, and insane person.[3]

INQUIRY AS TO LUNACY.—A judge of the Circuit Court shall issue a writ to the sheriff of the county whenever it shall be suggested to him by petition or otherwise that an insane person or a lunatic is within the limits of his circuit, incapable of managing his affairs, or of taking care of himself, directing such sheriff to bring such person before him for the purpose of inquiring into the alleged fact of lunacy or insanity.

If it be found upon investigation that such person is a lunatic, the judge shall pass the usual order or decree. If it appear that the lunatic or insane person has sufficient estate to support him, the order shall bind the estate.

If it appear that the lunatic is destitute, then such person shall be transported to the asylum for the indigent lunatics and delivered to the officer having charge of the same, provided, however, that the judge may direct the lunatic to be delivered to any other person, in which event the person to whom such delivery is made must provide for his care, custody, and maintenance.

[1] Laws of Delaware, 1887, c. 92, s. 3.

[2] *Ibid.*, 1889, c. 553, s. 1.

[3] Revised Statutes of Florida, s. 1.

For such care, custody, and maintenance such private person shall receive not exceeding the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, paid by the treasurer on a warrant drawn against the appropriation for the maintenance of lunatics. If the person to whose care such lunatic shall be committed shall decline to accept or wish to be relieved of such charge, the judge may, by further order, substitute another person or may order his commitment to the State asylum.[1]

POWERS OF GUARDIANS.—Guardians may make contracts relative to the person and estate of lunatics, but before such contract shall bind the estate they must be confirmed by the Circuit Court. The real estate may be sold on application of their guardians in the same manner as the real estate of infants.[2]

GEORGIA.

"Lunatic," "insane," or "*non compos mentis*," each include all persons of unsound mind.[3]

Courts of Ordinary have authority to exercise original, exclusive, and general jurisdiction of the following subjects:

5. The appointment and removal of guardians of persons of unsound mind.

6. All controversies as to right of guardianship.[4]

GUARDIANS.—The Ordinaries of the several counties of this State may appoint guardians for idiots, lunatics, and insane persons, deaf and dumb persons when incapable of managing their estates, habitual drunkards or persons imbecile from old age or other causes and incapable of managing their estates.[5]

Guardians shall take the same oath and give a like bond as guardians of minors, and their powers, duties, and liabilities shall be the same and be exercised under the same rules and regulations.[6]

A wife shall in all cases be entitled to preference to the appointment as guardian.[7]

COMMISSION TO INQUIRE AS TO LUNACY.—Commission granted upon petition of any person. Commission shall be directed to eighteen proper persons, one of whom shall be a phy-

[1] Revised Statutes of Florida, s. 813–848.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,110–2,111.
[3] Revised Code of Georgia, s. 5.
[4] Georgia Code, pt. 1, title 5, c. 5, art. 1, s. 331.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 1,852.
[6] *Ibid.*, s. 1,853.
[7] *Ibid.*, s. 1,854.

sician. Require any twelve of them, including the physician, to examine the person by inspection for whom guardianship or commitment to the asylum is sought, to hear and examine witnesses as to his condition and capacity to manage his estate, and to make return of such examination to the said Ordinary, specifying in such return into which of said classes they find the person to come.

Upon such return, if the person be found insane, the Ordinary shall appoint a guardian or commit him to an asylum.

An appeal may be had by persons dissatisfied and interested in the application for the commission upon bond, etc., to the superior court of the county.[1]

REVOCATION OF GUARDIANSHIP.—Upon restoration to sanity and capacity of any person for whom a guardian is appointed, such person may petition the Ordinary praying the revocation of the guardianship. The Ordinary shall examine into the truth, and if satisfied, and the guardian consenting thereto, the Ordinary shall grant the prayer and deliver to such person his property and effects.

If the Ordinary is not satisfied as to the truth of the petition, the question shall be tried before a jury.[2]

CONFINEMENT OF WARD.—Guardians of insane persons are authorized to confine them if such a course is necessary, either for their protection or for the safety of others; and a guardian wilfully failing to take such precaution with his ward shall be responsible for injuries inflicted on others by such ward.

Where there is no guardian or the guardian refuses to confine his ward, and any person shall make oath that such insane person should not longer be left at large, the Ordinary shall issue a warrant for the arrest of such person, and on an investigation of the facts may commit him to a lunatic asylum and if necessary cause him to be temporarily confined in a jail.[3]

EXPENSES OF PROCEEDINGS: HOW PAID.—Where the estate of an insane person is insufficient to defray the expenses of conducting the proceedings inquiring as to his lunacy and for carrying or conveying such insane person from the county to the State lunatic asylum, when committed to such asylum, then the county shall defray such expenses.[4]

[1] Georgia Code, pt. 1, title 5, c. 5, art. 1, s. 1,855–1,857.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,860–1,861.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 1,863–1,864.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 1,865.

IDAHO.

When it appears to the satisfaction of a magistrate of the county that any person within the county is so far disordered in mind as to endanger health, person, or property, he must issue and deliver to some peace officer for service a warrant directing that such person be arrested and taken before any judge of the court of record within the county for examination.

Judge to issue subpœnas for at least one graduate of medicine to attend such examination.

Physician to hear testimony and make a personal examination of the alleged insane person.

If the physician believes the person to be dangerously insane, he must make a certificate in his own handwriting showing, as near as possible—

1. That such person is so far disordered in his mind as to endanger health, person, or property.

2. The premonitory symptoms, apparent cause, or class of insanity, and the condition of the disease.

3. The nativity, age, residence, occupation, and previous habits of the person.

4. The place from whence the person came and the length of his residence within the State.

The judge, after such examination and certificate, if he believes the person so disordered, must make an order confining him in the insane asylum.[1]

The physician attending such examination is allowed five dollars, to be paid by the county treasurer on the order of the board of county commissioners.[2]

The Idaho Insane Asylum is located at Blackfoot, and is under the management and control of a board of directors consisting of three persons.

The medical superintendent must be a graduate of medicine and have practised in his profession five years after the date of his diploma. He must reside at the asylum and give his entire time and attention to promoting the best interests of the patients. He is the chief executive officer of the asylum, and may control the patients, prescribe the treatment, and prescribe and enforce the sanitary regulations of the asylum.[3]

[1] Statutes of Idaho, 1887, s. 769–776. [2] *Ibid.*, 781. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 750, 758.

Any person received in the asylum must after recovery be discharged therefrom.

No person laboring under contagious or infectious disease must be admitted into the asylum as a patient.[1]

ILLINOIS.

INQUISITION AS TO LUNACY.—When any person is supposed to be insane or distracted, any near relative, or if there be none, any respectable person residing in the county, may petition the judge of the county court for proceedings to inquire into such alleged insanity or distraction.

Upon the filing of such petition, the judge shall order the clerk of the court to issue a writ, directed to the sheriff or any reconstable or person having the custody or charge of such person, requiring the alleged insane person to be brought before him at a time and place to be appointed. Such officer or person shall bring the alleged insane person before the court.

Subpœnas to be issued for such witness as may be desired on behalf of the petitioner or of the person alleged to be insane.

Trial to be by a jury of six persons, one of whom to be a physician. The case shall be tried in the presence of the person alleged to be insane, who shall have the right to be assisted by counsel.

Verdict of jury to be rendered in writing, signed by them, to be in the form prescribed by the statute.[2]

Upon the return of the verdict, it shall be recorded. If it appear that the person is insane and a fit person to be sent to a State hospital, the court shall order that the insane person be committed to a State hospital for the insane, and an application shall thereupon be made by the clerk of the court to some one of the State hospitals for the admission of such insane person.[3]

If such insane person is a pauper, application shall first be made to the nearest hospital; or if not a pauper, to such one of the State hospitals as the relatives or friends of the patient shall desire.

Upon receiving the application, the superintendent shall im-

[1] Statutes of Idaho, 18887, s. 764, 767.

[2] See s. 5.

[3] Revised Statutes of Illinois, 1891, c. 85, s. 1-6.

mediately inform the clerk whether the patient can be received; and if so at what time, and if not shall state the reason why.

Upon receiving notice of the time the patient will be received, the clerk shall issue a warrant directed to the sheriff or any other suitable person, preferring some relative of the insane person when desired, commanding him to arrest such insane person and convey him to the hospital.

The warrant may be in form substantially as prescribed by the statute.[1] The superintendent shall indorse the warrant in the manner prescribed by statute.[2]

No person having any contagious or infectious disease or any idiot shall be admitted to any State hospital for the insane.[3]

If, upon the inquisition, a person not a pauper is found by the jury not to be insane, the costs of the proceeding shall be paid by the petitioner. If such person is found to be insane, costs are charged upon his estate.

The expense of conveying a pauper to a State hospital shall be paid by the county in which he resides, and that of any other patient by his guardian, conservator, or relatives.[4]

MAINTENANCE OF INSANE PERSON AT HOSPITAL.—If a person be not a pauper, a bond shall be given by one or more persons, relatives or friends of the patient, to become responsible to the trustees for finding the patient in clothes and removing him when required.

The amount of clothing is prescribed by statute.[5]

If the insane person be a pauper, the necessary amount of substantial clothing shall be purchased by the county.[6]

DISCHARGE OF PATIENTS.—Whenever the trustees shall order any patient discharged, the superintendent shall at once notify the clerk of the county court of the proper county, if the patient is a pauper, and if not the guardian, relatives, or friends, and request the removal of the patient. If such patient be not removed in thirty days he may be returned by the superintendent at the expense of the county or bondsmen.

When any patient shall be restored to reason, he shall have the right to leave the hospital at any time; but if detained against his will he or any person in his behalf may apply for a writ of habeas corpus.

[1] See s. 9.
[2] See s. 10.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 7-11.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 13-14.
[5] See s. 16.
[6] *Ibid.*, s. 15-17.

If the patient is discharged on such writ, and it shall appear that the superintendent has acted in bad faith, the superintendent shall pay all the cost of the proceedings and shall be liable to a civil suit for false imprisonment.[1]

APPOINTMENT OF CONSERVATOR.—When any such person is adjudged insane, if it appear that he is the owner or possessor of any property which in the opinion of the court is in danger of waste or depreciation, he shall appoint some fit person to be the conservator of such insane person; but in case there is a Probate Court in the county, then he shall transmit thereto a duly certified copy of the record of the verdict of the jury finding such person insane, and upon presentation the Probate Court may appoint some fit person to be conservator of such insane person.[2]

Whenever any idiot, lunatic, or distracted person has any estate, real or personal, or when any person by excessive drinking, gaming, idleness or debauchery of any kind, so spends, wastes, or lessens his estate as to expose himself or his family to want or suffering, the county court of the county in which such person lives shall, on the application of any relative or creditor, or if none, upon any person living in such county, order a jury to be summoned to ascertain whether such person be an idiot, lunatic, or distracted, a drunkard or such spendthrift, and if the jury so find, the court shall appoint some fit person to be the conservator of such person.

Summons to be issued and served upon person for whom conservator is sought to be appointed. If the person is an idiot or lunatic then notice to be published in some newspaper in the county.[3]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF CONSERVATOR.—The conservator shall give a bond in double the amount of his ward's real and personal estate, which may be put in suit in the name of the people of the State of Illinois to the use of any person entitled to recover on a breach thereof.

He shall have the care and management of the estate of his ward and the custody of his person until otherwise ordered by the court, and the custody and education of his children where no other guardian is appointed, but shall not deprive the

[1] Revised Statutes of Illinois, 1891, c. 85, s. 18, 20.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 24.

[3] *Ibid.*, c. 86, s. 1 and 2.

inventory, or to account and make a settlement, or when he shall have become insane, or if moved out of the State, or become incapable or unsuitable for the discharge of his duties, or for failure to discharge any duty required of him by law or order of the court.

Before removing the conservator the court shall summon him to show cause.

When it appears proper, the court may permit the conservator to resign if he first settles his accounts and delivers over the estate as the court directs.[1]

APPOINTMENT OF SUCCESSOR.—Upon the removal, resignation, or death of the conservator another may be appointed. The court may compel the conservator so removed or resigned or the executor or administrator of a deceased conservator to deliver up to such successor all the property and effects in his custody or control belonging to the ward.[2]

COMPENSATION.—Conservator on settlement shall be allowed such fees and compensation for his services as shall seem reasonable and just to the court.

RESTORATION TO REASON.—When any person for whom a conservator shall have been appointed shall be restored to his reason, or if a drunkard or spendthrift shall have reformed, such person may apply to the county court to have said conservator removed and the care and management of his property restored to him.

Notice of such application shall be given to the conservator ten days before the commencement of the term of the court to which application shall be made. A jury shall be summoned to try the question whether said applicant is a fit person to have the care, custody, and control of his property. If they return that such person is a fit person, then the court shall enter an order fully restoring such person to all the rights and privileges enjoyed before such conservator was appointed.[3]

APPEALS.—Appeals shall be allowed to the Circuit Court, from any order or judgment under this act, upon the appellant giving bond directed by the court.

[1] Revised Statutes of Illinois, 1891, c. 86, s. 32-34.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 35.

[3] *Ibid.*, s. 37-39.

INDIANA.

DEFINITION.—The words "person of unsound mind" as used in this act or any other statute of this State shall be taken to mean any idiot, *non compos*, lunatic, monomaniac, or distracted person.[1]

INQUISITION AS TO UNSOUND MIND.—Whenever any person shall by statement in writing represent to the court having probate jurisdiction in any county that any inhabitant of such county is a person of unsound mind and incapable of managing his estate, such court shall cause such person to be produced in court and shall cause an issue to be made by the clerk of such court, denying the facts set forth in such statement; which issue shall be tried by a jury to be empanelled under the direction of such court.

If jury finds such person to be of unsound mind the court shall appoint a guardian for such person, who shall have the custody of his person and the management of his estate. If such insane person is a pauper, he shall be provided for under the laws regulating the relief of the poor. If being a pauper he shall be dangerous, he shall be provided for under the regulations prescribed in section twelve.

If the court shall be satisfied that such person alleged to be of unsound mind cannot without injury to his health be produced in court, such personal appearance may be dispensed with.[2]

DUTIES AND POWERS OF GUARDIANS.—The same duties are required of, and the same powers granted to, guardians of person of unsound mind as are required of and granted to guardians of minors so far as the same may be applicable.[3]

TERMINATION OF GUARDIANSHIP.—Guardianship shall terminate upon the restoration to reason or the death of the ward.

Whenever it shall be alleged that an insane person has become of sound mind the fact may be tried and determined in the same manner as the allegation of the unsoundness of mind, and the expenses of such trial shall be paid by such guardian out of the estate of the ward.[4]

[1] R. S. Indiana, 1852, p. 333, s. 1; Burns Stat., s. 2,714.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2, 3, 4; Burns Stat., s. 2,715–2,717.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 8; Burns Stat., s. 2,721.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 9–10; Burns Stat., s. 2,722–2,723.

DANGEROUS INSANE.—If it shall appear to the court that there is danger to the community in permitting an insane person to run at large, the court shall make such order for his safe-keeping as may be necessary and direct the expenses thereof to be paid out of the estate of such person, or if that be insufficient or necessary for the support of his family then out of the county treasury.[1]

ARREST AND COMMITMENT OF DANGEROUS INSANE PERSONS.—A justice of the peace shall issue a warrant to any constable or to the sheriff commanding him to apprehend and bring before him any person alleged upon oath to be insane and dangerous to the community if suffered to remain at large; he may subpoena such witnesses as may be demanded by either party under the same regulations as govern criminal prosecutions in justice's courts.

Immediately after the issue of such warrant he shall cause a jury to be empanelled and summoned.

Such justice shall interrogate each of such jurors under oath as to whether he is prejudiced against such insane person, has any interest in his property, or is related to him or any member of his family within the fifth degree.

If he answer affirmatively, he shall be rejected. Such insane person or any person in his behalf shall have the right to challenge three of such jurors peremptorily.

If the jury find after hearing the evidence that such person is not insane, he shall be discharged from custody and the costs of such proceeding shall be taxed against the complaining party; but if the jury find that such person is insane and dangerous to the community if suffered to remain at large, such justice shall appoint some resident of the county to take charge of and confine such person, for which he shall receive a reasonable compensation, to be paid out of the county treasury upon the order of the board of commissioners. Such commissioners may appoint some other person to take charge of such insane person at any time in their discretion.

Such justice, in case the finding of the jury be against such insane person, shall certify his proceedings within ten days thereafter to the Circuit Court of the county.

At the next term of such court, after the filing of the tran-

[1] Burns Stat., s. 2,725.

script of the proceeding in the clerk's office thereof, such court shall cause the issue to be again tried by a jury of twelve persons under like instruction and conditions as to the manner of empanelling the jury, etc., as hereinbefore provided; but if the finding of such jury shall be against such insane person, the court shall confirm the appointment of the person appointed to take charge of the insane person or may appoint some other suitable person for that purpose.[1]

APPLICATION OF ESTATE OF INSANE PERSON.—If such insane person have a family and his property does not exceed in value five hundred dollars, no part of his estate shall be applied to the payment of the costs of such proceeding or for his keeping; but when he shall have no family all his property, or where he has a family and his property shall exceed in value five hundred dollars, the excess thereof above five hundred dollars shall be subject to the payment of said costs and expenses of keeping, and the court shall order whatever sum has been paid out upon the order of the board of commissioners to be refunded out of his estate to the county treasury, and shall make provisions out of such estate for the payment of expenses to afterward accrue, until such estate is exhausted or such insane person is discharged.[2]

WRIT OF HABEAS CORPUS.—Any person committed as insane to any State hospital may apply to the proper authorities for a writ of habeas corpus, and the question of insanity shall be decided at the hearing and an adverse decision shall not operate as a bar to the issuance of another writ; provided, however, that writs of habeas corpus shall not issue oftener than once in every period of three months.

As to management of State hospitals for the insane and admission of patients thereof, see Acts of Indiana, 1881, s. 2,835–2,879.

IOWA.

DEFINITION.—The words "insane person" include idiots, lunatics, distracted persons, and persons of unsound mind.[3]

The term "insane," as used in this chapter, includes every species of insanity or mental derangement. The term "idiot"

[1] Indiana Laws, 1855, p. 133, s. 1-5; Burns Stat., s. 67–87.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 6; Burns Stat., s. 6,992.

[3] Iowa Code, s. 75, sub. 6.

is restricted to persons foolish from birth supposed to be naturally without mind.[1]

GUARDIANS OF DRUNKARDS, SPENDTHRIFTS, AND LUNATICS.—Appointment of guardians vested in the circuit court.

When a petition is presented to the Circuit Court verified by affidavit that any inhabitant of the county is—

1. An idiot, lunatic, or person of unsound mind;

2. An habitual drunkard, incapable of managing his affairs;

3. A spendthrift who is squandering his property; and the allegations of the petition are satisfactorily proved upon trial, the court may appoint a guardian of the property who shall also be a guardian of the minor children.

Petition to set forth the facts upon which the application is based, to be answered as in other ordinary actions. The applicant recorded as plaintiff, the other party as defendant, and either party may demand a trial by jury.[2]

CUSTODY.—Priority of claim to the custody of any such person shall be—1. The legally appointed guardian. 2. The husband or wife. 3. The parents. 4. The children.[3]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIANS.—The provisions of this code relating to guardians for minors and regulating or prescribing the powers, duties, or liabilities of each and of the court so far as the same are applicable, shall be held to apply to guardians and their wards appointed under the foregoing sections.

Guardian may sue in his own name as guardian of the ward for whom he sues. Action shall not abate upon the termination of his guardianship; but his successor or the person for whom he was guardian shall be made a party to the suit in the same manner as an executor or administrator is made a party to a proceeding of the like kind.

Guardian may sell real estate of the ward for the support of the ward or his family and for the payment of his debts under like proceedings as required by law for the sale of real estate of minors.

If the estate of any such person is insolvent a like proceeding may be had as is required by law for the settlement of the insolvent estate of a deceased person.[4]

[1] Iowa Code, s. 1,434.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,272, 2,273.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,279.
[4] *Ibid*, s. 2,274–2,278.

CONFINEMENT OF LUNATICS.—Hospitals are established for the care of the insane at Mt. Pleasant in Henry County, at Independence in Buchanan County, and at Clarinda in Page County, each under the charge and management of five trustees.[1]

COMMISSIONERS OF INSANITY.—In each county there is a board of three commissioners of insanity composed of the clerk of the Circuit Court and two others appointed by the judge of the court, one of whom shall be a physician and the other a lawyer.

Such commissioners have cognizance of all applications for admission to the hospital or for the safe-keeping otherwise of insane persons within their counties. They may issue subpœnas, compel obedience thereto, administer oaths, and do any act of a court necessary and proper in the premises.[2]

COMMITMENT TO HOSPITAL BY COMMISSIONERS.—Application for admission to a hospital must be made by information verified by affidavit alleging that the person in whose behalf the application is made is a fit subject for custody and treatment in the hospital. That such person is a resident of the county or has a local settlement therein if such is known to be the fact, and if such settlement is not in the county where it is, if known.

The commissioners shall thereupon examine the informant under oath, and if satisfied that there are reasonable grounds shall at once investigate. They may require the person for whom such admission is sought to be brought before them. They may provide for the suitable custody of such person until the determination of their investigation. They shall hear testimony for and against such application.

Any citizen of the county or relative of the person alleged to be insane may appear and resist the application. The commissioners shall appoint some regular practising physician of the county to make a personal examination of the person alleged to be insane touching the truth of the information and report forthwith to them. Such physician so appointed shall certify that he has made a careful personal examination, that he finds the person in question insane if such is the fact. On the return of the physician's certificate the commissioners shall conclude their investigation and shall find whether the person

[1] Iowa Code, s. 1,383-1,394, 22 G. A., c. 75. [2] *Ibid.*, 1,395-1,398.

be insane, and if insane whether he is a fit subject for treatment and custody in the hospital. If they find such person is not insane they shall order his immediate discharge. If found insane, they shall order such person to be committed to the hospital, and shall forthwith issue their warrant and a duplicate thereof stating such finding and authorizing the superintendent of the hospital to receive and keep such person as a patient therein. Such warrant and duplicate with the certificate and finding of the physician shall be delivered to the sheriff of the county, who shall execute the same by conveying such person to the hospital. The superintendent of the hospital shall acknowledge such delivery on the original warrant, which the sheriff shall return to the clerk of the commissioners. No person during such investigation or while being conveyed to the hospital shall be confined in any jail or prison except in cases of extreme violence, when it is deemed absolutely necessary for the safety of such insane persons and of the public that he be confined in such jail or prison; but at no time shall any female be placed in such confinement without at least one female attendant remaining in charge of such insane person.[1]

APPEAL FROM FINDING.—Any person found insane by the commissioners of insanity may appeal to the Circuit Court within ten days after the filing of the finding of such commissioners; the case when thus appealed shall be placed upon the docket by the clerk of the court and stand for trial anew in such court.

If any person found insane takes an appeal from such finding, such person shall be discharged from custody pending such appeal, unless the commissioners for any reason find that such person cannot with safety be allowed to go at large.

If upon the trial of such an appeal such person is found not insane, the court shall order the immediate discharge of such person if in custody. If found insane, the court shall order such person to be committed to the hospital, and the clerk of the court shall issue a warrant to carry such finding and order into effect.[2]

CUSTODY OUTSIDE OF HOSPITAL.—If any person found to be insane cannot be at once admitted to a hospital for want of room, or for any other cause, and cannot with safety be allowed to go at liberty, the commissioners shall provide otherwise for

[1] Iowa Code, s. 1,399-1,401, 22 G. A., c. 75. [2] 18 G. A., c. 152.

the custody of such patient outside of the hospital, until the necessity therefor no longer exists.

DISCHARGE FROM HOSPITAL.—Upon the application of the relatives or friends of any patient in the hospital who is not cured, and who cannot be safely allowed to go at liberty, the superintendent may provide for the care of such patient within the county.

Whenever it shall be shown to the satisfaction of the commissioners that cure is no longer made for the care within the county of any particular person as an insane patient, they shall order the immediate discharge of such person.[1]

EXPENSE OF MAINTENANCE AT HOSPITAL.—The county of settlement of the insane person is liable to the cost and expense of the maintenance of such patient within the hospital. Patients in the hospital having no local settlement within the State, or whose local settlement cannot be ascertained, shall be supported at the expense of the State.

All patients in the hospital shall be regarded as standing upon an equal footing, and the several patients according to their different conditions of mind and body, and their respective needs, shall be provided for and treated with equal care; but if the relatives or friends of any patient shall desire and shall pay the expenses therefor, such patient may have special care and may be provided with a special attendant as may be agreed upon with the superintendent. In such case the charges for such special care and attendance shall be paid quarterly in advance.[2]

DISCHARGE WHEN CURED.—Any patient who is cured shall be immediately discharged by the superintendent. Upon such discharge the superintendent shall furnish the patient, unless otherwise supplied, with the suitable clothing, and a sum of money not exceeding twenty dollars, which shall be charged with the other expenses in the hospital to such patient.[3]

VISITING COMMITTEE.—The governor shall appoint a visiting committee of three to visit the insane asylums of the State at their discretion, and without giving notice of their intended visit. They may go through the wards unaccompanied by any officer of the institution, may send for persons and papers, and

[1] Iowa Code, s. 1,408, 1,409.
[2] Ibid., s. 1,417, 1,429–1,431.
[3] Ibid., s. 1,434.

examine witnesses on oath to ascertain whether any of the inmates are improperly detained in the hospital or unjustly placed there, and whether they are kindly treated, with full power to correct any abuses found to exist. They may discharge any attendant or employee who has been guilty of inflicting any injury upon the inmates of the hospital.[1]

PRIVILEGES OF INMATES.—The names of the visiting committee and their post-office address shall be kept posted in every ward in the asylum, and every inmate in the asylum shall be allowed to write once a week to this committee, and any member of the committee neglecting to heed the call of the patient to him for protection, when proved to have been needed, shall be deemed unfit for his office and shall be removed by the governor.

Every person confined in an insane asylum shall be furnished by the superintendent, or party having charge of such person, at least once in a each week, with suitable materials for writing and mailing letters, if they request the same, unless otherwise ordered by the visiting committee, which order shall continue in force until countermanded by said committee.

The superintendent shall receive, if requested to do so by the person so confined, at least one letter in each week, addressed to one of the visiting committee, without opening or reading the same, and shall without delay deposit it in the post-office for transmittal with the proper postage-stamp affixed thereto; but all other letters may be examined by the superintendent, and if in his opinion it seems proper he may retain the same.[2]

WRIT OF HABEAS CORPUS.—All persons confined as insane shall be entitled to the benefit of the writ of habeas corpus, and the question of insanity shall be decided at the hearing, and if the judge shall decide that the person is insane, such decision shall be no bar to the issuing of the writ a second time.[3]

KANSAS.

Care and custody of the person and property of idiots, lunatics, or habitual drunkards is vested in Probate Court.

INQUISITION AS TO LUNACY.—Based upon information to the Probate Court that the person is an idiot, lunatic, or person

[1] Iowa Code, s. 1,435. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,436-1,440. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 1,444.

of unsound mind, or habitual drunkard, and incapable of managing his affairs. If satisfied that there is good cause, the court shall cause the facts to be inquired into by a jury.

The court may cause the person to be brought before the court.

Justice of the peace, sheriff, coroner, or constable discovering any person to be of unsound mind or a habitual drunkard shall make application to the Probate Court for the exercise of its jurisdiction.[1]

TRIAL OF INQUISITION.—A jury of six persons, one of whom shall be a physician in regular practice and good standing, shall be empanelled to try the case. Person alleged insane may be present at the trial, assisted by counsel, and may challenge jurors.

After hearing the evidence jury to render verdict in writing signed by them embodying the substantial facts shown by the evidence in form prescribed by statute. There shall be attached to verdict a brief statement of the medical treatment in the case, together with any other information or circumstances known which will throw light on the case, to be signed by the physicians upon the jury. Verdict to be recorded at large by the probate judge; and if it appear that the person is insane and fit to be sent to the insane asylum, the court shall order him committed to the State insane asylum, and application shall thereupon be made by the judge to the superintendent for the admission and shall transmit with the application a copy of the verdict of the jury and the statement of the physician. If it be found that the person is incapable of managing his affairs a guardian shall be appointed by the court of the person and estate of such person.[2]

COSTS.—If the person is found insane or an habitual drunkard, costs are payable out of his estate, or if that be insufficient by the county.

If the person be discharged, costs shall be paid by the person instituting the proceedings.[3]

GUARDIAN.—Guardian of a person of unsound mind or a habitual drunkard shall give a bond approved by the Probate Court conditioned for the proper care of such insane person or habitual drunkard and the proper management of his estate and

[1] Gen. Stat. of Kan., c. 60, s. 1-4. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 5. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 6, 7.

effects, and the faithful performance of all matters pertaining to the guardianship.

The court may, at any time, require the guardian to give a new bond or additional security for any purpose.

Bond shall be deposited with the court making the appointment.

Every guardian shall within thirty days after his appointment publish a notice thereof.

He shall take charge of the person committed to his charge and provide for his support and maintenance.

He shall collect and take into his possession all the property of the person.

Within three months after his appointment, he shall make out and file in the office of the Probate Court a true inventory of the estate of his ward, containing a statement of the income and proceeds thereof and the debts, credits, and effects.

Upon the discovery of any new property, he shall file a like inventory.

All such inventories shall be verified.

He shall prosecute and defend all actions in which the ward is interested, shall collect all debts, adjust and settle all demands due or becoming due from his ward.[1]

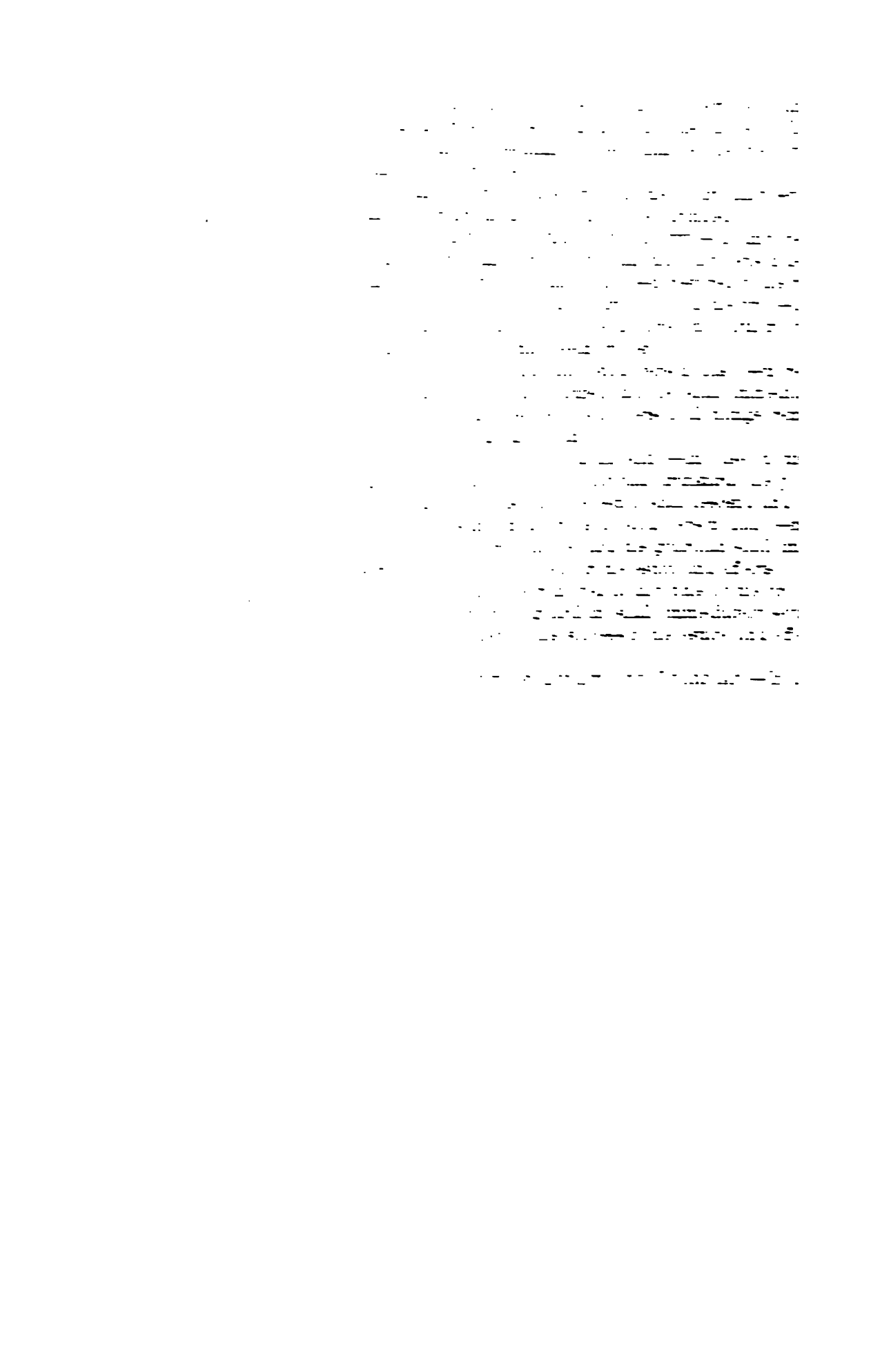
SALE OF PROPERTY OF WARD.—The property of the ward may be sold upon the order of the court for the support and maintenance of the ward's family and the education of his children.

If the personal property of the insane person or habitual drunkard is insufficient for the payment of his debts, the support and maintenance of his family, and himself, and the education of his children, the guardian shall petition the Probate Court praying authority to mortgage, lease, or sell such of the real estate as shall be necessary to supply the deficiency.

If it appear to the court that the personal estate is insufficient, the court shall make an order directing such mortgage, lease, or sale. Such order shall contain time and terms of sale, or if the mortgage or lease be ordered the terms of such mortgage or lease, and the manner in which the proceeds shall be secured and the income thereof appropriated.

Such sale shall be upon notice published for four weeks.

[1] Gen. Stat. of Kan., c. 60, s. 9-18.



such insane person to be apprehended, and may employ any person to confine him in some suitable place until the Probate Court shall make further orders.

The expenses attending such confinement shall be paid by the guardian out of his estate or by the person bound to provide for and support such insane person, or the same shall be paid out of the county treasury.[1]

CONFINEMENT OF INSANE PERSON IN THE STATE INSANE ASYLUM.—Any probate judge in this State may commit an insane person to the State insane asylum.

If the person adjudged insane has sufficient means for his maintenance and that of his family, if he have one, the court shall order his guardian to pay for his maintenance out of the proceeds of the estate of such insane person. If the estate be insufficient, the court shall deliver to the board of county commissioners a certificate stating such facts, and thereupon an order shall be issued for the payment of the expenses of such maintenance out of the county treasury.

Private patients may be placed in the asylum at private expense if the superintendent can conveniently receive them. In such cases, the superintendent shall be presented with a certificate, signed by at least one practising physician, and also a certificate of the probate judge of the proper county to the effect that such persons are insane.[2]

REMOVAL AND DISCHARGE OF PERSONS FROM INSANE ASYLUM.—The person or court placing a patient in the asylum may remove him at any time, and the superintendent may discharge him in accordance with the by-laws of the asylum. No idiot or person laboring under any infectious or contagious disease shall be admitted into the asylum.

When the patient is ordered discharged, the steward of the asylum shall immediately notify the probate judge. In case the patient is discharged not restored, he shall immediately issue his precept to the guardian of such person to remove him from the asylum at the expense of the county or person charged with his maintenance. If the patient is not removed within thirty days after discharged, the steward shall remove him at the expense of the county or person charged with his maintenance.

[1] Gen. Stat. of Kan., c. 60, s. 43–46. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 47–52.

If the person be discharged restored, the steward may send him home at the expense of the county or of the person charged with his maintenance.[1]

KENTUCKY.

CUSTODY OF PERSONS AND ESTATES OF IDIOTS AND LUNATICS.—Jurisdiction vested in circuit and county courts of the persons and estates of idiots, lunatics, or those who from confirmed bodily infirmity are unable to make known to others by speech, sign, or otherwise their thoughts or desires, and, by reason thereof, incompetent to manage their estates, or those whose minds on account of any infirmity or weight of age have become so imbecile or unsound as to render them incompetent to manage their estates.[2]

SALE OF REAL ESTATE.—Circuit Court, upon the application of the committee, may order the sale of such part of the real estate of an incompetent person as is necessary for the maintenance of such person and his family, and may settle and distribute the estate in the manner provided for the settlement and distribution of the estates of insolvent decedents.[3]

APPOINTMENT OF COMMITTEE.—Committee not to be appointed before the inquest of a jury and the judgment of the circuit or county court declaring the persons insane.[4]

POWER OF COMMITTEE.—Power and duties of a committee are in all respects the same as those of the guardian of an infant, except as to education. But the court may appoint a person other than the committee to take charge of the person, idiot, lunatic, or incompetent person when he is not confined in the asylum.[5]

CLAIMS AGAINST THE ESTATE.—Claims against the estate of a person incompetent to manage his estate shall not be allowed or paid until verified and proved in the manner prescribed for the proof of claims against the estate of deceased persons.[6]

INQUEST, HOW HELD.—Inquest to inquire into the question of insanity shall be held only in the Circuit Court, if one be in session at the time. If no Circuit Court be in session, the in-

[1] Gen. Stat. of Kan., c. 60, s. 54–56.
[2] Ken. Gen. Stat., c. 53, art. 1, s. 1.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 5.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 3.
[6] *Ibid.*, art. 2, s. 26.

quest may be held by any judge of a Circuit Court or by the presiding county judge.

No inquest shall be held, unless the person alleged to be of unsound mind is in court and personally in the presence of the jury. Such personal presence shall only be dispensed with upon the oath of two regular practising physicians that they have personally examined the individual charged to be of unsound mind, and that they verily believe him to be an idiot or lunatic or incompetent to manage his affairs, and that his condition is such that it would be unsafe to bring him into court.

The oath prescribed by statute shall be administered to the jury, and the judge shall instruct the jury so as to enable them to decide the question whether the defendant is an idiot or lunatic.

If on the return of the verdict the court is satisfied with the inquest, judgment shall be entered according to the finding. If a judge is of the opinion that the verdict is not sustained by evidence, or is against law, he shall set it aside and award a new inquest.

All papers pertaining to the inquest shall be delivered to the clerk of the court and filed by him.

Whenever it shall appear to the county or circuit court, from an affidavit filed, that the insane person has been restored, or that the inquest was false or fraudulent, the facts shall be inquired into by jury in open court and all necessary orders and decrees made by the court. If the lunatic be sent to an asylum, the judge presiding at the inquest shall ascertain and draw up a brief history of the patient's case, embracing certain points which shall be transmitted with a record of the inquest to the asylum.[1]

CONFINEMENT OF THE INSANE.—The judge holding the inquest may order a person found insane to the lunatic asylum, when it will be proper for the court to do so; but in no case shall an order be made sending to an insane asylum, unless the jury by their verdict on the inquest shall find that he is so dangerous or uncontrollable that he cannot properly or safely be kept by a committee at home.[2]

ASYLUM FOR THE INSANE.—There shall be for each asylum

[1] Ken. Gen. Stat., c. 53, art. 2, s. 7, 8, 9, 14, 15, and 16.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 14.

a medical superintendent, and a first, second, and third assistant physician, each of whom shall be skilful physicians, and a steward. These officers shall reside in the asylum. They are appointed by the governor, by and with the advice and consent of the senate.

The medical superintendent, shall have the general management, supervision, and control of the patients, subject to the regulation of the board of commissioners, and shall devote his entire time hitherto. Mechanical restraint shall not be applied in any case without express direction and under the supervision of one of the physicians in charge of said hospital, nor shall restraining apparatus be kept in the wards when not in use.[1]

THE RETURN OF IDIOTS AND HARMLESS INCURABLE LUNATICS.—All pauper idiots, epileptics, and harmless incurable lunatics shall be returned by the asylum in which they are confined to the several counties from whence they were sent.

The president of the board of commissioners, or the superintendent and one other commissioner, shall act as a commission to pass upon such case as the superintendent may propose to send back. They shall investigate each case carefully, and if all concur that the inmate can be safely sent back, they shall order him returned to the county from whence he was sent.

The cost of returning pay patients shall be paid by their committee or relatives willing and able to pay, and the cost of returning pauper inmates and such pay inmates as money cannot be collected from the committee, shall be paid by the auditor upon the certificate of the superintendent.[2]

LOUISIANA.

STATE ASYLUM.—The asylum for the insane, located in the town of Jackson, governed by a board of administrators, under the name and style of the "Board of Administrators of the Insane Asylum of the State of Louisiana."[3]

ADMISSION OF LUNATICS TO ASYLUM.—Whenever it shall be made known to the judge of the district or parish court by the petition or oath of any individual, that any lunatic or insane person within his district ought to be sent to or confined

[1] Laws, 1894, c. 49, art. 2, s. 1-6.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 10-11.
[3] Louisiana Statutes, s. 1,760-1,761.

in an insane asylum in this state, such judge shall issue a warrant to bring such lunatic or insane person before him, and if after proper inquiry into all the facts and circumstances of the case, he deems it necessary to confine such person in the asylum, he shall make out a warrant to a sheriff of the parish commanding him to convey the lunatic or insane person to the insane asylum.[1]

EXAMINATION BY PHYSICIAN OF ASYLUM.—The physician of the asylum shall professionally examine the lunatic or insane person sent to the hospital by the authority of the district or parish judge, and if in his opinion said person is only feigning insanity, being a person charged with a felonious crime, he shall report to the board, who shall investigate the fact; and if, in the judgment of the majority, said person should not be admitted as an inmate of the asylum, the president of said board shall cause such person feigning insanity, and who had been previously committed to prison for a crime, to be confined in the parish jail, and shall immediately inform the president of the police jury of the parish, or the proper authority in the parish of Orleans where the rejected person has his domicile, of the fact and the reason of his rejection. The provisions of this section shall also apply to such persons charged with a crime who afterward recover and become sane in said asylum.[2]

MAINE.

DEFINITION.—The words "insane person" may include an idiot, *non compos*, lunatic, or distracted person.

GUARDIANS OF INSANE AND INCOMPETENT PERSONS, SPENDTHRIFTS, AND CONVICTS.—The judge of probate may appoint guardians on written application of friends, relatives, or creditors, or of the municipal officers or overseers of the poor where they reside, for—

1. Persons insane or of unsound mind who, by reason of infirmity or mental incapacity, are incompetent to manage their own estates or to protect their rights.

2. Persons who, by excessive drinking, gambling, idleness, or debauchery of any kind have become incapable of managing their own affairs, or who so spend or waste their estate as to ex-

[1] Louisiana Statutes, s. 1,768. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,776.

pose themselves or families to want or suffering or their towns to expense.

3. Convicts committed to the State prison, for a term less than for life.

Guardians may be appointed for persons committed to the insane hospital without personal notice to the parties, and for insane or incompetent married women after personal notice and a hearing upon proof of the alleged insanity or incompetency, without inquisition by the municipal officers of the town. In all cases where the municipal officers or overseers of the poor are applicants, if they have given at least fourteen days' notice to such persons by serving him with a copy of their application, the judge may adjudicate thereon, without further inquisition, if such person is present, or on such further notice, if any, as he thinks reasonable; but if such officers have not given such notice, the judge shall cause personal notice to be given to the party before the hearing and adjudication.

In all other cases the judge shall issue his warrant to the municipal officers of the town where such person resides, requiring them to make an inquisition into the allegations made in the application. They shall decide whether such allegations are true, and as soon as may be report the result to the judge, and upon such report, after personal notice and a hearing, he may appoint a guardian.

A copy of the application and the order of the court thereon to be filed in the registry of deeds for the county.

When a guardian is thus appointed, the judge shall make an allowance from the ward's estate for all reasonable expenses of the guardian in defending himself against the complaint.

Such guardians have the custody of the person of their ward, except so far as the court of probate may from time to time otherwise order; and every guardian appointed over any person for gambling, idleness, drinking, or debauchery shall inculcate upon him habits of sobriety and industry, and when of sufficient health and strength, with the approbation of the judge, may bind him out to labor, not exceeding six months at any one time, or employ him in his own service.'

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIANS.—For the bond and the duties of a guardian as to the management of the ward's estate,

[1] Maine Stat., title 6, c. 67, s. 4.

and the powers of the guardian as to the purchase and sale of property and other matters pertaining to the care and management of the property of the ward, see Maine Stat., s. 10–39, relating to the powers and duties, etc., of guardians of minors.

STATE INSANE HOSPITAL.—The government of the hospital is vested in a committee of six trustees, one of whom shall be a woman. Trustees may appoint a superintendent and a steward and treasurer subject to the approval of the governor, and counsel and all other officers necessary for the efficient and economic management of the business of the institution.

There shall be, monthly by two of the trustees, quarterly by three, and annually by a majority of the full board, a thorough examination of the hospital. At each visit a written account of the state of the institution shall be drawn up by the visitors, recorded and presented at the annual meeting of the trustees, at which meeting they with the superintendent shall make a particular examination into the condition of each patient, and discharge any one so far restored that his comfort and safety and that of the public no longer requires his confinement.[1]

DUTIES OF SUPERINTENDENT.—The superintendent shall be a physician, reside constantly at the hospital, have general superintendence of the hospital and grounds, receive all patients legally sent to the hospital, unless the number exceeds its accommodations, and have charge of them and the direction of all persons therein, subject to the regulation of the board of trustees.

He shall apportion the number of patients who can be accommodated in the hospital among the towns according to their population by the last census; and when applications for admission exceed, or are liable to exceed, that number of patients, he shall give preference to those from towns that have not their full proportion of patients in the hospital, and may reject others.

When a person has been unlawfully committed, the superintendent shall report the case to the trustees at their next monthly meeting, and they may cause the removal of such person to the town from which he was committed. The superintendent at each monthly visit of the trustees shall also report to them the name of any inmate who was idiotic at the date of his commitment, or who has become so imbecile as in his judg-

[1] Maine Stat., title 6, c. 143, s. 1–4.

ment to be beyond cure; and if he thinks that such inmate may be discharged with safety to himself and to the public, the trustees shall order his discharge and cause him to be removed to the town from which he was committed.[1]

COMMITMENT OF INSANE PERSONS.—Parents and guardians of insane minors, if of sufficient ability to support them there, shall, within thirty days after an attack of insanity, without legal examination send them to the hospital and give to the treasurer thereof the bond required.

Insane persons not thus sent to any hospital shall be subject to examination as hereinafter provided. The municipal officers of towns shall constitute a board of examiners, and on complaint in writing of any relative or of any justice of the peace in their town they shall immediately inquire into the condition of any person in said town alleged to be insane. They shall take testimony, and if they think such person insane, or his comfort and safety and that of others will be promoted thereby, they shall send him to the hospital.

The officers ordering the commitment of a person unable to pay for his support may, in writing, certify that fact to the trustees, and that he has no relatives liable and of sufficient ability to pay for it; and if the trustees are satisfied that such certificate is true, the treasurer of the hospital may charge to the State one dollar and a half a week for his board, and deduct it from the charge made to the patient or town for his support.[2]

APPEAL FROM ORDER OF COMMITMENT.—An appeal may be had by the person deeming himself aggrieved by the decision of the board of examiners within five days after the decision was rendered to the justices of the town. Such justices may thereupon take testimony and hear and decide the case. If they find the person insane and that he will be more comfortable and safe to himself and others, they shall give a certificate for his commitment to the hospital like cases of no appeal.[3]

DISCHARGE OF THE INSANE.—A friend, person, or town liable for the support of a patient who has been in the hospital for six months, not committed by the order of the Supreme Judicial Court, when afflicted with homicidal insanity, thinking that he is unreasonably detained, may apply to the municipal officers of

[1] Maine Stat., title 6, c. 143, s. 7-9. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 12-14. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 15-18.

the town where the insane person resides, and they shall inquire into the case and summon before them any proper witnesses, and their decision and order shall be binding on the parties.

When the overseers of the town are notified by mail by the superintendent that the person supported at the hospital by the town has recovered, they shall cause him to be removed to their town.[1]

MARYLAND.

JURISDICTION OF COURTS OF EQUITY.—Courts of equity have power to superintend and direct the affairs of persons *non compos mentis* both as to the care of their persons and the management of their estates; and may appoint a committee or trustee for such persons and make such orders and decrees respecting their persons and estates as to the court may seem proper.[2]

SALE OF PROPERTY OF NON COMPOS MENTES.—Property may be sold on application of any creditor if the court is satisfied of the justice of the claim and there is no other means of paying the claim. The court may upon the application of the guardian decree the sale of property and order the money arising therefrom to be invested as the court may deem most advantageous. On the death of such *non compos mentis* the principal sums arising from such sale shall descend to the persons to whom the property would have descended if the same had not been sold.

The court may order real or leasehold property to be leased for any term of years, or may order the surrender of any lease. In all applications to sell the real or personal property of such person if the court shall deem it for the interest and advantage of such person, it may decree a sale, lease, or surrender of such property on such terms and conditions as the court may prescribe.

No sale, lease, or surrender shall be valid unless reported to and confirmed by the court.

The court may allow to the committee or other person charged with the care of the person or estate of any *non compos mentis*, a sum not exceeding ten per cent of the income or expenditures for the care and trouble of such trustee or person.

[1] Maine Stat., title 6, c. 143, s. 23-25. [2] Maryland Code, art. 16, s. 96.

The court may decree that the property of such *non compos mentis* be sold for his support, or for the payment of expenses which the trustee may have incurred.[1]

CONFINEMENT OF NON COMPOS MENTES.—The court may on the application of any trustee, and upon receiving proof that it is necessary and proper to confine such person, direct such trustee to send the person under his charge to any hospital in the vicinity of the city of Baltimore, provided he can be there received, to remain until a further order of the court.[2]

INQUISITION AS TO INSANE PAUPER.—A county circuit court or the criminal court of Baltimore, when any person is alleged to be a lunatic or insane pauper, shall cause a jury of twelve men to be empanelled and charge the jury to inquire as to the sanity of such person, and if found insane the court shall cause such person to be sent to the almshouse of the county or city to which he belongs, or to some other place best suited in the judgment of the court to his condition, there to be confined at the expense of the county or city until he shall have recovered and be discharged.[3]

CONFINEMENT OF LUNATIC PAUPER.—The county commissioners of any county may remove from the almshouse any lunatic pauper and cause him to be sent to the Maryland hospital, and levy on the county the sum necessary to defray the expenses incidental to the removal of such lunatic and his maintenance in such hospital. Such expenses in no case to exceed the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars per annum.[4]

WHO DEEMED A LUNATIC PAUPER.—No person shall be deemed a lunatic pauper who shall possess in his own right any property, real or personal, or be entitled to the use of any property by last will and testament, or deed of trust for his use or benefit.[5]

LUNACY COMMISSION.—A lunacy commission has supervision over all institutions in which insane persons are detained.[6]

If, in their judgment, any person confined in any institution as insane be not insane, the commission may bring the matter to the attention of the State's attorney of any county, whose duty it shall be to apply to the proper tribunal for a writ of habeas

[1] Maryland Code, art. 16, s. 97–103.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 104.
[3] *Ibid.*, art. 59, s. 1.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 2.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 3.
[6] *Ibid.*, s. 12.

corpus, to the end that proper inquiry and investigation may be had at once as to the mental condition of such person, and if the court shall be of the opinion that such person is not insane then the court shall discharge such person, but if the court determines that such person is insane he shall be returned to the institution.

Free access to all institutions shall be granted to the members of said commission, or their secretary, and the officers of such institutions shall furnish upon request all necessary information. The lunacy commission may issue compulsory process for the attendance of witnesses, administer oaths, and examine persons under oath. The managers of any such institutions shall have the right to appeal from the determination or action of said commission.[1]

No asylum for the care or custody of the insane to be kept without a license from said commission.[2]

No person shall be committed to or confined as a patient in any institution, or almshouse, or other place for the care and custody of the insane or idiotic, except upon the written certificate of two qualified physicians, made within one week after separate examination by them of the alleged lunatic. No physician connected with any institution shall certify to the insanity of any person for the purpose of committing such person to such institution.[3]

Persons confined in such places to be furnished with writing material, and may correspond with some person chosen by themselves without restriction.[4]

Any person may voluntarily commit himself to an asylum for a period not exceeding three months. If at the end of that time he is unfit to be discharged, the lunacy commission shall be notified and shall examine the case, and may authorize further treatment.[5]

Massachusetts.

Jurisdiction over the person and estate of insane person vested in the Probate Court.

Guardians.—The Probate Court may appoint a guardian

[1] Maryland Code, art. 16, s. 20–27.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 28.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 31–32.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 35–36.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 37.

of the person and estate of the insane person upon the application of the relatives or friends, or the mayor and aldermen or selectmen of the city or town, upon fourteen days' notice of the time and place appointed for the hearing, to be given to the alleged insane person.

Guardians of spendthrifts and habitual drunkards may be appointed in the same way and upon the same notice by Probate Courts.

The guardian of an insane person or spendthrift shall have the care and custody of the person of his ward, and the management of all his estate; shall give a bond in the manner prescribed for guardians of minors.

A guardian may be discharged by the Probate Court on the application of the ward or otherwise, when it appears that the guardianship is no longer necessary.[1]

Powers and Duties of Guardians.—Powers and duties of guardians for insane persons and habitual drunkards are the same as those prescribed for the guardians of minors.[2]

Commitment of Insane Person.—A judge of the Supreme Court or a Superior Court in any county, a judge of the Probate Court or of a police district or municipal court, may commit any insane person to either of the State lunatic hospitals.

No person to be committed without an order or certificate signed by one of the judges. Such order or certificate to state that the person is insane and is a fit person for treatment. The judge shall see and examine the person alleged to be insane, or state in his final order why it was not deemed necessary or advisable to do so.

No person to be committed unless the certificate be signed by two physicians, neither of whom is connected with any hospital or establishment for the treatment of the insane. Each must personally examine the person alleged to be insane within five days of signing the certificate, and each shall certify that in his opinion the person is insane and a proper subject for treatment. A copy of the certificate attested by the judge shall be delivered by the officer making the commitment to the superintendent of the hospital where the person is committed.

A person applying for the commitment of any lunatic to a State hospital shall first give notice in writing to the mayor or

[1] Mass. Public Stat., c. 139, s. 7–12. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 29–34.

one or more of the selectmen of the place where the lunatic resides, of his intention to make such application.[1]

Application for commitment of insane person to be accompanied by a statement containing facts as to the condition of the person alleged to be insane.

The judge upon hearing the evidence may issue his warrant for the apprehension and bringing before him of the alleged lunatic, if, in his judgment, the condition or conduct of such person renders it necessary or proper to do so.[2]

INQUISITION.—The judge may summon a jury of six lawful men to hear and determine whether the alleged lunatic is insane.

The jury shall be selected as the judge shall direct.

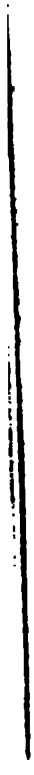
The judge shall preside at such trial, and administer to the jury an oath faithfully and impartially to try the issue, and the verdict of the jury shall be final on the complaint.[3]

COMMISSION OF LUNACY.—Consists of State Board of Health, Lunacy, and Charity. They have power to investigate the question of the insanity and condition of any person committed to any lunatic hospital or asylum, public or private, and restrained of his liberty by reason of alleged insanity at any place within the commonwealth, and shall discharge any person so committed or restrained, if, in their opinion, such person is not insane or can be cared for after such discharge without danger to others and with benefit to himself.[4]

STATE INSANE ASYLUM.—Cities of more than fifty thousand inhabitants may establish and maintain one or more asylums for the care and treatment of the chronic insane of such city and of any other city or town. Every such asylum shall be under the care of proper medical officers having experience in the care of the insane. The State Board shall visit and inspect every asylum so established, at least once in every six months, and may transfer the inmates thereof in the same manner as they now remove and transfer the inmates of other hospitals or asylums.[5]

CARE OF CHRONIC INSANE IN PRIVATE FAMILIES.—The chronic insane of a quiet class may be boarded in families, if

[1] Mass. Public Stat., c. 87, s. 11–14.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 15–16.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 17–22.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 1.
[5] Laws of 1894, c. 234.



MICHIGAN.

The words "insane person" shall be construed to include an idiot, a *non compos*, lunatic, and distracted person.[1]

GUARDIAN.—The judge of probate may appoint a guardian for an insane person or any person mentally incompetent to have the charge and management of his property, upon the application of relatives or friends of such person, or if such person is a county charge, upon the application of the directors of the poor. Notice shall be given such person not less than fourteen days before the time appointed for the hearing.

If the judge finds that the person in question is incapable of taking care of himself and managing his property, he shall appoint a guardian. Pending the application for the appointment of a general guardian, a special guardian may be appointed who shall hold office until the question of appointment of a general guardian be decided, or until he shall be discharged by the judge of probate.[2]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIAN.—Such guardian shall have the care and custody of the person and management of the estate of the ward. He shall give a bond to the judge of probate in the manner and form prescribed for the guardian of a minor.[3]

GUARDIAN FOR SPENDTHRIFT.—When any person, by excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery of any kind, shall so waste his estate as to expose himself or his family to want or suffering or the county to charge or expense, any superintendent of the poor of the county, or director of the poor, or a justice of the peace in which such spendthrift resides, may present a complaint to the judge of probate setting forth the facts and circumstances of the case, and praying for the appointment of a guardian.

Notice shall be given to such supposed spendthrift of the time and place of hearing, not less than fourteen days before the time appointed; but if, after a full hearing, it appears to the court that the facts of the complaint are true, he shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate.[4]

[1] Michigan Stat., tit. 1, c. 1, s. 2, sub. 7.
[2] *Ibid.*, tit. 28, c. 240, s. 13, 14.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 15.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 16, 17.

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIAN OF SPENDTHRIFT.—Such guardian shall have the care and custody of the person and the management of the estate of the ward, and shall give a bond in the manner prescribed in respect to the guardian of an insane person.[1]

IN GENERAL.—Every guardian, whether of an insane person or a spendthrift, shall be under the direction and control of the Probate Court, and shall have the same powers as to the estate of the ward as the guardian of a minor.[2]

As to the appointment of guardians for drunkards and intemperate persons, see Laws 1879, p. 220, act 241, where it is prescribed that the guardian may be appointed for such a person, upon the petition of the husband or wife, or some relative by blood, of the person for whom the guardian is asked.

In such proceedings, the probate judge may take the testimony of witnesses and examine the respondent, and shall determine whether such guardian should be appointed.

COMMITMENT OF THE INSANE.—When a person in indigent circumstances, and not a pauper, becomes insane, an application may be made to the judge of probate of the county where he resides, and the judge shall immediately notify such alleged insane person of the time and place of hearing. He shall call two legally qualified physicians and other credible witnesses, whose duty it shall be to attend and act in such case. Such judge shall fully investigate the facts, and, either with or without the verdict of the jury, determine the question of insanity and the question of his indigence. If the judge certifies that such person is in indigent circumstances and his estate is insufficient to support him and his family, he shall be admitted into the asylum and supported there at the expense of the county to which he belongs.

If an insane person in indigent circumstances shall have been maintained by his friends in the asylum as a private patient for three months, and the superintendent shall certify that he is insane and requires further treatment, the judge may without further evidence of the insanity, and if the indigence be established, make a certificate authorizing the admission of said patient into the asylum as a county charge.[3]

[1] Mich. Stat., tit. 26, c. 340, s. 18.
[2] See *ibid.*, s. 21–39.
[3] *Ibid.*, tit. 14, c. 46, as amended by Laws of 1885, c. 135, s. 23, 24.

QUALIFICATIONS OF PHYSICIAN CERTIFYING TO INSANITY.—Physicians must be of reputable character, a graduate of some incorporated medical college, a permanent resident of the State, not related to the alleged insane person nor to the person applying for the certificate, and shall have been in the actual practice of his profession for at least three years.[1]

ADMISSION OF PRIVATE PATIENTS TO ASYLUMS.—No private patient shall be admitted to any insane asylum except upon the certificate of two reputable physicians under oath, appointed by the judge of probate of the county where such person resides, to conduct an examination, and upon an order from said judge, setting forth that such person is insane and directing his removal to an asylum or institution for the care of the insane.[2]

INQUEST.—The judge may institute an inquest and take proofs as to the alleged insanity before granting such order. He may in his discretion call a jury of six persons to determine the question of sanity. If satisfactory evidence is adduced showing the alleged insane person to be of unsound mind, he shall grant an order for the removal of such insane person to such institution, there to be supported as a private patient.[3]

PROCEEDINGS FOR THE COMMITMENT OF PAUPER INSANE.—If any person being a pauper shall become insane, the county superintendent of the poor or any supervisor of any city or town may make application to the probate judge, who shall proceed to inquire into the question of the insanity of said person.

He may call upon and compel the attendance of one or more legally qualified physicians and such other witnesses as he may deem necessary, and if satisfied of the insanity of such person he shall make the same certificate and order for admission into the insane asylum as is provided in the case of persons in indigent circumstances.[4]

MAINTENANCE OF INSANE.—The cost of the maintenance in the asylum of any indigent or pauper patient, received upon the order of any court or officer, shall be paid by the county from which he was sent to the asylum, except those termed "State patients."[5]

[1] Michigan Stat., tit. 14, c. 46, as amended by Laws of 1885, c. 135, s. 22.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 20.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 21.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 26.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 28.

Minnesota.

Commitment of Insane Persons.—Warrant may issue from the Probate Court of any county, upon information showing that there is an insane person in the county needing care and treatment, and that it is dangerous for him to be at large, to apprehend such person.

Upon the filing of such information, the court shall make an order directed to two reputable persons, one at least of whom shall be a duly qualified physician, and such persons with the judge shall constitute a jury to examine the person alleged to be insane, and they shall ascertain the facts of sanity or insanity.

Each of such persons shall be sworn to examine the patient impartially and to the best of his ability. The Probate Court may summon such witnesses as are necessary.

Certain questions as are prescribed by statute shall be asked in the examination.

Upon the completion of such examination, the jury shall report their findings in writing. Such findings shall be that the person is sane or insane.

The relatives or friends of any person alleged to be insane or found insane shall have the right to the charge and care of such person, upon the giving of a bond for the proper care and safe-keeping of such person.

If such person is found to be insane, he may be committed by order of the judge to one of the hospitals for the insane.

If the person committed is a female, she shall be accompanied to the hospital by a woman or by her husband.[1]

Guardians of Incompetents.—The Probate Court may appoint a guardian or guardians of any person who, by reason of old age or loss or imperfection of mental faculties, is incompetent to have the charge or management of his property, or a person who, by excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery, so spends or wastes his estate as to be likely to expose himself or his family to want or suffering, either upon the application of the county commissioners of the county where such person resides or upon the petition of any relative or friend of such person; which petition shall set forth the facts and be veri-

[1] Probate Code, s. 266-275.

fied by the affidavit of the petitioner to the effect that he believes the facts as so stated are true.

Upon the presentation of the application, the Probate Court shall fix a time for a hearing and shall cause a notice to be given to the person proposed to be put under guardianship, at least fourteen days prior to the time fixed for the hearing.

All competent evidence shall be considered at the hearing, and if it appear that the person is such an incompetent, the court shall appoint a guardian or guardians of his person and estate.[1]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIAN.—Every guardian so appointed shall have the care and custody of the person of his ward and the management of all his estate until such guardian is discharged. The provisions relating to the powers and duties of the guardians of minors as prescribed in the Probate Code, s. 147 ff., apply to guardians of incompetents.

RESTORATION TO CAPACITY.—The fact of the restoration of an incompetent person shall be judicially determined upon the application of such insane person or his guardian, relatives, or friends.

Notice shall be given of a hearing to the guardian of the person. On the hearing the guardian, relative, or friend may contest the right to the relief demanded. Witnesses may be summoned and examined by the court of its own motion. If it be found that the person be of sound mind and capable of taking care of himself and property, his restoration to capacity shall be adjudged and the guardianship shall cease.[2]

HOSPITALS FOR THE INSANE AND COMMITMENT THERETO.—The State hospitals are under the charge of a board of trustees composed of five members appointed by the governor, by and with the advice and consent of the senate.

Trustees have the general control of the hospitals and may make all by-laws necessary for the government of the same, appoint for each hospital a medical superintendent and an assistant medical superintendent, fix all the salaries not otherwise determined by law, and remove all officers appointed by them, except the superintendent, who shall only be removed for good cause shown, and then only with the approval of the governor.

The superintendent of each such hospital shall have the con-

[1] Probate Code, s. 142–144. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 146.

trol and management of the hospital, and may employ and discharge all attendants, servants, and employees at his pleasure, and suspend any subordinate officer until an examination is had before the board of trustees, and immediately upon such suspension he shall report the fact to said board.

He shall give immediate notice to the next of kin of each patient under his charge of the death, serious illness, or any special change in the condition of such patient, and answer promptly and fully all letters of inquiry received from the relatives of any patient in said hospital."

ADMISSION TO HOSPITAL.—All insane persons, legal residents of the State, recommended for commitment as prescribed by law may be admitted and maintained at one of the State hospitals at public expense.

EXAMINERS IN LUNACY.—When information in writing is received by probate judge of any county that there is an insane person in his county needing care and treatment, he shall direct the examiners in lunacy to examine such person and certify to him the result of such examination with their recommendations. If they certify that he is insane, and a proper subject for commitment, such judge shall visit the alleged insane person or require him to be brought into court. He may, if advisable, take further testimony or call other examiners.

If satisfied that the person is insane, he shall approve the certificate of the examiners and issue an order committing said person to one of the State hospitals. The certificate shall contain the inquiries prescribed by section 25 of this Act and the answers given thereto.[2]

ARRESTS OF INSANE PERSONS.—No alleged insane person shall be arrested and committed to jail unless he has committed some crime or is dangerous or disorderly, or there are reasonable grounds to believe that he will do injury to himself or others or to property.[3]

PRIVILEGES OF INSANE IN HOSPITAL.—Every inmate committed to any hospital for the insane, upon entering the institution, may choose as a correspondent an individual not connected with the institution, with whom he shall be allowed to communicate freely in writing. Each inmate may choose a new correspondent every three months. The superintendent shall

[1] Laws 1880, c. 5, s. 12, 13. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 19, 20. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 24.

keep registered and posted in some public place at the institution the name and post-office address of each correspondent and the name of the inmate choosing such correspondent. When any person is chosen as a correspondent, the superintendent shall notify him within three days that he has been chosen and inquire whether he will act. Each inmate of any hospital may communicate in writing with the governor and the secretary of the board of trustees, in the same manner as with the correspondent. Any person refusing or neglecting to allow any such personal privilege shall be deemed guilty of a misdemeanor.[1]

Mississippi.

Writ de Lunatico Inquirendo.—The chancery courts have jurisdiction of writs of lunacy, to be exercised by the clerks at any time subject to the approval of the court. Any relative of a lunatic or insane person may procure him to be so adjudged. If the relatives or friends of any insane person allow him to go at large, the clerk of the Chancery Court may, upon application of any citizen, direct the sheriff by writ of lunacy to summon the alleged lunatic or insane person to contest the application, and six freeholders to make inquiry thereof. If the person shall be adjudged insane by the jury, the clerk shall direct the sheriff by writ to arrest him and place him in one of the asylums, if there be a vacancy, and if not to confine him in the county jail until there be room in the asylum.

If the person be adjudged harmless and indigent and not in need of special treatment, he shall be sent to the poorhouse.[2]

Admission into Asylums.—The superintendent of each asylum shall admit and receive therein all persons ordered to be confined therein in the order of application, if there be a vacancy in the asylum. The expenses of the inquiry and of the removal to and from the asylum shall be borne by the estate of the lunatic, if he have any, and if not by the person required by the pauper laws to support him—but in the first instance the expenses are to be paid by the county.[3]

Lunatic Asylums.—The control and management of the asylums for the insane is vested in a board of five trustees ap-

[1] Laws 1893, c. 5, s. 28, 29, 33, 34.
[2] Miss. Code, s. 2,835–2,837.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,838–2,840.

pointed by the governor, with the advice and consent of the senate, who have charge of the interests of the asylum, and manage and direct its affairs, and make all proper by-laws and regulations for its control and government. The trustees are required to make regular and frequent inspection of the asylum, for which purpose one or more of them shall visit the asylums at least once in every month. Superintendents of the asylums are appointed by the governor, and are required to be skilful physicians. The superintendent has the supervision of the buildings, with their furniture, fixtures, and stock, and the direction and control of all persons and officers therein. The white and colored races are kept separate in the asylums.[1]

GUARDIANS.—The Chancery Court may appoint guardians of persons adjudged, upon inquisition, to be of unsound mind upon its own motion or on the application of a relative or friend or of a member of the board of supervisors. If the person has not been adjudged insane, the writ de lunatico inquirendo shall issue upon any such application, and if upon such inquisition the person be adjudged of unsound mind and incapable of taking care of himself or property, the court may appoint a guardian. The Chancery Court may also appoint guardians for drunkards and opium-eaters on the application of a relative or friend. In such case the court shall examine the question and determine whether the person be an habitual drunkard or opium or morphine eater, and for that purpose may summon and hear witnesses and hear the parties and their evidence, and if the court be satisfied that the person is an habitual drunkard, opium or morphine eater, it shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate. The Court of Chancery may direct the confinement of any person adjudged an habitual drunkard or an habitual opium or morphine eater in an asylum.

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIANS.—Guardians shall make an inventory of the estate and account with the court as often and in the same manner as guardians of minors are required to return inventories and account. Guardians shall improve the estate committed to their charge and apply so much of the income as may be necessary to the comfortable maintenance and support of the ward and his household or family.[2]

[1] Miss. Code, s. 2,807-2,817. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,819-2,820.

Missouri.

Inquiry as to Insanity.—If information in writing be given to the Probate Court that any person in its county is an idiot, lunatic, or person of unsound mind and incapable of managing his affairs, and praying that an inquiry thereinto be had, the court, if satisfied that there is good cause for the exercise of its jurisdiction, shall cause the facts to be inquired into by a jury. The alleged insane person must be notified of the proceeding unless such person is ordered to be brought before the court. Any judge of the county court, or justice of the peace, sheriff, coroner, or constable may make application to the probate court for the exercise of its jurisdiction.[1]

Appointment of Guardian.—If the person be found insane by the jury the court shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate. Every guardian so appointed is required to give a bond for the due and proper care of such person and the management of his estate to the best advantage.

Every such guardian shall take charge of the person and provide for his support and maintenance. He shall collect and take into his possession all the personal property and within sixty days after his appointment file a just and true inventory of the real and personal estate of his ward. An additional inventory may be required from time to time whenever any property belonging to such estate shall be discovered, and all such inventories shall be attested and verified.

The real estate may be sold on the petition of the guardian when the personal property is insufficient for the discharge of the debts and the maintenance of the ward and his family. Every such sale shall be made under the direction of the Probate Court.[2]

Confinement of the Insane.—If any person shall be furiously mad, or so far disordered in his mind as to endanger his own person or the person or property of others, it shall be the duty of the guardian or other person under whose care he may be, and who is bound to provide for his support, to confine him until the next sitting of the Probate Court, who shall make such order for the restraint, support, and safe-keeping of such person as the circumstances of the case shall require. If such person shall not be confined by the person having charge

[1] Missouri Statutes, s. 5,513–5,516. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 5,517–5,523.

of him, or if there be no person having such charge, any judge of the court of record or any two justices of the peace may cause such insane person to be apprehended.

If any insane person be admitted to the State lunatic asylums as a patient, the guardian shall pay for his support and expense at such asylum out of the estate of such ward. If such insane person comes under the class of insane poor persons, such person shall be supported and maintained by the county in the manner provided by law.[1]

INSANE ASYLUMS.—The superintendent of each asylum shall be a physician of knowledge, skill, and ability in his profession and of experience in the management and treatment of the insane. He shall not while superintendent engage in the practice of his profession, but shall devote himself exclusively to the supervision and care of the asylum and its inmates.

He shall be the chief executive officer of the asylum and have the care and control of everything connected therewith.[2]

ADMISSION INTO ASYLUM.—Persons afflicted with any form of insanity may be admitted into the asylum when the superintendent deems it probable that their condition can be improved, and any patient may be discharged by the superintendent whenever he may believe that the condition of such patient cannot be improved by a longer stay in the asylum. Pay patients not sent to the asylum by order of the court may be admitted in accordance with the statutes and the by-laws of the asylum.

The several county courts may send to the asylum such of their insane poor as may be entitled to admission thereto. The counties thus sending shall pay semi-annually in cash, in advance, such sums for the support and maintenance of their insane poor as the board of managers may deem necessary. The indigent insane of the State always have the preference over those who have the ability to pay for their support in the asylum, and if there be no provision in the asylum for the accommodation of all the insane persons in the State, recent cases of insanity—meaning cases of less than one year's standing—shall have the preference over cases of more than one year's standing.[3]

[1] Missouri Statutes, s. 2,554–2,557.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 471, 472.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 473–486.

MONTANA.

JURISDICTION.—The care and custody of the property and person of insane and other incompetent persons is vested in the Probate Court.

APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIAN.—Upon the verified petition of a relative or friend that the person is insane or mentally incompetent to manage his property, the probate judge must give notice to the alleged incompetent person of the time and place of hearing the case, not less than five days before the time so appointed, and such person, if able, must be in attendance before him on the hearing.

If, after a full hearing and examination, it appears to the judge that the person is incapable of taking care of himself and managing his property, he must appoint a guardian of his person and estate.

Every such guardian has the care and custody of the person of his ward, and the management of all his estate, until he is legally discharged. He must give a bond to such ward in the manner prescribed to the guardian of a minor.

Every such guardian has all the powers and duties specified in the probate practice act to guardians of minors.[1]

RESTORATION OF INSANE PERSON.—Any person declared insane, or his guardian or any relative within the third degree, or any friend, may petition the probate judge to have the fact of his restoration to capacity judicially determined. Upon receiving the petition, the judge shall appoint a day for the hearing, and upon the petitioner's request, order an investigation before the jury, which shall be summoned and empanelled in the same manner as other juries in the Probate Court. A notice shall be given to the guardian, husband, or wife, if there be one, or father or mother if living in the county. On the trial any person, in the discretion of the judge, may contest the right and the relief demanded. Witnesses may be subpœnaed and examined as in other cases. If it be found that the insane person be of sound mind and capable of taking care of himself and his property, his restoration shall be adjudged and the guardianship shall cease.[2]

[1] Probate Practice Act, c. 14, s. 364–366.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 366.

COMMISSIONERS OF THE INSANE.—Three commissioners of the insane are elected biennially by the legislature, one from each judicial district.

Such commissioners have power to prescribe rules for the proper custody, maintenance, and treatment of persons adjudged insane. They are required to invite sealed proposals for such custody, maintenance, and treatment in accordance with such rules. The contract therefor is let to the lowest and best bidder; and such contract requires the person entering into the same to receive all persons adjudged insane and keep, maintain, and treat them in accordance with the requirements of the commissioners.

Such commissioners have free access to all such insane persons, and they must select one of their number to visit and inspect the condition of all insane persons, at least once in three months.

Such contract shall require the person entering into the same to provide and keep and secure a suitable building for the safe-keeping of such insane person, in the manner prescribed by such commissioners, and such person shall immediately transmit to the probate judge in each county a notification of the place at which insane persons from such county shall be delivered.[1]

EXAMINATION OF PERSONS ALLEGED TO BE INSANE.—The probate judge, or, in his absence or inability, the chairman of the board of county commissioners, upon the application under oath of any person setting forth that a person by reason of insanity is unsafe to be at large or is suffering under mental derangement, shall cause such person to be brought before him, and also summon a jury of three citizens of his county, one of whom shall be a practising physician, who shall examine the person alleged to be sane, and if after careful examination such jury shall certify the person to be insane, and the judge or commissioner is satisfied that it is unsafe for such lunatic to be at large or that he is incompetent to provide for his own proper care and support, and has no relatives or friends who will care for him, such judge or commissioner shall issue warrants, and the sheriff of the county shall convey such insane person to the contractor, and such contractor shall acknowledge by indors-

[1] General Laws, c. 72, s. 1,205-1,214.

ment upon the back of such warrants the delivery of such person to him.[1]

TRANSFER OF INSANE TO ANOTHER STATE.—Whenever the friends or relatives of any inmate of the Montana insane asylum shall apply for permission to remove any patient in such asylum to his friends or relatives in any other State or territory, the governor is authorized and empowered to have such person conveyed at the expense of the State, if he shall deem such action conducive to the interest of the State and the welfare of the insane person.[2]

EXPENSE OF CARE OF INSANE.—All persons adjudged insane, whether indigent or not, are cared for by the State under contract made by the governor as now provided for the care and maintenance of indigent insane, and no person so adjudged insane shall be refused admission into any asylum, nor shall the State ask or receive compensation therefor.[3]

CORRESPONDENTS OF INMATE OF ASYLUM.—Every inmate of any insane asylum is allowed to choose one individual to whom he may write whenever he desires, and over these letters there is to be no censorship exercised by any of the asylum officials. They are to be furnished with writing materials, and all such letters shall be dropped in the post-office box by the writers, accompanied by the attendant, when necessary. .

A true copy of the name of every individual chosen as the inmate's correspondent, and by whom chosen, shall be registered and posted in some public place in the insane asylum.[4]

NEBRASKA.

DEFINITIONS.—The term "insane" includes every species of insanity or mental derangement. The term "idiot" is restricted to persons supposed to be naturally without mind.[5]

GUARDIANS.—The Probate Court may appoint a guardian for an insane or incompetent person upon the application of relatives or friends of such person and after a notice given to the supposed insane person of the time and place of hearing, not less than fourteen days.

[1] General Laws, c. 72, s. 1,215.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,224.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 1,226.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 1,230, 1,231.
[5] Consol. Stat., s. 3,418.

...opportunity after d...

...lines of guardians ...
...wers are similar in ...

...—The insane asylu...
...hospital for the ...
...s, who have the gen...
...with full power ...
...ment. It is the d...
...hospital quarterly.
...appoint a superinte...
...sicians for the hospi...
...ian.
...shall be a physici...
...graduate of a regu...
...officer of the hos...
...ians. He has the ...
...treatment of th...
...ns of the institutio...
...executive duties."
...ES OF INSANITY.
...commissioners, consistin...
...of insanity. The ...
...members of the board, ...
...ioners are appointed ...
...ward shall be a re...

an information verified by affidavit, stating that the person in whose behalf the application is made is believed by the informant to be insane and a fit subject for custody and treatment in the hospital.

On the filing of such information, the commissioners of insanity shall investigate the grounds of the information. For this purpose they may require the person alleged to be insane to be brought before them and provide them with suitable custody, until their investigation shall be concluded. They shall hear the testimony for and against such application if any is offered. The commissioners shall appoint some regular practising physician of the county to visit or see such person and make a personal examination touching the truth of the allegations in the information. Such physician shall certify that he has in pursuance of his appointment made a careful personal examination, and on such examination he finds the person in question insane if such be the fact.

On the return of the physician's certificate the commissioners shall conclude their investigations, and having done so, shall find whether the person alleged to be insane is insane, and if insane, whether a fit subject for treatment and custody in the hospital. If they find such person insane and a fit subject for custody and treatment in the hospital, they shall issue their warrant stating such finding, authorizing the superintendent of the hospital to receive such person as a patient therein. Such warrant and duplicate with finding and certificate of the physician shall be delivered to the sheriff of the county, who shall execute the same by conveying such person to the hospital and delivering him with such duplicate and physician's certificate and finding to the superintendent.[1]

Nevada.

Jurisdiction.—The district courts have jurisdiction over the person and estates of idiots and insane persons.[2]

Inquisition as to Insanity.—Upon the application under oath setting forth that a person by reason of insanity is dangerous to be at large, the district judge shall cause such person to be brought before him, and shall summon at the same time and

[1] Consol. Stat., s. 3,386–3,388. [2] Nevada Statutes, s. 2,439.

place two or more witnesses having had frequent intercours with the person during the time of his alleged insanity, wh shall testify as to their knowledge of such person. At the sam time he shall cause two graduates of medicine to appear and ex amine the person, and if after such examination and a carefu hearing they certify on oath that the person is insane, and i the district judge be satisfied of the existence of insanity an that it would be dangerous for such insane person to be a large, he shall direct the sheriff to convey such insane person t the State capitol and place him under charge of the secretary o State.[1]

APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIAN.—When the insane person i able by the possession of property to pay the expenses attendan to his commitment and maintenance at the State asylum, th judge shall appoint a guardian, who shall be subject to the gen eral law in relation to guardians as far as the same may be ap plicable. If there is not sufficient money in hand, the judg shall order the sale of the property of such person, or so much thereof as may be necessary, and the guardian shall appoin trustees to pay all proper costs and charges incidental to th care and support of such insane person. If such insane perso has no property, but has relatives in the degree of husband o wife or father or mother of sufficient means to support such in sane person, the judge shall order all such expenses to be paid b them and may assess the same among such kindred as he ma deem just and equitable.[2]

COMMISSIONERS FOR THE CARE AND MAINTENANCE O INDIGENT INSANE.—The governor, State comptroller, and Stat treasurer constitute a board of commissioners for the purpos of providing for the care and maintenance of the indigent in sane.[3]

Such board has full power and control of the State asylum and may establish such rules and regulations for the care there of as they may deem proper. They shall elect one resident physician who shall be general superintendent, subject to th order and direction of such board.[4]

[1] Nevada Statutes, s. 1,557.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,458.
[3] Laws 1887, c. 33.
[4] Nevada Statutes, s. 1,451–1,45

New Hampshire.

Definition.—The word "insane person" shall include every idiot, non compos lunatic, insane or distracted person.

The word "spendthrift" shall include every one liable to be put under guardianship on account of excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, debauchery, or vicious habits of any kind.[1]

Jurisdiction.—The care and custody of the person and property of insane persons is vested in the Supreme Court.

Guardians of Insane Persons and Spendthrifts. Appointment.—On the application of a relative or friend of an insane person, or of the overseer of the poor of the town where he lives, the probate judge shall cause inquisition with notice to be made by three suitable persons.

If, upon the return of the inquisition and due examination, it is decreed that the person is insane the judge shall appoint a guardian over him.

The person who by excessive drinking, etc., so wastes his estate or neglects his business as to expose him or his family to want or suffering shall be deemed a spendthrift, and upon complaint in writing made to the judge of probate the judge shall appoint a day of hearing, and if upon due notice and examination it appears that such person is a spendthrift, the judge shall appoint a suitable person to be his guardian.

Every guardian so appointed shall immediately give public notice thereof in some newspaper circulated in the vicinity, or in such newspaper as the court shall direct.[2]

Powers of Guardians.—The guardians of a spendthrift may employ him or his children in any suitable labor, or bind them out by written contract for a term not exceeding one year. If the judge is satisfied that the estate of the ward is not sufficient to discharge his just debts, he may decree that the estate be settled as insolvent, and thereupon such proceedings may be had as in the case of insolvent estates of deceased persons.

Such guardians possess all the powers of guardians of minors, and, subject to the direction of the probate judge, shall have the management and control of the property of the ward.

Commitment to Asylum.—The parent, guardian, or friends

[1] New Hampshire Statutes, title 2, c. 2, s. 18, 19.

[2] *Ibid.*, title 24, c. 179.

of any insane person may cause him to be committed to an asylum with the consent of the trustees, and there supported on such terms as they may agree.

An insane pauper supported by the town may be committed to an asylum by order of the overseers of the poor, and there supported at the expense of the town. If the overseers neglect to make such order, the Supreme Court or any judge thereof may order such pauper to be committed.

If any insane person is in such condition as to render it dangerous for him to be at large, the judge of probate on the petition of any person, and upon notice to a selectman of his town to his guardian, may cor uch insane person.

No person shall be comm l to the asylum, except by an rder of the Supreme Court or judge of probate, without the ertificate of two reputable cians that such person is ine, given after a persona nation made within one week the committal.[1]

SUPPORT AT ASYLUM.—[illegible] insane person thus committed ho has no means of su nd no relatives of sufficient ility chargeable therewith, no settlement in any town of s State, shall be support e county from which he was mmitted. Insane persons charged with crime, the punishment for which is death or confinement in the State prison, shall be supported at the expense of the State.

The county or town paying the expenses of the support of an inmate may recover the amount paid of the inmate if of sufficient ability to pay.[2]

DISCHARGE FROM ASYLUM.—Any person may be discharged from such asylum by any three of the trustees, by the commission of lunacy, or by the justices of the Supreme Court, whenever a further detention at the asylum is in their opinion unnecessary.[3]

TRUSTEES TO VISIT ASYLUM.—One of the trustees, at least twice every month and without previous notice, shall visit the asylum and give opportunity to every inmate to make to him in private any statements he may wish. If, in their judgment, a further detention is unnecessary, it shall be their duty to discharge such inmate.[4]

[1] New Hampshire Statutes, title 3, c. 10, s. 14–19.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 20–23.

[3] *Ibid.*, s. 27.

[4] *Ibid.*, s. 28.

COMMISSION OF LUNACY.—All persons deprived of their liberty by being committed to custody as insane persons shall be wards of the State and subject to State supervision.

The State board of health shall constitute a commission of lunacy. The commission, or one or more of their members, shall, without previous notice, visit and thoroughly inspect all institutions for insane persons as often as once in four months.

The commission shall keep a correct record of the number of commitments, discharges, and deaths at each asylum, and of the age, sex, and nationality of each person committed, discharged, or deceased and report the same annually to the governor and counsel.

The superintendent of every asylum shall, within three days after the commitment thereof of any person, notify the commission, and such superintendent shall at all times furnish to the board such information as they may request.[1]

NEW JERSEY.

INQUEST OF IDIOCY AND LUNACY.—All cases of idiocy and lunacy are determined by inquest and a commission of idiocy and lunacy issued out of the Court of Chancery and returnable thereto. If, upon such inquest, idiocy or lunacy be found, the chancellor shall cause to be transmitted to the Orphans' Court of the county where such lunatic or idiot resides a certified copy of all proceedings.[2]

The commission is to be tried by jury composed of twelve jurors.

APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIAN.—Upon return made and application therefor to the Orphans' Court, such court shall appoint a guardian of such idiot or lunatic, who shall have the care and safe-keeping of his person and property.[3]

COURT MAY ORDER SALE OF LANDS.—If any such idiot or lunatic is justly indebted beyond his ability to pay, or if his personal estate is insufficient for the support and maintenance of such lunatic or idiot and his household, the Orphans' Court of the county in which the property is situated may order the

[1] New Hampshire Statutes, s. 31–35.
[2] Revision of Statutes of New Jersey 1877, p. 601.
[3] *Ibid.*, pp. 601, 602, s. 1, 3.

guardian to sell such part of the lunatic's real property as the court may deem sufficient to pay such debts and the necessary expense for the support and maintenance of the idiot or lunatic or his household. The guardian shall make a deed to the purchaser for the real estate so sold, which shall set forth the order at large, and shall vest in the purchaser as good a title to the estate as the idiot or lunatic possessed at the time of the making of the order.

Such lands may also be sold by order of the chancellor upon an application by the guardian.[1]

BOND OF GUARDIAN.—Every guardian ordered to sell lands shall, before or at the time of making the report of the sale, enter into a bond in such security as the chancellor shall deem sufficient for the faithful discharge of the trust committed to him.[2]

PROCEEDS OF SALE.—All moneys arising from any sale shall be put out at interest on good and sufficient security of unencumbered real estate, or as the chancellor shall so direct, in public stock of United States or of this State, but in no other way whatever.

Whenever after a sale so made it shall become necessary to apply any of the proceeds to the support of such idiot or lunatic, the guardian shall apply to the Orphans' Court, who shall, no due proof in addition to the oath of such guardian that such application is necessary, order and direct the appropriation of so much of such proceeds as is necessary for such support, specifying in their order the amount per year.[3]

NEW SURETIES TO BOND.—Whenever the Orphans' Court shall suspect that the sureties of the guardian or any of them are failing or in dubious circumstances, they may require such guardian to give additional sureties, and upon refusal or neglect may displace such guardian and appoint another in his place.[4]

DEATH OF GUARDIAN.—In case of the death of any guardian, the Orphans' Court shall forthwith appoint another.

Whenever a new guardian is appointed the representatives of the deceased guardian shall account to such new guardian

[1] Revision of Statutes of New Jersey 1877, p. 602, s. 4–7.
[2] *Ibid.*, p. 603, s. 10.
[3] *Ibid.*, p. 603, s. 13.
[4] *Ibid*, p. 604, s. 16.

for all property in their possession or under their control belonging to such idiot or lunatic.[1]

ACCOUNT OF GUARDIANS.—Guardians of idiots or lunatics shall, once in three years or oftener, in case the Orphans' Court shall so order and direct, render to the court from whom the appointment was received a true account of the administration of the estate of such idiot or lunatic, and on the death of such idiot or lunatic, or upon his restoration, the guardian may be compelled to render an account of his administration of the estate in the same manner as executors and administrators.[2]

IDIOT OR LUNATIC NOT TO BE IMPRISONED.—No lunatic or idiot during the time of his lunacy shall be committed or detained in prison for want of bail or his body in execution in any civil action; and in case any idiot or lunatic shall be so arrested in any civil suit, he shall be discharged on motion by the court out of which the process issued, or upon a writ of habeas corpus, issued out of the court of chancery or of the supreme court.[3]

DANGEROUS LUNATIC AT LARGE.—Any two justices of the peace of any county in which any lunatic furiously mad or dangerous shall be found, may, by warrant, cause such person to be apprehended and kept safely locked up and chained if necessary, in any place provided in such county for the reception of maniacs or lunatic persons, and if there be no such place, in the jail of such county.

If such lunatic be possessed of property, the expense incurred by such detention shall be paid therefrom; but if he possess no property, then such expense shall be charged upon the city or township in which such person is legally settled in the same manner as other poor persons.[4]

COUNTY LUNATIC ASYLUMS.—There may be maintained in each of the counties where the expense of the maintenance of insane paupers is a county charge, a county insane asylum. Such asylum is under the care and management of the board of freeholders of the county. All insane paupers residing in the county are committed to such county asylums.[5]

[1] Revision of Statutes of New Jersey 1877, p. 604, s. 17, 18.
[2] *Ibid.*, p. 604, s. 19.
[3] *Ibid.*, p. 605, s. 20.
[4] *Ibid.*, p. 605, s. 21, and see c. 172 of the Laws of 1888 as amended by c. 44 of the Laws of 1891.
[5] Laws 1880, p. 89.

STATE ASYLUMS.—The State asylums are located at Morris Plains and at Trenton. The management and control of both asylums is in the State board of managers, consisting of eight persons appointed by the governor, by and with the advice of the senate, and holding office for the term of five years.

They are required to make an annual visit to each county asylum receiving State aid, at least once in each year.

They are authorized to make, adopt, and enforce rules and regulations for the distribution between the two hospitals, of all patients sent thereto, and for the removal of patients from one to the other. They also have power to appoint medical directors for each hospital, and as many assistant physicians as they deem necessary.

Medical directors have charge, direction, and control of all patients and of all persons engaged in the care of such patients, subject to the rules, regulations, and by-laws adopted by the board. Such managers must maintain an effective inspection of such hospitals, for which purpose one or more of them shall visit each of them at least once in every week, two or more at least once in every month, a majority at least once in every three months, and the total board once a year. They shall annually report to the governor the year's operations and the actual state of the hospitals.[1]

COMMITMENT OF INSANE PAUPERS TO STATE HOSPITALS.—The overseer of the poor of the town where the insane pauper resides shall make application to a judge of the court of common pleas of the county, and such judge shall call one reputable physician and fully investigate the facts of the case; and if satisfied after such examination of the insanity of the pauper, he shall issue an order requiring him, without delay, to take such insane pauper to the proper hospital.

If such insane pauper is in indigent circumstances, but not a pauper, the same proceedings shall be had; and if the said judge shall make a certificate that satisfactory proof has been adduced, showing his estate to be insufficient to support him and his family, he shall then be admitted into one of such hospitals and supported there at the expense of the county.[2]

[1] Laws 1893, c. 119.

[2] *Ibid.* s. 29, 30.

New York.

Jurisdiction.—The jurisdiction of the Supreme Court extends to the custody of the person and the care of the property of a person incompetent to manage himself or his affairs in consequence of lunacy, idiocy, habitual drunkenness, or imbecility arising from old age or loss of memory and understanding or other cause. The court must preserve the property of the incompetent person from waste or destruction, provide for the payment of his debts and for his safe-keeping and the maintenance and education of his family out of the proceeds of his estate.

This jurisdiction is exercised by means of a committee of the person or a committee of the property.[1]

Appointment of Committee.—An application for the appointment of a committee must be made by petition, which may be presented by any person.

Where the incompetent person has property which may be endangered in consequence of his incompetency, and no relative or other person applies for the appointment of a committee, the overseer or superintendent of the poor of the town, district, county, or city in which he resides must apply to the proper court for the appointment of such a committee.

The petition must be in writing and verified by the affidavit of the petitioner to the effect that the matters of fact therein stated are true.

If the court is satisfied that a committee ought to be appointed, the court must make an order directing that the commission issue to one or more fit persons, or that the question of fact arising upon the competency of the person be tried by a jury.

The commission must direct the commissioners to cause the sheriff to procure a jury, and that they inquire by the jury into the matters set forth in the petition, and also into the value of the real and personal property of the person alleged to be incompetent and the amount of his income. The commissioners or a majority of them must issue a precept to the sheriff requiring him to summon not less than twelve nor more than twenty-four indifferent persons to appear before the commissioners at the

[1] Code of Civil Procedure, s. 2,320-2,322.

specified time and place to make inquiry as commanded by the commission.

All the commissioners must attend and preside at the hearing, at least twelve jurors must concur in the finding. If twelve do not concur, the jurors must report their disagreement to the commissioners, who must thereupon discharge them and issue a new precept. If the order directs the trial by a jury the order must state distinctly and plainly the questions of fact to be tried, which may be settled as where an order for a similar trial is made in an action. Upon the return of the commission with the inquisition taken thereunder, or the rendering of the verdict of the jury upon the question submitted to it by the order for the trial by a jury, the court must either direct a new trial or hearing or make such a final order upon the petition as justice requires. Where a committee of the property is appointed, the court must direct the payment by him out of the funds in his hands of the necessary disbursements of the petitioner and of such a sum for his costs and counsel fees as it thinks reasonable.[1]

POWERS OF COMMITTEE.—The committee either of the person or of the property is subject to the direction and control of the court by which he was appointed, with respect to the execution of his duties, and he may be suspended, removed, or allowed to resign in the discretion of the court. A committee of the property cannot alien, mortgage, or otherwise dispose of real property, except to lease for a term not exceeding five years, without the special direction of the court obtained upon proceedings taken for that purpose.[2]

COMMITMENT OF THE INSANE.—No person shall be committed to or confined as a patient in any asylum, public or private, or in any institution for the care and treatment of the insane, except upon the certificate of two physicians under oath setting forth the insanity of such person; but no person shall be held in confinement in any such asylum for more than five days, unless within that time such certificate be approved by a judge of the court of record, and such judge may institute inquiry and take proofs as to the insanity of any alleged lunatic before approving or disapproving of such certificate. Such physicians must be of reputable character, graduates of some

[1] Code of Civil Procedure, s. 2,323–2,336. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,339.

incorporated medical college, permanent residents of the State, and in actual practice for at least three years. No certificate shall be made, except after a personal examination of the party alleged to be insane and according to forms prescribed by the State Commission in Lunacy.[1]

There are appended hereto the forms of the medical certificate of lunacy and the certificate of qualifications as prescribed by this section, and as adopted by the State Commission in Lunacy pursuant to Laws 1890, chap. 273.

Medical Certificate of Lunacy

According to the form prescribed by the State Commission in Lunacy, May 6th, 1890, and by resolution of said Commission of that date ordered to go into effect July 1st, 1890, under the authority of Chap. 446 of the Laws of 1874, and Chap. 273 of the Laws of 1890.

Statement.

Statement of facts to be made upon knowledge, information and belief by the examiners in lunacy. If any of the particulars in this statement be not known, the fact is to be so stated.

1. Sex_____; age_____years; nativity [*if foreign, how long in U. S.*]_____; color_____; occupation _____; single, married, widowed?*

2. Number of previous attacks_____; present attack began _____18____; [*If the patient has ever been an inmate of an institution for the insane, state when and where, and whether discharged recovered or otherwise.*] _____

3. Was the present attack gradual or sudden in its onset?_____

4. What is the bodily condition of the patient?_____

5. Is the patient subject to epilepsy?_____

6. Is the patient filthy or cleanly in dress and personal habits?_____

7. Is the patient violent, dangerous, destructive, excited or depressed, homicidal or suicidal? [*If homicide or suicide has been attempted or threatened it should be so stated.*]_____

8. What is the supposed cause? [*State both the predisposing and exciting cause.*] _____

* Strike out words not required.

[1] Laws 1874, c. 446, s. 1, 2.

9. Has the patient insane relatives, and, if so, state the degree of consanguinity, and whether paternal or maternal?_____

10. What are the patient's habits as to the use of liquor, tobacco, opium, etc.?_____

_____

_____

STATE OF NEW YORK.
County of _____ } ss.:
City, Town or Village of _____

We, _____, a permanent resident of _____, County of _____, State of New York, and _____, a permanent resident of _____ County of _____, and State aforesaid, being severally and duly sworn, do severally certify and each for himself certifies, with the exceptions which are hereinafter noted, as follows:

1. I am a graduate of an incorporated medical college, and a legally qualified examiner in lunacy, a certificate of my qualifications as such examiner, or a certified copy thereof, is on file in the office of the State Commission in Lunacy.

2. I have with care and diligence personally observed and examined, within five days prior to the date of this certificate, and more particularly did so on that date, namely, on the _____ day of _____, 189__, _____, a resident of _____, of the State of _____, and as a result of such an examination find, and hereby certify to the fact that said _____ is insane and a proper person for care and treatment in some institution for the insane, as an insane person under the provisions of the Statute.

3. I have formed the above opinion upon the subjoined facts, viz.:

a. Facts indicating insanity personally observed by me, as follows:

The patient said [*Here state what was said to each examiner separately unless it was said in presence of both*]: _____

_____

_____

_____

The patient did [*Here state what the patient did in the presence of each examiner separately, unless it was done in presence of both*]:

_____

_____

_____

_____

The patient's appearance and manner was:_____

_____

_____

_____

_____

b. Other facts indicating insanity including those communicated to me by others, as follows [*State if there has been any change in the patient's mental condition and bodily health, and if so, what*]:

4. That the answers to the questions contained in the Statement are true to the best of my knowledge, information and belief.

_____ M. D.

_____ M. D.

Severally sworn and subscribed before me this _____ day of _____ 189__.

_____

_____

STATE OF NEW YORK,
County of _____ } ss.:
City, Town or Village of _____

I, a judge of _____ which is a court of record, do, on this _____ day of _____ 189 , hereby approve of the foregoing medical certificate of lunacy, the contents of the same having been certified to me under oath; and it being represented to me that it is intended to commit the said _____ to (*) _____ for care and treatment.

_____

CERTIFICATE OF QUALIFICATIONS

As medical examiner in lunacy, according to the form prescribed by the State Commission in Lunacy, May 6th, 1890, and by resolution of said Commission of that date ordered to go into effect July 1st, 1890, under the authority of Chap. 446 of the Laws of 1874, and Chap. 273 of the Laws of 1890.

STATE OF NEW YORK,
County of _____ } ss.:
City, Town or Village of _____

I hereby certify as follows:

1. I am a judge of _____ which is a court of record within the State of New York, and reside at _____

2. That (from evidence laid before me) _____ of _____ is a permanent resident of said State; that he is personally known to me; that he is a person of reputable character; that he is a graduate of _____, which is an incorporated medical college, at _____, in the State of _____; that he graduated from said college on or about the _____ day of _____ 18____: and that he has been in the actual practice of his profession for at least three years since that date, and he is on this _____ day of _____ 189____, hereby constituted an examiner in lunacy.

_____

_____

* Here state name of hospital, asylum, home, or retreat.

MAINTENANCE OF THE INSANE.—Whenever any person who is possessed of sufficient property to maintain himself becomes by lunacy or otherwise so far disordered in his senses as to endanger his own person or the person or property of others, the committee of the person and estate shall provide a suitable place for his confinement, and confine and maintain him in such manner as shall be approved by the proper legal authority, and in other cases of lunacy, the lunatic shall be sent within ten days to some State lunatic asylum, or to such public or private asylum as may be approved by the standing order or resolution of the supervisors of the county.[1]

COMMITMENT BY PUBLIC AUTHORITIES.—In case of the refusal or neglect of any committee of any lunatic or his relatives to confine and maintain him, or where there is no such committee or relatives of sufficient ability to do so, the overseers of the poor or a constable of the city or town where any lunatic shall be found shall report the same to the superintendent of the poor, who shall apply to the county judge, special county judge or clerk, or any other judge of the court of record, who, upon being satisfied that it will be dangerous to permit such lunatic to go at large, shall issue his warrant directed to the constables and overseers of the poor, commanding them to cause such lunatic to be apprehended and to be sent within the next ten days to some State lunatic asylum, to be kept there and maintained, until discharged as prescribed by law.[2]

APPEAL FROM ORDER OF COURT.—If any lunatic so committed, or any friend, in his behalf, be dissatisfied with any final decision or order, he may within three days appeal therefrom to a justice of the Supreme Court, who shall thereupon issue a stay and forthwith call a jury to decide upon the fact of lunacy. After a full and fair investigation aided by the testimony of at least two physicians, the justice shall forthwith discharge him, if the jury shall find him sane, or otherwise he shall confirm the order for his being sent immediately to the asylum.[3]

STATE COMMISSION IN LUNACY.—The State Commission in Lunacy consists of three persons appointed by the governor, by and with the advice and consent of the senate, one of whom

[1] Laws 1874, c. 446, title 1, s. 37.
[2] *Ibid.*, title 3, s. 6.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 11.

shall be a reputable physician, a graduate of a legally chartered medical college, of ten years' practice in his profession, and who has had experience in the care and treatment of the insane and of the management of institutions for the insane, one of whom shall be a reputable member of the bar of at least ten years' standing and a citizen of the State, and the other shall be a citizen of reputable character. The commission is required to keep in its office records showing the name and residence of all judges empowered to approve medical certificates of insanity or to make an order of commitment of the insane person to custody, and also a record showing the name, residence, and certificate of each medical examiner in lunacy qualified in accordance with the laws of the State.

Every physician who receives a certificate as a medical examiner in lunacy is required to file the original certificate in the office of the clerk of the county wherein he resides, and to forward a certified copy thereof to the office of the commission within ten days after such certificate is granted. It is unlawful for any medical examiner to make a certificate of insanity for the purpose of committing any person to custody, unless a certified copy of his certificate has been so filed and its receipt in the office of the commission has been acknowledged.

The names of all the insane in custody in the asylum are recorded in the office of the commission.

The commissioners have full power at all times to look into and examine the condition of public and private institutions for the custody, care, and treatment of the insane, to inquire into the methods of government, of the management of their inmates, to examine the condition of the buildings, grounds, and other property connected therewith, and into all other matters pertaining to their usefulness and good management.

They may make rules and regulations as to the care and treatment of insane in institutions, both private and public, which, if approved by a justice of the Supreme Court, shall be binding upon all persons affected thereby.

The commissioners are required to visit all asylums and institutions in which the insane are in custody, at least twice in each calendar year, and so far as practicable these visits shall be made jointly or by a majority of such commission.

The commission has power to license all private institutions for the custody of the insane.

They are required to investigate as to the careful or improper treatment of the inmates of such asylums. The superintendent of each asylum is required to report to the commission in lunacy the number of male and female insane, together with a statistical exhibit of the number of admissions, discharges, and deaths that have occurred within the past year.[1]

The indigent insane are maintained at the expense of the State in the several State hospitals.[2]

The State Commission in Lunacy exercises the power of audit of the accounts of the several hospitals, and no purchases can be made, and no State money expended for the care and maintenance of the insane except upon estimates approved by the Commission.[3]

North Carolina.

Inquisition of Lunacy.—On petition to the Superior Court of the county where the alleged idiot, inebriate, or lunatic resides, an inquisition may be had by a jury of twelve men. If such person be found an idiot, inebriate, or lunatic, a guardian may be appointed as in cases of orphans.[4]

Who Deemed an Inebriate.—Any person who habitually, whether continuously or periodically, indulges in the use of intoxicating liquors to such an extent as to stupefy his mind, and to render him incompetent to transact ordinary business with safety to his estate, shall be deemed an inebriate. At the time of inquisition such use of liquors must be of at least one year's standing.[5]

Restoration of Property of Inebriate.—Whenever an inebriate shall become a sober person and capable of managing his own affairs, the clerk of the court who appointed such guardian is authorized to remove him and restore all the property of such inebriate.[6]

Appointment of Guardian for Lunatic Confined in Asylum.—If any person be confined in any asylum for lunatics and insane persons, the certificate of the superintendent declar-

[1] Laws 1890, c. 273.
[2] Laws 1890, c. 126.
[3] Laws 1893, c. 214.
[4] Code of North Carolina, s. 1,670.
[5] *Ibid.*, s. 1,671.
[6] *Ibid.*, s. 1,672.

ing such person to be of unsound mind and memory, sworn to and subscribed before the clerk of the Superior Court of the county in which such asylum is situated, shall be sufficient evidence to authorize the clerk to appoint a guardian for such person.[1]

SALE OF PROPERTY OF INSANE PERSON.—Property of an insane person may be sold on the order of the clerk of the Superior Court, when it appears to him that the personal estate has been expended, or is insufficient for the support of the lunatic, and that he is likely to become chargeable on the county. The order shall specify the property to be disposed of.

Such order shall be made upon the petition of the guardian setting forth that such sale is necessary for the support of the insane person, or for the discharge of debts incurred for his maintenance.[2]

SURPLUS INCOME.—Whenever the annual income of the estate of lunatic is more than sufficient to support himself and to maintain and educate the members of his family, the clerk of the court may direct that fit and proper advancements be made out of the surplus of such income to children and grandchildren, not being members of his family and entitled to be supported, educated, and maintained out of such estate.

Such advancements shall only be made for the better promotion in life of such as are of age or married, and for the maintenance, support, and education of such as are under the age of twenty-one years and unmarried.

In every application for such advancement, the guardian of the insane person and of persons entitled to a distributive share of the estate shall be made parties. Such advancement shall be made in the same equal manner as if made by the insane person himself, and every sum advanced to a child or grandchild shall be an advancement and shall bear interest from the time it was received. The clerk may select and decree advancement to such as most need the same.

The clerk shall withhold advancements from such persons as will probably waste them.[3]

STATE ASYLUMS.—There are three asylums maintained at the expense of the State—one located near Raleigh, another

[1] Code of North Carolina, s. 1,673.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,674, 1,675.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 1,677-1,682.

near Morgantown, and another near Goldsborough. Two are for the accommodation of the white insane, and the Eastern North Carolina insane asylum is used exclusively for the colored insane of the State.

Each asylum is under the management of a board of nine directors holding office for six years.

Three members of the board constitute an executive committee, two of whom must reside in or near the location of their respective asylums.

Each board directs and manages the affairs of the institution under its charge, and may appoint a superintendent thereof and prescribe his duties. He shall be a skilful physician, educated to his profession, of good moral character, of prompt business habits, and of kindly disposition.

Each board also appoints an assistant physician, a steward, matron, and treasurer. Two other officers are employed by the superintendent.

Each board makes such by-laws and regulations for the government of the institution under its charge as shall be necessary.[1]

ADMISSION INTO STATE ASYLUMS.—An affidavit shall be filed in writing with the justice of the peace by any person alleging the examination of the insane person and the belief that he is insane and a fit subject for admission into the insane asylum. Thereupon the justice shall apprehend the person alleged to be insane, examine him, and take the testimony of at least one reputable physician and such others as he may think proper. If any two of the justices decide that such person is insane, and no person is willing to give security to restrain the lunatic from committing injuries and to keep and support him, they shall direct such lunatic to be removed to the proper asylum as a patient, and to that end direct a warrant to the sheriff, and at the same time transmit to the proper board of directors the examination of the witnesses and a statement of such facts as the said justice shall deem pertinent to the subject-matter.[2]

[1] Code of North Carolina, s. 2,240–2,254.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,256.

North and South Dakota.

Definition.—The term insane includes any species of insanity or mental derangement. The term idiot is restricted to persons supposed to be actually without mind. No idiot shall be admitted into the hospital for the insane.

Guardians.—The Probate Court, on the verified petition of any relative or friend that any person is insane, or from any cause is mentally incompetent to manage his property, may cause notice to be given to such alleged insane person of the time and place of hearing, and if such person is able to attend he must be produced before the court on the hearing.

If, after a full hearing and examination, it appears to the judge of the court that the person in question is incapable of taking care of himself and managing his property, he must appoint a guardian of his person and estate.[1]

Powers of Guardian.—Every guardian appointed as provided in the preceding section has the care and custody of the person of his ward and the management of all his estate, until he is legally discharged.

The powers and duties of guardians of insane persons are similar in all respects to those of guardians of minors as prescribed in the Probate Code, chapter 13.

Restoration of Insane.—Any person who has been declared insane, or the guardian or relatives or friend of such person, may apply by petition to the Probate Court of the county in which he was declared insane to have the fact of his restoration to capacity judicially determined. Notice of a hearing must be given to the guardian of the petitioner, to the husband or wife if there be one, and to the father or mother if living in the county. On the trial the guardian or relative, and in the discretion of the judge any other person, may contest the right of the petitioner to the relief demanded. Witnesses may be required to appear and testify. If it be found that the petitioner be of sound mind and capable of taking care of himself and of his property, his restoration to capacity shall be adjudged and the guardianship shall cease.[2]

[1] Dakota Statutes, 1887, s. 5,996,–5,997.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 5,999.

CONFINEMENT OF PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND.—A person of unsound mind may be placed in an asylum for such persons on the order of the Probate Court of the county in which he resides.

The court must be satisfied by the oath of two reputable physicians that such person was of unsound mind and unfit to be at large.

He must examine the person himself or cause him to be examined by an impartial person. An appeal may be had to the District Court and an investigation thereunder demanded before a jury, which must be substantially conducted as under an inquisition of lunacy.[1]

COMMISSIONERS OF INSANITY.—There is in each county a board of commissioners, consisting of three persons, known as Bommissioners of Insanity. The judge of probate is a member and chairman of such board.

Such commissioners have cognizance of all applications for admission to the hospital, or for the safe-keeping of insane persons within their county.

Application for admission to the hospital must be made in writing in the nature of an information alleging that the person on whose behalf the application is made is believed to be insane and a fit subject for custody and treatment in the hospital.

The grounds of the information shall thereupon be investigated by the commissioners. They may require that the person be brought before them and examined, and may issue their warrant therefor. They shall hear testimony for and against the application. Any citizen or relative of the insane person may appear by counsel if they so elect. The commissioners shall appoint some regularly practising physician of the county to make a personal examination touching the truth of the allegations in the information, and the actual condition of such person, and report to them thereon.

On the return of the physician's certificate, the commissioners shall conclude their investigation and find whether the person is insane and a fit subject for treatment and custody in the hospital. If he is found not insane, they shall order his discharge. If insane, they shall issue their warrant authorizing the superintendent of the hospital to receive such person as a

[1] Dakota Statutes, s. 2,655.

patient. If such person cannot be admitted into the hospital and cannot with safety be allowed to go at liberty, the commissioners shall require him to be suitably provided for otherwise, until such admission can be had. Such patients may be cared for either as public or private patients. Private patients are those whose relatives or friends will obligate themselves to take care of and provide for them without public charge.[1]

WRIT OF HABEAS CORPUS.—All persons confined as insane shall be entitled to the benefit of habeas corpus, and the question of insanity shall be decided at the hearing, and if the judge or court shall decide that the person is insane, such decision shall be no bar to the issuing of a writ the second time, whenever it shall be alleged that such person has been restored to reason.[2]

POSTAL RIGHTS OF INSANE PERSONS.—Each inmate of all insane asylums is allowed to choose one individual from the outside world to whom he may write when or whatever he desires, and over these letters there is no censorship, and his post-office rights, so far as this one individual is concerned, are as free and unrestricted as those of any other resident or citizen. Such inmates shall be furnished with suitable material for writing, and closing, sealing, stamping, and mailing letters sufficient for the writing of at least one letter every week.[3]

STATE ASYLUMS.—The South Dakota hospital is located near the city of Yankton. The North Dakota hospital for the insane near the city of Jamestown.

As to the care and management of these hospitals, see article 1 of chapter 7 of the Dakota Political Code.

OHIO.

DEFINITIONS.—The terms insane and lunatic include every species of insanity or mental derangement; the term idiot is restricted to a person foolish from birth, one supposed to be actually without mind.[4]

GUARDIANS OF LUNATICS, IDIOTS, AND IMBECILES.—The Probate Court, upon satisfactory proof that any person is a lunatic, idiot, or imbecile, shall appoint a guardian for such per-

[1] Dakota Statutes, s. 2,179–2,187.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,195.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,199.
[4] Ohio Statutes (Giauque ed. 1894), s. 720.

son. No such guardian shall be appointed except upon three days' notice to the person's next of kin residing in the county.

If the wife of such person is competent, the probate judge may appoint her as his guardian.

All laws relating to guardians for minors and their wards and pointing out the duties, rights, and liabilities of such guardians and their sureties, are applicable to such guardians.

In the settlement of accounts of guardians of idiots, imbeciles, or lunatics, no voucher shall be received from or allowed as a credit to the guardian which is signed by such idiot, imbecile, or lunatic.[1]

MANAGEMENT OF REAL ESTATE OF WARD.—Whenever the sale of the real estate of a ward is necessary for his support, or the support of his family or the payment of his debts, or when such sale will be for the interest of such ward or his children, the guardian may sell the same under like proceedings as required to authorize the sale of real estate by the guardian of a minor. But if it be more for the interest of such ward or his children, the Probate Court upon the petition of the guardian may authorize and sell all such real estate in private.

The guardian may in the same manner as the guardian of a minor be authorized to lease and improve the real estate of his ward, and if the lease extend beyond the time of the restoration of such ward to sound mind or his death, such lease shall terminate on his restoration or death, unless such lease be confirmed by such ward or his legal representatives; but in case of such termination of the lease, the tenant shall have a lien upon the premises for any sum expended by him in making improvements.

The Probate Court may authorize the guardian to lease the real estate for a term of years or by perpetual lease, with or without the privilege of purchase if it is necessary for the support of the ward or his family, or if such lease will be for the best interest of him or them.

The application for authority to make such a long lease is by petition setting forth the necessary facts.

On filing the petition the same proceedings shall be had as on petition for sale of the real estate of a minor.

[1] Ohio Statutes (Giauque ed. 1894), s. 6,302–6,304.

The court may prescribe the terms, covenants, conditions, and stipulations of the lease.[1]

INSOLVENCY OF LUNATIC.—If the estate of an idiot, imbecile, or lunatic is insolvent, the same shall be settled in like manner and like proceedings may be had as is required by law for the settlement of the insolvent estate of a deceased person.[2]

GUARDIANS OF DRUNKARDS.—The Probate Court, upon satisfactory proof that any person is incapable of taking proper care of himself or his property by reason of intemperance or habitual drunkenness, shall appoint a guardian of the person and property of such person; and all laws relating to guardians for lunatics, idiots, or imbeciles and their wards are applicable to such guardians.[3]

COMMITMENT OF THE INSANE TO INSANE ASYLUMS.—The State of Ohio is divided into districts, in each of which is situated a State asylum for the insane.

Each county is entitled to send patients to the asylum of the district in which such county is situated in proportion to the population of such county. The medical superintendent of each of the asylums shall inform the probate judge of the counties monthly of the quota of patients to which each county is entitled and the number in the asylum from such county.

Patients are admitted on the filing of an affidavit of some resident citizen of the county with the probate judge, alleging that a certain person is insane and that because thereof his being at large is dangerous to the community.

The probate judge shall apprehend such alleged insane person and bring him before him upon a certain day, at which time, if any person disputes the insanity, the probate judge shall issue subpœnas for such persons as are required to be examined on behalf of the alleged insane person.

The judge shall proceed to examine the witnesses and attendants, and if he is satisfied that the person is insane, he shall cause a certificate to be made out by the medical witness and attendants setting forth such facts as are prescribed by statutes. Upon receiving such certificate he shall forthwith apply to the superintendent of the asylum situated in the district in which such patients reside, and at the same time transmit copies of

[1] Ohio Statutes (Giauque ed. 1894), s. 6,306–6,313.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 6,314.

[3] *Ibid.*, s. 6,317.

the medical witnesses' certificate, and if the probate judge is advised that the medical superintendent will receive the patient, he shall cause him to be transmitted to the asylum.

When the patient is sent to the asylum, the probate judge shall see that he is supplied with the proper clothing, and if not otherwise furnished, he shall furnish such clothing, which shall be a county charge.

If the person found to be insane cannot be admitted to the asylum, the probate judge shall cause such person to be properly cared for.[1]

OREGON.

JURISDICTION.—The County Court has exclusive jurisdiction in the first instance to take the care and custody of the person and estate of a lunatic or habitual drunkard, and to appoint and remove guardians therefor; to direct and control the conduct of such guardians and to settle their accounts.[2]

GUARDIANS.—Guardians of insane persons are appointed by the county court upon application of relatives or friends of such insane person, or of any other person residing in the county where such insane person resides. The judge shall cause a notice to be given to the person alleged to be insane of the time and place appointed for the hearing, not less than ten days before such time. If, after a full hearing, it shall appear to the judge that the person in question is incapable of taking care of himself, the judge shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate.[3]

POWERS AND DUTIES.—The guardian so appointed has the care and custody of the person and the management of the estate of such insane person until he shall be legally discharged, and he shall give a bond to the State of Oregon in like manner as guardians of minors.[4]

GUARDIANS FOR SPENDTHRIFTS.—When any person by excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery of any kind so spends, wastes, or lessens his estate as to expose himself or family to want or suffering, or the county to expense for the care of himself or his family, the County Court shall present a

[1] Ohio Statutes (Giauque ed. 1894), s. 698–707.
[2] Hill's Anno. Laws, s. 895.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,889.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 2,890.

complaint to the county judge setting forth the facts and circumstances of the case and praying to have a guardian appointed for him.

Notice shall be given to such supposed spendthrift of the time and place of the hearing not less than ten days before such hearing, and if after a full hearing it shall appear that the person complained of comes within the description the judge shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate.

A copy of the complaint shall be filed in the office of the county clerk after the order of notice has been issued.

When a guardian shall be appointed for the insane person or spendthrift, the judge shall make an allowance to be paid to the guardian for all reasonable expenses incurred by the ward in defending himself against the complaint.

The guardian so appointed has the care and custody of the person and management of the estate in the same manner as guardians of insane persons.[1]

MANAGEMENT OF ESTATE.—The guardian shall apply the income and profits of the ward's estate for the comfortable and suitable maintenance and support of the ward and his family. If they be insufficient for that purpose, the guardian may sell the real estate upon obtaining a license therefor as provided by law.

The estate of the ward shall be appraised by three suitable persons appointed and sworn as required with respect to the inventory of the property of the deceased person.

The county courts upon application of the guardian or any person interested in the estate of the ward may authorize the transfer and reinvestment of the property of the ward.[2]

DEFINITIONS.—The words "insane person" are intended to include every idiot, every person not of sound mind, every lunatic and distracted person; and the word "spendthrift" is intended to include any one who is liable to be put in guardianship on account of excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery.[3]

COMMITMENT OF INSANE.—The county judge upon application of any citizen in writing, setting forth that any person by reason of insanity or idiocy is suffering from neglect, exposure,

[1] Hill's Anno. Laws, s. 2,891–2,895.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,897–2,899.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,911.

or otherwise, or is unsafe to be at large, shall cause such person to be brought before him and at the same time and place one or more competent physicians, who shall examine the person alleged to be insane or idiotic. If such physician or physicians, after careful examination, shall certify upon oath that such person is insane or idiotic, then the judge, if in his opinion such person be insane or idiotic, shall cause such person to be placed in the insane asylum of the State of Oregon. An appeal shall lie in the county court in such case in the same manner as in all other cases. But no insane or idiotic person shall be committed to the asylum who has friends desiring to provide for his safe-keeping and medical treatment.[1]

All the proceedings upon such application and the judgment of the court shall be recorded in the records of the county court. When the patient is adjudged insane, the county judge shall make a warrant reciting his findings, the cause of insanity, where the same can be ascertained, together with the name, age, nativity, and present residence of the patient. The expense of sending insane and idiotic persons committed to the asylum shall be paid by the State treasurer out of the fund appropriated for such purpose. The cost of examination and committal shall be first paid by the county and afterward repaid by the State treasurer upon the certificate of the county judge and the audit of the secretary of State by the State treasurer out of funds appropriated for that purpose.[2]

OREGON STATE INSANE ASYLUM.—The State insane asylum is governed by a board of trustees composed of the governor, secretary of State and the State treasurer. They appoint all officers and employees of the asylum, prescribe their duties, and remove them when in their judgment the good of the public service requires it. They are required to visit the asylum once in three months and keep themselves constantly advised of all items of labor and expense, and the condition of the buildings and property of the asylum. They are required to biennially report to the legislative assembly.

They appoint a medical superintendent who shall serve four years or during good behavior, and on his nomination one or two assistant physicians and other officers according to the re-

[1] Hill's Anno. Laws, s. 3,557, Amended Laws 1891, p. 112.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 3,558.

quirements of the institution. The superintendent and all the assistant physicians shall reside at the asylum and shall be regular graduates in medicine.

The superintendent is the executive officer of the asylum under the regulations and by-laws of the board of trustees. He has control of the patients, prescribes and directs their treatment, adopts sanitary measures for their welfare, and discharges such as in his opinion have permanently recovered their reason, or such other patient as the best interests of the State and the institution require.[1]

Pennsylvania.

Commission to Inquire into Lunacy or Habitual Drunkenness.—Jurisdiction to issue a commission in the nature of a writ *de lunatico inquirendo* to inquire into lunacy or habitual drunkenness of any person is vested in any court of common pleas.

It is to be issued by the court of the county in which the person resides.

The form of the commission is prescribed by statute.

No commission shall be issued, except upon application in writing of a relative by blood or marriage of the person therein named, nor unless such application be accompanied by affidavits of the truth of the facts therein stated.

If the alleged lunatic or habitual drunkard has no such relative, any disinterested person of the same township, ward, or borough may make application to the court for such a commission.

The commission may be directed to any one or more persons.

Upon granting the application for a commission the court shall give such notice to the alleged lunatic or habitual drunkard or his near relatives or friends as it shall deem advisable.

The commissioner or commissioners shall summon such number of persons, not less than six nor more than twelve, to attend upon the inquest as the circumstances of the case may seem to them to require.

If upon such inquisition it be found that the party is not a lunatic or habitual drunkard and that there was no cause for

[1] Hill's Anno. Laws, s. 3,549–3,553.

such application, the judge shall certify the same on such inquisition, and thereupon the party making the application shall be liable for the costs.

Whenever any person shall be found to be insane, the committee of the person or of the estate and also the clerk of the court shall forthwith send to the committee on lunacy, at their office, the statement in writing of the name, age, sex, and residence of the lunatic and the residence of the committee. The committee on lunacy, or any one or more of the members, may visit and examine the said lunatic or authorize such visiting and examination, and may apply to any court having jurisdiction over the committee, or to the judge of the court of common pleas, to make such orders for the maintenance, custody, or care of the lunatic, and for the care and disposition of the property as the case may require.[1]

APPOINTMENT OF THE COMMITTEE. – On the return of an inquisition finding the person a lunatic or habitual drunkard, the court may commit the custody and care of the person or estate or of both to such person or persons as they may deem most suitable. A bond shall be given by the person appointed committee of the estate in such sum as the court shall direct, with condition for the faithful performance of the trust and for a due account of all property and funds coming into his hands.[2]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF THE COMMITTEE.—The committee, within forty days after undertaking the trust, shall file in the office of the prothonotary of the court a just and true inventory of all personal estate belonging to his ward together with a statement of the real estate.

The committee of the estate of every person found to be a lunatic or habitual drunkard shall have the management of the real and personal estate, and apply so much of the income as is necessary to the payment of the debts and for the support and maintenance of the person and of his family, and for the education of his minor children. If the income is not sufficient, under the direction of the court the committee may apply so much of the principal of the personal estate as is necessary.

Under the direction of the court, the committee may invest the money of the ward in such stocks or securities as are ap-

[1] Brightly Purdon's Digest, pp. 1,270-1,272.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 1,272.

proved by the court. Each committee shall account for the property committed to him once in three years.[1]

SALE OF THE REAL ESTATE OF A LUNATIC. — If the personal estate of a lunatic is not sufficient for the support of the lunatic, the court may authorize the sale of his real estate, upon an application by the committee setting forth a statement or inventory of the real and personal estate, the debts due by the lunatic or habitual drunkard, and an estimate of the amount properly required annually for his support and maintenance and that of his family and the education of his children.

No order shall be granted except upon due notice to the next of kin of the lunatic or habitual drunkard.

Each order for the sale of real estate shall specify the property to be sold, the notice of the sale to be given by the committee, the terms of sale, the amount of security to be given by the committee, and the day on which the order is returnable. Each order for the mortgaging of real estate shall specify the amount to be raised, the property to be mortgaged, the rate of interest, the amount of security to be given by the committee, and the day on which the order is returnable.

No sale or mortgage shall be confirmed by the court until the committee have given security for the faithful application of the proceeds.

If the sale or mortgage be confirmed by the court, the committee shall execute such sale or mortgage according to the terms of the contract.

On the application of the committee the court may authorize the sale of timber standing upon the lands of such lunatic or drunkard.[2]

LUNATIC ASYLUMS.—The board of public charities has the supervision of all houses or places in which any person of unsound mind is detained, whenever the person having charge of the lunatic receives any compensation for the custody, control, or attendance of such lunatic.

The board shall appoint a committee of five to act as the committee on lunacy. The two professional members, one a physician and the other a lawyer, shall be members of that committee. The committee on lunacy shall examine and report

[1] Brightly Purdon's Digest, p. 1,273.

[2] *Ibid.*, pp. 1,274, 1,275.

given reasonable opportunity and furnished with materials for communicating with any person without the building. They shall have the unrestricted privilege of addressing communications, not oftener than once a month, to any member of the committee on lunacy.[1]

COMMITMENT OF INSANE PERSONS BY THE COURTS.—Insane persons may be placed in hospitals by the order of any court, and a statement in writing of any respectable citizen that a certain person is insane and that his welfare or that of others requires his restraint. The judge shall thereupon appoint immediately a commission to inquire into the report upon the facts of the case. The commission shall be composed of three persons, one a physician and one a lawyer. In their inquisition they shall hear such evidence touching the merits of the case as well as the statements of the party complained of. If in their opinion it is a suitable case for confinement, the judge shall issue his warrant for such disposition of the insane person as will promote the object desired.

If the commission report that it is not a suitable case for confinement, the petitioner shall be liable for all costs. If the commission report the case a suitable one for confinement, and it shall appear that the lunatic has real or personal property, such property shall be liable to all costs.[2]

RHODE ISLAND.

RESTRAINT OF INSANE PERSONS.—Whenever complaint in writing and under oath shall be made to any justice or clerk of the District Court that any person within the county is insane so as to be dangerous to the peace or safety of the people of the State, or so as to render his restraint and treatment necessary for his own welfare, such justice or clerk shall cause such person to be arrested and brought before some district court for examination relative to such complaint. When the insane person cannot be examined in open court such examination may be held at such times and places as shall be most conducive to the health and comfort of the person to be examined.

If the court on such examination adjudge such complaint to

[1] Brightly Purdon's Digest, pp. 1,256, 1,257.

[2] *Ibid.*, 1,253.

be true, it shall commit such person to the Butler hospital for the insane, or to the State asylum for the insane, to be detained until upon instruction and examination he shall be declared to be restored to soundness of mind.

The warrant of commitment shall state the town in which such lunatic or said person was arrested.

The costs shall be paid out of the property of the lunatic if he have any, otherwise in the first instance by the State until the liability of some town in the State for the maintenance of such person is established.

Commissioners may be appointed on petition under oath to inquire into the condition of the insane person and to report all facts connected with the case, together with their opinion whether such person if insane should be placed in such hospital or State asylum.[1]

Examination of Confined Insane Person.—On petition of any person confined in an insane asylum or of any person on his behalf to a justice of the Supreme Court setting forth that such persons confined therein is not insane and is unjustly deprived of his liberty, such justice shall issue a like commission as provided for the commitment of the insane person for the purpose of inquiring into the condition of such person.

The person confined as insane shall have the right to confer with counsel, to produce evidence, and to be present at the inquisition. The petitioner or his counsel may examine the insane person in the place where he is confined. The commissioners shall make a personal examination of such insane person at the place where confined without the presence of the superintendent or any other person connected with the institution, but no person detained as insane shall be taken from the institution without an order of the Supreme Court.

Justices of the Supreme Court may either confirm or disallow the report of the commissioners and order the recommitment or discharge of such person, or dismiss the petition altogether, as the facts shall seem to require.[2]

Appointment of Guardian.—Whenever any idiot or lunatic or person of unsound mind, or any person who from excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery of any kind, or from want of discretion in managing his estate, shall be likely

[1] Laws 1888, c. 1, 239, s. 1-9. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 15-18.

to bring himself or family to want or to render himself or family chargeable, the Court of Probate shall have the right to appoint a guardian of the person and estate of such person.

The guardian of any habitual drunkard shall have the right to commit the ward to any curative hospital, either within or without this State, until he is cured of his drunkenness, but not exceeding six months at any one time. The estate of the ward shall be chargeable with the expenses incident to such committal and custody. The provisions in regard to the guardianship of minors are also applicable to the guardianship of insane persons and habitual drunkards.[1]

TENNESSEE.

JURISDICTION.—Jurisdiction over the persons and estates of idiots, lunatics, and other persons of unsound mind is vested in the county and chancery courts.[2]

INQUISITION.—Upon information made to the county court that any idiot or lunatic resides within the jurisdiction thereof, the court shall order the sheriff to summon a jury of twelve freeholders to ascertain by inquisition the idiocy or lunacy and the property and estate of the idiot or lunatic and make return thereof to the court.

Witnesses may be subpœnaed and are subject to the penalties and entitled to the privileges of other witnesses. If the person is not declared a lunatic, the person on whose application the inquisition is issued is liable for costs.

Upon the return of the jury that the person is an idiot or lunatic and that he has property, the court shall appoint a guardian for the person and property of such idiot. If the idiot or lunatic has no property or not sufficient for his maintenance, he may be let out for the term of one year to the lowest bidder as other poor persons, or be otherwise provided for as the court may direct.

If let out to the lowest bidder, bond and sufficient security as prescribed by the court shall be taken for the safe-keeping, providing sufficient diet, washing and apparel, and proper treatment for the term of letting.

[1] R. I. Public Statutes, c. 168.
[2] Code of Tennessee, s. 4,430.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 4,431–4,439.

Inquisition in the Chancery Court.—The application to the Chancery Court shall be by petition verified by affidavit setting forth the facts in regard to the person and property of the supposed idiot or lunatic.

No application shall be made unless the value of the property exceeds five hundred dollars.

The chancellor shall direct the issuance of a writ of inquisition upon the giving of a bond by the petitioner conditioned to pay costs and all such damages as the defendant may sustain in consequence of the petitioner having wantonly and maliciously instituted proceedings.

The jury consists of twelve freeholders, and are required to ascertain by their verdict whether the defendant be an idiot or lunatic or person of unsound mind.

Notice of the time and place of the inquest shall be given to the alleged lunatic at least five days previous to the time of hearing; if the jury find the person to be a lunatic, the verdict shall ascertain the value of the estate and of what it consists and who are the next of kin of the insane person.

Upon such finding the clerk shall appoint a guardian to take care of the estate and person of the insane person. Upon motion after the return of the inquisition the verdict of the jury may be set aside and the chancellor may thereupon order another inquest to be held.

If the jury disagree, the chancellor may in his discretion order another inquest or decide the case himself upon the testimony returned and such other testimony as may be offered.[1]

Powers of Guardian.—The guardian may upon the coming of age or marriage of the child of the confirmed lunatic make such settlement upon such child as the situation of the estate, the condition of the lunatic and his wife, and other circumstances may render reasonable and just. The guardian may apply in such case to the chancellor for direction.

The real and personal property of a person laboring under confirmed mental unsoundness may be partitioned by the court among his children or descendants as in case of death and intestacy, such portion to be charged as an advancement.

The property of a person of unsound mind may be sold upon the petition of the guardian if it appear manifestly for the in-

[1] Code of Tennessee, s. 4,449-4,456.

terest of such person, and the proceeds shall be disposed of by the court in such manner as best to promote the interests of the owner.

Guardians of lunatics, idiots, and other persons of unsound mind shall be punishable for the same abuses, mismanagements, neglects, failures, and other offenses as guardians of minors and in the same manner.[1]

HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE.—The Tennessee hospital for the insane is governed by a board of nine trustees.

The board shall appoint a superintendent to the hospital who shall be a skilful physician of unblemished moral character, of enlightened and thorough professional education, of prompt business habits, and of humane and kind disposition. He shall be a married man, and with his family shall reside constantly in the institution.

It shall be his duty to exercise a general supervision over all matters relating to the hospital, to visit the patients therein at least twice a week, to call extraordinary meetings of the board whenever it may be deemed necessary, to report to the trustees annually the number of patients admitted in the hospital, the date of admission of each patient, the degree and kind of insanity with which each patient is afflicted, the length of time supposed to have been afflicted before admission, the previous occupation, age, and habits of each patient, the names and addresses of those discharged, and the situation of each one discharged, and such particulars as he may deem necessary.[2]

ADMISSION OF PATIENTS.—Insane persons may be placed in the hospital by their legal guardians or by their relatives or friends in case they have no guardian, or by the justice of the peace if the person be proved to be insane.

Non-paying patients may be admitted to the number of one to every four thousand of the population of each county, upon a statement in writing of some respectable citizen of the county to the effect that the person is insane and that his insanity is of less than two years' duration, that he is in needy circumstances, and is a citizen of the State of Tennessee.

The justice shall issue subpœnas for persons named as witnesses and such other persons as he may think proper. If after

[1] Code of Tennessee, s. 4,457–4,469. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,223, 2,227-2,230, 2,236.

such inquest the justice is satisfied of the truth of the allegations contained in the statement, he shall require the medical witnesses to certify that they have examined the person alleged to be insane and as to his condition. If satisfied that the person alleged to be insane is insane, the justice shall certify to such fact and transmit to the clerk of the county court a certificate of the proceedings had. The clerk shall file such certificate in his office and transmit a copy of the same to the superintendent of the hospital, accompanied with an application for the admission of the patient therein named. Upon the receipt of the application the superintendent shall notify the clerk as to when the patient can be received.[1]

TEXAS.

DEFINITIONS.—Persons of unsound mind are idiots, lunatics, or insane persons.

An habitual drunkard is one whose mind has become so impaired by the use of intoxicating liquors or drugs that he is incapable of taking care of himself or property.[2]

JURISDICTION.—The county court has power to (appoint guardians of persons of unsound mind and habitual drunkards, settle the accounts of such guardians, and transact all business pertaining to the estates of such persons.

The district court has appellate jurisdiction over the county court in all matters of guardianship, and original jurisdiction under such regulations as may be prescribed by law.[3]

APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIANS.—Proceedings for the appointment of guardian of the persons, or estate, or of either, of persons of unsound mind or habitual drunkards shall be commenced in the county where such person of unsound mind or habitual drunkard resides.

The nearest of kin of such person who is not disqualified shall be entitled to the guardianship, and where two or more are equally entitled the guardianship shall be given to the one or the other according to circumstances, taking into consideration the interests of the ward alone. If such ward have a husband

[1] Code of Tennessee, s. 2,049-2,053.
[2] Texas Civ. Stat., arts. 2,472, 2,473.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,469, 2,470.

or wife who is not disqualified, such husband or wife shall be entitled to the guardianship in preference to any other person.

Notice of the application of the appointment of a guardian must be given to the alleged person of unsound mind or habitual drunkard. Before appointing a guardian the court must be satisfied that the person for whom the guardian is to be appointed is a person of unsound mind or a habitual drunkard, that the court has jurisdiction in the case, and that the person to be appointed guardian is not disqualified to act.[1]

Guardians of persons of unsound mind and habitual drunkards are required to take the oath and give a bond, and their powers and duties with regard to the estate of their wards are the same as guardians of minors.[2]

PROCEEDINGS FOR THE APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIANS.—Upon information given to the judge of the county court that any person is of unsound mind or is an habitual drunkard and is without a guardian, the judge, if satisfied that there is good cause, shall issue a warrant to the proper officer commanding such person be brought before him at a time and place to be named in such warrant.

The information shall be in writing stating the name of the person charged, and that such person is of unsound mind or is an habitual drunkard; such information shall be subscribed and sworn to by the informant.

A jury shall be empanelled to try the case and decide whether such person is of unsound mind or is an habitual drunkard.

The case shall be conducted in the name of the county as plaintiff and the person against whom the information is filed as defendant, and the proceedings and trial therein shall be governed in the same way as in ordinary suits in the county court, unless otherwise provided.

If it be found that the defendant is of unsound mind or an habitual drunkard, the court shall immediately appoint a guardian of the person and estate of such defendant.[3]

WHEN WARD IS FURIOUSLY MAD.—If any person shall be furiously mad, or so far disordered in his mind as to endanger his own person or the person or property of others, it shall be the duty of the guardian to confine him in some suitable place

[1] Texas Civ. Stat., s. 2,485, 2,502, 2,506, 2,507, 2,513.

[2] See *ibid.*, title 47.

[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,653–2,658.

until the first regular term of the county court, when the court shall make such order for the restraint, support, and safe-keeping of such ward as circumstances may require. If any such person is not so confined, any magistrate may cause him to be apprehended and employ any person to confine him in some suitable place until the county court shall make further order thereon.[1]

MAINTENANCE OF INSANE PERSONS.—Where the person of unsound mind or habitual drunkard has no estate of his own, he shall be maintained: 1. By the husband or wife, if any, if able to do so. 2. By the father or mother, if able to do so. 3. By the children and grandchildren, if able to do so. 4. By the county in which such person has his residence.

The expense attending the confinement shall be paid by the guardian out of the estate of the ward, if he has any, and if not, by the person bound to provide for him; if not so paid, the county shall be chargeable with such expense.[2]

LUNATIC ASYLUMS.—The control of Texas asylums for the insane is vested in the board of managers, consisting of five members appointed by the governor.

They shall have original jurisdiction and control of all the property and business of the asylums. They may make by-laws and regulations for the government of the institutions, determine the salary and wages of officers, discharge officers, employees, or patients, appoint assistant physicians, suitable matrons and apothecary, examine the accounts and vouchers of the superintendent, exercise a careful supervision over the general operations of the expenditures of the asylums, and direct the manner in which their revenue shall be disbursed.

The committee shall visit each asylum once every month, and the whole number once a year.[3]

POWERS OF THE SUPERINTENDENT.—The superintendent shall be elected by the board of managers of the asylum. He shall be a married man, a skilful physician, and experienced in the treatment of insanity. He shall reside at the asylum, and devote his whole time to the duties of his office.

He shall be the chief executive and medical disbursing officer of the institution, and, subject to the by-laws, shall have

[1] Texas Civ. Stat., s. 2,663, 2,664. [3] *Ibid.*, s. 67–74.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,663, 2,666.

general care and control over everything connected therewith. With the consent of the board of managers he shall employ such officers and other persons as may be required. He shall keep a register of all patients received into the asylum and discharged therefrom.[1]

ADMISSION OF PATIENTS INTO ASYLUM.—All persons adjudged insane and ordered confined by a court of competent jurisdiction may be admitted into an asylum. This class shall be known as public patients.

All persons certified to be insane by some respectable physician under the regulations prescribed by statute shall be received and shall be known as private patients.

Before any person can be received as a private patient, the guardian, or parent, or some near relative or other person interested in him, must present a written request to the superintendent for his admission, setting forth such facts as may be required by the superintendent, which written request must be under oath of the party presenting it, and be accompanied with the affidavit of the physician certifying to the insanity.

Such application must also be accompanied by a certificate of the county judge that the physician certifying to the insanity of the person is a reputable physician in regular practice. All private patients shall be kept and maintained at the asylum at their own expense, or the expense of their relatives or others. All indigent public patients shall be kept and maintained at the expense of the state.[2]

JUDICIAL PROCEEDINGS IN THE CASE OF LUNACY.—Upon information in writing and under oath to the county judge that any person in his county is a lunatic, and that the welfare of himself or of others requires that he be placed under restraint, and if such county judge shall believe such information to be true, he shall issue his warrant for the arrest of such person and fix a day for a hearing. A jury shall be summoned of twelve competent persons and duly examined and sworn.

Evidence shall be produced and heard, and the county judge shall submit to the jury the question as to whether the defendant is of unsound mind and if he should be placed under restraint.

If this question be decided in the affirmative, the verdict of

[1] Texas Civ. Stat., s. 75–84. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 91–105.

the jury shall state the age and nativity of the defendant, the number of attacks of insanity he has had, and if insanity is hereditary in the family of defendant or not.

Judgment shall thereupon be entered adjudging the defendant to be a lunatic and ordering him to be committed to the lunatic asylum for restraint and treatment.[1]

VERMONT.

DEFINITIONS.—The words "insane person" shall include every idiot, non compos, lunatic, and distracted person.[2]

The word "spendthrift" includes every person who is liable to be put under guardianship on account of excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery.[3]

APPOINTMENT OF GUARDIAN.—The Probate Court may appoint guardians of insane persons or spendthrifts on the application of a relative or friend, or of the overseer of the poor of the town in which the person resides or is chargeable, representing to the court that such person is insane and incapable of taking care of himself and praying that a guardian be appointed.

The court shall fix a time for considering the application, notice of which shall be given to the alleged insane person or spendthrift at least twelve days before the time set.

The court shall investigate the case and make such decree in the premises as appears just. If a guardian is appointed, the costs of the ward in defending against the application shall be paid out of the ward's estate.[4]

POWERS OF GUARDIANS.—Guardians shall, until they are legally discharged, have the possession and management of the estates of their wards and the care and custody of such members of the families of their wards as are dependent upon them for support, education, or employment, unless they have other guardians.[5]

The general provisions applicable to the care and management of the estates of minors are also made applicable to the guardians of insane persons and spendthrifts.

The estates of such wards are controlled subject to the direc-

[illegible] s. 2 [illegible]
[illegible] s. 2 [illegible]
[illegible] s. 2 [illegible]

[illegible] s. 2 436–2 446.
[illegible] s. 2 445.

tion of the probate court, and no disposition thereof can be made except upon the order of such court.[1]

INSANE POOR.—Insane persons in any town destitute of the means to support themselves, and having no relatives bound by law to support them, and having no legal settlement in any town, shall be supported by the State at the insane asylum.[2]

An insane person having legal settlement in any town, the annual income of whose estate is not sufficient for the maintenance and support of his wife and minor children, and the support of such person, shall be supported by the town at the Vermont asylum for the insane.[3]

SUPERVISION OF THE INSANE.—The general assembly shall elect biennially three supervisors of the insane who shall hold their offices for two years. Two of such supervisors shall be physicians, and none of them shall be a trustee, superintendent, employee, or other officer of an insane asylum in the State.

The supervisors shall visit the Vermont hospital for the insane as often as occasion requires, and one member as often as once a month, and also any other place where insane persons are confined in the State, at their discretion. They shall examine into the condition of the asylums in such other places, the management and treatment of the patients therein, their physical and mental conditions and medical treatment; form a careful opinion of the patients, apart from the officers and keepers, and investigate the cases that in their judgment require special investigation, and particularly ascertain whether persons are confined in such asylums or other places who ought to be discharged.[4]

ADMISSION TO INSANE ASYLUM.—No person shall be admitted to or detained in the insane asylum as a patient or inmate except upon the certificate of such person's insanity, made by two physicians of unquestioned integrity and skill residing in the probate district in which such insane person resides.

Such certificate shall be made not more than ten days previous to the admission of such insane person. Such certificate, with the certificate of the judge of the probate district in which

[1] R. S. 1, sub. 7, s. 2,452-2,510.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 2,875.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 2,885.
[4] *Ibid.*, s. 2,897-2,898.

the physicians reside, stating that such physicians are of unquestioned integrity and skill in their profession, shall be presented to the proper officer of the asylum at the time such insane person is presented for admission.

The certificate of the physicians shall only be given after a careful examination of the patient, made not more than five days previous to making the certificate.

A person may be received into an asylum without a certificate upon the order of the supreme or county court upon the presentation of a certified copy of the order or sentence.

A person admitted to an asylum in pursuance of law shall be deemed insane and be subject to the control and sanitary treatment of the trustees of the asylum until sufficiently sane to warrant his release, or until removed by his friends or guardians or otherwise discharged.[1]

VIRGINIA.

DEFINITIONS.—The words "insane person" shall be construed to include every one who is an idiot, lunatic, *non compos*, or deranged.

APPOINTMENT OF COMMITTEES OF INSANE PERSONS.—If a person residing in this State be thought insane, the court of a county or corporation of which such person is an inhabitant shall, on the application of any party interested, proceed to examine into the state of mind of the alleged insane person, and being satisfied that he is insane, appoint a committee of him. The surrogate courts have jurisdiction with the county and corporation courts in the appointment of committees. The committee is required to give a bond in such penalty as the court may deem sufficient. If the person appointed committee refuses the trust, or fails within two months from the date of his appointment to give a bond as required, the court, on the motion of any party interested, may appoint some other person a committee.[2]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF COMMITTEES.—The committee is entitled to the custody and control of the person and shall take possession of the estate of the insane person. He may sue and be sued in respect thereto, and for the recovery of debts due to

[1] R. S. 1, sub. 7, s. 2,906–2,910. [2] Virginia Code, s. 1,698–1,710.

or from the insane person. He shall preserve such estate and manage it to the best advantage. He shall apply the personal estate, or so much as may be necessary, to the payment of the debt of such insane person, and the rents and profits of the residue of his estate and real and personal, or so much as may be necessary to the maintenance of such insane person and of his family.

If the personal estate be insufficient for the support and maintenance of the insane person, the committee may petition the court for the sale of the real estate. Upon presentation of such petition, it shall be referred to a commissioner in chancery, who shall inquire into and hear all parties interested in such estate, and report thereon with all convenient speed. If it shall appear to the court proper, an order shall be entered for the mortgaging, leasing, or sale of so much of the real estate as may be necessary.[1]

INSANE ASYLUMS.—The insane asylums located at Williamsburg, Staunton, Marion, and Petersburg are under the management of boards of directors consisting of nine members, whose term of office is three years. Each board appoints a superintendent of each hospital who shall be a physician, and may appoint an executive committee and such officers, nurses, and attendants as they may deem proper, and prescribe their compensation.[2]

COMMITMENT TO ASYLUMS.—Any justice suspecting any person in his county or corporation to be a lunatic shall issue his warrant ordering such person to be brought before him. He and two other justices shall inquire whether such person be a lunatic, and for that purpose summon his physician and any other witnesses. If the justices decide that the person is a lunatic and ought to be confined in an asylum, they shall order him to be removed to the nearest asylum and received, if there be room therein, and if not, to either of the others.

The questions asked of the witnesses and the answers thereto shall be in writing, and, together with a written statement by the justices of any matter known to them as to the effect of insanity, shall be transmitted by them with the order. If there be no vacancy in the asylum, the patient shall be kept in the jail of the county or corporation. When such patient arrives

[1] Virginia Code, s. 1,702–1,705. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,660–1,665.

at the asylum the superintendent and his assistants shall examine him, and, if they concur with the justices, shall receive and register him as a patient.[1]

EXPENSES OF MAINTENANCE OF INSANE.—If the insane person be possessed of property, all the expense of his removal to and from the asylum, and his maintenance and care therein, shall be paid out of such property. The directors of either asylum on behalf of such asylum, and the auditor of public accounts on behalf of the Commonwealth, may release such person of the payment of such expense if he have a family dependent upon his estate for support, or if in their opinion it be just and equitable that such claim should be so released.[2]

WASHINGTON.

GUARDIANS OF PERSONS OF UNSOUND MIND.—The superior courts have power to appoint guardians to take the care, custody, and management of idiots, insane persons, and all who are incapable of conducting their own affairs, and of their estates real and personal, the maintenance of themselves and families, and the education of their children. If it be found by the court that the person so brought before the court is of unsound mind and incapable of managing his own affairs, the court shall appoint a guardian for the estate of such insane person. If the person alleged to be insane shall be discharged, the court, in its discretion, may order the costs to be paid by the person at whose instance the proceeding was had.

Each guardian, before entering upon the duties assigned to him, shall enter into a bond to the board of county commissioners in such sum and with such security as the court shall approve.

Every such guardian shall give notice of his appointment within twenty days thereafter.[3]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF GUARDIANS.—Such guardian shall collect and take into his possession the goods, chattels, moneys, effects, and other evidences of debt, and all writings touching upon the estate real and personal of the person under guardianship.

[1] Virginia Code, s. 1,669–1,675.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,706–1,708.
[3] Code of Procedure, s. 1,154–1,158.

Within forty days after his appointment he shall make an inventory of the real and personal estate of his ward. Such inventory shall be attested and verified by the oath of the his guardian.

He shall prosecute all actions commenced by or on account of his ward and defend all actions brought against such ward.

He shall collect all debts due his ward and pay all demands due and become due from his ward.[1]

POWER OF COURT AS TO INSANE.—The Superior Court shall have power to make orders for the restraint, support, and safe-keeping of such person, for the management of his estate, the support and maintenance of his family, and the education of his children out of the estate; to set apart and reserve for the use of such family all property real or personal not necessary to be sold for the payment of debts, and to let, sell, or mortgage any part of such estate real or personal not necessary for the payment of debts, the maintenance of such insane person or his family, or the education of his children.[2]

COMMITMENT OF THE INSANE TO HOSPITALS.—The judge of the Superior Court of any county, upon the application of any person under oath, setting forth that any person by reason of insanity is unsafe to be at large, shall cause such person to be brought before him, and summon to appear two or more witnesses who shall testify as to the conversation, morals, and general conduct upon which such charge of insanity is based, and also two reputable physicians before whom a judge shall examine the charge, unless a jury is demanded, to decide upon the question of insanity. If a jury be demanded, the trial shall be by jury. The physicians, after a careful hearing of the case and a personal examination of the alleged insane person, shall certify as to the insanity of such person. If such person be declared insane, the court shall order him to be committed to the hospital for the insane.

He shall issue a warrant of commitment directed to the sheriff demanding him to convey such insane person to the hospital for the insane. He shall transmit a copy of the complaint and commitment and physician's certificate, which shall always be in the form as furnished to the courts by the superintendent of the hospital for the insane.

[1] Code of Procedure, s. 1,159–1,163. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,164.

The costs of the commitment are a county charge.

No case of idiocy, imbecility, or harmless chronic mental unsoundness shall be committed to the hospital for the insane, and, whenever, in the opinion of the superintendent, after a careful examination of the case of any person committed, it shall be satisfactorily ascertained by him that the party has been unlawfully committed, and that he or she comes under the rule of exceptions provided for herein, he shall have authority to discharge such person and return him to the county from which he was committed.[1]

GOVERNMENT OF HOSPITALS FOR THE INSANE.—A board of three trustees of each of the State hospitals shall be named by the governor, by and with the consent of the legislative senate. Such boards of trustees have power to make all repairs and improvements which in their judgment may be necessary for the conduct of the hospital under their charge. They shall take charge of the general interests of the hospital and manage and conduct the same in such manner as may appear to them best and most economical. They shall appoint a superintendent and make by-laws for the government of the hospital; prescribe in a manner consistent with the laws of the State the duties of all persons connected in any way with the management of the hospital under their charge.

The superintendent shall be a skilful physician and shall reside in the hospital. He shall hold his office for such time as the trustees may deem wise and for the efficiency and economy of the institution; he shall have entire control of the medical, moral, and dietetic treatment of the patients, and, so far as is not inconsistent with the by-laws and regulations of the hospital, of all other internal government and economy of the institution.[2]

WEST VIRGINIA.

JURISDICTION OVER INSANE.—The county court has original jurisdiction in all matters pertaining to the appointment of committees and curators for insane persons in the settlement of their accounts.[3]

[1] Gen. Statutes, s. 1,248–1,255.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 1,249–1,245.
[3] Kelley's Statutes, c. 34, s. 3.

The circuit court has appellate jurisdiction in all judgments, decrees, and orders rendered by the county court.[1]

By the constitution, article 8, section 27, the county court is given original jurisdiction in the appointment of committees of insane persons in the settlement of their accounts, but the jurisdiction of the county court by that section is made subject to such limitations as may be prescribed by law.

APPOINTMENT OF COMMITTEES.—If a person be found insane by the justices before whom he is examined, the circuit court of the county of which he is an inhabitant shall appoint a committee of him.

If the person not so found be suspected of insanity on the application of any party interested, the circuit court shall proceed to examine into his state of mind, and being satisfied that he is insane appoint a committee. The committee is required to give a bond, approved by the court making the appointment, for the faithful performance of his duties.[2]

POWERS AND DUTIES OF COMMITTEE.—The committee of an insane person has the custody and control of his person and the possession of his estate. He shall take care of and preserve his estate and manage it to the best advantage; shall apply the personal estate or so much as may be necessary to the payment of the debts of such insane person, and the rents and profits of the residue of his estate real and personal and the residue of his personal estate to the maintenance of such insane person and of his family.

The real estate may be sold, if the personal estate be insufficient for the payment of his debts and for the support and maintenance of himself and his family, upon petition to the court by which the committee was appointed for authority to make such sale.[3]

COMMITMENT OF LUNATICS.—Any justice suspecting any person in his county to be a lunatic shall issue his warrant ordering such person to be brought before him. He shall inquire whether such person be a lunatic and for that purpose summon a physician and other witnesses. He may propound such questions as he sees fit, including those prescribed by statute.

If the justice decide that the person is a lunatic and ought

[1] Kelley's Statutes, c. 36, s. 3.
[2] *Ibid*., c. 108, s. 37–40.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 41, 42.

to be confined in a hospital, the said justice shall order him to be removed to the hospital and to be received there if there is room therein, unless some person to whom the justice in his discretion may deliver such lunatic will give bond with condition to restrain and take proper care of such lunatic until the cause of confinement shall cease.

The questions and answers of the witnesses shall be in writing, and together with a written statement by the justice of any matter known to him as to the fact of insanity shall be transmitted by him with the order.

If there is a vacancy in the hospital the sheriff shall carry the lunatic to the hospital, and if the examining board concur in the opinion of the justice as to the person's insanity he shall be received and registered as a patient. If they refuse to receive him, he shall be confined in the jail of the county in which he was examined until lawfully discharged or removed therefrom.

STATE HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE.—The West Virginia hospital for the insane is under the management of a board of directors composed of nine members appointed by the board of public works.

They have charge of the hospital and of any real or personal property conveyed to it for its use. They shall employ a superintendent who shall receive such compensation as the board may prescribe, and may also appoint such officers, nurses, and attendants as they may see fit. Any one or more of the directors together with the superintendent constitute an examining board and may examine persons brought to the asylum as lunatics, and order those found to be such to be received and those found to be restored to be discharged therefrom.[2]

WISCONSIN.

GUARDIANS FOR INSANE.—Whenever it shall be represented to the county court by a verified petition of any relative or friend of any insane person, that any person by extreme old age or other cause is mentally incompetent to have the charge and management of his property, said court shall cause a notice to be given to the supposed insane or incompetent person of the time and place of hearing the case, not less than twenty days

[1] Kelly's Statutes, s. 10–17. [2] *Ibid.*, s. 1–17.

before the time appointed, and shall cause such person, if able to attend, to be produced before him on the hearing.

If, after a full hearing and examination, it shall appear to the county court that the person in question is incapable of taking care of himself and managing his property, the court shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate.[1]

GUARDIAN FOR DRUNKARDS.—When any person by excessive drinking, gaming, idleness, or debauchery of any kind, shall be unable to attend to business and shall thereby greatly endanger his health, life, or property, or so spend, waste, or lessen his estate as to endanger his own or his family's support, any friend or relative or any supervisor or justice of the peace may present a verified petition to the county court praying to have a guardian appointed. Notice shall be given to such person not less than twenty days before the time fixed for the hearing. The court shall appoint a guardian of his person and estate, if after a full hearing it shall appear proper. The court may authorize a guardian of any such person to commit such person to any inebriate asylum.[2]

POWERS OF GUARDIANS.—Guardian shall collect and pay the debts of his ward, and manage his estate frugally and without waste, and apply the income and profits thereof for the suitable maintenance and support of the ward and his family, if there be any. If such income and profit shall be insufficient for that purpose, the guardian may sell the real estate upon obtaining a license therefor as provided by law, and shall apply the proceeds of such sale, so far as may be necessary, for such maintenance and support.[3]

PROCEEDINGS TO DETERMINE INSANITY.—Upon the application of any respectable citizen to the judge of the county court, judge of the circuit court, or any judge of a court of record, a judicial inquiry may be had as to the mental condition of the person supposed to be insane. The application shall be in writing, and shall specify whether or not a trial by jury is desired by the application. On receipt of the petition, the judge shall appoint two disinterested physicians of good repute, of medical skill, and moral integrity to visit and examine the person alleged to be insane, and such physicians shall proceed

[1] Statutes of Wisconsin, s. 3,976, 3,977.
[2] *Ibid.*, s. 3,978.
[3] *Ibid.*, s. 3,982, 3,983.

to the residence of the person supposed to be insane and shall by personal examination and inquiry satisfy themselves as to his condition, and report the result of their examination to the judge. The form of such report is prescribed by statute.

Upon receiving the report of the examining physicians, the judge may, if no demand has been made for a jury, make and enter his order of commitment to the hospital or asylum of the district to which the county belongs, or if not fully satisfied, he may make such additional investigation of the case as may seem to him to be necessary and proper.

In case a trial by jury is demanded, the forms of procedure shall be the same as in trials by jury in justices' courts, and the trial shall be in the presence of the person supposed to be insane and his counsel and immediate friends and the medical witnesses. If the jury find the supposed person to be insane, their verdict shall simply so state. If the jury by their verdict find the supposed insane person is sane, the judge shall enter an order for the discharge of such person.[1]

Inquiry as to the Sanity of the Person Confined.—Application may be had in the behalf of any person confined in any hospital, asylum, or other place of confinement, by any respectable citizen having reason to question the propriety or justice of such confinement, to a judge of the county court of the county in which such person is confined, or to a judge of the county court by whom he was so committed. The judge shall have and may exercise the authority and jurisdiction in the matter of such application as is conferred upon him by section [illegible] in the original commitment, and the same proceedings may be had in such matter. If upon such rehearing and further inquiry it shall be found that the person so confined is sane, the judge shall make an order for the release of such person.

Admission of Patients to State Hospital.—Patients shall be admitted from the several counties to the State hospital in the order of application. No county shall at any time have more than its just proportion of patients in the hospital, unless some other county has less than its proportion. If an inmate in the State hospital is improperly charged to the State or to any county, the attorney-general on behalf of the State and the

[illegible] of Wisconsin, s. [illegible]. [1] Ibid., 3993a.

district-attorney of such county on its behalf may make written application to the board of trustees of State hospitals for relief from the charge. A hearing shall be had upon such application. Such application may be supported by affidavits and other proper evidence. If, upon such hearing, the board is satisfied that the relief asked for should be granted, it shall by its order in writing grant the same and name the county chargeable with such inmate.[1]

HOSPITAL DISTRICTS.—The State is divided into two hospital districts. All patients in the counties in each hospital district shall be sent to the hospital therein situated.[2]

SUPERINTENDENT OF HOSPITAL.—The superintendent of each hospital shall be the chief executive officer of the hospital and devote all his time and attention to his duties. He shall exercise entire control over all the subordinate officers. He shall employ all employees and assistants necessarily connected with the institution below the grade designated in the by-laws as officers, and may discharge any officer, assistant, or employee at will, being responsible to the board for the proper exercise of that duty in regard to officers.[3]

[1] Statutes of Wisconsin, s. 590 and 590*a*.

[2] *Ibid.*, s. 587.

[3] *Ibid.*, s. 588.

TABLE OF CASES CITED IN THIS VOLUME.

PAGE

ACCIDENT INS. Co. *v.* Crondal, 120 U. S., 527, ... 162
Adams *v.* Thomas, 81 N. C., 296, ... 534
Addington *v.* Wilson, 5 Ind., 137, ... 407
Airington *v.* Airington, 32 Ark., 674, ... 525
Anderson *v.* Fitzgerald, 4 H. L., 484, ... 135
Anderson *v.* State, 43 Conn., 514, ... 428
Anderson *v.* State, 25 Neb., 550, ... 441
Appeal of Harmony Lodge, 127 Pa. St., 269, ... 403
Argo *v.* Coffin, 142 Ill., 368, ... 378
Arington *v.* Short, 3 Hanks (N. C.), 71, ... 525
Armstrong *v.* State, 30 Fla., 170, ... 509, 512
Arnold's Case, 8 Hargrave's State Trials, 322, ... 439
Asbury *v.* Fair, 111 N. C., 251, ... 375
Ashley *v.* Holman, 15 S. C., 97, ... 521
Aszman *v.* State, 123 Ind., 347, ... 492
Auilerson *v.* Auilerson, 42 Vt., 350, ... 532
Austen *v.* Graham, 8 Moore P. C., 493, ... 406
Autremont *v.* Fire Assn., 48 N. Y. St. R., 43, ... 426
Ayers *v.* Russell, 50 Hun (N. Y.), 282, ... 539
Ayers *v.* State, 26 S. W. R., 396, ... 500, 501, 503

BACON *v.* United States Mut. Acc. Assn., 123 N. Y., 304, ... 158
Baker *v.* Home Life Ins. Co., 4 Bigelow's L. and Acc. Ins. Rep., 355, 153
Baldwin *v.* State, 12 Mo., 233, ... 512
Balke *v.* Rerpass, 77 N. C., 193, ... 522
Banker *v.* Banker, 63 N. Y., 409, ... 374, 385, 392, 420
Banks *v.* Goodfellow, L. R., 5 Q. B., 548, ... 397, 407
Bannister *v.* Jackson, 46 N. J. Eq., 593, ... 409
Baraboski's Case, 9 Pa. Co. Ct., 264, ... 515
Barnes *v.* Hathaway, 66 Barb., 452, ... 375, 376
Barton *v.* Goran, 43 Hun (N. Y.), 655, ... 539
Baxter *v.* Abbott, 7 Gray (Mass.), 71, ... 511
Baxter *v.* Baxter, 76 Hun, 398, ... 381
Baxter *v.* Earl of Portsmouth, 7 D. and R., 614; 5 B. and C., 170; 2 C. and P., 178; 9 Alb. L. J., 30, ... 373
Bayless *v.* Travelers Ins. Co., 14 Blatch., 143, ... 167
Beaubien *v.* Cicotte, 12 Mich., 459, ... 512

Page
Schmaeppe v. Kienle (Ill.), 36 N. E., 796 325
Scoville Mfg. Co. v. Winthrop, 99 Ill., 307 141
Scranton v. Stewart, 52 N. Y. Sup., 483 395
Seabrook v. State, 68 Wis., 36 . . . . . 495, 496, 497
Sellings v. Am. Ins. Co. of N. America, 69 Va., 78 163
Shackleton v. State, 29 Ohio St., 146 432
Shaw v. Will, 16 Daly, 340 396
Shibely Will, 49 Wis., 396 510
Shortland v. Neale, 1 Dan., 57 . . . . . 395, 559
Shoukers v. Lynch, 1 Bradf., 438 . . . . . 400, 406
Shumaker v. State (Ind.), 34 N. E. Rep., 805 509
Smethurst v. Woodman, 47 N. H., 330 519
Stilling v. State, 94 Ind., 399 . . . 404, 408, 409, 470, 487, 488, 513, 515
Stilling v. Thomas, 4 Hand. (Va.), 204 333
Stowell's Will, 10 Abb. Pr. N. S., 126 . . . . . 406, 407
Sturr v. World Mutual Ins. Co., 67 and C., 304; 60 N. Y., 224 144
Stoughton v. Knight, 1 E. D., 1 Pratt D., 66, 72 396
Stowell v. State, 39 Miss., 466 453
Stuck v. Stuck, 66 N. Y., 548 401
Swallstreet v. Swallstreet, 7 Mon., 474 394
Swalwey v. Life Ins. Co., 4 Dil. Rep., 368 115
Swanson's Will, 46 N. Y. St. Rep., 254 396
Swales v. Townsend, 7 Gill. (Md.), 38 513
Swales v. Stevens, 7 Pick. (Mass.), 34 458
Swallow v. Bank of Tuskaloosa, 34 Wis., 291 393
Swinburne v. People, 73 N. Y., 138 369
Sweet v. Fisher, 4 Johns. Ch., 467 405
Sweet v. Cass., 78 Pa. St., 132 453
Sweet v. Ellis, 6 Ben., 453 . . . . . 374, 396
Sweet v. Vogel, 36 Am. L. 453, 459; 38 Md., 377 . . . . . 406, 407
Swenzine v. Swenzine, 48 Ind., 221 521
Swink v. Cain, 1 Jon. N. C., 325 436
Switzer v. Switzer, 26 W. Va., 198 393
Swezey v. Rice, 1 Flow., 135 519
Swiger v. Ross, 48 Ala., 387 396
Sweet v. Thompson, 1, 2, 12 and 13, 74 note 387
Sweet v. Dentzell, 9 Ark., 333 359
Swope v. Hill, 1 Bradf., 380 395
Swope v. State, 36 Neb., 628 451
Sworts v. Sillman, 36 Barb., 396 499
Sykes v. State, 37 S. W. Rep., 725 474
Sykes v. Lane, 4 N. Y., 362 482
Sykes v. Ins. Co., 3 Iowa, 44 521

Tallman v. Anderson, 34 Pa. St., 388 389
Tampsel v. Tampsel, 3 Ala., 372 . . . . . 387, 395
Tampsel v. Tampsel, 35 N. Y., 614 389

PAGE

Campbell *v.* Life Ins. Co., 98 Mass., 381, ... 132, 133
Carlin *v.* Baird, 13 S. W. Rep., 434, ... 404
Carpenter *v.* Bailey, 94 Cal., 406, ... 392, 398
Carpenter *v.* Blake, 75 N. Y., 12, ... 539
Carpenter *v.* Calvert, 83 Ill., 62, ... 420
Carpenter *v.* Com., 92 Ky., 452, ... 492
Carter *v.* Beckwith, 128 N. Y., 312, ... 374, 386
Case of Barmley, 3 Atk., 173, ... 519
Case of Beaumont, 1 Whart. (Pa.), 52, ... 519
Case of McElroy, 6 W. and S. (Pa.), 451, ... 520
Chandler, *In re*, 45 La. Ann., 696, ... 516
Charter Oak Ins. Co. *v.* Rodell, 95 U. S., 232, ... 512
Chase *v.* Pellerin, 16 La., 63, ... 524
Chatham *v.* State, 92 Ala., 47, ... 500, 502
Chattock *v.* Shaw, 3 Bigelow's L. and Acc. Ins. Rep., 10, . . . 142
Children's Aid Soc. of N. Y. *v.* Loveridge, 70 N. Y., 387, . . . 410
Choice *v.* State, 31 Ga., 424, ... 505, 512
Chrisman *v.* State, 54 Ark., 283, ... 492, 500, 502
Christie's Case, 5 Paige (N. Y.), 242, ... 528
Clapp's Case, 20 How. Pr. (N. Y.), 385, ... 528
Clapp *v.* Fullerton, 34 N. Y., 190, ... 399, 401
Clapp *v.* Mass. Ben. Assn., 146 Mass., 519, ... 135
Clarity *v.* Sheridan, 59 N. W., 52, ... 375
Clark *v.* Fisher, 1 Paige, 171, ... 398
Clark *v.* Sawyer, 2 N. Y., 498, ... 395
Clark *v.* State, 12 Ohio, 483, ... 511
Clarke *v.* Davis, 1 Redf., 249, ... 399
Clary *v.* Clary, 2 Ired. Law (N. J.), 78, ... 512
Cline *v.* Lindsay, 110 Ind., 337, ... 398
Cobb *v.* Benefit Assn., 153 Mass., 176, ... 155
Cochran *v.* Amsden, 104 Md., 282, ... 520, 530
Coffin *v.* Coffin, 23 N. Y., 9, ... 399
Colby *v.* Jackson, 12 N. H., 526, ... 536
Colee *v.* State, 75 Ind., 511, ... 512
Cole's Trial, 7 Abb. Pr. N. S., 321, ... 429, 430, 433, 434
Coleman *v.* Com., 6 B. Mon. (Ky.), 239, ... 531
Collins *v.* Townley, 21 N. J. Eq., 353, ... 406, 411
Colvin's Case, 3 Md. Ch., 206, ... 526
Com. *ex rel. v.* Groh., 10 Pa. Co. Ct., 557, ... 525
Com. *ex rel. v.* Kirkbridge, 2 Brewster (Pa.), 586, ... 537
Com. *v.* Brayman, 136 Mass., 438, ... 511
Com. *v.* Buccieri, 153 Pa. St., 535 . . . . . 437, 459, 510, 516
Com. *v.* Cloonen, 151 Pa. St., 605, ... 493
Com. *v.* Dorsey, 103 Mass., 412, ... 501
Com. *v.* Fairbanks, 2 Allen (Mass.), 511, ... 511
Com. *v.* Fritsch, 9 Pa. Co. Ct. R., 164, ... 467
Com. *v.* Gerade, 145 Pa. St., 289, ... 425, 509

PAGE

Com. v. Hawkins, 3 Gray (Mass.), 463, ... 501
Com. v. McMillan, 144 Pa. St., 610, ... 490
Com. v. Rich, 14 Gray, 335, ... 511
Com. v. Rogers, 7 Metc., 500, ... 453, 485, 511
Com. v. Schmeous, 162 Pa. St., 326, ... 515
Com. v. Webster, 5 Cush., 320, ... 484
Com. v. Wilson, 1 Gray (Mass.), 337, ... 511
Com. v. Woodley (Pa.), 31 Atl. R., 202, ... 492
Conn. M. L. Ins. Co. v. Lathrop, 111 U. S., 612, ... 510, 512
Converse v. Converse, 21 Vt., 168, ... 397
Coop's Will, 6 N. Y. Supp., 664, ... 403
Cornwell v. Riker, 2 Dem., 354, ... 402, 405
Coryell v. Stone, 62 Ind., 307, ... 510
Cotrell v. Com. (Ky.), 17 S. W. Rep., 149, ... 512
Couch v. Gentry, 113 Mo., 248, ... 398
Covenhoven's Case, Vol. R., Saxt. (N. J.), 19 . . . . 525, 528
Cowles v. Merchants, 149 Mass., 377, ... 511
Cram v. Cram, 33 Vt., 15, ... 512
Crew v. State, 23 S. W. R., 14, ... 496, 500, 501
Crosby v. People, 137 Ill., 325, ... 500, 502
Cudney v. Cudney, 68 N. Y., 148, ... 401
Cushman v. Life Ins. Co., 70 N. Y., 76, ... 144, 146, 156
Cutler v. Zollinger, 22 U. S., 890, ... 520
Cutler v. Zollinger, 117 Mo., 92, ... 380

DACEY v. People, 116 Ill., 555, ... 453
Davis v. Com., 16 Va. L. J., 464, ... 492, 500, 502
Davis v. Merrill, 47 N. H., 208, ... 536
Davis v. State, 35 Ind., 496, ... 510
Day v. Mutual Benefit Co., 4 Bigelow's L. and Acc. Ins. Rep., 15 (Supr. Ct. Distr. Col., April Term, 1873), ... 149
Dean v. Dean, 27 Vt., 746, ... 420
Deas v. Wandell, 3 Supm. Ct. (T. and C.), 128, ... 433
Deer v. Clark, 3 Add. Ecc., 79, ... 519
De Hart v. Condit, 37 N. J. Eq., 611; s. c., 38 Atl., 607, . . . 528
Dejarnette v. Com., 75 Va., 867, ... 453, 510
Delafield v. Parish, 25 N. Y., 9, ... 395, 396, 400, 405, 406, 412
Delgado v. State, 29 S. W. R., 1,070, ... 501
Des Moines v. Chisholm, 71 Iowa, 675, ... 377
De Treville v. Ellis, 21 Am. Dec., 519, ... 534
De Treville v. Ellis, Bailey Eq. (S. C.), 35, ... 534
Dewey v. Algire, 55 N. W., 276, ... 380
Dexter v. Hall, 15 Wall. (U. S.), 9, ... 510
Dodge v. Cole (Ill.), 37 Am. Rep., 11, ... 522
Doe v. Reagan, 5 Blackf. (Ind.), 217, ... 511
Douglass Estate, 162 Pa. St., 567, ... 398
Douglass v. Life Ins. Co., 83 N. Y., 492, ... 137

PAGE

Dove *v.* State, 3 Heisk. (Tenn.), 348, ... 512
Dozier *v.* Fidelity and Casualty Co., 46 Fed. Rep., 446, . . 142, 160
Drew's Appeal, 57 N. H., 181, ... 532
Drier *v.* Life Ins. Co., 24 Fed. Rep., 670, ... 143
Ducker *v.* Whitson, 112 N. C., 44, ... 381
Duffield *v.* Morris, 2 Harr. (Del.), 375, ... 512
Duncan *v.* Mason, 20 S. W., 252, ... 379
Dunham's Appeal, 27 Conn., 193, ... 512
Durcher *v.* Hill, 29 Mo., 271, ... 525
Dwight *v.* Life Ins. Co., 103 N. Y., 341, ... 136

EAN *v.* Snyder, 46 Barb., 230, ... 395
Ecksine's Estate, 1 Clark, 224, ... 523
Edwards *v.* Footner, 1 Camp., 530, ... 152
Eggers *v.* Eggers, 57 Ind., 461, ... 512
Elcessor *v.* Elcessor, 146 Pa. St., 359, ... 382
Elder *v.* Schumacher, 18 Col., 433, ... 377
Elliot *v.* Welby, 13 Mo. App., 19, ... 420
Emerick *v.* Emerick, 49 N. W. (Iowa), 1,017, ... 520
Enere *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 318, ... 494, 501
Eslava *v.* Lepretre, 21 Ala., 504, ... 525, 534
Evers *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 318, ... 500
Ex parte Childs, 1 C. E. Green (N. J.), 498, ... 526
Ex parte Hinchman, 4 Clark (Pa.), 184, ... 525
Ex parte Plank, 5 Clark (Pa.), 35, ... 526
Ex parte Tracy, 3 Paige (N. Y.), 580, ... 528
Eyre *v.* Shaftsbury, 2 P. Wms., 118, ... 520

FAIN *v.* Com., 78 Ky., 183, ... 464
Fairchild *v.* Bascomb, 35 Vt., 398, ... 510
Farris *v.* Com., 1 S. W. R., 729, ... 455
Faulner *v.* Territory (N. M.), 30 Pac. Rep., 905, ... 509
Feegan's Estate, 1 Myrick Prob. Rep. (Cal.), 10, ... 532
Field *v.* Shorb, 99 Cal., 661, ... 378
Fisher *v.* State, 30 Tex. App., 502, ... 509
Fitton *v.* Accidental Death Co., 17 C. B. N. S., 122, . . . 166, 167
Flack *v.* Rea, 51 N. J. Eq., 233, ... 409
Flanagan *v.* People, 52 N. Y., 467, . . 422, 423, 424, 430, 441, 442, 446
86 N. Y., 559, ... 495, 503, 507
Fogarty *v.* State, 80 Ga., 450, ... 437, 451
Fonville *v.* State, 91 Ala., 39, ... 492, 500, 502
Forbes *v.* Edinburgh Co., 10 Scot. Sess. Cases, 1st Ser., 451, . . 140
Fowler *v.* Ramsdell, 4 Alb. L. J., 94, ... 407
Francis *v.* Wilkinson, 147 Ill., 370, ... 378, 398
Freeman *v.* Mercantile Mut. Assn., 156 Mass., 351, ... 164
Freeman *v.* People, 4 Den., 9, ... 425
French *v.* State, 85 Wis., 400, ... 515

PAGE

Friedberger v. Jaberg, N. Y. Sup. Ct., 1887, ... 387
Friery v. People, 54 Barb., 319, ... 492, 495
Frost v. Redford, 54 Mo. App., 345, ... 534

Gailbraith v. Arlington Mutual Co., 12 Bush (Ky.), 29, 40, . . 146
Gamble v. Gamble, 39 Barr., 373, ... 398
Gardiner v. Gardiner, 34 N. Y., 155, ... 410
Gardner v. Gardner, 22 Wend., 526, ... 409
Garley v. Park, 35 N. E., 279, ... 403
Garner v. State, 28 Fla., 113, ... 492, 496, 497, 500, 503
Garrison v. Blanton, 48 Tex., 299, ... 512
Gates v. Bain, 2 Strick., 1,104, ... 373
Geach v. Ingalls, 14 M. and W., 95, ... 142
Gehrke v. State, 13 Tex., 568, ... 511
German v. Dubois, 23 La. Ann., 26, ... 524
Gillespie v. Thompson, 7 Ind., 353, ... 528
Gombault v. Public Adm., 4 Bradf., 226, ... 405
Gonzales v. State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 508, ... 491, 492, 501
Goodwin v. State, 96 Ind, 550, ... 510
Grant v. Thompson, 4 Conn., 203, ... 510, 512
Green v. Green, 145 Ill., 264, ... 398, 405
Greenwade v. Greenwade, 43 Md., 318, ... 520
Gridley v. St. Francis Xavier College, 137 N. Y., 327, ... 524
Guild v. Warne, 149 Ill., 105, ... 378
Guiteau Case, 10 Fed. Rep., 161, ... 435, 439, 468, 479, 483
Guthrie's Appeal, 16 Pa. St., 321, ... 523

Hall v. Amer. Masonic Mut. Acc. Assn., 57 N. W., 366; 86 Wis., 518, 163
Hall v. Com., 12 Atl. R., 163, ... 437
Hall v. Semple, 3 Fost. and Fin., 337, ... 539
Hallet v. Patrick, 49 Cal., 590, ... 523
Hambleton's Appeal, 102 Pa. St., 5, ... 534
Hamilton v. Traber, 27 At. (Md.), 229, ... 522, 534
Hamrick v. Hamrick, 34 N. E., 3, ... 520
Hamrick v. State, 34 N. E. (Ind.), 3, ... 520
Hardy v. Merrill, 56 N. H., 227, ... 512
Harmon v. Harmon, 51 Fed. Rep., 113, ... 377
Harrison v. Rowan, 3 Wash. C. C., 580, ... 397
Hart v. Deamer, 6 Wend., 497, ... 374
Hastings v. Rider, 99 Mass., 622, ... 511
Hathaway v. Ins. Co., 48 Vt., 335, ... 512
Hawe v. State, 11 Neb., 537, ... 428
Hawkins v. Grimes, 13 B. Monroe (Ky.), 257, ... 420
Heald v. Thing, 45 Me., 392, ... 511
Hennel v. Bd. of Comrs., 139 Ind., 32, ... 375
Hickman v. State, 38 Tex., 190, ... 511

PAGE

Hicks *v.* Marshall, 3 Hun, 327, ... 374
Higbie *v.* Guardian Ins. Co. of N. Y., 53 N. Y., 603, ... 141
Hildreth *v.* Marshall, 51 N. J. Eq., 241, ... 411
Hill *v.* Day, 34 N. J. Eq., 150, ... 529
Hines *v.* Horner, 53 N. W., 317, ... 378
Hite *v.* Com. (Ky.), 20 S. W. Rep., 217, ... 512
Holcomb *v.* Holcomb, 95 N. Y., 316, ... 512
Holcomb *v.* State, 41 Tex., 125, ... 512
Hollis *v.* Drew The. Sem., 95 N. Y., 166, ... 399
Holterhoff *v.* Life Ins. Co., Bigelow L. and Acc. Repts., 395, . . 137
Holtzman *v.* Hoy, 19 Ill. App., 459, ... 539
Horn *v.* Pullman, 72 N. Y., 269, ... 399, 400, 401, 402, 405
Hornish *v.* People, 142 Ill., 620, ... 424
Horsley *v.* Asher's Heirs, 94 Ky., 314, ... 379
Houston *v.* State, 26 Tex. App., 657, ... 492, 501
Hovey *v.* Chase, 52 Maine, 304, ... 520
Hovey *v.* Harman, 49 Maine, 269, ... 521
Howell *v.* Taylor, 50 N. J. Eq., 428, ... 398
Hughes *v.* Jones, 116 N. Y., 67, ... 374, 384, 392
Hults *v.* Hults, 62 Ind., 214, ... 523
Hunt *v.* State (Tex.), 26 S. W. Rep., 206, ... 509
Hutchison *v.* National Loan Soc., 3 Bigelow's L. and Acc. Ins. Rep., 444, ... 146

Imp. Loan Co. *v.* Stone, 1 Q. B., 599, ... 376
Inhabitants of Fayette *v.* Chesterville, 77 Me., 28, ... 511
In re Amhont, 1 Paige (N. Y.), 497, ... 530
In re Barker, 2 Johns. Ch. (N. Y.), 232, ... 519
In re Beckwith, 3 Hun (N. Y.), 443, ... 530
In re Blewitt, 131 N. Y., 541, ... 524
In re Burgh, 61 How., 193, ... 530
In re Burr, 17 Barb. (N. Y.), 9, ... 530
In re Carmichael, 36 Ala., 514, ... 520
In re Christie, 5 Paige (N. Y.), 242, ... 528
In re Colah, 3 Daly (N. Y.), 529, ... 533
In re Colvin, 3 Md. Ch., 278, ... 526, 531, 534
In re Demeet, 27 Hun (N. Y.), 480, ... 524
In re Dickie, 7 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 417, ... 526
In re Fitzgerald, 3 Stew., 59, ... 527
In re Folger, 4 Johns. Ch., 169, ... 528
In re Giles, 11 Paige (N. Y.), 243, ... 528
In re Hailes, 3 Johns Ch. (N. Y.), 567, ... 529
In re Hoag, 7 Paige (N. Y.), 312, ... 533
In re Humboldt, 12 Phila., 424, ... 529
In re Lanvoree, 32 Barb. (N. Y.), 122, ... 531
In re Lasher, 2 Barb. Ch., 97, ... 527
In re Leacocke, Lloyd & Gould, 498, ... 532

PAGE

In re Lincoln, 1 Brewster, 392, ... 534
In re Lindsey, 44 N. J. Eq., 564, ... 527
In re Livingston, 9 Paige, 440, ... 532, 534
In re Livingstone, 1 John. Ch. (N. Y.), 436, ... 531
In re Morgan, 7 Paige (N. Y.), 236, ... 527
In re Nesbitt, 2 Phillips, 345, ... 534
In re Oakes, 8 Law Rep. (Mass.), 122, ... 536
In re Otis, 101 N. Y., 380, ... 374
In re Owens, 47 How. Pr. (N. Y.), 150, ... 531
In re Paige, 7 Daly (N. Y.), 155, ... 531
In re Pettit, 2 Paige, 596, ... 533
2 Paige (N. Y.), 174, ... 534
In re Plank, 5 Clark (Pa.), 35, ... 526
In re Roberts, 3 Johns. Ch., 48, ... 532
In re Rodgers, 9 Abb. N. C. (N Y), 141, . . . 520, 525, 527, 528
In re Rogers, 1 Hulst. Ch. (N. J.), 46, ... 529, 530
In re Root, 8 Paige (N. Y.), 635, ... 530
In re Russell, 1 Barb. Ch. (N. Y.), 38, ... 528, 528
In re Salisbury, 3 Johns. Ch. (N. Y.), 347, ... 534
In re Sartain, 14 Eq. (N. C.), 231, ... 534
In re Taylor, 9 Paige (N. Y.), 611, ... 531, 533
In re Tracy, 1 Paige (N. Y.), 580, ... 523
In re Wage, 6 Paige (N. Y.), 11, ... 526
In re Webb, 2 Phillips, 10, ... 531
In re White, 1 Barb. Ch., 45, ... 533
In re White, 2 C. E. Green (N. J.), 274, ... 530
In re Willoughby, 11 Paige (N. Y.), 257, ... 534
Ins Co. *v.* Foley, 105 U. S., 350, ... 139
Ins Co. *v.* Gray, 91 Ill., 139, ... 153
Ins. Co. *v.* Gridley, 100 U. S., 614, ... 153
Irving Stuart *v.* State, 1 Baxt., 178, ... 509
Isitt *v.* Railway Passenger Assurance Co, L. R. 22, Q. B. Div., 504, . 165

JACKLIN *v.* National Life Assn., 94 N. Y. S., 746, ... 151
Jackson *v.* Jackson, 39 N. Y., 153, ... 398
Jackson *v.* King, 4 Cow., 207, ... 393
Jamison *v.* People, 145 Ill., 357, ... 508, 509, 512
Jeffries *v.* Life Insurance Co., 22 Wall., 47, ... 134
Jemisch's Case, 3 Abb. N. C., 200, ... 464
Jenkins *v.* State, 18 S. E. R., 992, ... 496
Jewell *v.* Colby, 24 Atl., 902, ... 393
Johnson *v.* Stone, 35 Hun, 380, ... 396
Johnson's Will, 37 N. Y. St. Rep., 846, ... 409
Jones *v.* Angell, 95 Ind., 376, ... 539
Jones *v.* Hughes, 15 Abb. N. C., 141, ... 388
Jones *v.* Jones, 63 Hun, 630, ... 361
137 N. Y., 610, ... 392

PAGE

Jordan *v.* People, 19 Col., 417, ... 510
Julke *v.* Adam, 1 Redf., 454, ... 409

KEARNEY *v.* State, 68 Miss., 238, ... 424, 509, 511
Keeler *v.* Keeler, 20 N. Y. St. Rep., 439, ... 407
Keithley *v.* Stafford, 126 Ill., 507 405
Kelly *v.* Com., 1 Grant (Pa.) Cas., 484, ... 501
Kelly *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 216, ... 489, 492
Kennedy *v.* Johnson, 65 Pa. St., 451, ... 533, 535
Kenny *v.* People, 31 N. Y., 330, ... 495, 503
Kenworth *v.* Williams, 5 Ind., 375, ... 520
Kenyon *v.* Knight Templars' Aid Assn., 122 N. Y., 247, . . . 136
Kern *v.* Kern, 51 N. J. Eq., 574, ... 385
Kiedaisch's Will, 12 N. Y. Supp., 255, ... 402
Kimball *v.* Fisk, 39 N. H., 110, ... 525
King *v.* Harvey & Chapman, 2 Barn. & Cress., 257, ... 539
King *v.* State, 90 Ala., 612, ... 500, 502, 503
King *v.* State, 91 Tenn., 617, ... 509
Kingsley *v.* Blanchard, 66 Barb., 317, ... 420
Knickerbocker Casualty Ins. Co. *v.* Jordan, 11 Ins. L. J., 475, . . 162
Kroenung *v.* Goehri, 112 Mo., 641, ... 380
Krom *v.* Schoonmaker, 3 Barb., 647, ... 393

LA BAU *v.* Vanderbilt, 3 Redf., 384, ... 396
Lackey *v.* Cunningham, 56 Pa. St., 373, ... 529
Lackey *v.* Lackey, 8 B. Mon., 107, ... 524
Lamb *v.* Lamb, 105 Ind., 456, ... 399
Lamoureaux *v.* Crosby, 2 Paige, 422, ... 374
Lawrence *v.* Acc. Ins. Co., L. R., 7 Q. B. Div., 216, ... 163
Leach *v.* Prebster, 39 Ind., 492, ... 512
Leache *v.* State, 3 S. W. R., 539, ... 449
Levis Estate, 140 Pa. St., 179, ... 409
Lewis *v.* Arbuckle, 52 N. W., 237, ... 392
Lewis *v.* Jones, 50 Barb., 645, ... 409
Life Ins. Co. *v.* Francisco, 17 Wall., 672, ... 148
Life Ins. Co. *v.* McTague, 49 N. J. L., 587, ... 156
Life Ins. Co. *v.* Schultz, 73 Ill., 586, ... 156
Life Ins. Co. *v.* Trust Co., 112 U. S., 250, ... 145
Lincoln's Case, 1 Brewster's (Pa.), 392, ... 526
Link *v.* Sheldon, 136 N. Y., 1, ... 511
Loftus *v.* Maloney, 89 Va., 576, ... 382
Long *v.* Bowen, 94 Ky., 540, ... 394
Long *v.* Morrison, 14 Ind., 595, ... 539
Look *v.* Choate, 108 Mass., 116, ... 541
Lopez *v.* State, 30 Tex. App., 487, ... 514
Lott *v.* Sweet, 38 Mich., 308, ... 536
Lovegrove *v.* State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 491, ... 425, 437, 509

PAGE
Ludwick v. Com., 18 Pa. St., 175, ... 529
Luper v. State, 29 Tex. App., 63, ... 500
Lynch v. Doran, 95 Mich., 395, ... 379

McAfee v. Com. 3 B. Mon., 305, ... 524
McCallum v. Life Ins. Co., 55 Hun, 108, ... 144
McCannless v. McWha, 22 Pa., 261, ... 539
McCarty v. Com. (Ky.), 20 S. W. R., 229, ... 492
McClackey v. State, 5 Tex. App., 330, ... 513
McCleary v. Barcelon, 6 Ohio C. L. R., 481, ... 374
McCook v. State, 91 Ga., 740, ... 492, 496, 505
McCury v. Hooper, 12 Ala., 823, ... 525
McDonald v. Martin, 1 Mass., 543, ... 529, 531
McFarland's Trial, 8 Abb. Pr. N. S., 57, ... 432, 453
McGinnis v. Kempsey, 27 Mich., 363, ... 420
McGrath v. Metropolitan Life Ins. Co., 6 N. Y. St. Rep., 376, . . 145
McGurk v. Life Ins. Co., 56 Conn., 528, ... 136
McIntire v. Sholty, 121 Ill., 660, ... 393
McKechnie's Trustees v. Scottish Acc. Ins. Co., 17 Sess. Cas. (S. C.), 6, 166
McKillop v. Duluth St. Ry. Co., 53 Minn., 532, ... 392
McLaughlin Will, 2 Redf., 504, ... 399, 409
McLean v. Breese, 109 N. C., 564, ... 534
McLeod v. State, 31 Tex. Cr. R., 331, ... 510
McNaghten Case, 10 Clark & Finnelly, H. L. Cases, 200, . . . 421
McNaghten's Case, 67 Hansard, 724 471
Mace v. Provident Life Ins. Assn., 101 N. C., 122, ... 152
Maddox v. Maddox, 114 Mo., 35, ... 399
Malone's Appeal, 79 Pa. St., 481, ... 530
Manhattan Life Ins. Co. v. Broughton, 109 U. S., 121, . . . 162
Martin v. Moltsinger (Ind.), 30 N. E., 523, ... 525
Martin v. Thayer, 37 W. Va., 38, ... 398
Martinez v. Moll, 46 Fed. Rep., 724, ... 376
Marx v. McGlynn, 88 N. Y., 370, ... 399
Massengale v. State, 6 S. W. R., 35, ... 458
Massie v. Com. (Ky.), 24 S. W. Rep., 611, ... 512
Matchen v. Matchen, 6 Barr (Pa.), 332, ... 385
Matter of Bartholick, 5 N. Y. Supp., 842, ... 402
Matter of Becket, 103 N. Y., 167, ... 405
Matter of Beckwith, 3 Hun, 443, ... 374
Matter of Bennett, 6 N. Y. Supp., 199, ... 402
Matter of Berrien, 5 N. Y. Supp., 37, ... 402
Matter of Budlong, 126 N. Y., 423, ... 399
Matter of Clark, 5 Misc. (N. Y.), 68, ... 400
Matter of Darling, 6 N. Y. Supp., 191, ... 402
Matter of Dixon, 11 Abb. N. C. (N. Y.), 118, ... 541
Matter of Finn, 54 N. Y. St. Rep., 301, ... 399
Matter of Forman, 54 Barb., 274, ... 406, 407

PAGE
Matter of Fricke, 19 N. Y. Supp., 315, ... 401, 402
Matter of Gray, 5 N. Y. Supp., 464, ... 400, 402
Matter of Green, 67 Hun, 527, ... 400
Matter of Gross, 14 N. Y. St. R., 429, ... 400
Matter of Hathaway, 80 Hun, 186, ... 533
Matter of Hoover, 19 D. C., 495, ... 398
Matter of Jones, 5 Misc. (N. Y.), 199, ... 405
Matter of Loewenstein, 2 Misc. (N. Y.), 328, ... 404
Matter of Mabie, 5 Misc. (N. Y.), 179, ... 402
Matter of McCarthy, 48 N. Y. St. Rep., 315, ... 404
Matter of Martin, 98 N. Y., 193, ... 401
Matter of Merriam, 16 N. Y. Supp., 738, ... 400, 402
Matter of Morgan, 7 Paige, 236, ... 374
Matter of Patterson, 26 Abb. N. C., 395, ... 402
Matter of Peck, 42 N. Y. St. Rep., 898, ... 408
Matter of Perego, 65 Hun, 478, ... 405
Matter of Raynor, 44 N. Y. St. Rep., 468, ... 404
Matter of Reed, 20 N. Y. Supp., 97, ... 409
Matter of Schreiber, 22 N. Y. St. Rep., 892, ... 405
Matter of Silverthorn, 68 Wis., 372, ... 401
Matter of Smith, 95 N. Y., 516, ... 401
Matter of Snelling, 136 N. Y., 515, ... 399, 402, 510
Matter of Soule, 22 Abb. N. C., 236, ... 395
Matter of Staudermann, 3 Abb. N. C., 187, ... 427, 460
Matter of Stewart, 15 N. Y. Supp., 601, ... 402
Matter of Stillman, 29 N. Y. State Rep., 213, ... 405
Matter of Tracy, 11 N. Y. State Rep., 103, ... 405
Matter of Vedder, 6 Dem. (N. Y.), 92, ... 407, 408
Matter of Watson, 39 N. Y. St. Rep., 42, ... 405
Matter of Wheeler, 5 Misc. (N. Y.), 279, ... 405
Matter of Williams, 19 N. Y. Supp., 778, ... 402
Matter of Williams, 46 N. Y. St. Rep., 775, ... 400
Matter of Williams, 40 N. Y. State Rep., 356, ... 400, 405
May *v.* Bradlee, 127 Mass., 414, ... 511
May *v.* May, 109 Mass., 252, ... 532
Mayo *v.* Jones, 78 N. C., 402, ... 420
Mebany *v.* Mebany, 59 Ind., 257, ... 528
Medlock *v.* Cogburn, Vol. B., Rich. Eq., 477, ... 524
Mendenhall *v.* Tungate, 95 Ky., 208, ... 404
Meyer *v.* St. L. I. M. and S. Ry. Co., 54 Fed. Rep., 116, . . . 393
Miller *v.* Life Ins. Co., 34 Iowa, 222; 39 Ia., 304, ... 138
Miller *v.* Mutual Benefit Co., 31 Iowa, 216, 227, ... 133
Miller *v.* State (Wyo.), 29 Pac. Rep., 186, ... 509
Mitchell *v.* Kingman, 5 Pick., 431, ... 373
Modawell *v.* Holmes, 40 Ala., 291, ... 522
Moett *v.* People, 85 N. Y., 379, ... 446
Molton *v.* Henderson, 62 Ala., 426, ... 525

PAGE

Moneypenny, Estate of, 1 Month. L. Bul., 7, ... 409
Montag v. People, 141 Ill., 75, ... 436, 509
Moore v. Com., 92 Ky., 630, ... 509
Morgan's Case, 3 Blandf. Ch. (Md.), 332, ... 527
Morrison v. Life Ins. Co., 59 Wis., 162, ... 146
Morse v. Crawford, 17 Vt., 499, ... 512
Morton v. Sims, 64 Ga., 398, ... 534
Mott v. Mott, 49 N. J. Eq., 193, ... 374
Murphy v. Com., 92 Ky., 485, ... 458, 511
Mut. L. Ins. Co. v. Hunt, 79 N. Y., 541, ... 374
Myers v. Knabe, 51 Kas., 730, ... 376
Myers' Estate, 1 Myrick Prob. Rep. (Cal.), 178, ... 533

Naylor v. Naylor, 4 Dana, 329, ... 525
Needham v. Ide, 5 Pick. (Mass.), 510, ... 511
Newhouse v. Godwin, 17 Barb., 236, ... 395
Nichols v. Nichols, 31 Vt., 328, ... 384
Norman v. Ga. Lock Co., 18 S. E., 27, ... 383
Norris v. State, 16 Ala., 776, ... 512
North v. Joslin, 39 Mich., 634, ... 522
Northwestern Mut. Ins. Co. v. Heimann, 98 Ind., 24, . . . 141, 146
Norton v. Moore, 3 Head (Tenn.), 482, ... 512
Norton v. Paxton, 110 Mo., 456, ... 398
Nyce v. Hamilton, 90 Ind., 417, ... 534

O'Brien v. People, 36 N. Y., 276, ... 511
O'Connell v. People, 87 N. Y., 377, ... 509
O'Connor v. Madison, 98 Mich., 183, ... 398
Odd Fellows Mut. Life Ins. Co. v. Rohkopp, 94 Pa. St., 59, . . . 139
O'Grady v. State, 36 Neb., 320, ... 492, 500, 502, 503
O'Neill v. Nolan, 66 Hun, 631, ... 381
Osborn v. State, 26 S. W. R., 625, ... 496
Osterhout v. Shoemaker, 3 Hill, 513, ... 374, 395
Overing's Case, 1 Blandf. Ch. (Md.), 290, ... 526

Page v. Kreky, 137 N. Y., 307, ... 375
Paine v. Aldrick, 133 N. Y., 544, ... 392
Palmer v. Garland, 81 Va., 44, ... 522
Parsee Merchant's Case, 11 Abb. N. S. (N. Y.), 209, ... 535
Parsons v. State, 81 Ala., 577, ... 454, 486
Patterson v. State, 86 Ga., 70, ... 449, 512
Patton v. Thompson, 2 Jones Eq. (N. C.), 411, ... 533
Paul v. Travelers Ins. Co., 112 N. Y., 472, ... 161, 163
Peabody v. Kendel, 145 Ill., 519, ... 379
Peasley v. Life Ins. Co., 15 Hun, 227, ... 154
Peck v. Cary, 27 N. Y., 9, ... 405, 408, 409
People v. Barber, 115 N. Y., 475, ... 458

PAGE

People *v.* Barker, 67 Hun, 649, ... 375
People *v.* Batting, 49 How. Pr., 392, ... 495, 503
People *v.* Bawden, 90 Cal., 195, ... 509
People *v.* Belencia, 21 Cal., 544, ... 501
People *v.* Bemmerly, 98 Cal., 299, ... 509
People *v.* Beno Ville, 3 Abb. N. C., 195, ... 466
People *v.* Borgetto, 99 Mich., 336, ... 512
People *v.* Buchanan, 145 N. Y., 1, ... 513
People *v.* Burns, 2 N. Y. Cr. R., 415, ... 496
People *v.* Carpenter, 102 N. Y., 250, ... 423, 429, 431, 446
People *v.* Casey, 31 Hun, 158, ... 446, 457
People *v.* Cassiano, 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 505, ... 496
People *v.* Clendennin, 91 Cal., 35, ... 425, 449
People *v.* Coleman, 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 1, ... 426, 446
People *v.* Conroy, 2 N. Y. Cr. R., 247, ... 496
People *v.* Davis (Cal.), 36 Pac. Rep., 96, ... 513
People *v.* Dillon, 8 Utah, 92, ... 509
People *v.* Divine, 1 Edm., 594, ... 432, 453
People *v.* Eraud and Bompard, 50 Alb. L. J., 217, ... 465
People *v.* Eubanks, 86 Cal., 295, ... 509
People *ex rel.* Norton *v.* N. Y. Hospital, 3 Abb. N. C., 229, . . 386, 394
People *ex rel.* Smith *v.* Comrs., etc., 100 N. Y., 215, ... 374
People *v.* Fish, 125 N. Y., 136. . . . . 496, 498, 503
People *v.* Foy, 138 N. Y., 664, ... 432
People *v.* Fuller, 2 Park. Cr. R., 223, ... 495
People *v.* Haight, 3 N. Y. Cr. R., 61, ... 429
People *v.* Hall, 48 Mich., 482, ... 510
People *v.* Kerrigan, 73 Cal., 222, ... 442
People *v.* Kline, 1 Edmonds, 13, ... 427, 432, 453
People *v.* Lane, 100 Cal., 379, ... 492, 496, 500, 509
People *v.* Leary, 105 Cal., 486, ... 507
People *v.* Lee Fook, 85 Cal., 300, ... 515
People *v.* McElvaine, 121 N. Y., 250, ... 511
125 N. Y., 596, ... 426, 513
People *v.* McNulty, 93 Cal., 437, ... 509
People *v.* Mills, 3 N. Y. Cr. R., 184, ... 496, 498
People *v.* Montgomery, 13 Abb. Pr. N. S., 207, . . 424, 429, 432, 453
People *v.* Nolan, 7 N. Y. Cr. R., 134, ... 432, 433
People *v.* O'Connell, 62 How. Pr., 436, ... 424, 489
People *v.* O'Dell, 1 Dak., 197, ... 502
People *v.* Osmond, 138 N. Y., 80, ... 427, 434, 457
People *v.* Otto, 38 Hun, 99, ... 446, 507
People *v.* Pine, 2 Barb., 566, ... 424
People *v.* Porter, 2 Park. Cr. R., 14, ... 492
People *v.* Rhinelander, 2 N. Y., Cr. R., 340, ... 429
People *v.* Robinson, 2 Park. Cr. R., 235, ... 492, 495, 505
People *v.* Rogers, 18 N. Y., 9, ... 492, 495, 501

People *v.* Sanford, 43 Cal., 29,
People *v.* Schmitt, 106 Cal., 48,
People *v.* Schuyler, 106 N. Y., 298,
People *v.* Slack, 90 Mich., 448, ... 466,
People *v.* Smiler, 125 N. Y., 717,
People *v.* Sprague, 2 Park. Cr. R., 43,
People *v.* Taylor, 138 N. Y., 398, . 429, 435, 440, 446, 448, 455, 469, 478, 488, 508, 509, 510,
People *v.* Travers, 88 Cal., 233, ... 489, 492,
People *v.* Vincent, 95 Cal., 425, ... 492, 494,
People *v.* Waltz, 50 How. Pr., 214, ... 430,
People *v.* Walworth, 4 N. Y. Cr. R., 355, 395, . . . 431, 446,
People *v.* Ward, 105 Cal., 335,
People *v.* Willey, 2 Park. Cr. R., 19,
People *v.* Wood, 126 N. Y., 249, 269, ... 430,
People *v.* Worthington, 105 Cal., 166,
People *v.* Wreden, 59 Cal., 392,
People *v.* Young, 102 Cal., 411, ... 492,
Perkins *v.* Perkins, 39 N. H., 163,
Person *v.* Warren, 14 Barb., 488,
Petrie *v.* Shoemaker, 24 Wend., 85,
Phelps *v.* Hartwell, 1 Mass., 71,
Pidcock *v.* Potter, 68 Pa. St., 342,
Pienovi's Case, 3 City H. Rec. (N. Y.), 123,
Pigman *v.* State, 14 Ohio, 555,
Pile *v.* Pile, 94 Ky., 308,
Pinney's Will, 27 Minn., 280,
Pirtle *v.* State, 9 Humph. (Tenn.), 663,
Pitt's Estate, 55 N. W., 149,
Plake *v.* State, 121 Ind., 433,
Pohalski *v.* Life Ins. Co., 36 N. Y. Sup. Ct., 234; 56 N. Y., 640,
Polin *v.* State, 14 Neb., 540,
Poole *v.* Richardson, 3 Mass., 330,
Potter *v.* Jones, 20 Ore., 239,
Potts *v.* House, 6 Ga., 324,
Powell *v.* State, 25 Ala., 28,
Powers *v.* Assn., 5 Vt., 630,
Prendergast's Case,
Prentiss *v.* Bates, 88 Mich., 567,
Price *v.* Phœnix Mutual Company, 17 Minn., 473, 497, 504, . 133,

QUAIFE *v.* Chi., etc., R. Co., 48 Wis., 513,

RAMBLER *v.* Tryon, 7 S. and R. (Pa.), 90,
Rather *v.* State (Tex.), 9 S. W. R., 69,
Real *v.* People, 42 N. Y., 270,
Reed *v.* State, 62 Miss., 405,

PAGE

Reese *v.* Reese, 89 Ga., 645, ... 374
Regina *v.* Burton, 3 F. and F., 772, ... 424, 428, 455, 468
Regina *v.* Dodwell, C. C. C., 1878, ... 477, 478
Regina *v.* Edmunds, C. C. C., 1872, ... 444
Regina *v.* Williams, Old Bailey, 1886, ... 508
Re Harris (Del.), 28 Atl., 329, ... 523
Revoir *v.* State, 82 Wis., 295, ... 424, 432, 509
Rex *v.* Wright, R. and R. Cr. Cases, 456, ... 511
Reynolds *v.* Robinson, 64 N. Y., 589, ... 511
Reynolds *v.* Root, 62 Barb., 250, ... 400
Reynolds *v.* U. S., 98 U. S., 145, ... 486
Rice *v.* Peet, 15 Johns., 503, ... 373, 374
Richards, *ex parte*, 2 Brev. (S. C.), 375, ... 521, 531
Richardson *v.* Travelers Ins. Co., 46 Fed. Rep., 843, . . . 161
Riggs *v.* Society, 84 N. Y., 330; 95 N. Y., 503, ... 386
Roberts *v.* People, 19 Mich., 401, ... 505
Rodgers *v.* Walker, 6 Pa. St., 371, ... 525, 529
Rogers *v.* State, 33 Ind., 543, ... 505
Rollwagen *v.* Rollwagen, 3 Hun, 132, ... 404
Rorback *v.* Van Blarcoom, 120 N. J. Eq., 461, ... 525
Rothrock *v.* Rothrock, 22 Or., 551, ... 401
Rottenburg *v.* Fowl, 26 Atl., 338, ... 380
Rowden *v.* Rowden, 28 Ala., 565, ... 520
Rutherford *v.* Morris, 77 Ill., 397, ... 512

St. Louis, etc., Ry. Co. *v.* Bradley, 13 U. S. App., 68, . . . 511
Scalf *v.* Collin, 80 Tex., 514, ... 392
Schafer *v.* Diedrich, 44 N. W., 911, ... 376
Schafer *v.* Kulzer, 44 N. W., 911, ... 376
Schafer *v.* Lehner, 44 N. W., 911, ... 376
Schlencker *v.* State, 9 Neb., 241, ... 511
Schols *v.* Universal Co., 42 Cal., 523, ... 144
Scott *v.* State, 12 Tex. App., 31, ... 501
Seaman's Friend So. *v.* Hopper, 33 N. Y., 619, ... 391, 406
Shaffer *v.* List, 114 Pa. St., 486, ... 535
Shakespeare *v.* Markham, 72 N. Y., 400, ... 377
Sharpe *v.* Commercial Travelers Mut. Acc. Assn., 37 N. W. Rep., 353, ... 163
Shufflin *v.* People, 62 N. Y., 229, ... 434
Shultz *v.* State, 37 Neb., 481, ... 512
Sinclair *v.* Life Ins. Co., 9 Ins. L. J., 523, ... 154
Sinclair *v.* Maritime Co., 3 Ellis & Ellis, 478, ... 142, 160
Sindram *v.* People, 1 N. Y. Cr. R., 448, ... 428
Singleton *v.* St. Louis Mutual Co., 66 Mo., 61, ... 143
Smee *v.* Smee, L. R., 5 P. D., 84, ... 420
Smith *v.* Acc. Ins. Co., L. R., 5 Exch., 302, ... 166
Smith *v.* Com., 93 Ky., 318, ... 424, 432, 509

PAGE

Smith *v.* Ottman (La.), 15 So., 310, ... 388
Smith *v* Pipkin, 77 N. C., 569, ... 522
Smith *v.* State, 55 Ark., 259, ... 469, 470
Smith *v.* State, 31 Tex. App., 19 S. W. Rep., 252, ... 509
Smith's Will, 52 Wis., 544, ... 407
Snyder *v.* Sherman, 23 Hun, 139, ... 396, 406
Snyder *v.* Snyder (Ill.), 31 N. E., 330, ... 520
Southard *v.* Railway Passengers Ass. Co., 34 Conn., 574, . . . 166
Speller's Estate, 2 Pa. Dist. R., 513, ... 400
Spencer *v.* State, 69 Md., 28, ... 442
Spencer's Estate, 96 Cal., 448, ... 407
Spitz *v.* Mutual Benefit Assn., 25 N. Y. Supp., 469, ... 153
Springfield *v.* State, 96 Ala., 81, ... 492, 497, 500
Stannart *v.* Barns, 63 Vt., 244, ... 375, 376
Stanton *v.* Wetherwax, 16 Barb. (N. Y.), 259, ... 520
State *v.* Alexander, 30 S. C., 74, ... 437, 450
State *v.* Ashley, 45 La. Ann., 1,036, ... 492, 493, 500
State *v.* Baber, 74 Mo., 292, ... 510
State *v.* Beard, 47 Mo., 301, ... 523
State *v.* Brooks (Wash.), 30 Pac. Rep., 147, ... 512
State *v.* Crisp (Mo.), 29 S. W. Rep., 699, ... 511
State *v.* Davis, 109 N. C., 780, ... 424, 509
State *v.* Erb, 74 Mo., 199, ... 512
State *v.* Felter, 25 Iowa, 67, ... 453
State *v.* Feltes, 51 Iowa, 495, ... 510
State *v.* Fiske, 63 Conn., 388, ... 492, 493, 500
State *v.* Geddis, 42 Iowa, 268, ... 511
State *v.* Hansen, 25 Ore., 391, ... 493, 500, 509, 512
State *v.* Harrison, 36 W. Va., 729, ... 440, 441, 449, 450, 514
State *v.* Hayden, 51 Vt., 296, ... 511
State *v.* Hill, 46 La. Ann., 27, ... 500, 509
State *v.* Hurst (Idaho), 39 Pac. Rep., 554, ... 512
State *v.* Johnson, 40 Conn., 136, ... 501, 505
State *v.* Jones, 50 N. H., 369, ... 486
State *v.* Klinger, 46 Mo., 224, ... 512
State *v.* Leehman, 2 S. D., 171, ... 441, 510, 512, 514
State *v.* Leuth, 5 Ohio Cir. Ct. R., 94, ... 514
State *v.* Levelle, 34 S. C., 120, ... 442, 449
State *v.* Lewis, 20 Nev., 333, ... 469
State *v.* McDaniel, 115 N. C., 807, ... 507
State *v* McIntosh, 40 S. C., 349, ... 424, 449
State *v.* Maier, 36 W. Va., 757, ... 425, 512
State *v.* Miller, 111 Mo., 542, ... 449
State *v.* Morgan, 40 S. C., 345, ... 493, 500
State *v.* Mowry, 15 Pac. R., 282, ... 449
State *v.* Murphy, 118 Mo., 7, ... 493
State *v.* Newlin, 69 Ind., 108, ... 511

PAGE

State *v.* O'Neil, 51 Kan., 651, ... 424, 493, 500
State *v.* O'Reilly (Mo. Sup.), 29 S. W. R., 577, ... 505
State *v.* Pagels, 92 Mo., 300, ... 449
State *v.* Pike, 49 N. H., 399, ... 454, 512
State *v.* Potts, 100 N. C., 457, ... 454, 507
State *v.* Reidell, 9 Del., 470, ... 456
State *v.* Rippy, 104 N. C., 752, ... 466
State *v.* Schaefer, 116 Mo., 96, ... 425, 440, 441, 509
State *v.* Scott, 41 Minn., 365, ... 449
State *v.* Swift, 57 Conn., 496, ... 436
State *v.* Wilcox, 24 Minn., 143, ... 522
State *v.* Williamson, 106 Mo., 162, ... 512
State *v.* Wilson, 104 N. C., 863, ... 490, 492, 505
State *v.* Windsor, 5 Harr., 512, ... 453
State *v.* Zorn, 22 Ore., 591, ... 425, 490, 498, 509, 512
Stewart, *in re*, 59 Hun, 618, ... 405
Stewart *v.* Lispenard, 26 Wend., 255, ... 395
Stockmeyer *v.* Tobin, 139 U. S., 176, ... 376
Stuckey *v.* Mathes, 24 Hun, 461, ... 384
Sullivan *v.* Flynn, 20 D. C., 396, ... 377
Supreme Council A. L. H. *v.* Green, 71 Md., 263, ... 152
Sutherland *v.* Hankins, 56 Ind., 343, ... 512
Swenarton *v.* Hancock, 9 Abb. N. C., 326, ... 396, 410

T

Taff *v.* Hosmer, 14 Mich., 309, ... 420
Taylor *v.* Com., 90 Va., 109, ... 427
Taylor *v.* Pegram, 151 Ill., 106, ... 398
Tebout's Case, 9 Abb. Pr., 211, ... 526, 527
Terrill *v.* State, 74 Wis., 278, ... 490
Thomas *v.* State, 71 Miss., 345, ... 449, 450
Thompson *v.* Thompson, 21 Barb., 107, ... 395
Thurman *v.* State, 32 Neb., 224, ... 469, 470, 479
Toomes Estate, 54 Cal., 509, ... 511
Townsend *v.* Pepperell, 99 Mass., 40, ... 511
Traill *v.* Baring, 4 De G., J. and S., 318, ... 152
Trezevant *v.* Rains, 85 Tex., 329, ... 398
Trish *v.* Newell, 62 Ill., 196, ... 420
Trustees of Poor *v.* Jacobs, 6 Houston (Del.), 330, ... 535
Tullis *v.* Kidd, 12 Ala., 648, ... 510
Tunison *v.* Tunison, 4 Bradf., 138, ... 406
Turner *v.* Cook, 36 Ind., 129, ... 420
Turner *v.* U. N. Bank, 10 Utah, 77, ... 382
Turner *v.* Utah Title Ins. Co., etc., Co., 10 Utah, 61, ... 382
Turner *v.* Wells, Fargo & Co., 10 Utah, 75, ... 382
U. S. *v.* Drew, 5 Mason, 28, ... 501
U. S. *v.* Faulkner, 35 Fed. Rep., 730, ... 446

PAGE

U. S. v. Guiteau, 3 Crim. Law Mag., 347, ... 510
U. S. v. Hopt, 104 U. S., 631, ... 501
U. S. v. McGlue, 1 Curt., 1, ... 501
United States Mut. Acc. Assn. v. Barry, 131 U. S., 100-111, . . 165
United States Mut. Acc. Assn. v. Newman, 84 Va., 52, . . . 161
Upstone v. People, 109 Ill., 169, ... 512

VALENTINE v. Lunt, 115 N. Y., 496, ... 386
Van Alst v. Hunter, 5 Johns. Ch., 148, ... 406
Vanauken's Case, 2 Stock. Ch. (N. J.), 186, 190, . . . 512, 523
Van Deusen v. Newcomer, 40 Mich., 90, ... 536
Van Deuser v. Sweet, 51 N. Y., 378, ... 374, 385, 386
Van Guysling v. Kuren, 35 N. Y., 70, ... 402, 405
Vanosdel v. Hyce, 46 La. Ann., 387, ... 379
Van Wyck v. Brasher, 260, ... 386
Volker v. Metropolitan Life Ins. Co., 21 N. Y. S., 456, . . . 150
Vose v. Life Ins. Co., 6 Cush., 42, ... 144

WADE v. Holbrook, 2 Redf., 378, ... 401
Wadsworth v. Sharpsteen, 8 N. Y., 388, ... 374
Wagner v. State, 116 Ind., 181, ... 490
Walker v. People, 26 Hun, 67; 88 N. Y., 81, ... 445, 446
Walker v. Russell, 10 S. Ca., 82, ... 528
Walker v. State, 91 Ala., 76, ... 509
Walker v. State, 136 Ind., 663, ... 513
Walker v. Walker, 14 Ga., 242, ... 512
Wallis v. Luhring, 134 Ind., 447 398
Walsh v. People, 88 N. Y., 458, ... 437
Ward v. State, 96 Ala., 100, ... 513
Warner v. State, 56 N. J. L., 686, ... 496
Waterman v. Whitney, 11 N. Y., 157, ... 420
Watson v. Donnelly, 28 Barb., 653, ... 398
Watson v. Mainwaring, 4 Taunton's Rep., 763, ... 148
Weaver's Appeal, 116 Pa. St., 225, ... 527, 530
Webb v. State, 5 Tex. App., 596, ... 512
Webster v. Woodward, 3 Day, 90, ... 373
Weir v. Myers, 34 Pa. St., 377, ... 531
Westcott v. Sheppard, 51 N. J. Eq., 315, ... 398
Westerfield v. Jackson, 3 N. Y. St. Rep., 353, ... 374
Wheeler v. State, 34 Ohio St., 394, ... 521
Wheeler's Will, 56 N. Y. St. Rep., 709, ... 396
White v. Davis, 17 N. Y. Supp., 548, ... 392
62 Hun, 622, ... 381
White v. Ross, 48 N. Y. State Rep., 599, ... 395
Whitney v. Piedmont Ins. Co., 4 Bigelow's L. and Acc. Ins. Rep., 361, ... 151

PAGE

Whitney *v.* Twombly, 136 Mass., 145, ... 398
Wilkinson *v.* Pearson, 23 Pa. St., 117, ... 512
Williams *v.* Hays, 143 N. Y., 442, ... 393
Williams *v.* State, 50 Ark., 511, ... 436
Williams *v.* Williams, 2 Hun, 111, ... 536
Williams *v.* Williams, 23 S. W., 789, ... 407
Willis *v.* Lewis, 5 Ired. Law (N. C.), 14, ... 531
Willis *v.* People, 32 N. Y., 717, ... 430, 431, 446
Willis *v.* Willis, 12 Pa. St., 159, ... 525
Winspear *v.* Accident Co., L. R., 6 Q. B. Div., 42, ... 164
Wood *v.* State, 58 Miss., 741, ... 512
Wray *v.* Wray, 19 Ala., 522, ... 384
Wright *v.* Wright, 139 Mass., 177, ... 382, 383
Wyman *v.* Gould, 47 Me., 159, ... 511

Youn *v.* Lamont, 56 Minn., 216, ... 380

INDEX.

PAGE

ACCIDENT INSURANCE, see Insurance
AMAUROSIS, ... 19
AMBLYOPIA, ... 19
ASTIGMATISM, ... 7
AUDITION (see Ear)

BLINDNESS, simulated, ... 19

CARE OF INSANE, see Incompetent persons

DELUSIONS, see Insanity
DEMENTIA, see Insanity, medical aspect of
DIPLOPIA, ... 16, 44
DIPSOMANIA, see Insanity

EAR, injuries to, ... 113
to external auditory canal, ... 115
to external ear, ... 113
to drum, ... 133
to drum-head, ... 117
EYE, see Eyeball, Eyelids, Orbit, Vision
affections of, intentionally produced, ... 28
astigmatic, ... 7
burns of, ... 56
emmetropic, ... 6
foreign bodies in, ... 77
hypermetropic, ... 7
injuries to, ... 30
to the eyeball, ... 59
to the lids, ... 53
to the orbit, ... 30
myopic, ... 10
normal, ... 6
sympathetic diseases of, ... 90
inflammation of, ... 92
irritation of, ... 90

PAGE

EYEBALL, see Eyelids, Orbit, Vision
cataract, traumatic 66
chamber of vitreous, penetrating wounds of 76
chambers, foreign bodies in 80
choroid, rupture of 72
ciliary body, foreign bodies in 80
wounds of 74
conjunctiva, contusions of 60
foreign bodies in 78
cornea, contusions of 62
foreign bodies in 78
wounds of 73
crystalline lens, affections of 66
congenital dislocations of 71
dislocations of 65
foreign bodies in 83
luxations of 66
subluxations of 69
wounds of 74
dislocations of 69
evulsion of 60
exophthalmos, pulsating 50
injuries to 59
iris, affections of 64
foreign bodies in 80
wounds of 75
retina, detachment of 72
staphylomas 44
vitreous, foreign bodies in 85
wounds of 72
EYELIDS, see Eyeball, Orbit
conjunctiva, contusions of 60
foreign bodies in 78
contusions of 53
foreign bodies in 77
injuries to 53
ptosis, traumatic 55
wounds of 54

HALLUCINATIONS, see Insanity, medical aspect of
HYDROPHOBIA 16
HYPERMETROPIA 7, 17
HYPERPHORIA 16

IDIOCY, see Insanity
ILLUSIONS, see Insanity, medical aspect of
IMBECILITY, see Insanity

PAGE
INCOMPETENT PERSONS, care and custody of, and their estates, . . 519
care of, ... 535
committees, ... 531
committment of, ... 536
confinement of, ... 536
costs in lunacy proceedings, ... 530
false certificate, ... 539
guardians of, ... 531
inquisition, ... 523
commission, ... 525
finding of, ... 527
notice of, ... 523
petition, ... 525
liability of examiner for false certificate, ... 539
for illegal detention, ... 540
management of estates of, ... 532
restraint of, ... 535
statutes relating to
in Alabama, ... 542
in Arkansas, ... 550
in California, ... 554
in Colorado, ... 558
in Connecticut, ... 561
in Delaware, ... 564
in Florida, ... 565
in Georgia, ... 566
in Idaho, ... 568
in Illinois, ... 569
in Indiana, ... 574
in Iowa, ... 576
in Kansas, ... 581
in Kentucky, ... 586
in Louisiana, ... 588
in Maine, ... 589
in Maryland, ... 593
in Massachusetts, ... 595
in Michigan, ... 599
in Minnesota, ... 602
in Mississippi, ... 605
in Missouri, ... 607
in Montana, ... 609
in Nebraska, ... 611
in Nevada, ... 613
in New Hampshire, ... 615
in New Jersey, ... 617
in New York, ... 621
in North Carolina, ... 628

PAGE

INCOMPETENT PERSONS, statutes relating to,
in North and South Dakota, ... 631
in Ohio, ... 633
in Oregon, ... 636
in Pennsylvania, ... 639
in Rhode Island, ... 643
in Tennessee, ... 645
in Texas, ... 648
in Vermont, ... 652
in Virginia, ... 654
in Washington, ... 656
in West Virginia, ... 658
in Wisconsin, ... 660
supersedeas, ... 529
writ of habeas corpus, ... 541
INJURIES to the ear, see Ear, injuries to
to the eye, see Eye, Eyeball, Eyelids, Orbit, Vision
INSANE PERSONS, see Incompetent persons, Insanity, Insurance, accident
INSANITY IN ITS LEGAL RELATIONS, ... 371–516
Insanity, relations of, to contracts, ... 373–385
idiot defined, ... 371
illustrative cases as to contract of insane persons, . . 377–383
insane person defined, ... 371
insane persons, agreements of, not voidable before inquisition, 373
insane persons, agreements of, voidable after inquisition, . 374
insane persons, contracts of for necessaries not void or voidable, ... 374, 375
insanity, classification of, by various writers, . 371, 372, 373
insanity, common-law rule not now followed, . . . 373
insanity not apparent or known sometimes does not render contracts voidable, ... 374–376
insanity, relations of, to civil law, ... 373
lucid intervals, ... 383
lunatic defined, ... 371
marriage contract, how affected by insanity, . . . 384, 385
non compos mentis defined, ... 371
statutes of limitation do not run against insane persons, . 375
taxation of lunatic's property, ... 375
undue influence, rule as to, ... 377, 380
weakness, mere physical and mental, does not incapacitate, 376
Criminal Responsibility, insanity as a defence to crime, . 421–516
abnormity or insufficiency of mind, when consistent with criminal responsibility, ... 426, 427
adultery, how far a provocation, ... 434, 435
belief in spirits, when no defence, ... 430, 431
burden of proof as to insanity, ... 508–510

PAGE

INSANITY IN ITS LEGAL RELATIONS,

Criminal Responsibility, delirium tremens, ... 490
delusional insanity, ... 467–488
dipsomania, ... 506
disease not causing mental unsoundness, when sufficient excuse, ... 431, 432
epilepsy and kindred diseases, ... 437–439
evidence in cases of insanity, ... 510–512
evidence of non-experts, ... 511, 512
excentricity or abnormality of character, . . . 428, 429
expert testimony in cases of insanity, ... 510, 511
fever, delirium from, ... 466, 467
fixed or complete insanity, ... 425, 426
frenzy not amounting to total derangement no excuse, . . 433
hypnotism, ... 464–466
impulsive insanity or irresistible impulse, 441, 446–455, 485–488
impulsive insanity, rule in New York as to, . . . 441–449
insanity must be such as to affect the particular act, . 424, 425
intermediate states between sanity and insanity, . . 435–437
intoxication, ... 488–508
intoxication, involuntary, ... 504
kleptomania, ... 467
mania and melancholia, ... 455–464
melancholia and mania, ... 455–464
melancholia, passion, or irritability, when no excuse, . . 429
mesmerism, ... 464–466
moral insanity, no defence, ... 441
overdose of medicine, delirium from, ... 466, 467
partial insanity, ... 439–446
partial or moral insanity, illustrative cases of, . . 441–446
plea of insanity, practice, ... 512–516
practice in insanity cases, ... 512–516
somnambulism, ... 464
statutory rule in New York as to criminal responsibility, . 423
temporary excitement or passion, when no excuse, . . 432
theory of the law in England and United States favors a right and wrong test, ... 421, 422
weakmindedness, ... 427

Deeds, ... 386, 393
burden of proof in actions to set aside deed, ... 392
contract of habitual drunkard, ... 386, 387
deed of habitual drunkard, ... 386
deed of insane person absolutely void, ... 386
deed of insane person void even as to mortgagee in good faith of grantee, ... 386
delusions not relating to subject-matter of deed do not incapacitate, ... 388

PAGE

INSANITY, MEDICAL ASPECT OF,
attention, ... 180
arrested cerebral development, ... 364
brain, cortex of, ... 185
physiological function of, ... 189
change of personality, ... 184
chorea in insanity, ... 326
classification, ... 180, 224
conduct, ... 199
consciousness, ... 178
coprolalia, ... 283
cortex of brain, ... 185
criminal brain, ... 179, 223
delirium, ... 208
delusions, ... 203
best proof of insanity, ... 184
concealment of, ... 205
definition of, ... 203
imperative conceptions, ... 204
legal definition of, ... 206
of persecution, ... 294
of special senses, ... 203
remission of, ... 206
systematized, ... 204
unsystematized, ... 204
without relation to the act, ... 177
dementia, ... 220
complete, ... 257
heredity in, ... 256
loss of identity in, ... 258
primary, ... 256
secondary, ... 257
senile, ... 361
varieties of, ... 260
with agitation, ... 260
with apathy, ... 262
dipsomania, ... 285
duration of time in thought, ... 180
ear, the insane, ... 210
eccentricity in dress, ... 200
ego, the, ... 178
epileptic insanity, ... 319
etiology, ... 189
age, ... 190
alcohol, ... 196
anæmia, ... 194
anæsthetics, ... 197

Page.

Diseases, mental, effect on,
etiology, mental knowledge,
change of climate,
civilization,
cookery, etc.,
exercises,
forms,
gout,
heredity,
idiocy,
inheritance of skills,
injuries,
medicine,
marriage,
meningitis,
morphia,
multiple sclerosis,
nervous disease,
occupation,
operations,
sex,
solar origin,
subjects,
temperature,
thirst,
syphilis,
table of cases,
observations,
causes,
eye-symptoms,
facial expression,
feeling,
general sensibility,
general sensibility,
hallucinations defined,
causes of visual, in the blind,
special senses affected in hallucinations,
hardening,
heredity in diagnosis,
hemiplegia,
[illegible],
[illegible],
[illegible],

PAGE

INSANITY, MEDICAL ASPECTS OF
impulse, irresistible, ... 271
impulsive insanity, ... 270
indications of, ... 199
insan neurosis, ... 184
insanity, affective, ... 265
alcoholic, ... 354
causes of, ... 186
chorea in, ... 326
clinical aspect of, ... 184
epileptic, ... 319
from constitutional neuroses, ... 307
homicidal, ... 272
hysterical, ... 314
impulsive, ... 270
legal definition of, ... 182
medical definition of, ... 184
predisposing causes of, ... 189
religious, ... 302
syphilitic, ... 358
terminology of, ... 187
what is? 182
intellection, ... 180
judgment, ... 180
kleptomania, ... 279
in general paresis, ... 279
letters of the insane, ... 172, 216
loss of free-will, ... 265
lucid interval, ... 205
mania, ... 220
acute delirious, ... 339
criminal acts in, ... 255
defined, ... 250
dementia in, ... 253
forms of, ... 250
hallucinations, etc., of, ... 250
letter-writing in, ... 253
onset of, ... 250
physical condition in, ... 251
transitory, ... 287
manner, changes in, ... 213
masturbation, ... 216
melancholia, ... 220, 229
case, Field's, ... 232
with homicidal intent, ... 248
cataleptic state in, ... 248
chronic, ... 247

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

PAGE

INSANITY, MEDICAL ASPECT OF,
thought, evolution of, ... 179
mechanism of, ... 178
INSURANCE, ACCIDENT, ... 157
accident and disease distinguished, ... 160
accident policy—what it insures against, ... 157
asphyxiation by coal gas, ... 161
by illuminating gas, ... 161
death construed accidental:
asphyxiation, ... 161
drowning, ... 162
suicide while insane, ... 162
death construed not accidental:
malignant pustule, ... 158
sunstroke, ... 160
disease causing accident, ... 163
fits, ... 164
of brain and heart, ... 163
disease—the result of accident, ... 163
general doctrine, ... 165
duodenitis, ... 165
erysipelas, ... 166
hernia, ... 166
kidney disease, ... 166
peritonitis, ... 164
pneumonia, ... 165, 166
drowning—evidence of, ... 168
an accident, ... 162
rising of body, ... 168
duodenitis—caused by accident, ... 165
erysipelas—caused by accident, ... 166
fits, ... 164
goose skin, ... 168
hernia—caused by accident, ... 166
kidney disease, ... 166
malignant pustule, ... 158
medical and surgical treatment, ... 167
peritonitis—caused by accident, ... 164
pneumonia—caused by accident, ... 165, 166
suicide while insane, ... 162
sunstroke, ... 160
INSURANCE, LIFE, ... 129
application for, ... 131
classification of statements in, ... 135
consumption, ... 144, 153
delirium tremens, ... 138, 139
disease—what is? 141

Page

[illegible]
[illegible]—[illegible]
[illegible] 141
[illegible] 144
[illegible] 141
[illegible] 144–146
[illegible] 143
[illegible] 143, 145
[illegible] 144
[illegible]—[illegible] 153–154
[illegible] 153
[illegible] 153, 154
[illegible] 153, 154
[illegible] 154, 155
[illegible] 146–153
[illegible] 149
[illegible] 151
[illegible] 147
[illegible] 153, 154
[illegible] 137–139
[illegible] 144–146
[illegible] 154–157
[illegible] 135, 136
[illegible] 135, 136
[illegible] 136
[illegible] 142
[illegible] 135, 136

PAGE

ORBIT.
direct fracture of roof of, ... 31
fracture of external wall of, ... 42
floor of, ... 42
inner wall of, ... 41
margins, ... 31
indirect fractures of roof of, ... 31
injuries to, ... 30
wounds of soft parts of, ... 42

PARANOIA, see Insanity, medical aspect of
PRESBYOPIA, see Vision

SIMULATED BLINDNESS, ... 19
STRABISMUS, ... 44

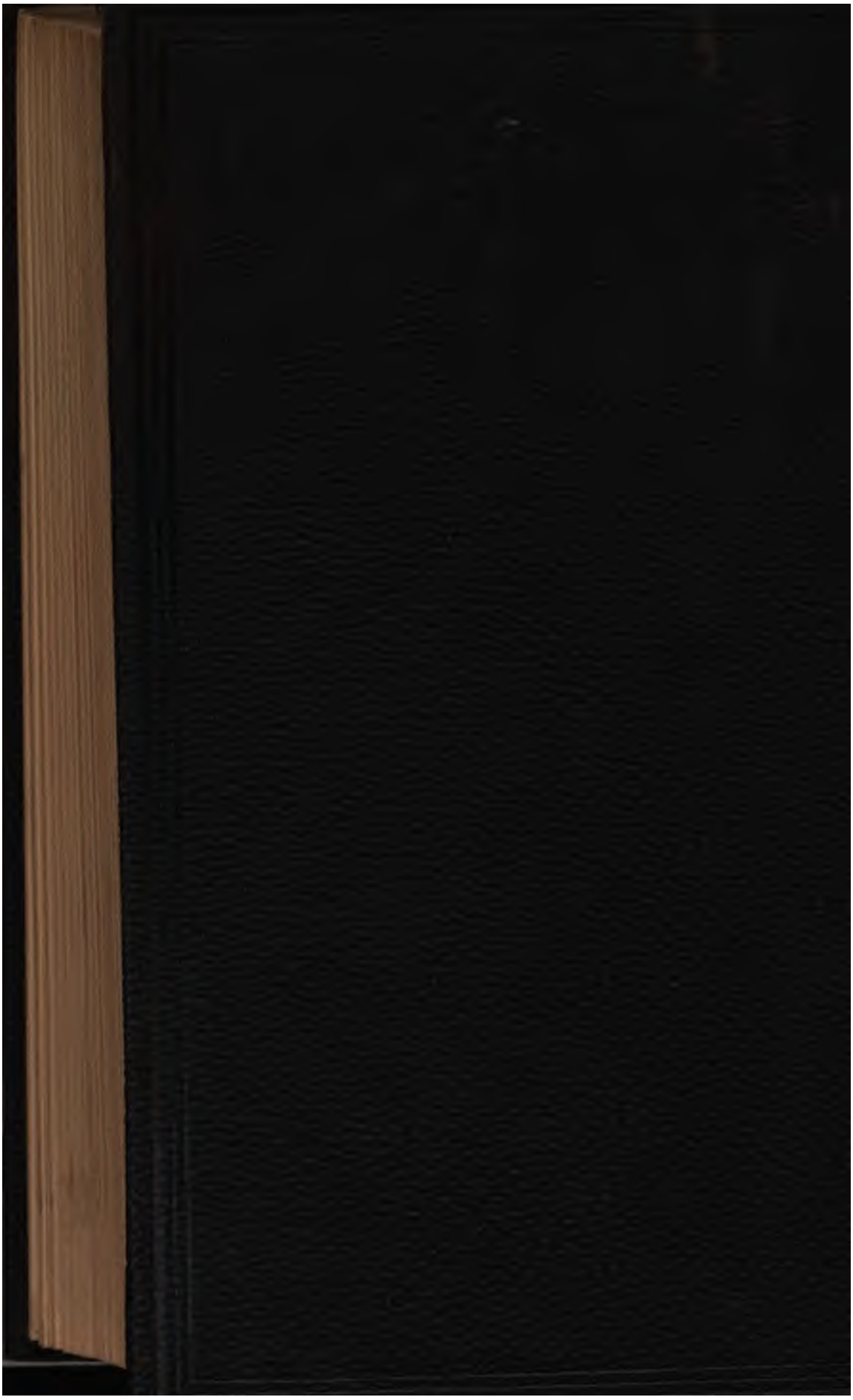
UNSOUNDNESS, MENTAL, see Insanity

VISION, see Eye
abnormal, causes of, ... 11
acuteness of, ... 5, 11, 12
amblyopia, ... 19
amaurosis, ... 19
astigmatism, ... 7
diplopia, ... 16. 44
heterophoria, ... 16
hypermetropia, ... 7, 17
hyperphoria, ... 16
myopia, ... 10
presbyopia, ... 15
testing of, ... 8, 10, 14

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY

To avoid fine, this book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below.

I1051 Witthaus,R.A. 8183
W83 Medical jurisprudence
v.3
1896

NAME | DATE DUE

NLM